



# TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFUL AND HIS APPRO.

ued good friend, Maister Frances Young, of *Brent-pelli-  
am, in the County of Hertfort, Esquire: and to the most kinde  
Gentlewoman, and my Mistresse, Susan Young, his  
louing wife, and my Mistresse: as much happinesse  
wisseth, as their owne hearts  
can desire.*



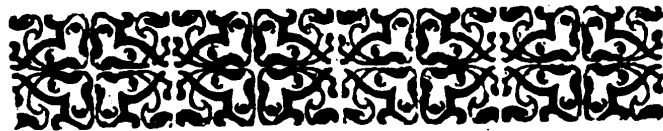
Should I (right worshihsful) as flatterers  
are wont to doe, set downe a Cata-  
logue of your commendations, and en-  
ter into a Laborinth of loue toward  
you, I know your wits so good, that you  
would quickly espie it, and I confesse  
mine owne nature such, as I hartily  
hate. My present purpose then at this time, is neither to  
rehearse your many stinde fauours, which I knowe you  
rather loue priuately to enlarge, then listen publicly to  
heare laide open; nor report mine owne vnthankfulnes,  
which I am sorie hath beene so much, yet you will for-  
get, although it were farre more: bui as a dutifull remem-  
brance of both these, though not able to be shadowed  
in one subiect, yet sufficient (in your conceits I know)  
being but in part acknowledged, I send you this honou-  
rable Historie of Prince *Palmerin of England*, which  
cost mee no more paines in writing, then I hope it will be  
pleasing to you in reading.

## The Epistle.

This first part is but to relish your tast, how yee can like of such worthy Knights loues, and memorāble adventures, whereof at my last being with you in the Countrey, I sawe yee vse no mislike. Then finding such gentle entertainment, as I make no question of, the second part shall bee with you very speedily after. So committing your worship, and my sweete Mistresse your wife, to the heauenly protection,


I remaine yours to my  
vttermost.

*A. Munday.*



## TO THE LADIES AND GENTLE VVOMEN OF ENGLAND, THE

Authour wisheth such a courteous moderation  
in iudgement, that his labours be not hastily  
reproched, nor hatefully receiued.

 *Mong the best choyse of flowers (faire Ladies) all are not sweet: where is most varietie of Medicine, some are not soueraigne: so amongst all the conceits you shall finde in this Booke, all are not pithie, though the most prettie. When the Lion roareth, the Lamb trembleth, when the Captaine taketh his Lance, the Coward ferareth his life, euen so, the brauery of the learned is so great a blemish to him that hath little, that he feareth to proceede, not daring to step a foot without a pardon. Such are the ingenious inuentiōs (right noble minded and courteous Ladies) so plentifully sent to your perusing, that (were it not the bountifull respect of your gentle iudgements, did assure me to taste of your friendly fanowr) I should conuert my studies into so great despaire, as the verie thought were sufficient to kill him that dieth euery houre, fearing displease. But as mercy doth alway accompany your noble sexe, and mildnesse represseth any cholerick chance, so know I, that rigor cannot dwell, where is no desire reuenge, but as of all men are faultie, I shall be forgiven for company.*

Your most bounden by dutie,  
*A. M.*



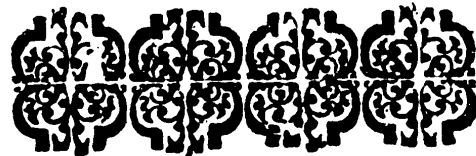


In lucubrationes. A. M. Epigramma.

R. W.

**V**T legi, placuit, nec enim placuisse mireris,  
 Namq; tuum nomen, fronte libellus habet;  
 Laudo animum cupioq; tibi sint saepe labores.  
 Grati: succumbas ne mala verba ferens.  
 Nomines Indoctos, doctosq; reuoluera scripta,  
 Indoctiq; cito fulmen ab ore venit.  
 Sed tu perge tamen, tipis ornare libellos  
 Persoluent sumptum gloria fama decus.  
 Quae soferas animo, patienti me tibi calcar  
 Addere currenti: sum tuus, esto meus.

R. W.



# THE FIRST PART

OF THE NO LESSE RARE,  
 THEN EXCELLENT AND

stately History, of the famous, and fortunate  
 Prince *Palmerin of England.*

## CHAP. I.

How Don Edward sonne to Fredericke king of England, hauing obtained in marriage faire *Florida*, daughter to the Emperor *Palmerin of Constantinople*, returneth home againe into England, and going on hunting, lost himselfe in the vnfortunate Forrest of great Brittain, by pursuing an inched Bore, which brought him to the Castle of the Giant *Dramufande*, where he remained Prisoner a long time.



After that Don Edward sonne to the aged *Fredericke king of England*, had finished his long desired marriage with *Florida*, daughter to the renowned *Palmerin d'Oliua*, Emperour of *Constantinople*, (not onely to his owne good liking, but also to the content of his friends and familiars) he took his voyage from the Empire of *Greece* (as it is at large mentioned in the booke entituled *Primaleon of Greece*) toward the realme of *England*, accompanied with the *Princesse Florida* his espoused Lady, beside, a traine meate to attend on  
 so

so puissant a person as the Prince was. Being arrived at the English Court, to the no little ioy of the knights father, and great delight of his kinsfolke and friends, they were welcomed as belov'd their royall estates, and ioyfully receiv'd to their hearts content. It chanced in short space after, the Princesse Florida wored great with childe, a thing of no small comfort to the aged king, nor of little pleasure to the young Prince.

Now is the tediousnesse of their travaile, the wearisome labour of their long journey, cleane cast out of remembrance, as of no account, and the ioyfull Prince Don Edward deviseth each dainty delight, and each gallant attempt, that either might procure the Princesse to pleasure, or by any meanes giue her occasion of pastime. And for because the pining pangs, which alway frequenteth one in her case, might either cause doubt of her good delivery, or daunger in her well doing, (her person being somewhat overcharged with sickness) the young Prince was as carefull in preventing such ill chaunce, as circumspect in providing to shunne any such chaunge. Leaving the Court, he walked with her in the grace through the Forrest of England, for that he supposed the sight of the spreading Trees, and pleasant passages through the grassy groves, would be an occasion of the unmindeing her former fits, and drive out of memory the sudden assaults that were incident unto her feeble nature, using himselfe very pleasantly, and calling himselfe Julian, the more to encrease her mirth.

All this while remained the aged King in his Pallace, where the English Prince being arived, cast his eyes on the portrait of Gridonia, having by her side a Lion, and a tender infant, the sight whereof was of such marvellous estimation in his conceived thought, both by the shew of beautie he held, and shape of bountie he wided in her, that he abandoned his naturall Countrey, to trie his good fortune against the courageous knight Primaleon. For the more certainty whereof, you may at large peruse the effects of his ball-

baliance, in the discourse of his memorizable adventures, and concerning the fortunate proceedings which passed betwene them as well the prowess of the one, as valure of the other: I must needs say it was such, and of so great authoritie, as it bare the title of perfect magnanimitie. But returne we to our matter.

The Princesse Florida perceuing the courteous care, and diligent endeavour, that her royall spouse Don Edward used for her greater delight, so lovingly labouring to auoyde that motion, that either might seeme to her person displeasing, or by any sinister meanes to make shew of her disprofit, desired him to appoint such provision for her, that there she might discharge her heavy burthen, and not to depart before she sawe the fruits of her labours. To which reasonable request, the Prince right courteously consented, being right glad to fulfill that occasion, that might be to her content, and for that cause as yet he refused the governing of the kingdome, appointing the whole affaires thereof, to the wise discretion of King Fredericke his father, untill such time as he sawe the Princesse in better estate of her health. And in this order sought he each unfrequented place of passage, and each solitary habitation, to remoove his Tents when pleased the Princes, deeming those places to his better content, then the youthfull delights of the King his Fathers Court. But as the sayrest colours soonest fade, the freshest flowre, soonest withereth, and the clearest day quickly cloudy, even so the man to whom Fortune doth anouch most frandlinesse, is soonest intrapped by the dissembling falshood: and when least he thinketh of any secret doubt, he is deceived by sudden daunger. So this valiant and renowned Prince, whom Fortune had encouraged by his admirable conquests, and aduanced his name in respect of his Noblenesse, now reclaiming her former and wonted courtesie, causeth him to taste her present crueltie, and where before she held his Honor as best worthy her favour, now in a chollerike humor breaketh of her friendship, causing him to knowe, though she had holpen him long, she

Amelia Regent  
for the Prince

45  
He was now minded to hurle him downe at last. The time being come of her appointed treacherie, and the meane deuised to accomplish her crueltie; she caused Don Edward to leaue the company of the Princes Florida, and all other his Lords and Ladies who were there present with her, and walketh to the Sea side, which was not farre distant. Returning againe, he caused the tents to be pitched foure miles from the Forrest, on a pleasant Greene platte, by a little running riuer, which delighted the minde of the Princesse, the place was so fine and fitly chosen out. On a sudden there was heard a great tumult, in a thicket of trees neare adioyning, to see what it might be, the Prince mounted on Horsebacke, and rode to the place, where casting his eyes aside, he espied a wilde and mighty Boze, which sight the Prince was not a little glad of, but with diuers of his noble Lords, made present pursuite after. Don Edward still ris after the game, that the other had quite lost the sight of him, which they sought againe to recover, but all was in vaine, for the day being cleane spent, and waring somewhat darke, caused them to tetyre againe to the Princesse. Who seeing her Lord Don Edward not returne with them, fell into great dismayng, and doubting of his safety, which she had iust cause to doe, for that this his sudden departure, was greatly lamented throught the Realme of England, and all kingdomes in Christendome, before they had his presence againe.

The strayed Prince, being thus allured by Fortune, affecteth his game with such great delight, that he neuer minded the Princesse distresse, but gaue himselfe wholly to his present pastime, not fearing for foresawing what might be the perill. His Storde with tediousnesse of trauaile, wareth tract in his limmes, which caused the Prince to stay and alight, for the darkesomnes of the night had lost his game, and the fayning of his Horse, required to haue rest. Don Edward resting him at the fote of a Tree, beganne at last to call to minde, the desolate estate of the Princesse Florida, and the griefe his Lords would conceiue for want of his company. Faine he would

slept, but could not, for still the doubts that assailed his mind, one while for the Princesse, another while for his Peeres, first to thinke how his absence, would cause her to iudge some what of his unkinde dealing, then how his Lords would stand in feare of his danger: these, and a thousand more trustfull terrours, with held him from receiuing that sweet rest, he gladly looked for. Alas (thought he) how hard is his hap to whom Fortune is aduerser? how contrary his good lucke that awaiteth her liberality? the one is a thing euer to be doubted, and the other ought at no time to be desired. The night is spent in these and such like cogitations, and at the appearence of the day, his eyes began to wane heauy, as commonly it happeneth vnto those, whom conceiued sorrow denieth the required rest, at last very grieue of it selfe constraineth them to slumber. This carefull Prince, hauing obtained such quietnesse, as the extremitie of his paine would permit him, stretching forth his armes, calleth againe into question, the restlesse regard he had of himselfe, so lightly to leaue his Lady, and so vngently to forsake his company, which although it happened against his will, he iudged they would not accept it so in worth. Then mounting vpon Horsebacke, rode on to finde his company, so vnadvisedly lost, but Fortune still denying his pretended purpose, by how much he esteemed himselfe nere to his comfort, by so much the farther of she set him to the contrary, yet hanging on in hope, at last he arrived in a great Grove of Trees, the thicknesse and height whereof, caused him to fall into admiration with himselfe. Throught this graue ran a faire and cleare Riuer, wherein he perceiued the resemblance of a Gallant and curious Castle, as strongly fortified, as rarely edified, the sight whereof, somewhat asswaged the egerne of his griefe, likewise, the pleasant rattling of the Greene leaues, with the melodious harmony of the pretty chirping Birds, eiled the former heauines of his heart, and caused him to remember the glad some time, wherein he spent his labour, to gaine his best beloued, during the warres of the Emperour Palmerin, where first he named himself Iulian. In these pleasant

stant conceits, hee ro along by the Riuer side, so raiſhed with his inwarde delight, that he little ſuſpected the imminent danger, ſo vnto that place did he cheſt frame his deſire, which Fortune had appointed to worke his diſtreſſe. Don Edward beholding the bzaue ſituation of this Caſtle, ſo curious in workemanſhip, and coſtly in outward reſemblance, the Bridge at entring whereof was ſo large, y ſoure knights might eaſily haue Combatted thereon, no leſſe muſed at his ſuddē arrival, then he meruailed at this his ſtrange aduenture. The Porter of the Caſtell, with double diligence, more then deſerued thanks, ſet open the gate to allure him in, which the Prince perceiuing, miſdoubted no danger, or any ſecret guile in his gallant proſpect, becauſe he neither ſawe any to reſiſt his entree, and the Porter being vnarmed made him doubt the leſſe. At laſt, more on a youthfull courage, then an aduised care, he aduanced himſelfe to the Gate of y Caſtle, deſiring to know the name of ſo pleaſant a place, & who protected a thing of ſuch force. The Porter not to learne his leſſon, but ſmoothely colouring his ſecret craft, to the good liking of the Prince, and furtheraunce of his Ladies pleaſure, cunningly coynd this gentle reply. Sir (quoth he) my ſelfe am a ſeruaunt, to her who likewiſe to your perſon oweth ſeruiſe, and if you pleaſe to enter the Mansion of your Maſſaile, what wanteth in coſt, ſhall excede in curteſie, and your ſelfe ſatiſfied to your ſarder content. The Prince regarding the circumſtaunce of his words, and not reſpecting the colluſion of his wyles, alighted, and preſently entred the Caſtle, where with humble duty he was conducted to the great Hall, and ſerued with humilitie in euery reſpect. The Lady of the Caſtell, who was cheefe in this deuife, hauing wone the man, whome moſt ſhe made account of, to cauſe him as yet to dread no doubt, or elſe to feare any enſuing danger, came and welcommed the Prince with ſuch large proteſtations, as his thoughts were quite abſent in thinking of any perill. The Prince well noting the curteſie of the Lady, (whoſe comely countenaunce and gallant behaviour, not onely gaue a ſheiw of ſingular modeſtie, but alſo bare the face of apparant honeſty) perſwaded himſelfe, that all

the

the commendations in the world, were not of ſufficiencie, to requite her great gentleneſſe. For being ſo bzauely garbed with gallant gentlewomen, and euery one at becke and call with dutifull humilitie, hee rather deemed her a ſecond Lucrecia, then doubted her to be a diſſembling Lais, rather one that regarded fidelitie, then in ſuch ſort to intrap him by flattery. But as the ſweeteſt Roſe is not without his ſharpe prickell, or the fineſt Eluet but hath his bzacke, ſo vnder the ſmoothest countenance, is ſoneſt found deceite, and in the ſayreſt talke, to bee the fouleſt treaſon. And there was a truſtie Damon, ſo was there a trothles Damocles, as there was a faithfull Lelius, ſo there was a flattering Ariſtippus, happy may he be that findeth a friend, which preſerueſh the honoz of his faith, beſore the hozor of falſhood, more accounting of the welfare of his friend, then any thing elſe in his worldly affaires. But to returne to y prince who made great account, of his ſo gentle entertainment, and eſtimated wel her friendſhip that ſhe handled with ſuch dexterity, which to gratifie with thanks, he entred into this diſcourſe.

Lady, if this ſudden motion dee ſtrike me into a maze, & your ſacred manners, inſorce me to muſe, impute the one to the rare perfection of your beauty, and iudge the other, as the raſh preſumption of my boldnes. Firſt, your famous manſion did not a litle daunt me, & now the faire miſtreſſe doth no leſſe delight me the one excellling all in bzaury, the other ſurpaſſing euery one in beauty. Wherefore good lady, if it ſhall like you to report, and licence me to requeſt, let me vnderſtand your name, and who is gouernour of this place. The Lady as one currant in her coy, conceptes, and not to learne how to uſe a Courtier, quickly ſounded the depth of his deſire, and as a ſkilfull pilot ſtrooke Sayles againſt a ſtorme, then taking Don Edward by the hand, ſhe walked to the window, and ſhaped him this anſwere. Woorthy ſir, the great fame of your nobleneſſe doth wel deſerue that title, & the ſufficieny of your preſent behauior doth bzaue me to uſe it, the excuſe of your boldnes ſull well we allow, in reſpect of your bounty which we can not miſlike, ſo that the authority of your name, doth beare you out in the one, & the effects of nature doth bzaue you in the other. I would my beauty were ſo ample

as might content such a Gallant, or my bounty sufficient to entertaine such a Guest. Letting that passe, I would the proportion which hath liked you to praise, were answerable in perfection or able to please. Touching your request, both this Castle and Gouvernour thereof, resteth at your commaund to what you shall desire, and if it shall like you to accept of one nights lodging here, not for the good chere you shall finde, but for your good company which we fancy, you shall be resolved in every doubt, and to morrowe or when please you, you may depart. Don Edward perceiuing her courteous proffer, thought it stood with his honour to accept it, and against his honestie to refuse it, and while they were vsing the time in these and such like familiar speeches, the Tables were covered, and every thing provided to a braue and sumptuous banquet, which in cost exceeded, and in delicate fare surpassed, that in the King his fathers Court, he could not be more gallantly serued.

Their Banquet finished, and the Tables withdrawn, courtesie on all sides artificially offered, he was conducted into a notable faire Chamber, the sumptuousnesse whereof surpassed, where preparing him to Bedward, he conuayed his good Sword vnder his Pillowe, which Sword was of such great vertue, that while it was about him, no enchantment could preuaile, or by any meanes annoy him. Bearing in Bed, he called to minde the great distance of place, and diuersitie of passages, betwene his beloued Florida, and his sorrowfull selfe, which with many agrieuous sigh he often benomed, but at length conuined with heauinesse of sleepe, for that the night befoze he enjoyed no rest, turned him to the wall, to receiue the charge which was toward him. The Lady of the Castle being maruellous sene in Magicke, and knowing by her Arte, that the Prince was sound asleepe, sent a Damosell to his Chamber to steale away his Sword, which while he had, she could not accomplish her desire.

The Damosell in all respects fulfilled her Ladies minde, and hauing brought it to her, she commaunded her to goe vnto

her

her Cousin Dramusand, and desire him with all speede to haue him thither, for now he might take seuerer reuengement on the Prince Don Edoard, for the death of his father, who was slain by one of the lineage of this noble young Prince. The Damosell went speedily and did her message, returning with the young Giant whom the Lady sent for, and hauing vnderstood the full minde of his Aunt, entred the chamber of Don Edoard, where taking the sword of the Prince in his hand, brake forth into these or the like speeches.

Sometimes thou didst remain in the seruice of a man no lesse famous then fortunate, who little knewes now that thou art in my keeping, but since my hap hath bene so good to gain thee, I dare aueuch to make thee more redoubted, heuaged & esteemed, then when thy Lord Don Edoard did giue thee about him so putting it vp againe into the sheath, he approached vnto the Bed, and spake in this order. Don Edoard, awake thou captive Prince, hadst was thy hap to light in my hands, and fromward thy fortune to approach this place, bid now adieu to thy former delight, and content thy selfe to liue endles deller, tho court of England was sometime thy pleasure, but now this Castle of mine must be thy Prison, all the youthfull affections, which were wont to be thy solace, thou must forsake, & passe the remainder of thy dayes in sorrow. I rue thy case, but can giue thee no comfort, I sorrow to thinke on thy misery, and can giue thee no remedie: blood will haue blood againe, and cruelty will haue the like rewarded, thou shalt see the force of my chollerike mood, and by reuengement will bee so sharpe, as will be trebble griefe for thee to sustaine it.

The Prince being vanquished with a sudden feare, to heare the Giant vse such words of fury, put vp his hand where he thought to finde his Sword, but failing of his purpose, he presently sayd. In the greenest grasse lyeth the most deceitfull Serpent, and in the calmest waters the deepest whilpeede: so in those places where aman thinketh himselfe farthest of all mishaps, he is soeuest assailed by some sudden mischance. Well (quoth the Giant) though my anger doth vige me vnto great impatience, and that I cannot brooke the open injury done vnto

to mee, but am bent fenerely to reuenge me on thee and all thy kindred, as my afterdealings shall make manifest, to their great dishonour, yet will I keepe thee, being first chaunced into my hands, that thou mayest witnesse to the rest my his displeasure. As for thy life, I frankly and freely giue thee, seeing the Kingly Lyon disdaineth to vaunt on his conquered Prey, and the Princely Eagle scorneth to stoupe to a Flye. Besides, thy life is not of sufficiencie in such a cause as this, beeing first the death of my father, next, the distresse of my friends, now, the present griefe of my selfe, and lastly, euer hereafter, to all my issue an eternall sorrow: which to appease, the life of one, no not of tenne, no, nor yet of an hundred, is able to make recompence, or suffice to quench my rigour. Neuertheles, in poore and meanest sort I minde to vse thee, not as thou list, but as I like, not to thine owne choise, but as I shall finde occasion: so that to recount thy pasted pleasure, and also to thinke on thy present ensuing paine (though it be grieuous to mee to vse it, and so harde thy hap, that thou canst, nor mayest refuse it) shall witnesse a world of miseries that thou art to abide, and the rarest Misfortunes, that euer man did taste.

This is thy lucke, and this is my law: this thy hard hap, and this my heavy hatred, as ere thou departest, thou shalt sufficiently vnderstand, and by that time thou knowest, what and who I am, that haue this authoritie, thou shalt feele to thy greater woe my pretended iniurie. Having thus finished his talke, he caused him to bee carried into his strongest Prison, which was in the top of the Castle, and clapped a great pair of Gyues on his legs, minding in this sort, neuer while hee liued to take them off againe. Don Edoard thus suddenly chaunged, from Princely pompe to present penurie, from the Court of his father, to the Cabbins of his foes, from the presence of his Ladie, to the loathing of his life, enclosed in a Castle so admirable, in a prison so uncomfortable, and in a Dungeon so dispaireable: closing his armes together, entered into these sorrowfull mounes.

O poore Prince, is thy hope thou haddest of so great courtesie, and so soone chaunged into extreame crueltie? Didst thou credit to faire wordes to be such froth, and now dost thou finde them

them, quite turned to treason? Alas, who sooner deceived then the well meaning man? and who more quickly beguiled then he that means most honestly? Hath Fortune hether to allowed thee honour, and will shee now leaue thee to taste this horror? hath all thy life hether to beene spent in delight, and shalt thou now end thy dayes in this direfull distresse? Alas, thou hast no helpe to the contrarie, wherefore thou must holde thee content, there is none nere to succour thee, wherefore suppe vp thy sorrow. Thy aged father will misse thee, thy leuning Ladie will lacke thee, and all thy Courtly companions will sorrow for thy want. And what of that? Bucephalus will stoupe to none but Alexander: and Mercuries Pipe will be scounded by none but Orpheus: Cuen so my proud see, may no wayes be intreasted, but either must be conquered in strength, or craftily decyued in sleights, which how farre my thought is from deliucy, so farre from comfort is my poore oppressed heart.

O my deare Florida, when thou shalt call thy unkindnesse into question, and my last departure from thy presence into a Romans opinion, I know the care will no lesse trouble thy minde, then my want of thy comfort causeth my miserie. Alas, though I haue thus left thee by follie, yet thinke not but I still loue thee faithfully: and although thy griefe (as I knowe) is great, for my losse, yet thinke not but my sorrow putteth me to extremity of my life: in that this Prison so amareth me with sadnesse, as I am of opinion, neuer againe to see you, without whose companie my life cannot long endure, but eyther to dispaire vpon my hard Aduenture, or presently die in so sharpe an assault.

O inuincible Prince Primaleon, what griefe will you abide for losse of your brother? and what sorrow will you conceiue for your deare friend: whose misfortune (I feare) wil cause you leaue your Parents, and whose tryed friendship more you put your life in perill. Except the Soldan of Niquee, Maiortes, Gatterit, & the King Tarnies, by their friendly perswasion, may otherwise determine your purpose. And though their maie Loue keepe you at home, yet I thinke my mishap will enforce them to be sorry: So that some of them will endeuour to heare



## The first part

of me againe, although it be vnpossible to giue mee succour, except fauour may plead their cause with the Lady of this Castle, whose crueltie I feare will no way be intreated. In these and such like rufull complaints, the Captiue Prince spent his time: vntill earnest opinion of his Ladie to be present with him, vnged him to breake forth into these speeches. Alas my good Ladie, this cruell Prison is not cause of my death, but to see your person accompanie me in distresse, when the Court were more meete to shrowde your seemely selfe, then this vncomfortable Dungeon, for you to set foote in: Whose presence procureth so fierce an assault in my hart, that the feare of your safety is more to my perill, then a thousand torments might be to my paine.

Wherefore, good Ladie, content your selfe, and suffer mee to moane, blemish not your faire face with rufull teares for me: the one may endanger your prosperitie, and the other may no way be to my profite. Thus clasping his armes together, and entering into a farther conceit in his minde: I leaue the extremitie of his grieve, to those that haue tasted the like mishappe, that where before he was equal with any for good fortune, he is now aboute all, respecting his ill lucke.

## CHAP. II.

In this Chapter is declared, why Eutrope the Enchauntresse procured thus the hard hap of the Prince Don Edoard, and what the Giant was, that detained him Prisoner.



**H**is Historie doeth discourse vnto vs, how when the Emperour Palmerin of Constantinople, left his royall estate, to seeke aduentures as a wandring knight: that he arriued in England, accompanied with Trineus the Emperour of Allemaignesonne, who for the loue of faire Agriola in the English Court, list

## of Palmerin of England.

left his native Countrey, and behaued himselfe so valiant, that he might esteeme him as one of her best fauored knight. And in sooth, not to diminish his praise, or hold backe one title of his braue behauiour, the exploits both of him and the Emperour Palmerin (being both to most vnknowne) were such, as the King of England, with all his Courtly assistants, not onely commended their valure, but also gaue them entertainment, agreeable to their bounty and magnanimity. For he percciuing that their daily endeouours, tended both to the safegard of their person, and honour of his whole Realme, gaue them that preferment in Court, which they deserued in chiuallry, and that honour in name, which they both argued to haue in nature, wherby they were encouraged to attempt the hardest aduenture, and so be honoured in their knightly behauiour. In fauour of their Prince, and ioue of their Countrey, at length they obtained the full issue of their enterprize: which was to haue with them the Prince Agriola, whom on a day, through leaue obtained of the King with the Queene her mother, they got leaue to walke into the field, not farre distant from the Court, accompanied with diuerse Noble men, and Gentlemen, as you may reade more at large in the Histories of Palmerin d'Oliua, which saith, That sporting themselves there on the top of a hill, on a sudden (altogether vnlooked for) there came a Giant named Frenaque, well attended on with twentie fighting men: who perforce took the Queene and her Daughter Agriola from them, neither respecting the woefull meane of the Ladies, nor gentle entreatie of the knights, who had no defence to rescue them, nor companie inough to resist them: But at that time were more ready to vse a distaffe with Hercules, then a speare with Hannibal, and rather required to handle a Lute in Venus Chamber, then list a Lance in Mars his Camps, and for a soldiers munition, vsing sweete Parle with their Mistresse, and their Ladies laps, for the hard lodging in the fieelde. So being thus altogether vnprovided, lost the sum of their pleasure, and honour of their knighthood. Palmerin and Trineus (who had bene with the King in walking) arriuing there, and hearing of this losse, encouraged them as wel as they might, offering them-

## The first part

selues to die, ere they would put vp this iniurie. So willing them all to prouide them presently, for that a rash encounter, might turne to an hard aduenture, they proceeded in pursuit after the giant, and ouertaking him, behaued themselves so woorthily, that he was slain by the hands of the Emperour Palmerin. When the yong Prince Trineus, as well that his Lady Agriola might perceiue his hardnes, as also the Quene her mother might giue his deeds commendation, so valiantly menaced his courage, that by the helpe of the other knights, all the Giants traine were vanquished, so that the Quene and her Daughter, had suffered no spot of dishonour by their crueltie, which greatly they stood in feare of.

This Giant had a Sister named Eutropa, so cunning in Magicke, that neither Zorastes, nor all the other Magicians, were in this deuillish Art comparable to her, by helpe whereof, she had knowledge of the death of her Brother, which entered so deepe into her heart, that shee vowed her reuengement shee should errede this cruell mischance. And hauing in her Castell with her a Nephew of hers, and the Sonne of this Giant Frenaque, named Dramusiande, by whom she meant to seeke her sharpe reuenge: shee tooke him in her armes, and entered into these ruefull complaints. Ah swete Nephew, albeit thou art fatherlesse, yet art thou not friendlesse, and though in thy tender time, Fortune hath framed thy mishap, yet expect a farder time, which my Art shall begiune, and thy manhood finish. And he that hath thus cruelly murdered the Father, both hee himselfe, his lynage, friendes and familiars, will I persecute with extreame rage. After these and such like speeches uttered, shee prouided to fortifie and make strong her Castell, least the King of England should seeke both the ruine of it, and destruction of the Giants kindred, when once it came to his care the Treason shee pretended against him, wherefore, shee armed her selfe with all those of her kindred, knowing that to resist the power of a King, asked no smal defence. And for a further remedy, least worst should happen, shee enchanted the Forrest round about, so that none could enter her Forrest without her leaue, untill such time as the yong Giant Dramusiande were able to beare

Armoz,

## of Palmerin of England.

Armoz, and receiue the order of Knighthood. In proceesse of time, the yong Giant grew able to beare Armoz, and then his heart began to thurst for reuenge of his Fathers death, the which to accomplish, hee was very desirous in Trauell to aduenture his strength, according as his heart desired.

But Eutropa perceiuing the courage of his minde, to errede the strength of his person, desired him to stay his Journey, and shee would yelde into his hands such a one on whom hee might sufficiently reuenge the death of his Father. Thus, and with these perswasions, shee changed the minde of Dramusiande, untill the hard fortune of the Prince Don Edoard brought him to her Castell, where he entered without any daunger, for that his good Sworde, kept the force of all Enchauntments from him, but hauing lost it by her Diuellish decypte, remained as I haue expressed in vnspokeable.

Leauing this matter, it shall not be amisse, to speake somewhat of the state and condition of Dramusiande, who albeit he were a Giant, which commonly are of rough and impatient nature: yet was he indued both with ciuilitie of life, and honesty in behauiour, exempting crueltie, and surpassing all of his stocke and parentage in courtesie.

For after he had a long space kept Don Edoard in Prison, and not onely perceiued his Princely qualities, but also the sobrietie and great gentleness of his life, hee caused his Fetters to bee taken from his feete, and gaue him leaue for recreation, to walke about the Castell, vppon condition, that hee would not come to passe beyond his limits, without his consent.

The courtecous Prince, gaue him his hand and Oath, that he would not passe one foote further, then his Licence should permit: Yet notwithstanding for all that, he gaue charge vnto diuerse to respect his walking abroad, in that hee respected his Aunte Eutropas promise, which was, that many valiaunt knights, would aduenture their liues in the scarche of this strayed Prince, to home she doubted not but to haue also as Prisoners in the Castell.

And against the coming thither of any such, shee caused to be in Embush in the Forrest, a great number of Armed men,



to aide Dramusiand against them, if his hard hap should misse of his purpose. Thus passed the young Giant his time in pleasure, and Don Edoard acquainted himselfe with his former sorowes, (as it chanceth vnto those, who of long time are kept from the sight of them they most desire) as well for the want of his espoused Ladie, as also the griefe the King his Father would conceiue for his ill luck. But yet the gentle pastime that Dramusiand would often vse with him, caused him to spend the time in pleasure, that else he would haue wasted in mourning. Thus leauing the captiue Prince in his forced content, we will returne to the Prince Florida, whom we left in the Forrest, sorrowfully expecting the glad returne of her Lord Don Edoard.

CHAP. III.

How the Princesse Florida, awayting the returne of her loyal spouse Don Edoard in the Forrest, was deliuered of two goodly yong Princes: and how a Sauage man walking by her with two Lions, tooke them from her to feed his Lions withall. And of that which happened to sir Pridos, sonne the Duke of Galles, in his search of the Prince Don Edoard.



While the Princesse Florida, with no lesse griefe of mind, then agony of her whole person, remained in the Forrest, expecting that which came not, as well to abandon diuers chollericke humours, that ouercharged her impatient mind, as also to exile the eger passions, which were still approaching her weake nature, shee busied her selfe in gathering flowers, accompanied with the faire Attaida and diuers Ladies and

and Gentlemen, for that this time of recreation, was in the correspondence to her good liking, then heretofore she could conceiue the opinion to like any. As a sudden, she fell into remembrance of her Lord Don Edoard, whose long absence she admitted to some misfortune, or else vngentlenesse in himselfe disdained her presence. In which of these resalued her selfe, shee was doubtful: for that in the one she might conuict her selfe of rash belouise, though in the other she might stand vpon good occasion. Betwixt these cogitations she spent the whole day, yielding her complaints likewise to the vncomfortable night approaching: which indeed seemed to her more obscure, more grieuous, and more despairable, then any night passed to her remembrance. So that vpon this hard motion, she fell into a resolute opinion, neuer to heare good tidings of her lord Don Edoard, for that the knights who had spent their labour in his search, were returned without any tidings.

The Lord and Ladies perceiuing these passions to be more extreame vpon her then any heretofore, beganne to cast with themselves whether they might depart and leaue her in these fits, or stay still with her, which was to their great griefe: at length they thus concluded, to abide the returne of the Duke of Galles, for whose absence likewise the Princesse was more aggriued then she would haue bene, had he bene present. This vncomfortable night gone, and the cherefull beames of Phoebus displayed ouer the earth, the duke of Galles returned a glad sight to the Princes, and no lesse ioy to her attendants, for that she hoped of wished newes of her Lord, and they to heare what was become of their Soueraigne. But their expectations were farre disappointed, for he was as ignorant of the Prince, as they which caused a fresh hurt vpon the olde griefe: neuertheless, he intreated the Lords to take themselves to trauaile, it might so fortune (he perswaded them) that they should haue better successe then he had. In the meane time, he would abide with the Princesse to comfort her, for that she had vowed neuer to returne from thence, till she had heard some tidings of her best beloued.

The noble Gentlemen, of no lesse loyaltie to their Prince  
Do

Don Edoard, then leue they bare to the Princesse Florida: ad-  
dressed themselves presently to fulfill this request. Among  
whome Pridos, eldest sonne to the Duke of Galles, and thiese  
Gentleman attendant on the Prince, rode along the sea shore,  
where he mette with two of his companions, who like wise en-  
deuoured themselves in the search of Don Edoard, with whom  
he determined to returne, for that he was past hope of any good  
successe.

Peruerthelesse, to auoyd the euill conceit of the Princesse,  
and the angry mood of his aged father, hee left them, and rode  
on very solitary, sometime exclaiming on Fortune for his hard  
hap, and then againe blaming his folly, when he perceived no  
remedie. In midst whereof, he brake forth into these, or the like  
speeches. If it were mete for mortall creatures, to blame or  
inuey against their heauenly Creator, then both iustly, and by  
good reason, may I claime the like occasion, whose sorrow can  
not enioy one houre of succor, whose mone be admitted on halfe  
houre of mirth, or whose extreame griefe, but once taste the sa-  
ueur of halfe a minutes rest. The Horse haung laboured all  
day, can take rest in his Anne at night, the little Bird, can com-  
fort herself on euery twigge: the Fish can sport and make pa-  
stime to himselfe in the Riuer: in brieft, euery creature enioy-  
eth a quiet and pleasant life, man onely excepted, who excel-  
ling all creatures, both in forme and feature, is inferior to them  
all in tranquillitie of life. So that surveying the whole course of  
mans life, both from the beginning and to the end, I will ad-  
mit the Philosophers sentence,

Either neuer to be borne, or quickly to die.

A good while he continued these carefull complaints, a len-  
ger would haue done, had not the presence of a Damsell caused  
him to forget them, who was mounted on a black Palfrey, and  
attired like wise in blacke garments, who remaining still to-  
ward Sir Pridos, made him seeme what amazed: yet took courage  
again, in hope to be certified by her, of some glad tidings, as co-  
cerning the strayed Prince Don Edoard. The Damsell beha-  
uing her selfe very curiously, with no lesse audacitie of wit,  
then exquisite qualities of maiden civilitie: taking Sir Pridos  
Horse

Horse by the bridle, saluted him with these speeches.

Sir knight, if my presence dos argue a presumption, or my  
boldnesse to breake off your silent cogitations, sceme not Day-  
denly in me, or more then modestie in your eye, let humble in-  
treaty passe for the one, and the tydings I bring, craue pardon  
for the other.

The paines you take are to very small purpose, and the  
griefe you ouerloade your minde withall, to as little auayle:  
for prooofe to hereof, giue eare to my words, which shall some-  
what ease your minde, and here make an ende of my tra-  
uayle.

Don Edoard your Prince, whose noblenesse hath euer bene  
more famous, then his late aduentures hath proued fortunate,  
he liueth, yet depriued of his libertie, and captiue to him, whose  
anger will not be asswaged of long time, which he must stay to  
his griefe, & my sorrow. Therefore, on thy knighthood I charge  
thee, to certifie the Princesse Florida, how daungerous it is for  
her to vse such great impatience, as may cut off her time, yet  
not abate his troubles. And how she might manifest a princely  
magnanimitie of minde, in conquering this griefe, by valure of  
her patience, because Fortune is prepared to another mishap,  
which because it will happen too soone, I referre it to her that  
shall seele it, and to you that shall know it. And therefore giue  
her to vnderstand, her griefe is as needelesse, as his state is  
helplesse, untill the appointed time, when all extreame sor-  
rowes, shall finish with unspeakable ioyes. And thus say, that  
Argonida sendeth her these tydings: to whom, her losse is as  
displeasant, as to her selfe.

The Damsell ending here her Tale, gaue bridle to her  
Palfrey, and left Sir Pridos: into whose remembraunce  
the knowledge of this Lady presently came. That shee was  
the Daughter of the Lady Enchauntresse, of the Ile where  
the Eagle vanished Ardesdegno, begotten by Primacon, at  
the time when such excellent Triumphes were made, after  
the Battayle fought against the Knight of the vnkowne  
Ile.

And of this Argonida, Don Edoard had a sonne, named  
Pompides,

Pompides, (as it is at large rehearsed in the Booke of Prima-  
leon) which I will let passe, and returne to Sir Pridos. Who  
having well noted the tale of Argonida, returneth to the place  
where he left the Princes, and declaring vnto her all that had  
happened, she became more sorrowfull then before, for that she  
desired nothing more then his company, which liuing she ought  
to haue, and yet he aliuie could not haue. Her sorrowes took so  
deepe a perswasion in her heart, that immediately she fell into  
labour, which the Ladies perceiuing, and the Gentlemen gi-  
uing place, as was their due tie, after many grievous pangs  
(which are incident to those in that taking) she was happily de-  
liuered of two goodly men Children. The Ladie Araida recei-  
uing the two young Princes, wrapped them in rich and costly  
clothes, & then presented them to the Princesse, holding opinion  
that the sight of them, would somewhat mitigate her great vexa-  
tion of mind, & she taking them in her armes, miring her talke  
with teares, declaring motherly affection, thus said. Ah sweet  
Infants, I reioyce in so much as Fortune hauing wrought her  
malice vpon mee, yet that to you twaine she hath attributed  
no disloyall accident, for more then she hath done, well she can  
not doe, respecting I haue lost a friend, and you a Father. How  
happie had I bene, if in bringing you twaine into the world, I  
had departed my selfe: Yet Nature vrgeth mee to recall my  
sorrowes, in that the Fathers absence, is appeased by the Mo-  
thers presence, and yet so sharpe are her assaults, that when I  
would hartily nourish you twaine, I am heauily brought into  
dismaying of my life.

Remainning in this heauie complaints, to the two young  
Children, such prouision was made, as they would be Baptized  
and she being demaunded how shee would haue them named,  
willed that the first might be called Palmerin, after the name  
of her Father, for that the effect of this misfortune, might bee  
well compared to his before passed. The other, for because they  
were borne in the Forrest, shee desired that his name might  
haue relation to the place of his birth, which was thus determi-  
ned, Florian du Desert, as much to say, as Florian of the For-  
rest. The Ceremonies accomplished, which were required in this

this matter: the Princesse receiued the two Infants vpon  
her lappe, one while with mournfull tunes to still they crying,  
an other while with the Teat to bring them asleepe, euer min-  
ding the harde misfortune of her Lord, and neuer ceasing to de-  
plore the miseries of her life, esteeming the one to excel all in hard  
happe, and the other to be aboue all in vnlucked for mischaunce.  
But as commonly it hapneth, no pleasure is without his paine  
adioyned, nor no quiet calme, but by some accident or ether, is  
conuerted into a rough tempest: euen so this careful Princesse.  
Whose extreame grieve and mishappe, added a perswasion of  
minde, that Fortune had done her worst, and executed her vt-  
termost spight: so that what wanted to accomplish her quiet, as  
concerning the absence of her louing Don Edoard, she determi-  
ned a resolute opinion, (albeit farre incomparable to her losse,  
yet as Nature willed her, by a forced content) to assuage her  
vrgent Passions, on the presence of the two young Princes: by  
whom in time she had good hope to end her grieve, and on whom  
as present occasion did serue. She was somewhat satisfied. But  
marke how unkindely it happened.

In this Forrest of long time remained a Sauadge man, who  
not vsing the companie of reasonable Creatures, became un-  
reasonable of himselfe: as the course of his life, being brutish  
and Beastly, his diet on the Weards and Rootes of the ground,  
his Apparell framed of the skinner of wilde Beastes, shewed  
that he was a man in name, but not in nature. This Sauadge  
man, walking as was his wont, along the Forrest, leading  
in his hand a couple of Lyons. whome he vsed sometime to kill  
the Game, that would serue for his nourishment: unhappily es-  
pyed the Princesse and her Traine, which moued him to with-  
drawe himselfe into a thicket of Trees nere adioyning: where  
at pleasure he beheld the Ceremonies, vsed at the Baptizing of  
the Children.

Nowe had Fortune determined the second mishappe of the  
Princesse: for that shee vrged the Sauadge man, to goe take  
the two Infants, who were sweetely sleeping on the Mothers  
lap, and giue them for food vnto his Lyons, that all that day had  
receiued no sustenance. Swift from among the Trees hee

comes, to the no little astonishment of the Princesse (whose sorrowful minde, was subiect to any moyle of feare) and the great dismayning of her Courtly attendants: who at this presence of so grim a fire, betooke themselves to flight, not ere receyuing the courage of hart to abide by the Princesse, but the Lady Attaida, who neuer shrunke one foote from her, but would haue aduentured the death in the Princesse defence, had her might bene answerable to her good stomacke. When the Princesse saw herselfe subiect to so hard a mischance, that the old Duke of Galles, and all the other being vnarm'd, were gladd to flie, which indeede was their best help: she wished for Sir Pridos, but hee was departed to London, to fetch a Chariot to bring her to the Court, which vrg'd her thus to content herselfe: Let it suffice thee poore Florida, that thou art the only she, borne vnto all inifortune. Then approached to her the Sauadge man, and tooke from her the two young Princes, neyther vsing any words, or offering any harme to her, but departed presently to his Cae, leauing the Princesse overcome with a tranunce, whereout, the Lady Attaida by her diligent meanes recouered her.

CHAP. IIII.

¶ How Syr Pridos being departed from the Forrest, where he left the Princesse, came to the Court to the King Fredericke, and declared vnto him the losse of the prince Don Edoard: which was no small griefe to him, and all the Citizens of London. And how the Princesse Florida left the Forrest, and was brought to the Court.



After that Syr Pridos had scene the Wyth of the two Princes, hee resolved to departe from thence to London, to the ende that he might cause a Chariot bee brought into the Forrest, to conuey the Princesse vnto the Court of her father K. Frederick. Who learning in his chamber window espied sir Pridos come

come ryding in great haste, which caused him to cast a doubt, of some euill newes approaching: in that he iudged a show of more sadnesse to be in him at that instant, then before time hee could perceiue in him the like. Whereof to be resolved, he presently sent for Syr Pridos, to know the cause of his so sudden arriuall: whose griefe could not conceale the losse of Don Edoard, but in teares laide open a discourse, which grieued the Aged King to heare it, and galled his heart to recount it. The King at these vnlooked for newes, fell into such extreame passions, both with the teares that bedratted his Aged bearde, and grievous sighes that issued from his heart, that Syr Pridos could hardly keep life in him, or by intreaty vse any meanes of a patient perswasion, for the Aged King was stricken into such a debility of hope, that betwene the impatient assaults of doubt and daunger, hee thus began to vse speeche with himselfe.

O my Don Edoard, nature willes me to deploze thy losse, and intire affection makes me dye for thy lacke: whose presence was the staffe of myne Aged dayes, and whose absence is the Sword, that wounds me to the death. But as no Grass will hang on the heeles of Mercurie, nor Masse abide on the Stone Sisyphus, so no certaintie can be looked for at the hands of Fortune, whose sicklenesse is scene in chaunge, and whose frowardnesse in chaunce. How long haue I trusted her, and too late hath shee deceined me: the one my folly, the other her fashion. Yet doubt I not, but if thou enioy thy life, the substance of thy valure shall excede the hapynesse of her vengeance, which will be no lesse welcome to thee, then long wished of me. But alas, Well may I hide my griefe, but neuer heartily forget it: well may I awhile brooke it, but for no long time beare it: for that the want of my comfort, will cut off my dayes, and the doubts I conceyue bring mee in greater distresse, where if thou were present, my minde would be satisfied, and in spight of Fortune, a ward all mischances. While the King continued in this great agony of minde, the Quene entred: who likewise vnderstanding the losse of her Sonne, began to adde another Stratageme of griefe, bewaying her motherly affection, both in teares and heavy complaints, which to appease, the aged king thus began.

Madame, the honour of a noble minde, is tried in aduersitie, when as the extremitie of griefe, is conquered by patience of the minde. But the minde being impatient, and not kept within the lymittes of a moderate gouernment: the least Crosse that happeneth, is too waightie in paine, when the sence is farre too weake in reason. It pleased the Almighty to giue vs a Sonne, in whom wee receiued no little comfort, and by whome, our fame hath bene mightily aduanced. And now to trie how we can bryde a moitie of his displeasure, he hath caused some accident to happen, to keepe him from vs, whom we most of all desired, yet not deuying vs of hope: but as to our griefe we haue lost him, so to our comfort we shall see him againe. In meane time, let vs tolerate this sharpe affliction, on his two Princely Children, whotill we enioy the sight of the Father againe, shall with their noble Mother, comfort our sorowes, and we also endeavour to abate their moenes. So one with another shall beare an equall share of aduersitie, and be partners also in good Fortune, if any chaunce to happen.

Thus the King and the Queene remained, one while in a perswasion of patience, an other while wholly vanquished with the force of their griefe: whose Passions I referre to the iudgements of those, that haue tasted the honour of fame, and hatred of Fortune. Returne we now to Sypridos, who in this time had caused his Brother to ride with a Chariot to the Forrest, that the Princesse might be brought to the Court, who being placed in the Chariot, and ready to depart: Shee gaue so heauy a farewell to the place, as well for her Lord Don Edoard, as misfortune of her Children, that her attendaunts seemed as it were doloured in sadness, to see the Princesse overcome with such sorowe. Being come to the Citie of London, the Citizens, who at her coming from Greece, did not enely excell in varietie of deuises, but also discovered their ioy in singular Triumphes: Now with a sorrowfull disposition, they betrayed the terrour of their losse, and yet with an intermedled shewe of ioy, to assuage the dolor of the Princesse.

When she came to the Court, she perceiued the great change, of wonted dispositions, both in the King and Queene, as also in

all

all the nobility, who likewise vnderstanding the mishap of the two young Princes, altogether begin a world of lamentations. The king dismayed of any good hope, the Queene displaying in double extremitie, the Lords and Ladies, both in apparell and iesture, wholly exclaiming on the cruelty of Fortune. The Inhabitants throughout the whole Realme of England, whose delight was many times, to sit and conceiue maruailous opinions, of the no lesse knightly, then famous adventures of the Prince Don Edoard, nowe sit sighing, wringing their handes, and pulling theyr bennets ouer theyr eyes, vsing as it were in a generall voyce amongst them: Ah, none but we unhappy.

The King hauing thus passed this night in no lesse griefe of minde, then sickly assaults of his aged person, (the Queene, and the Princesse Florida, equally considered) on the morrow he determined to send a knight of his Court, named Argolant, Sonne to the Duke of Horten, and Brother to Traendos (who also had beene amorous of the Princesse Florida) to the Emperour Palmerin, at Constantinople, to let him vnderstand the late misfortune of England. He being ready to depart, as he rode thow London, the Streets were adorned with blacke, and the Citizens arrayed in black and mourning manner, bringing him to the Sea shore, where he tooke shipping and departed.

The Princesse Florida became very feeble of person, in so much that there was doubt of her good recovery: but God not suffering her to ende, as she willingly would, gaue her strength againe by little and little, and comforted her selfe best, when she was soorth of all company, which caused many knights to leaue the Court, to liue in search of the strayed Prince Don Edoard, who pitied her case, and his absence. Thus remained sayre Florida, as chaste Penelope, to her absent Lord Vlisses: not saying one iote in true and faithfull Loe, though she dayly continued the aduersitie of her life. And she likewise sayled not in constant loyalty, but preferred the terror of death, before the falsifying of his faith to his Lady. Justly fulfilling, that neither distance of place nor extremitie of Fortune, could part in sunder their mutuall coniunction of spotlesse amitie.

C

Chap-

¶ What the Sauadge man did with the two young Princes, how pittie vanquished the bloody tiranny, he was minded to execute on them. And how Argolant arriued at Constantinople, at what time the Emperour Palmerin was at the Triumphes, for the birth of faire Polinarda. Where declaring his tidings, the Emperours Sonne Primaleon, presently tooke himselfe to trauaile, beside diuers Noble personages, who followed in the search of the famous Don Edoard.



Returne we now to the Sauadge man, who as the History declareth, hastened to his Caue, with the two young Princesse in his armes, his Wife there alwaighting the returne of her Husband, hauing in her armes her owne childe, being about the age of one yere. He being come to her, presented her the two young Princes, declaring that all that day, hee had found no other Dinner for themselves and the Lyons, then thoe two Infauntes, whom hee willed might presently be dismembred in pieces, for that his hungry stomacke required to haue meate. The Wife, in whose heart motherly pittie, excelled Sauadge crueltie, for that in deede, Women by nature, doe beare a more estimation of mercie, then is requisite in men: shee bled such kinde perswasions with her Husband, as also finding the meane to prouide other necessaries for him, that shee saued the liues of the Infants, and satisfied the hungry appetite of her Husband: so that lovingly shee became the second Mother, and as carefully nourished them, as had they bene the fruits of her owne body. Where we will leaue them a while, to God and good Fortune: being not

forgetfull of Argolant, whom we left sayling toward Constantinople. After so long being on the Seas, as is required in so long a iourney, he arriued at the famous City of Constantinople, on a Sunday morning, where he perceiued as gallant Triumphes in preparation, as were at the renowned mariages of Primaleon, and the Prince Don Edoard. The cause whereof was, for ioy of the birth of the Daughter of the Prince Primaleon, whom the Emperour gaue to name Polinarda, in token that her beauty & good Fortune, should excell any Lady liuing at that day. In honour of this ioy, the Triumphes were proclaimed: which procured the assemblie of many noble personages, among whom, was Tarnaes the King of Lacedemonia, Polendos, King of Thessalie, and Belcar the Duke of Duras: the presence of these States, being no small honour to the Emperour, and fame to the Court of Constantinople.

Argolant, attired all in blacke Armour, rode through the Cittie, and in short time arriued at the Emperours Pallace, where beholding the valiant behauiour, of each couragious Knight, to winne honour in this Triumphe: with an heauie sigh he called to memory, the vnlooked for sorrowe of the Court of England, which was adozned with no lesse grieve, then was the Emperours Court with gladnesse. Which perswaded such an vnkinde conceite, in the heart of the gentle Knight Argolant, who esteemed the loyaltie of friendshippe, to serue as an especiall remedy to the afflicted mind: that he feared his nelues, were not of force sufficient, to chaunge theyr exceeding myght, albeit his expectation was deceiued in that point. Then approached he the place where the Emperour sate at dinner, where with no lesse ciuilitie of iecture, then modest behauiour of personage, hee bayled his helmet, offering to kisse the Emperours hand, which might not be permitted, in that he was ignorant of whence hee was. Which he perceiuing, beganne in presence of them all, to declare his Ambassage, not forgetting the place and person, which in euery point hee handled with duetie. The Emperour well noting the sadde tale of Argolant, the misfortune of his Sonne Don Edoard, and heauinesse of the English Court, he withdrew himselfe fro the Table into his Chamber, where as



patiently as his griefe would suffer him: he beganne to vse his speeches in this manner.

I know not whether the Gods in granting me a prosperous course in youth, haue determined to ruinate my dayes in mine age, or fortune holding me then in fauour beyond al men hath allowed my misfortune now to be aboue any: if so it was appointed, I would my life had ended then in tranquillitie, when I feared no entanglement, then prolonging my dayes in hope of an answerable age, to be subiect to the miserie of time, and abiect from the honour of a noble heart. Well, what hath passed to thy high good hap, and what is present, to the small anguish of thy heart, let the remembrance of the one, extinguish the flame of the other, and the crueltie of chaunce, wipe up the inestimable praise of thy conquest. These and sundrie other heauy complaints were vttered by the Emperour, & the triumphes were now of small estimation, for that thow the whole Court, these sorrowfull tidings had stricken a sad-daine alteration. But most of all in the heart of the noble Primaleon, who understanding the misfortune his deere friende and brother Don Edoard, stood not to cast doubt of this matter or that accident, either how fortune might fauour him, or endamage his iudaine enterprise, but as couertly as he might, departed from Constantinople, resuing father, mother, wife, children, Landes, liuing and all: that the loyaltie he bare to his friend, might declare he preferred his safetie, before his owne solace. And that his deedes might be answerable to his good intent, he vowed to trauate the courie of his, to search in every desolate and unfrequented place, but he would finde his deere friend Don Edoard. Whose welfare he as heartily desired as his owne life, for that he had found the like true and vnspotted affection in him: when through his valare, he defended him from the Giant Gatherin.

The Emperour was aduertised of his departure, by the vnaccustomed penitencie of his espoused Lady Gridonia, as also by the great sadnesse of the Emperesse his mother: whom neither the gentle perswasion of the Emperour might satisfie, nor endeavour of her Courtly Ladies, might winne any meane to pacific.

cise. Who vsed the more diligence in the matter, onely for the affection they bare to the Princesse Florida, by whose vertuous and Princely behauour of life (which had not onely rauished the mindes of all, but obtained the good liking of euery one, in that vertue is the chiefe ornament of noble or ignoble:) they were all encouraged to attempt any occasion to set the Empire at quiet.

When the Emperour perceined her great disquietnesse, that the speeches of the Ladies, as also of himselfe, were bestowed to small effect, he beganne to vse commendations of the valiant attempt of his Sonne Primaleon, in that his courage of minde urged him to so famous an enterprise. Desiring her to consider the losse of the Prince Don Edoard, their Sonne in law: and that the good fortune of Primaleon, might bring inestimable comfort to all Kingdomes in Christendome, so that the honour of his hardie attempt, deserved rather a generall reioysing, then such sad complaints as they seemed to bewray.

The knights who had likewise bene partners in the Triumph, and bare great good will to the Prince Don Edoard, as also to the noble Primaleon, withorew themselves to their lodgings, and armed themselves presently, posting with all speed they might after the aduenterous Primaleon, some taking one way, and some another. As well those that vsed the Triumphes for their Ladies sakes, as also those whose redoubted behauour, hath both wonne the honour of the field, and dignitie of fame. All with a mutuall conient, aduentured liuing and life, that the report of their deedes, might manifest the resolution of their knighthood.

And because you shall haue knowledge, who behaued themselves most worthy commendations, in this no lesse famous then rare aduenture, I will bewray some of them to you, that your gentle opinion of their paines, may yeld them in recompence part of a condigne praise. The first that took the courage to hazarde himselfe in the field, had to name Polendos, King of Thessaly, Sonne to Frisol, the King of Hungaria, accompanied with his brother Belcar. The next, was the Prince of Allemaigne, son to the Emperour Trineus, and named Vernar, who

honoured the beauntie of faire Bazilia, youngest daughter to the Emperour Palmerin, to whom he was newly married, and stood in doubt how to proceed, least Fortune should not be so favourable to him as he expected, which caused some slacknesse in good will. Nevertheless, after he had considered the honor of Mars, and sharpe conflicts of Venus, how the one was lasting in fame, and the other linked to an effeminate fancie, hee determined to follow his Companions, driving into oblivion the pleasant concepts, that hee often esteemed in his best beloved, using this persuasion with himselfe, That hee which vanquished himselfe with the vanitie of fancy, and yieldeth the libertie of his will to fond affection, is more meete to handle a Lute, then a Lance, and better to court a Lady, then deserve the braue name of a Captaine. In this persuasion hee departed, intending so knightly an opinion in his minde, that the honour of his name should expresse his noblenes, and balace of his bounty, be esteemed of his fayre Bazilia.

Thus was the city of Constantinople, (as it were desolate,) wanting the noble knights which were thence departed, which caused the Emperour to visite the chiefeest places in the Citie, to the no small content of himselfe, & joy of the Citizens, who little minded the absence of the noble Gentlemen, in that y<sup>e</sup> Emperour so lovingly vouchsafed the his company. The departed Argolant fro the Court of Constantinople, toward the realme of England, bearing answer of his Ambassage from the Emperour, to his Lord & Soueraigne, how y<sup>e</sup> losse of the Prince Don Edoard, was blazed in the courts of diuers noble Princes. As in the court of Armes King of France, his Cousin, & Son in law to the Emperour of Constantinople, as also in the court of Recinde R. of Spaine, in the court of Pellagris, the Souldan of Niquee, with the noble Maiortes, & many Princes more, to whom the losse of the English Prince, was as grievous as to himself. For proove whereof, the employed paines of diuerse noble mindes might remaine as witnesse, who walked the Forrests and unknowne passages in many Countreyes, that Martiall behauior was neuer more esteemed, the it was during the search of this Strayed Prince. Argolant being departed from the Emperour,

after

after many dayes Trauell, hee arrived at the English Courte, whereas to the King Fredericke, the Quene, and the Princesse Florida, hee deliuered the answer of his Message, who were greatly satisfied in hearing the Noble Attempts of the Grecian Knights, by whose endeoured paines, they had good and prosperous successe.

## CHAP. VI.

How Primaleon endeavouring himselfe in the diligent search of the prince Don Edoard, happened to meet with the Funeralls of the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia, Daughter to the K. of Lacedemonia, the which she solemnized for the unkinde repulse she sustained by the Prince Don Edoard.



Now Primaleon determining his secreete escape from the Citie of Constantinople, as I haue before declared, commaunded his Esquyre to bring his Courser and Armour, and closely to convey all his Equippage and furniture behind the Storckhouse of his Sister Florida, for that none should be privie to his intent, but only he. The Esquyre failed not to accomplish the pleasure of his Lord. And being come to the appointed place, he armed the Prince, except his Shield and Helmet, which he bare himself, so mounting on Horsebacke, they both departed, vowing to rest in no place, till hee might recover some wished tydings of his Brother and friend Don Edoard, without whom he would neuer returne to Greece again. Long he trauelled, before he encountred any aduenture, wozthy the rehearsall. But at length arriving in the bottom of a valley in Lacedemonia, wh<sup>er</sup> the Sun was declined to the west parts, he was discouraged, for that the night was obscure vpon him, beside thicknes of the trees, made his passage more tenebrous, the else it would haue bene, so that very hardly he could finde his way.



Standing on still, vsing his minde with severall Imaginations, at least to the comfort of himselfe, and ioy of an Esquire, who sorrowed to see his Lorde so suddenly perished, he espied a gailant troupe of Ladies, bearing in theyr hands lighted Torchies, eache one well mounted on a lustie Steede, attyred all in blacke, and framing their voices to great lamentations. Prima-leon surprisid with great grieve of minde, to see such fayre Ladies weare the habite of Mourners, toke the boldnesse of himselfe, to beholde what they were, and drawing himselfe somewhat nearer to them to them, perceiued the chiefe Lady and Mistress of them, her Palefry trapped with black Veluet, her Vesture of the same, and foure ancient Knights in the midst, bearing a Funerall, couered all with blacke Veluet. Prima-leon perceiving their heauy lamentations, and that they were nothing abashed at his presence, but helde on their Journey, as though they had not seen him, he toke such an earnest desire in himself, that he must needs demand the cause, why they mourned in that manner. When presenting himselfe before the chiefe Lady, whose faire face had sustained a great blemish, by the abundance of teares that issued from her Eyes: in this manner he prepared himselfe to give the Onset.

Faire Lady, impute it not to flattery, that I call you so, nor to folly, in so much as you are so, but rather of your nature cannot admit your own praise, for the perfection of your mind, being answered in perswasion of my vnfeigned meaning, which esteemeth you, as I haue said, albeit farre inferior to that I could say. It is no more my desire, then vnder duety I may demand, nor my Sute no other wise disposed, then may stand with your Honour to reple, and my honesty to request, I being a friend to all Ladies, and foe vnto none, insomuch that a moitie of their desires, should rather hinder me by mishap, then dishearten me by any danger. So that in briefe my request is thus: why you frequent this solitary place, accompanied with these who are equal with you in sorrow, although not worthe comparison (it may be) in Soueraignty: And why you accompanie this Funerall, with such heauie complaints: considering the pleasures of the Court were more fit for your delights, then the vncomfortable

abiding in this solitary Desert. Thus much on my knightly Oath avouching, that knewe I, you had sustained iniury at the hands of any, I would eyther cause him recount what he hath done you in his honour, or constrain a reuenge on his dearest blood.

The Lady hauing well noted the courtesie of Prima-leon, as well his knightly offer, as the good opinion shee conceived of perswance, satisfied his Request, with this gentle replye. Sir Knight, lesse I iudge you not to be, and more (being ignorant of your estate) I may not terme yee: Nevertheless, if I sayle in the one, let friendship yet forget the other. Let suffice, that I am one whom Fortune hath iniured every way by mishap, and aduantaged no way by no good lucke, so that to answer your demand, I am the onely Lady, who may compare with all for misfortune. As touching my aine, which may in some sort vryge you to remember my meaning: when you are not ignorant of me: vnderstand that I am calld Pandritia, daughter to the famous King of Lacedemonia, and although at this present in this vncomfortable Wildernes, yet am I gouernesse of his Princely dominions. And hereby in a Castle, I passe forth my vnfortunate life, hauing no other company then these whom you may behold, who beare part in my mone and mishap. As for the estimation of my life, the ioy is so small, and the grieve so well acquainted, that I am rather desperate to ende it, then desirous to endure it. And now I make my returne vnto my carefull Castle, the which, for that it is not vnprouided of faire Ladies, such as you see here present, I haue learned it the Garden of Damsells, wherein I receiue as much solace by mourning, as any Lady tasting my mishap, can obtaine in mirth. I am sure if you haue trauelled Countreys, you are not ignorant, how the King Ternaes my Brother, who after the death of my Father, was enchaunted into the Castle Des noires Oyseaux, vntill such time as by the valiancie of the famous Prince Don Edoard, he was deliuered out of so grievous perplexitie. This Prince afterward remaining with my Brother in Lacedemonia, so long as him pleased, where were such Triumphes ordayned, as might gratifie such an Honourable personage, I

(the

(the more unfortunate I) conceived so good opinion of his valiant behaviour, that I chose him as the honour of my life, and Patron of my Love, esteeming all other but base in respect of him, and hee to be as farre beyond them all, as I was deceived farre from my hope. But my Cake was dowe, and my labour spent to losse: for that long before he had vowed his service to the faire Damosell Florida, to whom he was Espoused, when he departed forth of this Kingdome. Thus was my Love despised, my selfe disgraced, and thoe honoured with that Gallant, whom I loved too soone, and lost too late: which causeth mee restraine all Courtly companie, betaking me to the sorrows of my folly, that mist the good happe, I desired in faith. And yet beholde, in remembrance of this unkinde Don Edoard, I haue reserved this Picture, as the chiefe ornament of my Chamber, imagining the person present, when God knowes he is farre enough from me in distance of place, but farther off in good will of heart. Yet often doe I blame the Picture for the Masters sake: whom had I but halfe so much power ouer, as I haue of this Portrait, hee should well know, my Love is more then he can possibly desire, and so much that he can neuer liue to deserue. And as you may perceiue this Picture adressed in manner of a funerall, which (being deprived of all hope) I meane to solemnize in this sorrowfull manner that interring it in my comfortlesse House of Sadoes, I may forget the fond Love I bare to such an vngentle friend. Which so is accomplished, this carefulle companie, as you may perceiue, are ready to assist me in this heavy trauele. And therfore courteous knight, if you please to see my Funerals, and Picture of that ingratefull Prince Don Edoard, liue hope the Hearse, and you shall beare witness, what I haue giuen you in words. Pandritia concluding her discourse with an heavy sigh: the Prince Primaleon lifted vp the Hearse, where he beheld the liuely Portraite of his deere friend Don Edoard, so Artificially draught, that he doubted whether he had bene slaine thereabout or no, for vnder his head were two Pillowes of blacke Meluet, and on either side of the body two burning Tapers, which enforced the Prince to turne his talks into teares, and there he bare Pandritia company for all that night, endowing her Comfort,

but

but her beloved sorrows would not suffer any persuasion in this case. He would not Primaleon depart: but bare her company into another valley, & what time faire Aurora began to shew her cheerefull countenance, & cloare Phoebus hastened to his chariot, to run his course about the earth. Through this valley ran a blacke and ugly River, beiet with high Trees round about, which made it very obscure and vnpleasant to the beholders. In the midst of this River was an Ile, wherein was placed an ancient Mansion, conered ouer al with black: which declared small pleasure to those who remained there, & great occasion of sadness to any that should come there. The chamber of his solitarie place, were adorne with many pictures, as witnesses of the great misfortunes that had happened to many Louers: as the tragicall motion of Hero and Leander, the sorrowfull end of Piramus and Thisbie, accompanied with the mournfull Philomela. Then next her stood the vnhappy queene Dido, hauing the blade of Eneas pierced through her harmlesse heart, the workmanship so cunningly ordred, that you would haue iudged the fresh blood to drop from her faire body. Medea, Progne, Arcana Fedra, & Arife, were all worthily painted, with the whole discourses of their lues. There stood Orpheus wrapped about in the fire of hell, hauing in his hand his harpe, which in times past could recouer him his wife Erudice. Acteon bare company with these unfortunate louers, in the shape of an Hart, and forne a paces by his owne hounds: by him stood Narcissus, and diuers other, which I omit for breuitie, as fearefull to be too tedious. Pandritia being now come to the doore of this foresaid mansion, she caused the damosels to beare in the funerals of the Prince Don Edoard, then turning to Primaleon gaue him this farewell. Sir knight, lo here the rest of my misfortunes and last Sepulcher of my heavy trauels: I shall request your company no further, for that none must enter here, but he that vowes to be partner in our peniuenes, and can abandon the name of all pleasures, to expresse his mishaps in bemoaning my funerals. She entring, the knights closed the doore, so that Primaleon had not the meane to answer her, neuertheless, he staid to heare the sorrowfull clamors they made within: which was no lesse irksome to his heart, then had he scene the perfect interring of his brother Don Edoard.

At last hee departed, by setting his course into such places, where he thought soonest to heare tydings of his strayed friend: So trauayling on in good hope, we wil leaue him a while. And declare moze at large, the cause of Pandritia her great mourning: as also what fortuneto the two yong Princes, nourished in the Caue of the Sauadgeman.

CHAP. VII.

The cause why Pandritia led this solitary kind of life. And how the yong Prince Florian strayed from the Caue of the Sauadgeman, and by Sir Pridos was brought to the English Court, and what further happened.



The occasion why Pandritia bare such great affection to the Prince Don Edoard, is at large declared in the Booke intituled Primaleon. Now that after the Prince had deliuered her Brother Tarnaes out of the Enchaunted Castle, wherein his Father had deuised the way to enclose him, and she came home with him into Lacedemonia.

Shee oft seemed to moue good liking on her behalfe to the Prince Don Edoard, but hee by no meanes could direct his fancy after her course, for that his promise before passed to the Princess Florida, withheld the consent she gladly looked for.

To auoyd therefore what might happen, he refused to vse her company in talks, as before hee was wont, which very much displeased Bellagris, who was Soldā of Niquee, after the death of Molerin, his eldest brother. For hee vnderstanding the secret affection and great good will, that she entirely bare to the noble Prince Don Edoard, aduentured to trie fortune, who so fauourably prospered his intent, that vnder the tytle of Don Edoard, he entred his sisters Chamber: where acquainting him-  
selfe

selfe with her, to his desire, and her deceit: time brought thour pleasure to a goodly Sonne named Blandidon, of whom here after, you shall be moze largely certified.

But Pandritia giuing credite to her selfe, that the noble Don Edoard had receiued the estimation of her honour: grounded such firme affection on him, as was moze then we ought, and moze then he would grant. So keeping his Picture in his absence, and vnderstanding of his supposed death, she vsed this solemitie in honour of his funerall, and attyzed her selfe according as became her misfortune, departing from the Garden of Damoselles to her House of sadnesse, supposing there to end her life with the losse of her loue. So remaineth she in place, where she shut the doore against the Prince Primaleon, who is likewise endeuoring himselfe in his aduentures. Returne we now to the two yong Princesses, whom the Sauage mans wife had carefully nourished vp, as had they bene her olone Children, she could not haue vsed moze motherly compassion.

In short time they grew to such estate, that their whole delight was to hunt the sauage Beastes in the Forrest, where vnto Florian had moze affection then his brother Palmerin, for he vsed euery day to beate his boiue, and leade the two Lyons, that hee became moze expert then the Sauage man himselfe: and thus for ten yeares space liued these two yong Princes, beloued well of him, who before was their greatest enemy.

It fortuneto on a Sunday morning, the Princess Florida, walked forth into the Forrest, as well to sorrow for her Lame, as to lament the estate of her infortunate life, hauing accomplished what she desired she returned. At this time Florian wandred about the Forrest with his Lyons, which he tyed vp, meaning to take by force the first wilde Beast that should appeare in his sight. Vsuing long stayd without any prey, he determined to returne: but at last he cpyed a mighty Hart in a groue of trees, whereat he let flie an Arrow with such force, that it passed cleane through the body of the beast. The Hart feeling himselfe wounded, presently tooke flight: which he perceiving, let slip the Lions after him but all in vaine, for the swiftnesse of the Hart outreached the speedy pace of the Lyons.

And

## The first Part

And Florian strayed so farre, that he had lost the sight of the Lyons and the Harte, as also the way to the Sauadge mans house: which caused him to wander in heauinesse, till the darke Night ouershadowed him, when he espyed two Shepheards making a little fire of stickes to warme them, because the Night was exceeding colde. Florian being there arriued, hee sate him downe by a Riuer side, in the very same place that his Mother brought him into the World: where sitting a pretty while, he espyed a Knight come ryding, attyred in blacke Armoz, spotted with red, bearing in his Shielde, the figure of a Gryffon, with a certaine Poesie, which was vnknown to any, his Lady and himselfe excepted. This Knight was named Sir Pridos, who still aduanced himselfe in the search of the noble Prince Don Edoard, and herode very pensieue and sad: till casting his eyes vpon Florian, his heart beganne somewhat to conceiue a maruellous inward Joy, for that his countenance bare the perfect Image of his noble Father. Whereupon Sir Pridos, fell in diuers demaundes with him, which Florian very courteously answered: So that Syr Pridos fell into great desire, that he would beare him company to London, where in the Kings Court, he would present him, among the number of those, whome renowned fame did euer accompany. The young Prince Florian, more desirous to leade his life among the braue Gallantes, then so to passe his time so solitarie among the vnfrequented places, in the Wilde Forrest, gaue his consent, and iournyed with Sir Pridos to the English Court, where he presented him to the King, cloathed in the Skinne of an Harte, a thing of no small admyzation to the King: yet did he receiue him very graciously, in that he supposed him to be one of the Sonnes of the Princesse Florida, vnto whose Chamber he walked with this young Prince, and in this manner beganne to salute her. Faye Daughter, among all the grieuous berations, that afflict your weake Nature, loe, heere the Honour Syr Pridos doeth present you withall: who in searching your Noble Lord, and my Sonne, hath found this Jewell, which hee offereth to you, as the frutes of his labours. And trust me, the oftner I beholde his swete countenance, the more I conceiue Opinion of his Alliance to my Sonne Don Edo-

## Of Palmerin of England.

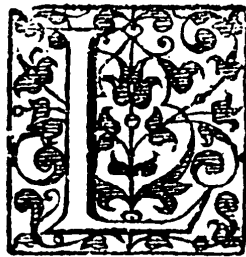
Edoard. The Princesse Florida was not a little pleased with so glad a present, in signe whereof shee embraced her Sonne, albeit vnknown, and went straightway to Sir Pridos, who certified her, that he found him sitting in the same place where the Sauadge man came with his two Lyons, and toke her two Children from her.

This moued Florida, to suppose him for her Sonne, but Fortune would not as yet suffer a perfect assurance, that either hee should know her for his Mother, or shee him for her Child: Nevertheless, shee gaue him the name of Desart, training him vp in the company of a young Gentleman, Sonne to Syr Pridos and Attaida, named Don Rosiran, De la Bronde: with whome I will leaue this gentle Prince Florian, to know what the Sauadge man and Palmerin did, seeing Florian returned not as he was wont.

## CHAP. VIII.

How grieuous the Sauadge man tooke the suddaine losse of the yong Prince Florian, when he perceiued the two Lions returne all washed in the blood of the Hart that they had slaine. And how the young Prince Palmerin, walking to the Sea side to seeke his Brother, accompanied with Siluian, the Sauadge mans Sonne, departed thence in a Galley, with Polendos King of Thessalie, who sailed to Constantinople, where he presented them to the Emperour. And how a Damosel mounted on a white Courser, and bearing Armes, arriued at the Court of Constantinople, where she presented the Emperour, with a Letter sent from the Lady of the Lake, which gaue him at large to vnderstand, what should happen to the yong Prince Palmerin.

Long



**L**ong expeded the Sauadge man the retinne of Florian, and seeing it waxed darke, and his hope deceiued, hee was out of measure disquieted for the absence of Florian, whose company, both for expertnesse and towardnesse in his exercise, was more commodious to him, then his griefe would suffer him to expresse: wherefore hee concluded

thus, young Florian was some way distressed, and himselfe utterly disdained of Fortune. But in the morning the Lyons returned home, all washed in the blood of the Hart which they had slaine: when the Sauadge man perceived their guide wanting, and they thus pollnted, what with anguish of heart, and cholericke perswasions in his desperate mood, hee slew both the Lyons, and entred into such a disquietnesse, that nothing could asswage his extream passion.

The young Prince Palmerin, sustaining great sorrow for the absence of his brother, walked to the Sea shore, accompanied with Siluan, the Sauadge mans Sonne, where sitting comforting each other on the greene bancke, as nature moued the one, and nurture the other, they espied a Galley to strike on shore, where they twaine disported.

Polendos King of Thessalie, being chiefe Captaine in this Galley, who likewise directed his iourney for the finding of Don Edoard, commanded to cast Anker there: because for recreations sake, he would walke vp into the Forrest, as also to finde swete water, whereof he was greatly destitute. Palmerin and Siluan, seeing the King landed, and fearing least they should sustaine some harme, in that they were ignorant what they were: determined by courteous demeanour to let them passe by, so should they haue no cause to molest thom, but to depart friendly perceiving nothing but courtesie.

Polendos beholding the beautie of Palmerin, with the no lesse ciuill, then comely behauiour of them both, desired them to goe aboad with him, and hee would preferre them in such place,

place, as they should be raised to honour, and finde all things equall to their gentle natures. Palmerin, whose fancy could hardly brooke that sauadge kinde of life, but rather desired to acquaint himselfe with Courtly exercise, gaue grant to that which the King had requested, albeit Siluan vsed intreatie to perswade him to the contrary: but when hee saw all meanes that he deuiled, could take no effect, as well for the great love that was betwene them, as the inticulate affection he alway bare to the young Prince, he bowed neuer to leaue his company, either for misery, misfortune, or any accident whatsoever. The King no lesse delighted in minde, then greatly contented with the manners of Palmerin, (his seruants being returned with such necessaries as hee sent them for,) went abroad, and hoyled Sayles presently, committing themselves to God, and the mercie of the waues. So riding at their pleasure, the King desired Palmerin (if he might lawfull craue so much) to certifie him, as concerning his birth and Parentage, which the courteous Prince right willingly gaue consent vnto, declaring his life with the Sauadge man, whom he certainly supposed to be his Father.

After many dayes sayling, they arriued at Constantiuople, which at that presnt was endued with as great heauines, as in time past, it surpassed in Princely delights, the Port of Hauen, likewise being nakedly prouided of ships, for that the Ocean and Mediterranean seas, had scattered y whole Pray in search of the Noble Primaleon, yet in all this time, no wished tydings heard. The Emperour vnderstanding y Polendos was arriued at Constantinople, walked down to the Hauen, to accompany him to his pallace, where being come, and hearing by him no tidings of his sens, became very sorrowfull, as he had continued so a long time. Then Polendos to put the Emperour out of this fande conceyte, presented vnto him the young Prince Palmerin, accompanied with Siluan. Who casting his eyes on the young Prince, entred presently into such an alteration of ioy, as had he bene his own sonne Primaleon, he could hardly haue bene better contented. Wherefore hee commaunded a knight

to conduct him to the Princesse Gridonia, willing her to giue him as seruant to the faire Polinarda, whose beauty was so excellent, her feature agreeable in euery lyneament, her modestie so decent, & vertue thereto appaunt, that she was rightly termed the Phoenix for beauty, & most famous among Ladies for bounty. The Emperesse and Gridonia, receiued the yong Prince, albeit ignorant of his estate, yet as becomen their honors, respecting who sent him, & went straightway to present him to the faire Polinarda: who in time caused him to aduenture his good fortune among the pikes of mischances, and hazards of most danger, onely for her loue, which he bought as dorely, as she gaue it daintily: for p'se, let suffice what hereafter ensueth. But attend a strange & rare euent: On a suddaine was arriued in the Emperours Pallace, a comely Damosell, mounted on a Courser, as white as a Swan, bearing Armoz also answerable to the same in colour, her haire spread ouer her shoulders, which gaue cause of meruaile to all that saw her. She being come into the presence of the Emperour, to the no little admiration of him, with all those that beare him company: she drew forth a Letter, deliuering the same with such Maiestie of behaniour, as was mete to gratifie such an honourable personage: which the Emperour deliuering to one of his Heraldz, comanded it to be read in publike audience: who vnsealing it, began as followeth.

*To the Inuincible, and most renowned Palmerin,  
Emperour of Greece, Salutations.*

**R**enowned Emperour, at whose name the enemy quaketh, and the Subiect reioyceth, in whose Court, your name is the riches of the valiant, & friendship the reward of any that be venterous: I wish thy state as permanent, as thy deeds hath beene puissant, and the vnanimie of thy friends, to prosper in longanimitie of happy Fortune. The yong Prince that thou hast receiued into thy Court, albeit thou maist think incredible, yet shall finde it certaine (when Time doeth will it must be): it is descended of two the most puissant Kings in Christendome, and himselfe as victorious as cuer was any. Where.

Wherefore, let his entertainment be such as his honour doth deserue, and his estimation according as his valure doth declare: for he it is must needs defend the Diadem of thy dominions, when it shall remaine destitute of wished defence, and he it is that shall make thee lauded of Fortune, and loued of thy enemies as of thy dearest friends. Likewise, the two most infortunate Princes of the world, shall enioy their libertie by him, in which many haue, and shall attempt, but he alone is ordained to finish this Exploir: for that he is aboue all in the Fauour of Fortune, and he shall excell all in the Nobilitie of Knighthood. Thus leauing the summe of my promise to your gracious triall: I wish the noble Emperour of Greece may liue in eternall honour and felicitie.

By her, who is more in dutie, then by pen  
or words, she can any way disclole.

The Lady of the Lake.

The Emperour not este amazed at this happy aduenture, then contented at the glad newes of this noble yong Prince: desired of the Damosell, who might be the Lady of the Lake. To who the Damosell replied: Noble sir, she is altogether vnknewne of me, but thus much I dare boldly assure your Maiestie, that what her Letter presenteth, shall be perfozmed in this worthy yong Prince. These speeches ended, the Damosell departed: which the Emperour perceiuing, sent for the yong Prince, vpon whom vsing many chearfull countenances, he desired his noble Gentlemen standing by, that he might be feared of all Palmerin, after his owne name, for that he thought he should be the better esteemed of his Lady Polinarda, in whose fauor he was greatly esteemed, as the wearing of his Ladies colozs, he might giue some cause of belife. But the Emperesse and Gridonia, still lamented the losse of Primalcon, whose absence from the court, was chiefeft cause of their sorow.



CHAP. IX.

Of that which happened to Vernar the Prince of Allemaigne, in his search of Don Edoard, and of the controuersie betwene him and Belcar, the Duke of Duras, in the vnfortunate Forrest of England.



**H**auē declared to you before how Vernar the Prince of Allemaigne, and sonne to the Emperour Trineus and the faire Agri-gola, left the Court of Constantinople, when Palmerin departed to seek the Prince Don Edoard. In which affaires, this gentle Prince likewise, behaued himselfe so worthily in many rare exploytes, that his fame remaineth as a perfect type of his honour in the Allemaigne Chronicles: for which cause, I leaue to rehearse them, returning to that which happened this Prince, and is in my charge to speake of. It fortunēd that hee hauing spent no small labour in trauaile, arriued at last in great Brittainē, where he had good hope to heare some newes to end his labour.

And being entred into this vnfortunate forrest, ryding very sadly, for y<sup>e</sup> his mind was somewhat distracted with remembrance of his faire Bazilia, at length there met him a comely knight, very brauely mounted, attyred in gilt armour, whereon was wrought many Leopards by Artificiall deuiſe, yet crazed and broken by some rough encounter that he had bene in. And in his Sheld he bare a Serpent, in a field of Silver, trauailing also in the search of the strayed Prince, as likewiſe to meet with such who professed the magnanimitie of minde, to combat in the honour of their owne good fortune: for which cause he left the

the Ladies in the English Court, among whom he was called The Knight of the Serpent. Passing by the Prince Vernar, he vſed ſuch courtesie vnto him, as beſeemed his knighthode, and was meete for ſuch a Noble person: but he altogether vſing his thoughtes, on his fayrest Bazilia, had no leysure to beholde the knights courtesie. The knight of the Serpent suppoſing, that eyther hee willingly would not perceiue, or ſeing, ſcorned the gentle Salutations he vſed: reuiued the Prince Vernar, with these speeches. Syr knight, mee thinkes it might stand with your Honour and profession, and no blemish to you any way, but bounty euery way, to haue thought well of him, who meant no ill to you, and to haue gratified him like a Courtier, that disdained to paſſe by you, and not vſe courtesie.

The Prince being diſturbd with of his dumps, whereto hee had more pleasure, then to the knights gentle proffer, betwene Jest and earnest thus answered. Sir, I may be offended without blame, and iudge your behauior to be very bold, that would conſtaine me to ſpeake, not hearing your ſpeech, when I had more matters in minde, then would ſuffer me to ſee you, much leſſe to heare you.

Syr (quoth the knight of the Serpent) this excuse is farre too ſimple, in denying both your Hearing and Sight: for though ſtatelyneſſe would not ſuffer you to ſee me, yet the leaſedneſſe of my ſpeech doth iuſtifie you might heare me. Vernar hearing the large language of the knight, which might quickly moue him to anger (being before ſubiect to ouer much Melancholie) thus thorſly replied. Syr knight, you haue better licence to depart, then leaue to ſtay here: for that my minde is troubled with ſuch matters, as rather requireth your abſence, then alloweth your preſence. Giuing you farther to vnderſtand, that your compa-  
nie is ſo much to my heart, that the triſe which may ariſe betwene vs, will be to your great harme. When the knight perceyued, what ſmall eſtimation Vernar had of him, thus roundly replied. Syr, either your byrning vp, hath bene ouer churlish, or your preſent behauior ſcant currant: in that you eſteem courtesie, more like a Carter, then a Courtier, and Ciuile demour, more fitte to holde the Ploughe, then fine qualities to ho-

nour your person. I esteeme it both meeke and modest, that you expresse such a frivolous motion, as doth repress abruptly the nature of friendly manners: for greater danger is in concealing what I desire, then damage in concealing such a simple demand. I desire rather (quoth Vernar) mine owne ruine, then I should be so simple to graunt what you request: In so much, that it is expedient none should know my thoughts, save onely excepted, that must be pyne to what I thinke. Wherefore, esteeming thy Banhoode as small to commaund, as thy might to compell, I will bury my Thoughts with my Death, before I intend to satisfie thy desire. So leaving off words, they fell to their weapons: where shiner their speares and Armour, they encountered with such Braverie, that they were glad to take breasting: when the Knight of the Serpent beganne thus to charge him, I believe Sir, you finde this Skirmish more hote, then your concealed thoughts may be esteemed wisdom, and that your Estate standeth in a more sharpe hazarde, then your mute conceits are of force to yeld you any sure helpe: which I hope shall shew you the difference, betwene a carelesse Groom, and a Courtly Gentleman.

Sy? (answered the Prince Vernar) your opinion is as yet farre beyond my purpose: for that you are as wide from your hope, as you are scant wise to put your intent to hap. Persuade your selfe thus, that the courage I haue to your foyle, and secretie I esteem of mine owne faith, shall ere long, give an absolute answer, whether I shal perish in my determination, or thy selfe preuaile in what thou demandest: which shall craue no longer forbearance, then my Sword hath taught you manners, that against my will would teach me your kinde of modestie. When fell they to a fresh Combate, which was more dangerous then their first Assault: when being wearied with Swords, they endeououred by wrestling to suppress the strength of eache, but the equal behaviour of their force was such, as the losse of their blood was great: yet their valorous hearts would conceiue no faintnesse. The Knight of the Serpent had such a desire to knowe against whom he fought, that once more he began to vse faire speeches to him. I perceiue Sir, you more esteeme your earnest opi-

nion

nion, then you stand in feare of the losse of your life: which were more honour for you to deliuer vnto knowledge, then such a seuerer chaunce, should happen vnto either of vs: yet is my minde so affected, that I will know both your secret and your selfe, or it shall value my life. As for my life (quod Vernar) I am so much the more willing to lose it, by how much I perceyue you zealous to know what you shall not. Wherevpon they beganne againe the third time, albeit, more faintly then before passed: which caused their Esquires standing by, to enter into many heauy complaints, especially the Esquire of the Prince Vernar, who as thus framed his mone. Oh infortunate Emperour, who is ignorant, that Fortune at this time will deprive him of his toy.

The Knight of the Serpent noting these words, presently conjectured that it was the Prince Vernar, sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, against whom he entred Combat, and how grievous the Emperour Palmerin would take the matter, if he heard of the losse of either of them both. Beside, himself would be loth, any way to displease the Gentle Prince Vernar, wherefore for more assurance of him, he beheld his broken Shield, wherein he perceiued the deuise of his Lady Bazilia, coloured all in Purple, with the halfe burning heart in the midst: and on the Armour of the Prince, was her Portraite curiously drawne: which gaue him perswasion that was hee, to whom hee thus vsed his speech. Sy? Vernar, my minde constraineth me to give ouer the fight, being right sorrie that I haue continued it so long: for that the Princesse Bazilia is cause of your sorrow, which you feared to utter, and now by my selfe declared.ardon your friende Belcar, who is so hartly sorrie, that he rather desireth the death, then to see you in any distresse. The Prince Vernar, perceiuing that it was his friend Belcar, ran to him, embracing him in his armes, giuing him a thousand thanks, that he had so found the meane, to cut off their quarrell. When taking their Helme to to they Esquires, who did their best to binde vp their wounds, they rode to the Citie of Brique, which was not far from the Forrest, recounting to each other, what had happened them in their search of the Prince Don Edoard.



¶ How Eutropa gaue Dramusiande to vnderstand of the arriual of a Knight at his Castell, whose valiant behaviour should put him in some cause of feare: which words made him presently to fortifie his Castell, to auoyd anie perill that might annoy him. And how Primaleon (who was the Knight Eutropa spake of) came to the Castell, where he Iusted against his deare Friend Don Edoard, in which Fight they had knowledge of each other. And how in hope to purchase his deliury, he ouercame Pandare and Alligan, two monstrous Giaunts, entring into Combate likewise with Dramusiande, who ouercame Primaleon, and tooke him prisoner into his Castell:



Ramusiande, still retaining in Captiuitie the Prince Don Edoard, was on the sudden aduertised by the Enchauntresse Eutropa his Aunte, that there should arrive a certaine Knight at his Castell, whose valour and prowesse should goe nere to attainte his Honour: as also inforce his life to stand in some hazard. He giuing credite

unto her perswasion, and likewise somewhat carefull to auoyde the imminent perill, fortified his Castell with such sure defence, as he thought sufficient to award the Enemy, and maintaine the intent he had bowed to prosecute. For feare some times maketh a man to become wise: that else in a desperate mode, would set the world on wheels.

So Dramusiande albeit famous in his deedes, yet fearefull to be surprised by any danger: vseth the industrie of his Aunte Eutropa, with the helpe of his friends, whose courage he knew equall to their wise foresight, to be reuenged on all knights, for the

the death of his father Frenaque. Which the better to accomplish, he entertained into his Castell, two hardy and fearefull Giants, the one named Pandare, the other Alligan, whose stature were no lesse in ugliness, then their strength cruell in resistance: and because he would haue euery thing in due preparation, he determined (when neede should be) how he would haue his Castell defended, as thus. The noble Prince Don Edoard against all knights that came, should haue the first honour of the fight, next to him the Giant Pandare, should giue a fresh assault, which twaine, if they should faile by misfortune (as his Auntes words made him doubt of some mischaunce) stout Alligan of the Obscure Caue, would giue them their last welcome: whose countenance was feareful to all that saw him, and whose might was cruell, to all that should hap to see him.

Fortune bending her bowes on the couragious Primaleon whom she had earst aduanced to honour, and now determined to unhappinesse: directeth his course to this vnfriendly Castle, where he should end his trauailes, with his owne thraldome.

For after he had left the solitarie Pandritia, in the realme of Lacedemonia, he travelled through Burgondie, where happening among other knights, to come in place of a Triumph, himselfe brauely mounted, all in greene Armour, which colour somewhat asswaged his extreame Melancholies, and in his Sheld on a ground of Azure, a Sea brauely painted, he bare for his deuice.

At this triumph he bare alway the honour of the day, so trauiailing on in his iourney, hee arrived in this manner at the Castell of Dramusiande. And being come nere the Castle, the Noble Prince Don Edoard came forth vpon the bridge, very valiantly mounted, his armour all blacke, whereon was a resemblance of little flames of fire, tormenting a Louers heart, which was engrauen in the midst of his brest. His Sheld was answerable in colour to his Armour: in the midst whereof, was curiously painted the Image of a sadde conceited mind, so artificiallie framed, that the beholders might easily iudge the heaviness of the knight, to be according to

to his sad Deuise. Primaleon no lesse abashed at the brauery of the Castle, then to see a knight so well appointed at Armes, began in this order to vse his speeches. *Syz knight, I would be so happy, or else so hardy, to enter this Castle, without offering you Combate, as well to satisfie mine owne desire, as loath to offer you any rude demean: desiring you, if my request stand not with reason, to let passe your choller, vpon a knightly courtesie.*

Don Edoard perceiuing the comely behaviour of Primaleon, of whome hee was as ignorant, as the other was from knowledge of him, shap'd him presently this answer. *If you knew Sir knight, the hard entertainment, and unfriendly vsage, of all knights whatsoeuer that enter this Castle, you would be loath to spend speech in such a fond request, but rather vse speed in a safe retire: for as in other places you may increase your fame, so in this place you may stay to sorrow for your follie. If these persuasions cannot withhold your intent, but that rashly you will runne into a continuall trouble: knowe this, you must first a ward my puissance, who resisteth knights that seeke wilfully theyr owne perill. But admit, that fortune denie me the victorie, and seeke your ouerthrowe, vnder title of your valiance, yet are there such hazards to passe, as doth discourage me to thinke, and will dishearten you to trie.*

*Trust me Sir (answered Primaleon) your words were sufficient to make me feare, if I bare the minde of a ccauen, and not of a Captaine: but heereof assure your selfe, that neither your perswasion of daunger, nor the doubt it selfe that is to come, can cause me feare at a shew, or shall make me fainte at a shadowe. For this estimation I alwayes beare with mee, that the more harde the Aduenture is, the braver will be the victorie. So that sir, take this for a certaintie, I haue settled my hope, which neither you nor any can remoue, but onely Death it selfe.*

Thus concluding their speeches, they couched their speares, and began a sharpe encounter, wherein they behaued themselves so brauely, that they who stood in the Castle, beholding them, did no lesse commend theyr Valour, then the good intent eache other shew'd in hope of victorie. At last, so fiercely they met together, that they were both vnhors'd, which very much displeas'd Primaleon,

maleon, beeing neuer in all his life cast swyth of his Saddle before: then drawing his sword, he thus approached to the Prince Don Edoard. *Sir knight, I will trye, if your strength in vsing your sword, be equall with y<sup>e</sup> force I haue felt at your speare: which hauing made mee impatient, beeing neuer before ouerthrowen, doth increse my courage, to know him that hath done that at this instant, which in many Attempts before could not be done by any.* Don Edoard, no lesse offended at this mishap, then amazed at the courage he perceiued in his Aduersarie: began to suspect, that the knight against whom he endeuored himselfe, was his Brother and friend Primaleon, the cause that moued him to thinke so, was the equall state of their strength, which in time past he had often proued: of which doubt to resolute himselfe, he thus began. *Syz Primaleon, as it may rather be termed Presumption, then politique foresight, in him that would strue to be your matche, who are about all in Manhode: so in mee might it be accounted rather a foolish hardinesse, then any friendly hardie, to doe that in a brauery, which should excede the limites of Mountie, and to strue with my friend, whom in dutie I ought most to honour.* Primaleon hearing these friendly speeches: presently knewe that it was his Brother Don Edoard, when casting his sword to the ground hee embraced the Prince with these louing salutations. *If my heart were able to thinke, my tongue to speake, or my selfe to make manifest by any meane, not only the inward ioy I conceiue, but the high good fortune I doe esteem of my trauels, then should my deare friend and brother perceiue, my health is his happines, and Primaleon liueth no longer, then Don Edoard reioyeth. Long haue I desired this happie day, and long haue I sought this good lucke with daunger: albeit neuer so prosperous as to heare of you, yet now the most fortunate of all men, to come where I see you.* Don Edoard would haue answered againe, but the Giant Pandare brought word from Dramusiande, to break off theyr talke, and come to him, whose commandement the Prince obeying, entred the Castle. Primaleon offering to goe in with him, but Pandare beeing Armed, with a great yron Pace in his hand, and a very strong Shielde, thrust him backe with these churlish wordes.

Stay Sir Knight, I meane to see what thou canst do, to deliuer thee out of my hands, as also how thou can warrant thine owne life. Primaleon beholding the great pride of Pandare, with the dishonour he offered him in words, as also the disdain he tooke to be thus controuled, gaue him this answer. It is more difficult for me to answer thee, as thy wordes require, then dangerous to correct the boldnesse of such a proud Kiuall: and I scoone to vse wordes with such a Peasant, whose maners are so far from honestie, as the Paister can neuer come in knowledge thereof: whose Plumes I may pull with such a due rewarde, as he shall thinke my warrant better then his owne wisdom, & that I can escape his bzags, when his owne brauerie may hap to lie in the lurch. Pandare vexed with y reply of Primaleon, not knowing whether he were best to answer him with words or deeds, at last sent him such a blow with his yron Pace, that Primaleons shield shiuered all in pieces, which grieved him, standing in some need, & made his foe triumph, who hoped for his death. But he espying a part of the body of Pandare vnarmed, reacheth him such a blow in reuenge of his shield, that he began to stagger, hardly withholding himselfe from falling to the earth, & Dramusiande leaning with Don Edoard, foorth of a window in the Castell, and perceiuing the courage of Primaleon in this dangerous Combate: desired to know his name, and of whence he was which Don Edoard answered, according as he desired, giuing him further to vnderstand, that not onely in this, but in many other aduentures, hee had put his life in hazard, onely for his sake. Which when Dramusiande knewe, hee determined Primaleon for a partner with Don Edoard, and to keepe them twaine in captiuitie, till fortune sent more customers.

Pandare seeing his blowes bestowed to smal purpose, & that Primaleon returned him many shrewde greetings, flung down his sword and Target, in a great furie, pretending the destruction of Primaleon, with his yron Pace. And after many sore strokes, passed on either part, Primaleon followed his determination so well, y he had stroken off Pandares sower fingers, wherewith his Pace fell to the ground, which he stooping to recouer, Primaleon had gotten such good aduantage, that hee

had stroken off his head, had not the ougly Giant Alligan of the Obscure Caue, bene his Rescue, who stepping betwene them, thus saluted Primaleon. Say Knight, thou hast a fresh labour to beginne: wherfore withdraue thy hands from him that is conquered, and come deale with me, who hopes to conquer thee: and therewithall Primaleon, being not fully provided, receiued such a cruell blowe on the head, that it put him in some danger.

Primaleon seeing such a fearefull Enemie, and what mighty blowes he still charged him withall, he bethought him on his Friende Don Edoard, whose helpe in this fierce assault might doe him no small pleasure. Yet hee considered with himselfe, that doubtlesse he was in some neede, or so kept vnder, that hee might not assist him, else hee perswaded himselfe, he would be as requisite to helpe him, as hee ready to with for him. When hee taking vp the shield of Pandare, betwene Alligan and himselfe began a hottel skirmish, as the place where they fought, altered in colour with theyr blood, made manifest. Yet Alligan for all his rough behaviour, had little hope of any good successe, because the hardinesse of Primaleon, hadde both martyred his shield and Armour in pieces, so that he had no defence to beare off the blowes, but by the fresh and eager Assaults of the Noble hearted Prince, he brought him vnto such a lowe estate, that he supposed he had quight slaine him. Which moued him to sitte downe to rest him, for that faintnesse with losse of his blood, and wearynesse in so long continuing Battell, made him both glad and desirous of a little ease,

Dramusiande perceiuing the harde euent of this Combat, and standing in doubt that fortune by some finister meanes or other, would seeke his ouerthrowe, and so depriue him of that he looked for, and what his Aunte laboured for, Armed himselfe presently, and came foorth to Primaleon, assailing him first with these wordes. Say Knight, my friend if you please, my foe, if you dare: in the one you may finde comfort in your distresse, in the other any incurable mischiefe to beare you companie, in so great daunger. Hee thinkes' it were more honour for you to yelde, with no blemish to your knightthode, then to endure a fresh Assault, which will be to your great hazarde. So, if you esteem

esteem of my courteous offer, I will see your wounds cured at mine owne charge, and your weake estate comforted, as becometh a good knight. Primalcon well noting the honest words of Dramusiande, and fearing his faire talke might beare sauoz of a shewde meaning, made him this answere.

If sir, by the paine I haue bestowed, & sharpe encounters I haue endured, I might purchase y<sup>e</sup> deliury of my dearest friend Don Edward, then would I not only make estimation of your courtesie, but confesse my selfe during life, yours euer bound by duty. But as I iudge, you meane nothing lesse, and the reward of my trauaile desireth nothing more, so my heart is bent vnto that hautie enterprise, which if intreatie will not serue, shall be gayned perforce, and where courtesie is not esteemed, compulsion may and shall command. The oath I haue made my friend, doeth discharge my heart of feare, and the hope I haue of victorie, bids me rather die, then be banquished, so shall I abate the reproch of the world, and be true to my friend, whose safetie I tender as my owne soule.

Dramusiande at this pause, tooke occasion to reply in this manner: Sir knight, for two causes I account it honour, to vse thee courteously. The first is, that I greatly pittie the harme, which may ensue to an vnuiued heade, which doth that in a brauerie for a fashion, he is glad with bitter teares, to bemoane in folly. The second cause is, that to conquer thee, would rather discredite me, then any honour were to be gotten by the victory, considering thy vnfortunate and miserable estate, with the knightly puissance I shall bestowe on thee. neuerthelesse, to charme the proud speeches thou hast vsed, & correct the rash behaviour of thy vnstayed wit, thou shalt know, how I can tame the mallepart, & bridle those that cannot rule their owne manhood. Upon these words he laid fiercely at Primalcon, (whose debility rather required quietnesse, then such extreame strokes as hee must needs suffer:) neuerthelesse, hee employed himselfe to such nimble defence, as his weary trauaile would permit him: which moued a great compassion in the minde of Dramusiande, to see the weakenesse of the body, not agree with the inuincible courage of the heart, & would not for any thing haue

saue

saue him, as very easily he might haue done, but that hee once more would vse perswasion, which he discharged after this order. Sir knight, thou maist see I refuse the fight, more for the grieue I sustaine in thy hurt, then any feare I haue of thee, to doe me harme: in token whereof I set thee at libertie, as one more willing to doe thee good, then any desire I haue to bereaue thee of life. But if thou once more refuse my courtesie, and desperately seeke thine owne destruction, I promise thee, that neither mercy may allwaie my rygour, nor any meane beside, shall withhold me from reuenge: for that he which is carelesse of his owne life, it were great pitie but he should lose it.

Primalcon casting his eyes vpon his armour, which he perceiued al broken, & battered in pieces, as alio bathed in the blood which issued fro his wounds, then calling to remembrance his Lady Gridonia, whose heart might hardly bryoke, to heare any mischance of her best beloued, walked a little by himselfe, vsing these silent cogitations. Hadame, behold the last day of our heauy departure, & my last farewell sent you in teares with a bleeding heart, subiect to mine enemy, whom I strue to conquer, and yet rather desire the death, then lose the honoz of my name. I know our next assault is the last Tragedie of my time, which I must not refuse, if I loue my friend, and yet should forsake, remembering your losse. Well, hard is the hap, where fortune hath determined all to extremitie, which if I should seeke to shunne, would iustly repay me with deserved shame. O famous Emperoz, and my renowned father, whose thoughts are as far from my heauy case, as my troubled heart is void of any comfort: yet let this iust perswasion cut off the grieue you may sustaine, that I liued for my friend, whose freedom was my felicity, and now die for my friend, whose thraldome is my misery, which I desire to finish, ere I will shrink one jot in the honour of knighthood. Albeit the losse of my blood ouerchargeeth mee with faintnesse, and my long continuance in fight, oppresseth me with wearines, yet shall it neuer be reported, Primalcon turned backe, forgetting bounty, or left the field for one, hauing already conquered twaine: for the ioy I conceiue in finding my chiefe friend, biddeth me die ere I leaue him, so shall hee trie, if I loue him.

And

And thinke not deare father, nor my swete Gridoneia, that I forget the due tie, which law of nature willet me to keare you, or that I desperately run on mine owne death, to increace your sorrowe and continuall moones. But thinke as I haue ventured vpon the honour of your loue, so the estimation of my friend at this time commaunds me to hazard my life. Wherein, I sweare not from you in obedience, nor from my friend in amitie.

This pause had so hartened the noble Primaleon, that he ran couragiously vpon Dramusiande, with these words. Defend thy selfe, for either will I win what I haue promised, or leaue my life as a gage in thy presence. Whereupon they fell very fiercely to combate againe, which made Dramusiande to muse, to see the noble courage of Primaleon, and the weake defence hee had for himselfe, who at last through extreame faintnesse fell to the ground, as though hee had bene quite bereaued of life: which caused Dramusiande to beare him into the Chamber of Don Edoard, commaunding his Chirurgions and Physicians, to vse great care and diligence in sauing his life, if it might bee possible, because hee was greatly affected, to saue the life of such couragious knights. Don Edoard was very pensieue for the great danger of Primaleon, of whose health hee was no lesse carefull then hee had bene venturous to purchase his deliuerie. And when he was somewhat recovered, they had knowledge by Eutropa, what great friendship and good will, they should both of them in time to come, sustaine at the handes of her nephew Dramusiande, which should make a double amends for all mischances that had happened.

Thus leaue we Dramusiande, vñg all meanes he might, for the health of Primaleon, as also the recouery of Pandare and Alligan, whom at last he had brought to good constitution of body, to his ioy, and great comfort of the two faythfull Princes, who liued, loued, and reioyced in each others friendly company.

How

## CHAP. XI.

How the Emperor of Constantinople, made the noble young Prince Palmerin Knight: with diuers other yong Princes and Lords that were in his Court, whom hee honourably made Knight at Armes.



Palmerin remaining long time with his father, beloued of euery one for his princely behauiour, and esteemed with the best through his gentle nature: grew vnto such ripenesse of age, that he greatly desired the order of Knighthood, but the feare to loose the seruice of his Lady and Mystress Polinarda, (to whom he had not only bowed the duty of his heart, but the whole course of his life, in knightly aduentures) withheld his minde from so bold an enterprize. And shee likewise was ioyned with him in equal affection: but that modestie caused her to couer it, and maydenly demeanour, did moue her to conceale it, for that shee would not rashly run into the suspicion of those, who frame their whole endemour to the reproach of Ladies, neither regarding theyr honoꝝ, nor theyr owne honestie.

The Emperour remayned somewhat pensieue for his two Sonnes, seeing neuer a knight returned, that departed in theyr search, which caused him to remember the Lady of the Lake, and to comfort himselfe somewhat in her tydings as concerning the young Prince Palmerin, by whose meanes he had good hope to vnderstand their estate, albeit affection would hardly permit him, that he should trauaile.

Wherefore he being willing to content his subiects, who stood

stood in doubt of their gouernment, after the Emperours de-  
cease, hee caused a Triumph to bee proclaymed, wherein hee  
would trie, if the towardly beginning of Palmerin, would en-  
courage his minde to expect any good successe. Upon this deter-  
mination, he willed all the young Knights, who should be De-  
fendants against the other Knights of his Court, to bee readie  
prepared against the Easter holy daies, so that the rumoz of this  
famous triumph, caused many Scaffoldees and Galleries (by  
the Emperours consent) to be built round about the Tiltyard,  
which reioyced the Citizens, that they long time of sorrowe,  
should now obtaine a generall consent of established pleasure.  
The knights marched in very gallant order, before the Empe-  
rour of the Chappell, where after diuine Seruice was accom-  
plished, he returned to his Pallace, to make the young Prince  
Palmerin knight. Where first the Emperour embraced the no-  
ble young Prince, then Frisol, King of Hungaria, fastened the  
spurre on his heele: and the faire Polinarda, by commandement  
of the Emperour, did gird his sword about him. Which gaue  
such an encouragement to the valiant Palmerin, that for her  
sake he attempted such rare aduentures, as increased the honoz  
of his fame, and noblenesse of her beautie. Then were the  
other young noble Gentlemen called forth, to receiue likewise  
the order of knightthod. As first, Gracian Prince of France Ne-  
pew to the Emperour, and sonne to the King Arnedes, Berold  
Prince of Spaine, and Sonne to the puissant King Reciende,  
with Onistalde, and Dramian, his two brethren. Estrellant, son  
to king Frisol of Hungaria, Don Rosuell, Bellizart, the sonne of  
Bellar, Bazilland, sonne to king Tarnaes, Luyman of Burgody  
the sonne of Duke Tryole, Francian who was so expert in mu-  
sicke, sonne to Polendos, king of Thessaly, and the faire France-  
lina. Polinarda sonne to the Emperour Trineus, and brother to  
the Prince Vernar, Adrian, the sonne of Maiortes, Germaine,  
sonne to the Duke of Orleans, Attenebrant, son to the Duke  
Tirendos, Attremoran, sonne to the Duke Lecefin, Frisol, son  
to the Duke Drapos of Normandie, & Nepew to king Frisol:  
beside many other, who were brought vp in the Emperours  
Court, being some of them well nurtured in vertuous educati-  
ons,

ons, which are chiefest required, either in Princes, or Noble  
mens children: by which, both their owne fame is increased,  
and a continuall renowne left to all their posteritie. King Fri-  
sol by the Emperours commandement, to all these gaue orders  
of knightthod, as also to Florendos and Flatir, both sonnes to  
the renowned Primaleon. These matters thus dispatched,  
they went vp into the Hall, which was very sumptuously ado-  
rned with cloathes of Gold, where euery Knight was placed at  
dinner, according to their estate and noblenesse of birth. The  
dinner ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Emperour, with  
the Emperesse, the Princesse Gridonia, and the faire Polynar-  
da, walked to the place where they should beholde the Try-  
umphes. And the knights hauing euery one appointed himselfe  
as the exercise required, came riding very brauely into the Tilt  
yard, of whom Palmerin was chosē chiefe Defendant, which  
what did stomacke the sonnes of Primaleon: till perceiuing the  
whole day was ordained in his honour, which moued them to  
quietnesse, submitting themselves vnder his puissance, to shew  
their boldnesse and magnanimitie.

CHAP. XII.

How the Noble and couragious yong Knights, beganne the  
Tournament, each one behauing himselfe very valiantly.  
And how two Knights arriued there among them, attired  
in greene Armor, who behaued themselves brauely, in the  
presence of the Emperour.





The knights being all entred within the Lists, and the Trumpets sounded to begin the triumph, Palmerin who was appointed to begin the first Just, gave curtisie to his Lady Polinarda, and to himselfe thus opened his present thoughts.

By good Lady, whose beautie is the prize that allureth me to the field, & whose curtisie, is the honour I strive to attaine: let but your favour remaine assured, and I dare warrant my selfe the victor: for as you are above all in beautie, so shall I by your bountie, conquer all mishances. Wherewith hee couched his speare against Libusan of Greece, enduring a brave Combate, till at last hee taught Libusan to sit his horse better. Palmerin nothing dismayed, but toyng that hee had conquered one of the chiefest knights of Greece, which greatly pleased the Emperour, and his Lady Polinarda, as also the whole company of knights, whose eyes were partners of this gallant exploit. The Prince Florendos encountred with Follane, and his brother Plarir, with Attenebrant, the Blacke Knight, whose valure the one against the other, was no lesse chcerfull to the beholders, then delightfull to themselves. Gracian and Tragandor, brake their speares with such violence, that horse and man were sent to the ground. Berolde, Onistal, and Dramian, ran against Trufiande, Clariball of Hungaria, and Emerolde the Faire: but fortune was so adverse to the three first, that they were all dismayed, and the Steede of Onistal, had one of his fore legs broken. Next them Don Rosuell, Estrellant, and Bellizart, received the Countie Valerian, Archillagus, and his brother Guendolin: whose strength was farre too weake in resistance, and therefore bare dishonour forth of the field. Francian, Dridan, Tremoran, Germaine of Orleans, and Lnyman of Burgondy, met ioyntly with Crispian of Macedon, Foruolant, and the strong Flavian: yet all unhorse, except Tremoran, who kept his saddle valiantly.

Thus

Thus was the first Encounter very gallantly discharged, to the no small pleasure of the Emperour & his Nobility, as also the Regardants, who gave great commendation to the hautincie of this 1. Exployt. Libusan of Greece, somewhat offended at his unfortunate fall, was remounted by his fellows, & entred the field, to reuenge him on his enemy, but Berolde of Spaine, receiuing him at the point of his Launce, charmed his bold attempt, with such knightly behaviour, that he was esteemed for one of the chiefe knights in the triumph, as the rest of his doodes hereafter, will shew he deserued no lesse praise. Then Tituball, the Red Knight, Medrusian, the Fearefull, Tracandor, Trufiande, Trofoliant, Clariball of Hungaria, and the puissant Frovolant on the one side. And of the young knights, were Gracian, Frisoll, Dramorant, Onistalde, Estrellant, Don Rosuell, Bellizart, Suyman of Burgondie, Bazilliart, Francian, and the Prince Florendos, all falling to wassling, where they behaued themselves, both with pollicie, and diuersitie of subtil sleights, that the Emperour and all the Ladies, took great pleasure to behold them: supposing that the report of this famous Triumphe, would call home some of those knights, who were in the search of the two stayed Princes. So that in brieft, the honour of Palmerin, and the other noble young knights, was comended of every one: especially of the saye Polinarda, who gave her seruant Palmerin no small commendations. The Emperesse and Gridonia somewhat sad for Primaleon: yet reioyced to see the towarde behaviour of young Palmerin, with all the knightes of his traine, who had almost forced all the other out of the Lists. But on the suddaine, entred among them two knights brauely mounted, and attired all in greene Armour, who running against two of the young knights, brake their speares very valiantly. Then laying handes to their Swords, they dealt such knightly blowes amongst them, that every one was diuinen into great admiration. Palmerin perceiving the hardines of these two knights, and doubting least his traine should be endangered by them, bolued himselfe to his Lady Polinarda, and rode forward, vsing these speeches to himselfe: It is not sweete Lady, time that I should dismay my selfe,

selfe, hauing your person before mee, whose sight is sufficient to conquer any proud enemy: But it is that time, wherein your name shalbe eternally honored, and your knight esteemed worthy so good a Mistresse.

So aduancing him to one of these strange knights, who was called of euery one, the knight of the Sauage man: he looked on the deuice in his Shield, which was, a wild Man, leading a couple of Lyons in his hand. After he had well viewed the knight, he ioyned Combat with him, which was so fiercely handled on either part, that all which had passed before, was farre incomparable to this fearefull assault.

The Regardants, seeing the equallitie of their strength, could not iudge to whom victory was likeliest, which caused the Emperour to meruaile, desiring that they might be parted but themselves would not thereto agree in any wise. While they twaine thus egerly dealt with one another: Platir set vpon the companion of the knight of the Sauage man, who was soone brought vnder, by the puissance of Platir, so all the other knights were forced out of the Lists: Tremoran, Luyman of Burgondie, and Bellizart excepted, who were faine to be carried forth, they were so sore wounded.

The Emperour perceiuing the rough assault, betwene Palmerin & the knight of the Sauage man, was so overcome with doubt, that he scaut knewe what to say, for that he esteemed this Combate, the best that euer he sawe in all his life time, not comparing the fight which himselfe had, with the Giant Dramaque, nor his Encountring with Frenaque in England, neither the Combate betwene him & Frisoll in France, for the contentio about the Picture of the Emperesse Polinarda, much lesse esteeming the hardy aduenture, betwene Primaleon, and the Prince Don Edward, giuing the onely praise of all, & above all, to the inuincible courage of these twaine. The Emperour perceiuing it drew towards night, and feared the endamagement that might come to either of them, sent commandment to leaue off, and fight no more, but they desirous still of victorie, would hardly agree, till the Trumpet sounded the retreat, that euery knight must hasten vnto his Captaine. Then the two Greene

knights

knights (because they would not be knowne) departed secretly that way they came, and the Emperour with all his knights, departed to his Pallace, to a sumptuous Banquet, that was prepared for them, euery one forgetting the anger that was betwene each other at the Turnament. The Banquet ended, the knights fell to dancing, and Palmerin somewhat bashfull to speak to his Lady Polinarda, courted Dramaciana, daughter to the Duke Tiredos, and chiefe Gentlewoman attending on his Lady and Mistresse. The prince Florendos, because he would not straine ouermuch cutesie, took his sister Polinarda, with whom he thought he might lawfully be so bold. Platir, chose Floriana, the daughter of Ditree, and Peace to Frisoll of France. Gracian desired Claricia, the daughter to king Polendos of Thessalie. Berold Prince of Spaine, delighted in Onistalda, daughter to the Duke of Normandie. Bellizart, requested Deiesla, daughter to the king of Sparta. And Francian, was amorous of Vernande, daughter to the valiant Belcar. Thus euery one, after once Courting his Lady, fell to dancing, and so ended their pastimes for that night.

The Emperour departed to his Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin, and the two noble sonnes of Primaleon, who with the Emperesse Gridonia, and the faire Polinarda, all generally gaue great commendations to the braue behaviour of the young Prince Palmerin. But the Emperour was somewhat offended, that the two Greene knights were so departed, without knowledge from whence they came, or what they were: but as their courage made manifest, they were two valiant approued knights at Armes, and deserued the reward of honour, where euer they came. Thus reioyced the Emperour, for that in his Court, remained the flower of all Chualrie: both in the young knights, who neuer tryed themselves before, as also the courageous Palmerin, whose hardinesse would giue place to no hazard, which made the Emperour famous, and themselves enrolled in the booke of eternall memory.



CHAP. XIII.

How on the next day after the Triumphes, a Lady arriued at the Emperours Court, declaring of a Shield which was sent from the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, to the yong Prince Palmerin : and was taken from her, by the Knight of the Sauage man, who kept the same in the Forrest of the Cleare Fountaine, vntill any Knight durst aduenture to fetcht it from him. And how many Knights enterprised to winne it, but lost their labour, till Palmerin came, who brought it away with him.



**P** the morrow after the Tournament, the Emperour accompanied with King Frisol, and all the other young knights sat in his great hall, giuing such commendations to their late taken trauell, that they esteemed themselues highly honoured, to finde such curtesie at the Emperours hands, euery one wishing they might haue gained knowledge of the two green knights, that behaued themselues so worthily. To brake off their talke, there suddainly entred befoze them, a Damosell attyred after the English fashion, in a Robe of Veluet, and about her middle a skirt of Gold : and her face endued with no lesse beautie, then her garments were adornoed with sumptuous brauery. When shee had well beheld all the knights, and sayling of the person she sought to finde, bending her knees to the Emperour, thus vsed her salutations.

Hoft renowned Emperour, whose name is no lesse honored then your deedes held worthy of immortall memory: pardon the rude entrance of a bold maiden, and attend the discourse I shall deliuer to your Maiestie. The great and Sauadge  
Magitian

Magitian, named the Sage Aliart, of the Obscure Valley, who hartily wisheth your continuall happinesse, in faithfull oath of his obedience, kisseth the hands of your Imperial Maiesty. And because your highnesse hath but lately conquered by much sadnesse, to the no small grieue of your Courtly assistants, as also himselfe, who is your vnknown subiect, he promisseth your losse shall be recovered to your toy, when neither Fortune shall let it, nor any mishap auouch the contrary. The cause of my coming was to present you with a Shield, which by your Maiesties hands, should be giuen to the famous yong knight, that in your Triumph won the honour of the day, and bears the title of perfect knighthood as his iust desert. But as I haue often heard yet dare scantely credite, A tale of more noueltie, then importing any truth : that your lawes did reuenge the iniuries of Ladies, and that your knights in such causes would aduenture their liues. Tell it may be so, but I finde it not so, or perhaps my misfortune denies it should be so : for that I haue safely trauelled through many a foraine Coast, and found rescue of diuers noble knights, in euery straunge Countrey, till happening into your dominion, where I least suspected doubt, and there, too soone I fell into extreame daunger : which I must eyther admit to mine owne mishap, or to such vnkinde knights, as deny to helpe faire Ladies, in so great a hazard. For the Shield I had in charge to deliuer your Maiestie, & the reward of that knight, whose desert is meritt, is taken from me, by a knight in greene Armoz, who bearing in his Shield, a Sauage man, leading two Lyons. And thus he willed me to certifie the knight, whose valure & worthinesse hath deserued this Shield, that he will meete him within these thre dayes, in the Forrest of the Cleare Fountaine, where, if he meete him not, or some other knight for him, to fetch that away, which I haue unhappily lost, vndoubtedly he will beare the Shield away with him. For this cause did I so circumspectly behold your knights, to try if any Fortune had bene so good, to know that couragious minde, for whom I entred my trauayle. And thus hauing done my ducie, I reserue the rudenesse of my discourse, to your gracious pardon, whose wisdom will accept the simple declaration,

on, considering that Maidens are seldome acquainted with eloquence. The Emperour pondering on the damosels words, with the friendly message of the Sage Aliart, whom he neuer heard off befoze, sent her to the Emperesse, and the Princesse Gridonia who receiued her so honozably, as the hope they had in her glad tydings, encreased their comfort. Upon these newes, diuers of the knights determined with themselves, to goe fetch the Ladies Shielde, resolving them thus, that if it were their fortune to winne it, the honour were inestimable, that they shoulp gaine by so bzaue a victorie. Whereupon Clariball of Hungaria Emeralde the Fayre, Crispian of Macedon, Flauian, Rotandor Medrusian the Fearefull, Trofollant, and the prouid Foruolant, who were no friends to the Emperour, but came to the Tournament to seeke reuengement of ancient malice that they bare vnto his Maestie, for that certaine of their Predecessors, had felt the force of his furie. And a fresh spight was engendred, because the young knights had giuen them such a great disgrace befoze their Ladies: wherefoze they would pursue the knight of the Sauage man, and win the Shield from all the knights that should come after them. When they were come to the fountaine of the Cleere Fountaine, they beheld the shield, hanging on a Tree hard by the Fountaine, and the noble knight the Sauage man, there ready to defend it. Foruolant toke the courage to giue him the first assault: who being set beside his Saddle, had his shield and helmet, hanged on the Tree, in signe hee was conquered. He had not long staid, but Crispian of Macedon, Clariball, Emerald, Flauian, & Rotandor, bare him company, whose shields and helmets were likewise placed, as vanquished. Trofollant seeing the hard hap of his companions, & somewhat angry at the haughty courage of the knight of the Sauage man, thought to haue done more then his strength would permit, & so was dismounted, with his horse vpon him. Hauing recovered himselfe on his feete, he drew his sword, and began a fresh encounter. At which time Palmerin, accompanied with diuers noble knights, as Gracian, Dramian, Florendos, Platir, & the rest arrived thereto, & saw Trofollant sent to his conquered companions whereupon the Prince Palmerin, began in this maner. By de-

fire

fire is sir knight, neither for gaine or gloze, but for friendly affection I beare you, to bind up your wounds, which are as grievous to my sight, as to you who seele them. Yet not respecting more friendship of you, then I desire to find at the hands of mine enemy. The knight of the Sauage man, not staying for his answer, thus shortly answered. Sir, if the apparance of my griefe, take such desire in you to do me good, you may do as you shall find occasion, & I remaine the more deepe in your debt. But I iudge you are either ouersond, or else forgetfull of your selfe, to offer such friendship to a stranger, who doth neither desire it, nor can any way deserue it, you being as I suppose, rather come to slay me, then salue me. Sir (quoth Palmerin) the estate I see you in, doth command me to vse this speech, & constrains me (if I might) to be your succour, neither fearing what you can doe, or falling one iote from that I should doe. But to tell you why I come, is to desire you by intreaty, or cōpel you by force, to restore a shield againe, which you haue disloyally taken from a travelling Lady. Considering you might diminish your honour if you should deale with her so vngreatfully, & seeme an enemy to knighthood, in not regarding to helpe the wrong of any injured Lady. The knight of the Sauage man, beholding the great courtesie of Palmerin, & esteeming his words to be spoken for his aduantage: both conquered by his bzaue behauiour, as also the inward affection that did naturally moue him, gaue him this answer. I haue often heard (Sir knight) that wordes can more deeply wound, then weapons, & that courtesie can compell, where cruelty may neuer conquer. Such hath bin your high good fortune at this time, & such is the knightly demeanour that I haue seene, as your gentle language hath entred, where your lance cannot, and your friendship won more, then either feare or force may constrain. And seeing you haue take the paines to find me out, and haue done more at this instant, then befoze could any, I desire you the shield, as best worthy to weare it, both for the gifts of Nature, which flourish in you abundantly, & gracious Nature which doeth adorne you nobly. With these words, he embracing the P. Palmerin, presently mounted on horsebacke, & departed. Then returned the Prince accompanied with his knights, who were greatly delighted in beholding the Shield: In the midst where of,

where, in a field of Azure, was placed a very faire Palme Tree, so liuely framed, as if it had bene a naturall Tree: and that which was most wondered at of them all, was a certaine Poesie in Letters of Gold, engrauen round about the sides, so darkely placed, that none in the company could iudge what they should meane. At length they came to the Court, where the Emperour was newly risen from supper, who being certified of all that had happened, was very much displeased in mind, because his whole desire was, to haue had knowledge of this valiant Knight of the Sauage man.

Then taking the Shield, and looking very earnestly vpon it, hee sent for the Damosell, to know the Poesie that was engrauen about it. The Damosell answered, I would most gracious Emperour, it were in my power to fulfill your request: but being as ignorant therof, as you or any other, I must desire your gracious pardon. When she saw the Emperour had giuen Palmerin the Shield, who vowed to vse it as became a Knight at Armes, Making her obeysance to his Maiesty, and al the other Knights, shee presently tooke her leaue, and departed. And the Emperour determined among all his Knights, to consider more largely on this strange aduventure.

## C H A P. X I I I I.

In this Chapter is largely described, who was the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley: that sent the Damosell with the Shield of the Palme Tree, to the Emperours Court, to bestow the same on the valiant yong Prince Palmerin.



Because you shall see resolved, who was the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, and why hee learned himselfe by such an vncustomed name, marke what this Chapter shall giue in relation, and then consider of his proceedings afterward.

When

When the D. Don Edoard left the realme of Lacedemonia, and as occasion willed him, to stay in the Empire of Greece, after he had deliuered the king Tarnaes, forth of the cruel enchanted Castle, he entred a Galley, and so departed on his voyage. Not long had they bin on the seas, but that a Damosell suddenly chanced into the Galley, not vsing speech to any: but taking the principall Oxe in her hand, turned their passage quite contrary to another Island, where Don Edward being landed, deliuered a comely knight out of the hands of diuerse cruel tyrants, who were leading him to abide an vnnmercifull death.

The Damosell conducted the Prince, to the habitation of Argonida, where being friendly entertayned, and staying as a welcomed Guest, such conuersation was betwene them, that they had two goodly Sonnes, named Pompider, and this Sage Aliart, of whom wee meane to discourse. Whose Grandmother being expert in the Science of Magicke, nourished this Aliart out of popular conuersation, that though she meane, hee became maruailous ingenious of wit, and very skillfull in her diuinish exercise, so that he was esteemed the notablest Magician in all the world, whose memory being not touched in the booke of Primaleon, I will declare in what order hee passed his whole life.

This Aliart, reputed of no lesse fame then learning, was not inferiour to any, but bare the estimation aboue all, so that none durst offer him iniurie, albeit he deserved it, nor none would contend with him, they stood in such awe. He seeing himselfe honoured of the mighty, when they durst doe no other, and loved of the most part, for his excellent cunning, beganne to exercise himselfe in Partiall employes, which showed him to be the Sonne of the renowned Don Edward. And hauing receyued his knighthood at the handes of the Giant Garatie, he behaued himselfe as famous in his exploits, as he was esteemed singular in his practised Arte. And then hee vnderstood his fathers imprisonment, with the noble Primaleon, in the Castell at Dramusiande, who by the skill of his Aunt Eutropa, endeoured to haue all the flower of Chivalrie in like captiuitie. But albeit the imprisonment of these Princes, was vnknewen

to all the knightes, that laboured continually in their search: yet this Aliart was so well acquainted with the matter, as they that kept it most secreete, for that his Arte gaue him the power to knowe, what was done in all Countreyes in the world. For when the Grecian knights, whose affection to these two Princes, caused them to leaue their native Countrey, and were happened into the vnfortunate Forrest of great Brittain, which was bzauely replenished with many couragious hearts, as also sundry gallant Ladies, preparing many hard aduentures, there were very fewe escaped, but for the most part, were all lost in this vnfortunate search. Among which noble mindes, was Recined Prince of Spaine, Arnedes King of France, Maiortes, and Sir Pridos, whose absence was greatly bemoined in the English Court. The Princes Belcar, & Vernar, Dirree, and the Soldan, Bellagris, with the renowned Polendos. All these for the honourable affection they bare to the strayed Princes, left their kingdomes and signories, and unhappily were taken prisoners in this cruel enchanted Castell, which was great griefe to their friends, and inestimable sorrowe to their well peopled Dominions. When Aliart had considered all these vnfortunate accidents, enterprised so honourably, and falling out so unhappily, he determined to hazard himselfe in the search of his father, and to try his strength against the Giant Dramusiande, whose force he little or nothing esteemed, but bare a great desire to his aduenture, which could no way be finished, but by his meanes onely.

In this mind he departed to the Valley of Perdition, which was named so, because all the noble knights were there lost: and there he determined to make his habitation, to follow his studie, and prouide remedies against diuerse mischances that were like to happen. And because his nature desired to be solitary, in that his bringing vp was forth of all company, he builded him a litle ffortresse betwixt two great high mountaines, which kept the light of the Sunne away by day, and the Moone in the night season. This dwelling he called the Obscure Valley, but others feared it, the Valley aboue the Clowdes: the entrance whereof could not be found by any, as Aliart caused the

Giant

Giant Trabollant, to know to his cost, with his son also, who was Lord of a faire Castell in a Welley nere adioyning, which Aliart had newly erected, & garnished within, with many faire Bookes, where spending his time very long in studie, at last, he got the meane to be called Sage. Thus liued the Sage Aliart, in this Obscure Volley, often vsing to the Castle of Dramusiande, bemoining the misfortune of the knights, which he could no way remedy, till the appointed time. The often repaying of the Sage Aliart, caused both Entropa to doubt something, and Dramusiande to stand in great feare: yet could they no way hinder him, when it was his pleasure, to visite the captive princes. And as he sat one day very pensie in his study, he understood by his Art of the triumphes at Constantinople, when the Emperour would try the pong knights, that he had nourished in his Court. Against which time he framed a shield, which hee sent by a Damosell, to Palmerin of England, to beare it with him in all aduentures that he should undertake: but by the way it was taken from her by the knight of the Sauage man (whom hereafter I will disclose vnto you,) yet restored againe by the gentlenesse of language, that the Prince Palmerin bled with him. Thus remayned the Sage Aliart, expecting the time, for the deliery of the Princes, who concealed their griefes, and spent their time in silent opinions, as both their miserie would suffer them, and their litle rest inferre occasion. Yet neuer fallig one iote in amitie, though they had a world of woes, to constrain them to it.

## CHAP. XV.

How Belcar and Vernar, after they were cured of their wounds they had receiued one against the other, arriued at the Castle of Dramusiande, accompanied with Polendos, King of Theffale, where after Combate entred betwene them, they were all taken prisoners.

Venar



Erna Prince of Almaine, & Belcar Duke of Duras, remained in the Citie of Brique, till they felt themselves in good disposition of their health, and then they departed to London, to the English Court, disguised and unwilling to be knowne, to see if happily they might attaine the sight of the

Prince Florida.

The Princesse remaining still pensive, and therefore kept her Chamber, and they sayling of they pretended purpose, traualled thowoe great Britaine, where they valiantly reuenged the quarrels of Ladies, and enlarged the report of their redoubted knighthood, which neither time can weare out of memory, nor death it selfe by any meanes dissolve.

Proceeding thus in their aduenterous trauaile, Eutropa had gotten them within her circuite, that she was as sure of them, as had they bene in her prison, but yet let them alone awhile, to try the hardnes of their fortune. They hauing spent the day in trauaile, and the darke night ouercharging them, with her comfortable houres, they determined to take their rest at the foote of a Tree, for that they were farre from any other prison. So alighting, and giuing their Horses to their Esquiers, Belcar sate him downe, & fell soundly asleepe, but Vernar, whose minde was on his faire Bazilia, satte conferring with her Shyne, hauing no stomacke to sleepe. And that hee might the better accomplish his amorous deuises, he withdrew himselfe to a little Kitcher, a pretty way from his friend Belcar, and there what with the sweete Harmonie of the little Brydes, and the silent passions he vsed to himselfe, the gentle prince was greatly delighted.

Polendos K. of The Alie, wandring that way, by fortune tooke his place of rest, nere to the Prince Vernar, where hee heard all the louely Ditties, and sweete discourses, that hee vsed in commendation of his fayre Bazilia, being very loath to disquiet him, so to be knowne that he was so nere. But at last

toke

toke occasion by the braue inuentions that he had heard vttered by the Prince Vernar, to enter into commendation of his owne Lady, faire Francelina, and so they twaine, in this manner, passed away the weary night. In the morning, when he might easily espye the Prince Vernar, hee could not hide his presence any longer, but went to him with his salutation. I know Syr Vernar, that your amorous Passions of extreme griefe, will scant suffer your oppressed head, to enioy any gladnesse, because the remembrance of your faire Bazilia, hath vrged you this night, to bewray the sundry assaults of an afflicted minde. Whose farre distaunce from your presence, hath made you grievously to sigh, when you would gladly haue slept, whereof your friend is a witness, who is not a little sorrie to vnderstand your woes.

Vernar embracing the noble Polendos, declared the great ioy he conceiued for his company, yet somewhat displeased that any should be pryie to his Amorous complaints, which might cause him to bee iudged rather effeminate, then any way famous. While they were earnest in talking, Belcar came walking on to them, who reioycing at the sight of the King Polendos, embraced him, vsing these pleasant speeches. I care not greatly, if I take reuengement now, for the sharp assault you gaue me at the Port of Corderia, where you bare away the prize, and I the repulse, but Vernar will be loath that wee should fight: therefore let vs all ioyne together like trusty friends.

After many gratulations passed on all partes, they mounted on Horsebacke, and rode on, recounting the Aduentures hadde happened each other, in seeking the Prince Don Edoard. And Polendos rehearsed vnto them, howe hee brought the young Prince Palmerin to Constantinople, not forgetting the Letter sent by the Lady of the Lake, & was only procured by the Sage Aliart, of the Obscure Valley: which made both Belcar and Vernar, somewhat abashed, to heare the happy successe that had chaunced. In continuance of this talke, they came before the Castell of Dramuslande: every one giuing his verdict on the Brauerie and strength of this Fortresse, till at length, to put them swith of these thoughtes, the Prince Don Edoard came vpon the Bridge, in the same order as he fought with the noble

ff

Prima-

Primalcon which byged Polendos to this pause. He thinks this Castle should be invincible, if it be well provided within, of such good knights as this which wee see without. Upon this accident, the Prince Vernar prevailed by intreatie, to have the first Joust with Don Edward, when presently they encountered one another, with such large appearance of knighthood, that Don Edward loste one of his Styrops, and the Prince Vernar was unhorsed. And having recovered himselfe, he drew his sword, and came courageously to him againe, but Don Edward stayed, deliivering him these speeches. Syr knight, it may bee that your skill on fote, is more agreeable to your strength, then the foresight you have on Horsebacke, the which I would it might have beene my happer to trye, but it hath not so pleased him, to whom I am subject, for that against every knight that cometh, I am allowed but the first Exploite.

Then Belcar very desirous to enter the Combat, pacified Prince Vernar, with these few words. Syr Vernar, since the knight hath fulfilled his first, and we remaine to beginne a fresh Challenge, you may not refuse to forbear the fight, considering he hath observed his dutie in the field. Whereupon Don Edward and Belcar, beganne the second Encounter, whose hap was so hard, to beare his friend Vernar companie. Which Polendos perceyving, began the thirde Joust, very courageously, which remained a while some what doubtfull, for that they had battered one anothers Armour very much, till at last, Polendos was dismounted likewise.

Then came forth the Giant Pandare, commaunding Don Edward to goe in againe: to whose commaund he obeyed, very soze that he might not speake to the knight he last ranne with, all. So entring into the Castle, the Prince Vernar thrust in after him, to whom Don Edward presently said. Sir Vernar, your will hath ledde you beyond your witte, for that in this place you shall abide more distresse then in all your life time: you cannot fall into like danger, but he that is desperate of himselfe, would little esteeme his friends life. Vernar hearing these words, and not knowing who he was, and halfe angry at his ill lucke, made him this answer. Syr, I esteeme your witte, as little as my  
wille

wisdomme, and your friendship so simple, that I will scant impute any troth to your words: And thus understanding, that neither yet, nor any shall withstand my desire, although I buy it with mine owne death. At which words, Pandare saluted him with his face, so that betwene them twaine, was a fierce skirmish, and Primalcon leaning in his Chamber window, took great pleasure to beholde the hantie courage of Vernar, whose name being knowne unto Dramusiande, he was not a little glad of him, for that his father Trincus was also the causer of the death of his father Frenaque. Vernar so long assailed Pandare, that he had broken his sword to his hand, and his shield cleane through the middle, whereat Pandare being somewhat angry, caught him in his armes, and shaking him very soze, threw him against the ground, that it was doubtfull if he had any life left in him: where he was presently carryed into Don Edwards Chamber, where provision was made to relieve his owne estate.

Then was the Gate held open, till Belcar and Polendos were entred, when it was presently shut againe, and then came Pandare against Belcar, who receyved him very courageously, but yet was brought vnder, and carryed in to his friend Vernar. Polendos seeing hee must needs enter Combate, and that Pandare prepared himselfe against him: first summoned him with these words. He thinks it were for thy great honour, as also expedient for reserving thy health, to yelde thy selfe to mee, who rather respect mercie, then to enter fight on a man, so cruelly mangled. Doe but behold thine owne blood, and then consider of my proffered bounty, so shall thy life be saved, and mine honour reserved. Sir (said Pandare) if I should submit my selfe to thy will, thou mightst account my wit to be ever weake, or if I would stand to thy mercie, I should shewe mine owne cowardise, and no manhood: Wherefore resolve thy selfe, that I will yeld with thy death, which is the same of my desire. With that they fell to their fight, wherein Polendos prevailed so happily, that Pandare was thought past all recovery. Whereupon, the cruell Alligan came forth to defend him, who finding himselfe also to be mated every way, and frustrate hope of victory any way, he despaired of himselfe: and in fine, they were both so faint and wearied, that  
they



## The first part

they fell downe, neyther gayning the Conquest of the other. Don Edoard and Primaleon tooke Polendos into their Chamber, where to their three Patients, they both vsed wholesome and comfortable Physicke: being very sorrie, that the misfortune of them twaine, should bring so many Noble Princes, and Ad-uenturous Knights into that cruell Castell. Yet did they remaine in good hope, which they found with as good hap, in that at the appointed time, they were deliuered by a strange Knight, who was hardly knowne to any of them. Then Dramusiande went about the Cure of his sicke personnes, that they might be in good health, when any other knights should happen to come.

## CHAP. XVI.

¶ Howe Recinde King of Spayne, and Aruiedes King of France, left theyr Royall Dominions, to wander in the searche strayed Prince Don Edoard. And of the Adventure that hapned betweene them, the Black Knight, and the Knight of the Dogge, when they were arriued at the Castle of Dramusiande.



RECINDE King of Spayne, hearing the great pursuits of many Noble knights, to make enqurie of the two young Princes, Don Edoard, and Primaleon, he absolutely determined with himselfe, to trye the hazard of Fortune, if that his employed paines might compasse any good lucke. And leaving the whole Government of his Estate, to the Duke Orlande, and the Marquesse Richard, of no lesse Valiantie then true Nobilitie: Departed with no body, but his Clarke attending on him, through many Countreies, till he came to the Courte of

## of Palmerin of England.

of France, where he was Royallie and gratioously receiued by the King Arnedes. Who vnderstanding the summe of his noble determination, and being him selfe affected to those worthy Princes, committed his Kingdome to his Quene Melitia, and trauelled with Recinde, in this hautie enterprise.

After long trauell, they arriued at the English Courte, being so disguised, that they were not knowne to any, where because they could not see the Princesse Florida, they would not stay, but departed on theyr Journey. And hearing that all the knights were lost in the Forrest of great Brittain, and that they which entred there, were not sent to returne, they made theyr course that way, till mishap brought them to this cruell Castle, where on a sudden they met with two knights, excellently well mounted. The one hauing his Armour spotted with red and crim: on colours, and in his Shielde for his deuise, he bare a Dogge, vpon an Azure fiede. The other knight was all in blacke Armour, and his Shielde of the same colour, without any other deuise: these foure mette together, striving which of them should first enter vpon the Bridge. Don Edward being come soorth, and seeing them at such controuersie, sought to ende the matter with these words. Gentlemen, if you come for honour, or for zeale, to trie the magnanimity of your courage, strue not in this order, which may returne to your great discredit, but let him that is boldest first beginne: so shall you finish what I iudge you come for.

Vpon these words, Recinde touched his Speare, but the knight of the Dogge offered him this stay. Say, it seemes you neither regard ciuilitie, nor knightly courtesie, to offer mee this great wrong: who both came before you, and was prepared before you, and therefore of right ought to beginne before you. Recinde, somewhat moued at these wordes, shapd him this replie. Say, if in a brauery you sake to goe beyond mee, or in peremptory wordes, to beare the Prize away, you are farre deceived: for that wordes cannot cutface me, nor your weapons feare me, for I was first provided, and therefore will not be pvented. Don Edward perceyuing these questions were like to grow to a Quarrell, assayed once more to set them at quiet, and

thus he began. This suddaine enmitie, doineth me to a shreilde suspicion, that you come more to talke, then to try your man- hode, or rather to least, then to Iust. If you are disposed, let the other twaine come and deale with me, in meane time, you may try which of you shall be first, or last.

The knight of the Dogge being greatly vered, as well at the words of Don Edward, as also the say Recinde helde him in: charged him very boldly in this maner. Since you haue denied me my right, and offered me wordes importing great rage, know that I will reuenge this wrong vpon your person, and die in the field, ere I put vp this iniury. Wherewith they ran together very fiercely, and Arnedes prepared himselfe to the Blacke Knight, so that betwene them began a hot skirmish, wherein Horse and Men were all laide on the ground. Then rising vp againe, and drawing forth theyr swordes, they charged one an other with such mightie strokes, that their singular courage made manifest the valure of theyr noble mindes.

Dramusiande accompanied with Primaleon, Polendos, and the other knights, stood looking forth at a window of the Castle: giuing no lesse commendation to this notable combat, then the behauiour of the knights did iustly deserue. Yet none of them could iudge of whence, or what they were, sauing that Don Edward knew the knight of the Dogge, (by remembrance that he was alwaies wont to beare that deuice) to be the couragious knight Maiortes, not knowing any of the other, but comended them all, as they were well worthy: Maiortes throwing downe his sword, ioyned Armes with his enemy, to try his strength in wrestling, and Arnedes likewise reeuiued the Blacke knight, so that the blood issued forth vpon theyr Armes, & they althorough great weakenesse fell downe on the earth. Then came forth Dramusiande with his Noble Prisoners (whose promise made vnto him by oath, would not suffer them to start away) and taking off theyr Helmes, Primaleon knew the Blacke Knight, to be the Soldan Bellagris, & certified Dramusiande, that the other twaine were Recinde King of Spaine, and Arnedes, king of France: who were all presently caried into the Castle, that their wounds might be cured, and themselves recovered.

Dra-

Dramusiande vsed all the knights very honorably, refusing to take extreame reuenge for his fathers death, but supposed their imprisonment, to be punishment sufficient. And for this cause he shewed himselfe more milde & gentle, because through their helpe, he had good hope to conquer the Isle of the Lake, which was kept by the Giant Almadrago, who in time past, had taken it from him by force. In time, Maiortes the Knight of the Dog, the Soldan Bellagris, the Blacke Knight, Arnedes, & the King Recinde, had all obtained their former health, reioycing that they were imprisoned with their dearest friends, whome they traualled to seeke, & had so happily found. But the Prince Don Edward, was not obliuious of his faire Lady Florida, as also the griefe hee supposed in his aged father, whose sorrowe proceeded through his great misfortune, which in time hee had good hope should turne to as great ioy.

CHAP. XVII.

How Palmerin of England, desirous of trauaile to seeke after strange adventures, tooke the courage to speake to his Lady and Mistresse Polinarda, as loth to depart without her leaue: And hauing sustained a grieuous repulse, departed secretly from the Court, not taking leaue of any, calling himselfe the Knight of Fortune.



After that the yong knights, had made manifest their great expertnesse in many Triumphes, for the honour of their Ladies, and estimation they helde of themselves, the Emperour grewe into more pleasant conceits, then of long time before hee had vsed the like, causing euery night dances and deuises to be performed, for the delight of the Emperesse, and the Princesse Gridonia: but the faire Bazilia still refused their company, for that the absence of the prince Vernar, caused her spend her time in pensiuenesse.

Palmerin of England, affecting strange adventures, and dealing with other knights, to make proof of his knighthood, would gladly discover his earnest minde, but that he feared to procure the ill will of his Distresse. It chanced on a night, the Princesse Polinarda was sitting very solitary, and Palmerin came and sat down by her, both of them overcome with many grievous Passions, and both striving to speake, yet neither would begin. As commonly it fareth with those, that march under the Ensigne of amorous Venus, who are subiect to many effeminate follies, as an idle head, a dulled wit, a pale and wan face, their thoughts still silent, yet alwaies at worke, their mind mute, yet neuer in quiet, speaking faintly, behaving themselves fondly, walking solitarie, and blingfickly leasures, ever exclaiming on Cupid, but neuer remembering their owne cowardise; still crying, fie on Loue, when it were more meete to correct the folly of their life.

These are the Passions of a Lover, which entreth through Solennesse, is kindled by Desire, set on fire by affection, and if Perseuerance helpe not, is utterly wasted by Desperation. After Palmerin had sitten a good while, and his Lady still silent, he gaue her occasion to speake by these speeches. Faire Distresse, if I might as freely speake with your blame, as my thoughts are farre from any spot to bounty, I should then esteeme my self happy, in gaining such leaue, as I account my selfe honoured by your gracious loue. Yet perswading my selfe, your gentle nature will not quip your friend, nor giue any crosse motion that may cut his fancie by your pardon, and on no presumption, I shall yeeld the circumstance of my discourse to your gentle construction.

It is so, that seeking in my selfe the desire of honour, which I can no way attaine, but by some haucie enterprise, I haue thought good to venter among the Dikes of mischaunces, either to encrease my renowne, or ende my life in an infamous reproch. For many wil send at large their speeches of defame, and on a priuate spight seeke to worke me discredit: as lo, there is the knight that crept into his fetherbed, when flame doth allure him into the Warlike field. But he hath more minde to

Make

Make with Venus, then march with Mars, wearing a Gloue for his Lady, when he should vse a Gantlet for her loue.

These speeches, faire Distresse, is more grievous to your seruant then his patience can expresse, or your gentle nature suffer to heare. Which to auoide, as well to proue my loyaltie, which vnspotted I beare you, as also to shew my dutie, wherewith I honour your noble father, I haue bowed to indeuour my selfe in this attempt, which will be no lesse welcome vnto your selfe, then it hath been long wished by your bowed seruant. For neither can any danger withdraw my mind, nor any doubt cause me to thinke on mishap, hauing your licence, which is the courage of my tranaille, and your gracious loue, which awar-deth all troubles. So that in any accident which may annoy me, or any oppression, that may suddenly deteine me: I liued your knight in fauour, and will die your knight in fame: and as you onely haue the flower of my loue, so shall it neuer fade, till the latter end of my life.

The Princesse Polinarda perceiuing his intent, & her gentle heart, loath to haue his absence so soone, with the teares standing in her eyes, thus made her answere. Seruant, such hath been the courtesie at your hands I haue found, and so loyall the continuance of your promised faith, that neither am I able to gratifie as I would, or to giue you the honour, that by dutie I should. Your princely behaviour made me chose you for my seruant, and your equiulent bountie, made you loued of my selfe: so that I loued none more then you, albeit none knew it so little as you. Besides, the estimation my father hath alwaies giuen you, with the notable deserts, hath euer been in your selfe, increased the loue of all to you abundantly, but chiefly my loue, which as yet flameth freshly. But since the desire of your departure groweth thowow mee, and perhaps there is some occasion that grieueth you, I would be glad to know my crime, that I may make you recompence, for I had rather giue you leaue to farrie, then grant you licence to depart.

Ladie (quoth Palmerin) though the cause be in you, yet is it no crime, and though I depart for your sake, yet am I free from any such suspect: for it is onely the fauour I haue found at your hands,

handes, and the friendship you haue granted to my continuall honour: that I can no way recover you such duetie as I ought, albeit I trauailed for your sake, through my whole life. And to see such a gracious person vnrequited, my selfe being now of yeres, to put recompence in prooffe, I might rightly deserue to be reproched of all men, much more to be refused of so sweete a Saint. The Princeesse arising in a maruellous choller, highly offended at his pasted talks, she gaue him this coling, to quaille his hot attempt. I haue often trusted, and bene rewarded with treason, and where I placed steadfast affection, I haue bin soonest beguiled: which now I repent, when it is too late, and bziule my fancy, when I see mine owne folly. Wherefore, seeing my fault is such, as you can rather afford me your roome, then your company, I giue you this command, in your passing voyage, that as you wil thinke to honour me, seeme not to presume into my presence, which I both bind you by my duty, and straightly comrmand you to obserue. So turning her back, she flung away in a fume: leauing Palmerin in such an alteration, as one could hardly indge, if he had any life left in him. But as hadde was, no body was present to descrie his heauy complaintes, for that euery body had conducted his Lady to her Chamber: sauing the Princeesse Polinarda, who stayed not to be intreated, but went flinging through the Gallerie, as greatly bered, as she had left her seruant passioned.

Palmerin departing to his lodging, tossing and tumbling himselfe on his restlesse bedde, and at euery thought of his Ladies discourtesie, hee fell into an agonie as bitter as the death, not suffering sleepe to enter into his head, but still bewayled the estate of his aduerse hap. At last, when Aurora was risen, out of the armes of olde Titan her husband, hee determined to fulfill his Ladies commaund, albeit to his great paine, in granting consent. When getting on his Armour, which bare the colour of a Parte in the Forrest, very thickly set with little golden thubbes, and bearing in his Shield Fortune, holding her tottering and vnsteady wheele, and naming himselfe the Knight of Fortune, hee very secretly departed, accompanied with Siluian the Savage mans sonne, whome he called brother,

ther, because they were nourished together, and hee bare the Shield of the Palme Tree, that was sent him from the Sage Aliart, neither taking leaue of the Emperour, nor of any, but in the vehemency of his griefe, mounted on horsebacke, and rode both away. All the way as they rode, Siluian endeavored himselfe by perswasion, to driue away his heauinesse, but he was as farre from his purpose, as the Prince himselfe was deuoid of patience, who rode on, vsing no words, he was ouercome with such an extreame melancholy. Yet was his affection so earnestly grounded on his Lady, as he vowed in her behalf, to aduenture his life, not doubting, but the duty hee would shewe in her absence, should win her fauour againe, and grant him her presence.

## C H A P. XVIII.

How Palmerin of England, vnder the title and name of the Knight of Fortune, still continued in his pensue iourney, till at last he happened on a Castle, where, in the honour of his faire Ladie and Mistresse, the Princeesse Polinarda, hee conquered a Knight, who tearmed himselfe, the Knight of Death.



Will trauailed the valiant Prince Palmerin, heauy, sadde, and greatly lamenting his so late misfortune, neither resting in any place, or abyding in any place, or abyding in any company, but only his brother Siluian, who he both loued and highly esteemed. At last, happening into a Grove of Trees, he espied a very faire Castle, standing very solitary, beset round about with a greene bancke, at sight whereof, the Prince alighted, which Siluian perceiving, alighted likewise, and ledde both the Steedes to pasture.

In which tyme, Palmerin seeing no body nêr, and rememb'ring the great unkindnesse of his Ladie, entred into these heauie meurnings. O Palmerin, son to a poore Savage man, and bozne in the vnfortunate forrest of great Britaine, too soone preferred to honoz, and too late thrown down into hatred. What regard haddest thou of a Princesse, thy selfe being a poore Desant? O what estimation hadst thou of modestie, to moue so great offence in thy gracious Distresse, whose loue was the only state of thy life, and whose fauour was the flower of thy prosperitie? Ah sweet Ladie, on your courteous pitie, let passe my presumption, and what hath been more then dutie, impute to may rude behauiour, which your clemencie may both punish and pardon. And yet my good Ladie, if you respect my trusty seruice, with the constant loyaltie I haue alway bozne to your Soueraigntie, my fault committed rashly, deserueth no such repulse, in that this ingratitude is too much for you to shew, and more then I can any way suffer. For if you regard your owne beauty, with the stayed assurance of your seruants bountie, you shall perceiue my words to bee for your honour, and not worthe any hate, in that I will preferre your name, aboue all Ladies in noblenesse. And yet am I contented to abide your hard doome, and according to your pleasure, waite my daies in distresse, till either you will moue you to recant, or my spotlesse loyaltie to relieue my mishap, which the longer you deferre, the more is my dolor, and you remaining obstinate, my paines are helpelesse: but that your gentlenes giueth me hope your displeasure shall end with my eternall delight.

Thus hauing finished his complaintes, he drew neare to the Castle, where by good hap he heard the sound of Musicke, which gaue him occasion to enter further. And comming to a great Wall, he espyed in one of the corners, one sitting all in blacke, with a fair long Beard, and a very graue countenance, shewing by his sad complexion, that he had more minde to moane, then to any mirth. Palmerin would not as yet enter any further, least he should break off his quiet exercise, which was, in singing many sadde Dittyes to his Lute, that himselfe had framed, in the prayse of his Ladie. Palmerin hauing heard what singular re-

ports he gaue his Ladie, as that none might compare with her for beautie and brauerie: was very much offended, in that hee esteemed all Ladies, as counterfeite to his fayre Polynarda, wherefore hee brake off the Knights Donnet, with this kinde of Salutation. He thinkes Sye, you either want manners, or modestie, to glorie in your Lady, as though there were none her like: Sye, your late comparison hath bigged me to great choller, for that my Ladie is aboue all in beautie and for honour of her Name, beside, beyond all in Noblenes of Nature, and therefore worthe all praise, because she is superiour to any.

The auncient Knight, seeing one entred vpon him so suddenly, and to correct his pleasures, with such sharpe words: aduanced himselfe towards him with this answer. Sye Knight, your bolde entraunce into this place, with the great offence you haue offered my person, may happen to be set at so deare a price, as shall cost the Blood you would be loath to spare. Is there anie to bee equall with my Lady, who is not mate to beare the comparison of any? whose very remembrance, maketh me lue in vnspearable tormentes: If thou darest stay till I am Armed, I will make thee eyther denye thy bragges, or buye my Ladies honour with the losse of thy life and breath. And I will so reuend this thy presumption, as shall teach thee thy dutie, and winne me my hearts desire. Sye (said Palmerin) cease these words, and execute your wrath: if I haue spoken any thing to your displeasure, reuenge your selfe, and there an ende.

The auncient Knight withdrew himselfe into a Chamber, where as his Esquire presently Armed him, & Palmerin went forth, where he mounted on Horsebacke, and attended his coming. At length came forth the knight attired in blacke Armour, bearing in his Shield, the portraite of grieuous Death, lying on a Tomb, covered all with blacke. Using no more words, they fell strait to fight, eache of them behauiing themselues very valiantly: but the knight of Death was at length throwne to the earth. Then dealing a while together with their swords, Palmerins lucke was so fortunate, that he ouercame his enemy, then comming to him, and taking off his helmet, he entred into these speeches. Doe Sir Knight, contrary to your expectation,

you are become my Prisoner: Yet must you gainsay, what before you haue boldly said, in extolling your Lady, above her loth Honour, or prepare your selfe to the extreame rigour of death.

To whom the Knight of Death replied: Sye, well may you esteeme your valoure, and make account of your victorie, in that you haue foyled him, who had good hope neuer to be dismayed by any. But concerning the harder choise you put me to, eyther to denye my Lady, or to leaue my life: Suffice your selfe in this; that no rigoꝝ can constrain me, no, not the death it selfe, may, or shall compell me: for I rather chouse to abide your crueltie, then I will offer my Lady so great discourtesie: this is my answer, take it as you please. Palmerin comparing the loyaltie of the Knight, with the constancie of his owne Loue, and his affection to be as surely planted, as was the earnest desire in himselfe, satisfiying himselfe with the Conquest, called Syluian, and departed. The Knight of Death returning into his Castle, where he was carefully tended, and looked vnto by his Esquyre, greatly condemning his fortune, in that he was so suddenly foyled.

## CHAP. XIX.

¶ Here shall you vnderstand, who was the Knight of Death, that the renowned Palmerin of England had conquered: and what was the cause he remained in his solitary Castle.



This is registred in ancient Histories, that in Sardignia, sometime Reigned a King named Euandrin, who espoused Quene Emerald, Daughter to the Duke Armian of Normandie, and Sister vnto the Noble Duke Drapos. This King had one onely Sonne, who was named Floraman, of no lesse expertnes of capacity, then knightly behaviour in courage, which made him liked of all that saw him, & loued of all y knew him. At so chaunced, that this Floraman growing to ripenesse of

of yeares, became enamoured of Alcea, Daughter to the Duke Charles of Cicilia, who was subiect to the King Euandrin, so that betwene these twaine, was ioyned such a league of perfect good liking, and such a mutuall consent of faithfull loue, that they supposed neither any accident could hinder their determination, nor any extremitie seuer their plighted promise. But as fortune is enemie to the haughty courage, and prepareth her malice against the well meaning minde: so this Loue could not please the King his ffather, but by all meanes he could, thought still to preuent it. When the King perceined he could hardly reclaim his Sonne, but that his affection still increased to faire Alcea, he sent her home to the Duke her ffather, meaning to matche his Sonne to Adriana, the Quene of Cicilia, whom Floraman denied to loue, or in this to grant to his ffathers minde, but rather endeouored to follow his Lady, whose absence procured the languishing of his life. The King well noting the intent of Floraman, that he could not fancy his ffathers choise, by secret treason in the Duke of Ciciliaes Court, he found the meanes to poyson the fair Alcea, to the no small grieve of her noble ffather & friends, as also the Gentlemen that were in his Courte, of whome her beauty was honored, and the ciuility of her life greatly commended. The Duke misdoubting that the vntimely death of his daughter was procured by some vnnaturall means, because she was so soone sicke, and so suddenly gone, sent for Allaricqua her bedfellow, and by executing sundry torments on her, she confessed, that being hyred by the king of Serdignia, she ministred the potion, that cut off her flowing yeares. When the Duke hearde the discourse of his Lord and Soueraigns unkinde dealing, he caused the Anatomie of his Daughter to be artificially figured, which he placed vpon a Tomb, representing her funerals, and therupon in golden verses, writ the Epitaph of her rare and vertuous life, and by her was the image of Death very lively drawen in perfect proportion. This rare piece of workmanship, he laid in a godly fair Chariot, and lemping a great army, went against the King of Serdignia: Of whose coming, when Floraman heard, he could not finde in his heart to enter Battell against his Ladies ffather, but with a company of well appointed knights, he



## CHAP. XX.

brake thorow the rankes, and entred the Campe, from whence he tooke the Chariot, with the Picture of Alcea. So ryding presently to a Porte of the Sea, he tooke shipping, and coasted into the Turks Dominion, and building there his solitary Castle, he liued there, bemoaning the unkinde acte of his ffather, and the vnforsunate death of his faire Alcea. To whose Picture, hee wold often report the afflictions of his minde: and with sundry Lamentable Sonnets, discouer her praise, and his owne paine, which to his Lute hee often recorded, as the onely meane to perswade him from any desperate intent.

In this place remained Floraman, till such time as the Prince Palmerin visited him as you haue heard: and although it was the good fortune of Palmerin to conquere him, who was both wasted with mourning, and growne into great debilitie, by his exceeding sorrow, yet was Floraman esteemed a knight of singular Provelse. And when Palmerin was departed, and hee entred into his Castle againe vnto his Ladies Picture, he appeared in this manner. Alas my Alcea, impute not this Conquest to any right in mine Enemy, but rather to the feeble and weake assaults of your seruant, which extreme sorrow for your mishap, hath caused, and grieve of mine owne misfortune, that so aduersly chanced. Therefore, to make amends for this great mischance, and that you may knowe your knight esteemeth none but you: I will in my adventures, so blaze your memorie, that all Ladies shall report, you are the onely Alcea: and cause them to know, she is as yet vnborne, that must be your squall. Long he staid in that comfortlesse place: till at last, the king his ffather vnderstanding where he was, sent for him, and because hee would not shewe himselfe disobedient, hee departed thence, bearing with him his Ladies Portraite, still vsing his blacke Armour, and the Shielde wherein Death was painted, as the onely Sepulchre of his great sorrows: vsing no other name for himselfe, but the knight of Death. And what rare Adventures were by him atchieued, in the honour of his Ladie, and great reputation of himselfe, you shall be at large certified in the sequell of this Historie.

How

Palmerin of England, after hee was departed from Floraman, the Knight of Death, happened to come where he saw a combate fought betwene three Knights, and the Knight of the Bull, named Pompides, who at the commandemens of a Lady, kept the passage of a bridge, and how the Knight of Fortune bare away the Victorie.



When the renowned Knight of Fortune had conquered Floraman the knight of Death, he with his brother Siluian, proceeded on his iourney, neuer shewing any signs of a lively disposition, but heavy and pensiu all the way as he rode, which Siluian desirous (if he might) to remedy, vied these words vnto him. Good sir, wast not the time in woe, that you should be in pleasant recreation, seeke not the ruine of your selfe, for hee that regardeth so slenderly your profered courtesie: rather extinguished her memorie, as she hath lightly left you, or thinke on her, when you iudge she is mindfull of you. Vnto which words, the knight of Fortune thus shaped an answer.

Siluian my deare Brother, and friend, if thou couldest discern the drops of blood, that fall from my oppressed heart, as thou perceiuest the moyst teares that issue from my head, or if thou couldest iudge the world of woes I abide in my silent thoughts, as thou dost perceiue some motion, by outward appearance, thou wouldest rather wish me in my graue, then to see me remaine in this remedlesse grieve, which no way can be remedied, but onely by the last extremity, which is death. And albeit, as thou saist, she esteemeth not my Passions, but rather is merry, when I mourne, and laugheth when I languish: yet shall it neuer be sayde, but Palmerin liued without fraude, and there

therefore dyed in faith, preferring an honourable death, before a haplesse life. I would I had bene blinde, when first I saw her beauty, or that I had stayed with our father, then to enjoy such an vngentle friend, where wee might haue liued in quiet estate, now not enjoying one houre of rest: for albeit I live in spotlesse loyaltie, yet am I rewarded with most vngentle loyaltie. And what of that? let it suffice, she is unkinde, and thou unhappie: she bent to crueltie, yet will thou liue and die in constancie: desiring no longer life, then I may be free from any spotte in my promised Loue. And hereupon Syluan, assure thy selfe, her Beauty shall hazard my honour on a thousand Lances, but she shall confesse her selfe, Palmerin is above all in loyaltie. Thus passing the time in talke one to an other, the Knight of Fortune in great paine, and Syluan still continuing his perswasion, they arrived at a Bridge, where they saw three knights before them, who would haue passed ouer, but were resisted by a knight in fair white Armo, who kept the Passage, bearing in his Shield for his Device, a Bulles head, and was called the Knight of the Bull. One of the three knights, very couragiously, gaue Combat to the knight of the Bull, but was quickly set beside his saddle. In fine, the knight of the Bull prevailed against them all three, to their grieve, and his glorie.

The Knight of Fortune knowing these three knights that had bene feyled, to be of the Emperours Court, as Luyman of Burgundie, Germaine of Orleance, and Tenebrant: he was not a little sorry for their mishappe, and presently menaced his courage against the knight of the Bull, who met so stoutly together, that they were both dismounted. When charging one another with their swords, betwixt them began a doubtfull skirmish: but at last, the knight of Fortunes happe was so good, that he strooke him downe: and setting his foot vpon him, charged him to tell what hee was, and wherefore he kept that Passage. The knight of the Bull, seeing himselfe brought vnder, and hearing his demand, which he was very loath to graunt: at last, discovered himselfe as thus. My knight, if hath bene alwaies my desire, to keepe my selfe unknowne to any, not that I hyde my name for feare, but till my Noble employes might deserue to

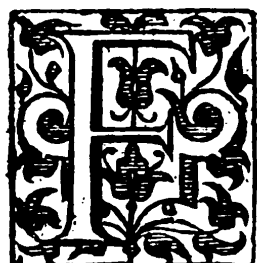
make

make me knowne. But since it is my Fortune, by you to receive my first conquest, and must declare, what you stand desirous to know: vnderstand that I am sonne to Don Edord the famous Prince of England, and Argonica, the Lady of the Enchanted Isle, hauing to name Pompides. As concerning why I keepe this passage, thus it is. A certaine Lady who cured my wounds I receiued at my last encounter against two knights whom I slew: commanded me to keepe the passage, untill I conquered a knight which she greatly desireth, and can no other way come to the knowledge of him. And here haue I remained for the space of twentie dayes: yet neither happening on that knight, nor conquered before his present.

The knight of Fortune hearing his words suffered him to arise, and gaue him this answer. He thinkes fit it might be more to your fame, as also the happinesse of your good fortune: not to liuke your life to this simple enterprise, but to aduance your selfe, to trie the hazards of all places, for in this place you sit idle, while abroad you might be better employed: which if you think amisse of, I leaue you to your Ladies command, and so Siluan and he departed. The other vanquished knights, who greatly desired to haue knowledge of the knight of Fortune, were very sorry that they suffered him to depart, without vsing any conference with him. Nevertheless, they supposed that it was the renowned Palmerin: but that the device of his Shield deceiued them, which he bare for that purpose because he would not be known to any, otherwise then by the name of the knight of Fortune. Well, after him they rid, & Pompides went to his Ladies Fortresse, where he might haue his wounds cured, which made him very faint, he had lost so much blood. Now will we returne to the knight of the Sauage man, who hauing delivered Palmerin the shield, and left Trofolant with the other conquered knights: it traualled, both with reputation of knight, hood, and good Fortune in all attempts, till he arrived at the Tristfull Valley, where what befell vnto him, you shall presently vnderstand.

CHAP. XXI.

Now when the knight of the Sauvage man had left the Prince Palmerin, and the conquered knights in the Forrest of the Cleere fountaine, he chanced to come into the Tristfull Valley, where he tried his strength against Blandidon knight of the Swan, and sonne of the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia, where he conquered him.



**D** because we will not be unmindefull of the knight of the Sauvage man, who behaved himselfe so bravely at Constantinople, as also in the Forrest of the Cleere Fountaine, you shall understand, that endeavouring himselfe in trauaile, fortune directed his course to the Tristfull Valley, which might rightly be called so, for that no knight could enter there, without great affliction and heavinesse of minde, which made the sorrowfull Pandritia to abide there in her House of sadnesse. As he rode on in this Valley, he espied a great tree, whereon there hanged a great many a Sheldes, and nere to the Tree, was a Cave or Den, at the entrance whereof lay Trunchions of speares, broken swords, and other like weapons, which declared there had bene many combats fought in that place. Out of this Cave, there came a knight in black armour, bearing in his shield upon a ground of sand, a faire white Swan, who having espied the knight of the Sauvage man presently sounded a horne, unto a house which was nere adioyning. At the sound of this horn, the windows of the house were presently opened, & there was laid a faire cloath of blacke Velvet, and Cushions of the same, when there came a faire Lady, with her Damofels, and leaned thereon to see the combate, which the knight of the Swan determined to haue with the knight he sawe coming. This fight

fight moued the knight of the Sauvage man to stand in a great maze, as well to behold the faire Ladies, as also such a seemely knight, in a place of so small frequentation. Out of which study to reuiue him, the knight of the Swan sent his Page, who summoned him in this sort. My Lord and Master (sic knight) whom you here behold, and can no way escape, hath kept this passage for this five Moneths, to the aduancement of his honour, and disgrace of no small company of good & hardy knight's, as their Shields may suffice for witnesse, that hang on yonder Tree, which they haue left behind them, being unable to withstand him, who as yet hath been vanquished of none. He therefore hath sent me, and I in his name sollicite you, that if cowardly feare do enforce you to faint, and not daring to venture, where so many hath bene vanquished, you are permitted the choise of two extreames, wherof you must chuse one, or receiue such authority, as he wil charge you withal. The first, you must passe no further, but returne from whence you came, being bound by your knightly oath, to make knowne to euery one, your shamesull repulse, not sparing to tell the truth, for saue to your selfe, but manifest your cowardise, to the commendation of my Lord. The second, if you be so desirous, that you would needes passe, without endamaging your selfe with the foresaid perill, you must fulfil that which you wil be loath, if you either esteeme knighthood, or the happy state of your life. You must first giue your shield to be placed by the other, and your name to be written vnder the same, to the intent all knights that happen this way, may know him that came like a knight, but departed hence like a fainting Trauen, so shall their extreme rigour in speech, procure the meanes to your eternall shame. Beside, you must bow to this sorrowfull Lady, who with all her companie, spendeth the time in wailing, neuer to reioyce, in remembrance of her grieue, but to be partuer of her sadnesse, while your life endureth, If none of these twaine please you, come to my Lord, and he will ease you.

The knight of the Sauvage man, smiling at this discourse, which menaced disloyaltie, as also threatned danger, sent the knight his answer, in these words. Go tell thy Lord, that

he hath met with such a one, as neither respecteth his proffers, nor regardeth his puiſſaunce, not minding to goe ſo ward, nor yet to returne, till he hath cauſed him to know, that he hath as much authoritie to conſtraine, as himſelfe hath to command. Upon this anſwere they met together valiantly, each charging the other with ſuch knightly blowes, as the Ladies gaue great commendation to the fight, hardly iudging who was the likeſt of victorie. They breathed, and fell to it againe, the knight of the Swan, accounting himſelfe well mated, and the knight of the Sauage man, thought him indifferently matched. At length, the victorie chaunced to the knight of the Sauage man, who reioyced, that he had conquered ſo good a knight, and he vnclaſping the knight of the Swans Beuere (who was quite overcome with a grievous trance) wrought the meanes to get life in him againe, when as he charged him to tell, what he was, as alſo, whereſo theſe Ladies liued there, and why he vnderooke to keepe that paſſage, vnto which requeſt the knight thus anſwered. Sir knight, if in loſſing my life, I might profit her whom I euer ſought to pleaſe, and finiſh that which muſt be brought to ende, I would rather embrace the death, then ſatiſſie your deſire, that craueſt the thing, I would neuer ſhew to any. But ſeeing my griefe cannot be holpen that way, nor greatly eaſed this way, you hauing now authoritie to command, I will accompliſh your minde in euery point. I am called Blandidon, Sonne to this ſorrowfull Lady Pandritia, who hath too long, yet longer muſt, abide in this her Caſtle, called the Houſe of Sadneſſe. Where, the more to my griefe, yet no way to be remedied, ſhe hath vowed to end her life with her miſfortune, & to continue in mourning, ſo long as ſhe liueth. Woe for the loue ſhe bare to a knight, who in trauel I am ſure you haue heard of, in that he is no leſſe famous for his hautie deedes of Armes, then aboue all knights for his atchieued victories, he is called, as I haue heard of many, Don Edward of England. And becauſe I cannot find the meane, to perſwade my mother from this ſorrowfull kinde of life, but that ſhe will ſtill remaine in her vowed heauineſſe, I haue determined to garde this paſſage, making all that I conquer, partakers of her griefe, & forcing all that reſtraine, to the

ſhame

ſhame you haue heard, wherein I honor her, which is my deſire, and trie many a good knight, to the encreaſing of my fame, though I neuer ſuſtained the like miſhap by any, nor hope to meete the man that ſhall doe it againe.

The knight of the Sauage man, hearing the tale of Blandidon, (who was eſteemed for a knight of no leſſe valor then good fortune,) deſired him to leaue the ſolitarie place, and to beare him company to the Forreſt of great Brittain, declaring, that more reſolue might there be gotten in a day, then during his life time, in that heauie paſſage. Which Blandidon would haue graunted to right willingly, if the perſeueerance of his ſad mother, had not perſwaded him to the contrary, whom hee was loath to leaue, yet deſirous to keepe the knight of the Sauage man company, who he was very earneſt to haue knowledge of. At length, a little before he departed, the knight of the Sauage man, thus perſwaded Blandidon. Sir knight, I account my ſelfe happie to meete with ſo good a knight, & would condemne my ſelfe altogether of ingratitude, if I ſhould not requite your gentleneſſe, ſo farre as without mine owne harme I may, whoſe company I would gladlie haue, yet vnwilling your Ladie mother ſhould remaine deſtitute of a guide. To reſolue you what, and who I am, you ſhall know, that I am called the knight of the Sauage man, by which name, I am knowne to many good knights, who haue both tried me, and found gentleneſſe at my hands. No farther can I diſcloſe my name, till I am better acquainted with my ſelfe, then as yet I am. And now I intend to hazard my ſelfe in the aduenture of great Brittain, whereas many noble knights doe enter, and not heard of after ward, whom I meane to beare company, or elſe to ende the great danger. Blandidon would gladly haue aſſaid this aduenture alſo, but the ſtate of himſelfe, with the great care he vſed to his mother Pandritia, would not ſuffer him to depart. Wherefore, vſing ſuch friendly grating at their departure, as beſeamed their profeſſion and loyal intent of curteſie, the knight of the Sauage man took his way on his iourney, and Blandidon to the caſtle, to comfort his mother, as alſo to haue his wounds recured. Aſſuring you,

that this strife betweene them, wrought such marvellous endeouours on either part afterward, as hath seldome been heard of, which you shall reade in the sequell, wherein, the vertue of their noblenesse, with the vnanimittie of their conioyned faithfulness, was not moze desirous to the one, then delightfull to the other.

CHAP. XXII.

How Floraman the Knight of Death, and Prince of Serdignia arriued at Constantinople, at the Emperours Court, where he caused his Tent to be pitched, in the honour of his faire Altea. And how before the Emperour, hee made challenge against all the Knights of his Court. in the defence of his Ladies beautie, where his Fortune was so good, that hee ouercame the Prince Gracian, his brother Guerin, and the other Knights that aduentured for their Ladies sakes.



Great was the sorrow that the Knight of Death sustained, for the foile which Palmerin the noble knight of Fortune had giuen him, whereof to be reuenged (after hee had visited the king his father, who had sent for him) he continued in trauell so long, that at last he arriued at Constantinople. Where before the Emperours Pallace, he erected two faire Tents, very artificially made in workmanship, all of black Silke and Gold, whereon was giuen to view in braue Pictures, the rare beauty of his Lady Altea, as also the whole course of his mournfull life, a spectacle of great delight to all that tooke occasion to see it. In the one of these Tents was prepared furniture for his lodging, and in the other stood his lustie Coursers, with the speares and Weapons to maintaine his Tourneiment, and

on the top, betwene both the Tents, was placed the perfect Image of his faire Altea, which he tooke from the Duke her father, while the two Armies were waging battaile. The Knight of Death hauing euery thing in readinesse, with his two Esquires attending on him, he entred the Emperours Pallace, attired in his accustomed Armour, which made the Emperour somewhat abashed, yet very well pleased with the ciuill demeanour he perceiued in him. Then kneeling downe to kisse his Maiesties hand, he was not suffered as he would, but was kept backe, which he abiding very patiently, began to fixe his eyes vpon the Emperesse, and her Courtly Ladies, to see if he could finde the Ladie, that might for beauty, compare with his Altea, and after a good whiles pause, in this order he began to render his speeches. Most puissant Emperour, let not my boldnesse be admitted to any ill intent, or my rude behauiour, to merite your gracious disliking, to whome I not onely bowe, my heart and hand, but my vnfaigned seruice, to the houre of my death.

I am that unhappy Knight, whose misfortunes can not bee recounted, for that all my life hitherto, hath bin nothing but miserie, and am threatned to spende all my life in infinite calamities, which hath drawne my minde into such a debilitie, that I can neither honour your Grace as I should, nor behaue my selfe as gladly I would.

For first, when I had appointed my minde to a quiet estate, which I thought no mishap could alter, or any extremitie chaunge, but resolved my selfe on an infallible ioye, Aye me, one sting of Fortune ouerturned all, and the Heauen of my happines became a hatefull Well. When my youthfull yeeres allured me to Loue, and fancie made choyce to mine owne good liking, I esteemed my self the happiest of any man alieue, though my chance were moze hatefull, then my griefe can vnfolde.

For spight, not onely berefte of my Ladie, but allotted my poore selfe to erreaine ill lucke, when I forsooke all Courtly companie, onely determining to waste my time in a solitary kinde of life, which I spent in remembrance of her, who most regarded me, and still lauding her Beautie (which I esteemed aboue all) there I remayned (methought) a merrie, though indeede a

mournfull time. Yet was not fortune satisfied, but rubbeth a fresh grasse vpon the greene wound, in sending a knight to bryake off my silent deuotions, who repining that I should extoll my Lady, about his Saint that was unknowne to me, entered the fight, which returned to my side, he bare away the victorie, and I was vanquished. Thus haue I bene ever indamaged, every way distressed (and may say, that no knight can say) I am the onely man for mishap. And because I will not be reputed so ingratefull to my Lady, that one repulse shall make me forsake her swete chaine, I haue vowed in all Princes courts, to extoll her beautie, to whom (referring comparisons) I can esteeme none her equall. And those knights who honour their Ladies, and dare contend with my Alcea, either for beautie, or bountie, I am ready to giue Combate to all, for that I will allow the superiortie to none. As concerning the order appointed in this fight, which I would all to obey, and none to bryake: thus vnder your grations leaue, it is requested. That those knights, who esteeme their quarrell so good, as to enter the field for the beautie of their Ladies, shall bring with them her Portraite, for whose sake they aduenture, which wil be to their own honour, and fame of their Ladies. Beside, if my hap be so good as to gaine the victorie, they must enter my tent, to render their Armour, and their names to be registred in my booke, which I haue termed the Sepulchre of Louers. But if my enemy preuaile, contrary to my expectation, he shall be Lord of the riches which remaineth in my tent, beside, my selfe as his vassaille, to stand at his pleasure. And this fauour I must request of your Grace, that none shall not enter Combat, with the sword, without he be able, to mate me in the Just. This is the cause of my coming, procured through the knight y<sup>e</sup> gaue me the ouerthrow, who protested himselfe to be of your Court, for which cause, I desire that I may here begin my knightly enterpryse, I will returne to my tent, to expect the coming, of him that dare first presume. Thus with taking leaue, he departed to his tent, the Emperour remaining desirous to know of whence he was: which was declared to him by some of his Court, that he was

Flor:

Floraman, Sonne to ancient King of Sardignia, at which report, the Emperour was very sozry, that he had not entertained him, according to his valloz and Nobilitie of birth. On the next day, the knights prepared themselves before the Tent of the Knight of Death, and the Emperour, with the Ladies of the Court, standing ready to behold the Combate, which was first enterprised the y<sup>e</sup> prince Gracian, for the loue of Claricia, daughter to the king Polendos, being gallantly mounted, all in gilt Armour, and in his shield, beauiug for his deuise, a Damosell her face couered with a greene shadow, like vnto a sheet. The gentle Prince looking toward his Lady Claricia, who stood in the window, by the princeesse Gridonia, vnto himselfe bled these speeches. Faire Mistres, I desire you to continue your wonted affection toward me, and not to let fall your fauour, for that your loue doth encourage me to the fight, in assurance whereof, I will cause mine enemy to know, that his Alcea, is farre incomparable, to my faire Claricia. With these words, he ran against the knight of death, encountering one another with such knightly behauiour, that both the Emperour, and all the Ladies, took great pleasure to behold them. At their second pause, the knight of Death, turned him to the picture of Alcea, with these words. Can my courage faint, remembriug you my good Lady? or can any dismay me, hauing embraced your fauour? no, the honour of your name, hath called me to the field, and your beautie is so perfect, that none can cause me flye. Then began they a fresh assault, as doubtfull to the one, as to the other: but at length the knight of Death had vnhorsed the Prince Gracian, to the great sorow of his Loue, and no lesse to himselfe. Then was he ledde into the Tent, wher he resigned his armour, and his name was written downe, in the Sepulchre of Louers. Then approached Guerin, brother to the Prince Gracian, who for his Lady Clariana, aduentured to the Combat, who the knight of death, brought likewise to the Sepulchre of Louers. After these came Flauian, Rotandor, and Emerauld the Faire, whose strengthes were not to compare with the knight of Death, and therefore were all vnarmed, and brought to the Sepulchre of Louers.

The



The Emperour commanded the Tournament should end for that day, and sent for the Knight of Death, to a sumptuous banquet, where the Ladies and gentlewomen, made such estimation of him as his singular Prowesse, and haughty courage deserved. Which made him in sighes, to thinke vpon his Alcea, whose commendation was euer best welcome to him, yet he dissembled his griefe, with a merry countenance, because euery one should not be priuy to his extreame Passions. So after the banquet was ended, and their Dancing finished, taking leaue of the Emperour, as also the whole company, he departed to his Tent, and the Ladies to their Chambers.

CHAP. XXIII.

How the Knight of Death at his second Ioust, conquered the Prince Polynarda, who aduentured himselfe in the behalfe of the faire Polynarda, yet was he vanquished, with diuers other knights. And how Berolde Prince of Spaine, and knight of the Sphere, suddainly arriued there, and maintained against the knight of Death, the beantie of his Ladie Onistalda.



The knight of Death on the next morning, came forth before his Tent, attyped in blacke Armour, whereon was painted in diuers places, the resemblance of the faire face of Alcea, and in his Sheld was figured a knight, clasping his armes together in great heavinesse, and by him stood y<sup>e</sup> image of ugly death, and standing steadfast

the looking and beholding the Picture of Alcea, vnto himselfe he beganne in this manner. I reioyce (my deere Alcea) that Fortune hath not altogether forgotten mee, but allow-

soothly my in this place, to reuenge the foyle I sustained at my sorrowfull Passion, in that by my good entenour all the Ladies of this Court, shall be forced themselves to confesse that I maintaine the quarrell of perfect beantie, and therefore worthy to beare the prize away.

To breake off these imaginations, Polinard the brother of the Prince Vernar, presented himselfe before the tent (when the Emperour and the Ladies were set in their appointed place) his Armour being blew, and his Sheld, the cherefull countenance, of a very beautifull Damosell, which he bare in the honor of the Princesse Polinarda, vnto whom he bowed great affection, but bashfulness did hinder him from making it knowne. The regarments of the Ioust, willed him to deliver his Ladies fauour, because it was the order of the fight, that he should doe so: to whom he answered. The fauour of my Lady, which as yet I haue found very slender, shall be brought on this knight, whom I haue hope to conquer, and I will deliver him that small fauour I haue, to her fame, and his eternal dishonour. The knight of Death replying: Many a good knight had thought so, and yet hath bene deceiued, and although you bragge you so, you may hap to haue as hard a bargain.

So without more words, they encountered verie fiercely, but Polynard was ouerthrowen, with his arme grievously broken, with incensed him with such anger, that he would haue bin at his enemy againe, but the knight of Death, gaue him this persuasion. Say, you haue done enough for this time, when your arme is in estate, you shall haue a fresh combat. These speeches so vexed Polynard, that he became so troublesome to them both in talke and behauiour, that he would neither yeelde his Armour, nor obey the orders that were appointed in the field, which caused the Emperour to giue him a great check, whereupon he departed, giuing great offence to the knight of Death, in denying that which was his right and tytle to haue.

Then dealt he with five knights more, and vanquished them all, sending them into his Tent, to the Sepulchre of Louers, by which time it drew toward Dinner, and the Emperour with the

the Ladies withorew themselves, and every one departed, till they had refreshed them, as nature required. When dinner was ended, the Emperour went to the Tent to see the knight of Death, to whom he gaue no small commendations for the worthy behauior he had scene in him. So continuing that after none in their sport, to the foyle of many a good knight, among whom was Trusiande, and Bellizart, that bare company with other knights to the Sepulchre of Louers.

And when they were ready to leaue of their pastime, there suddainly came ryding a very seemely knight, whose Armour was beset with græue Spheres, beariug in his Shældoe likewise a Sphere of the same collour, he perceiuing the Emperour with the company of so many braue Ladies, came prancing, and shewing many trickes with his horse, before the knight of Death. At last he drew forth a little table, with a circle of gold round about it, wherein was liue Pictured the faire face of Onistalda, Daughter to the Duke of Drapos of Normandie, & looking stedfastly vpon it, began thus to vse his talnke. Sweet Mistresse, I haue enterprised this iourney, vnder the soueraign title of your singuler beautie, not doubting but to vanquish him, who as yet hath borne the prize from al. Therefore, let not the fauour, which was my accustomed reward, he denyed me at this tyme, for that your beautie maketh me enter the field, which I will maintaine to my desire, or sustains thd death. So deliuering the table to the Regardants, who were appointed to receiue it, they set the Spurres to the horses, and met with such puissance together, that they were both throwne to the earth, when drawing their Swords, they charged one another so brauely, that this combate bare the commendation, aboue all that had bene scene at that Tournament.

Great desire had the Emperour, to know the knight of the Speere, but their fierce encountring, would not suffer any answer to be made. Retiring a little to take breath, the knight of Death beheld his Armon, all flashy and broken, on the faire face of Alcea, which caused him to fall into these complaints.

Ah my swæte Alcea, how can I desire your fauour, or make account to enioy your loue, suffering your blamelesse face to be

be thus offended: in whose remembraunce I haue, and do enioy the honour of all good Fortune.

On the other side, the Knight of the Shpere complayned to his Lady, saying: How happy might I esteeme my self, my (good Lady) if for the price of my wounds, I might enforce my enemy to say, you are the onely Goddess of beauty, which either I will do, or die, ere I depart out of the field. But if you with draw your fauour, then shall mine enemy be conqueror, and I constrained to liue in eternall detriment of my life. By this time it waxed very darke, & because they would not giue ouer, the Emperour caused Torches to be lighted, which gaue great cause of courage to them both, to see the good will of the Emperour, and would not depart the field till one were conquerour. At last ioyning themselves together, through extreame faintnesse and wearinesse, they fel both to the ground, but the knight of the Sphere was vnderneath, the Regardants giuing the victorie to the knight of Death. Then leading the knight into the Tent, where he rendred his Armour, and his name to the Sepulchre of Louers, they knew him to be Berolde the prince of Spaine, which when the Emperour heard, he sent for him into his Pallace, where he was carefully tended, vntill his health was perfectly restored, yet he was maruellously offended with himselfe, that his Lady past without the honour of the day.

The knight of Death could beare no Armour a great while after, for that he had found the puissance of the Prince Berolde, of no lesse force, then worthy commendations. But when he had gained his good estate of helth, he stil maintained his quarrell, against many strange knights, of whom by his good Fortune, he had alwaies the victorie, replenishing his Sepulchre of Louers, to his owne hearts content. And the Emperour Palmerin gaue him such honour, in the time he endured his aduentsures, that he was double encourged, to maintaine the beauty of his Lady Alcea.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How the Knight of Fortune, hauing left Pompides, chanced to meete with the Green Knight, that accompanied the Knight of the Sauage man, in the Turnament at Constantinople, who was the sonne of Sir Pridos, named Don Rosiran, De la Bronde, in whose company the Knight of the Sauage man, was nourished in the Court of England, who trying their strengths together, Don Rosirart was vanquished.



During the Tournament of the Knight of Death, many Noble Princes and valiant Knights, left off the the strayed Princes, and came to Constantinople, to defend the beautie of their Ladies. Which caused the Knight of Death, hauing such prosperous Fortune, to leaue his blacke Armour, the Image of his heauinesse, and fought in a gorgeous new Armour, mingled with colours of red and white, all beset with Pellicans of gold, euery one holding in their billes, the tormented heart of a Loner. His Shielde also was answerable thereto, bearing in the midst a golden Pellican, vpon a ground of Sinople, where, to his braue victories, wee will leaue Knight of Death, to declare what happened the Knight of Fortune, when hee had left Pompides.

After that to his stone renown, and honour of many Princes Courtes, hee had succoured the distresse of sundry defamed Ladies, and bozne away the prize from many famous Knights, suddenly coming forth of a Forrest in Greece, musing vpon the great vngentlenesse of his Lady Polinarda, hee mette a Knight, mounted on a gay Courser, and attired in greene Armour,

mour, which was all hackt and beuten, and his Shielde soze polluted, whom he remembred to be the knight that came with the knight of the Sauadge man to Constantinop. which caused him in gentle maner to offer him Salutations, wherupon the greene Knight put forth this demaund. Sir, I hope by your means to be resolved in the occasion which maketh mee trauell in all places, and staye in no place. The Knight of Fortune stayed him with these words. The heauy thoughts which do often overcharge me, will hardly suffer me to vse any talke with you. The by say (quoth the greene Knight, my request is so reasonable, as it need not offend you to make me answer. I would gladly know, if in your trauell, you chanced to meete with a Knight, in such Armour as ye see me weare, carrying for his Device in his Shielde, a Sauadge man, leading two Lyons, in a field of bluer. I would my selfe (answered the Knight of Fortune) gladly knowe where he is, for that my trauell, is partly to seeke him, but I feare me, we shall both misse of that wee looke for.

say (quoth the greene Knight) for what cause do you labour your selfe in his search? If he hath done any thing that doth displease you, behold him here, that will answer in his cause.

The Knight of Fortune hearing these words, presently returned him this answer. If I should report (say) that of other hee, or any other Knight hath iniured me, I should misreports of them, and greatly reproach my selfe. For the griefe which I sustaine, is caused through a Darrell, to whom I neuer gave defect, or know the cause, why he should offer mee such great vngentlenesse: and neyther is the Knight you seeke, prynces to my griefe, and he is yet vnknowne, that shall compell me to shew it: wherefore, you may proceede in your enterprise, and let me continue in bemoaning my misfortunes. say (said the greene Knight) by how much you are desirous I should report, by so much the more I am determined to tarry, & will compell you to shew why you seeke the knight of the Sauadge man, or force you to abroo the perill, which by doing all you may finde. Wherupon, he presently ran against the Knight of Fortune, as Siluian could perswade belimer him his spears, which made him glad to trust to his sword, till at lastly (after a good whiles fight) the greene knight

Knight came with such force, that his Horse ranne his nose against the ground, and ouerthrew his Master, which the knight of Fortune seeing, alighted, and then dealeth with him at his pleasure, untill such time as the Greene knight wared very feeble, and the knight of Fortune perceuing it, did vse very much merrie to him, but the Greene knight hauing not the good minde to respect it, came against him couragiously, with these wordes.

That Spy Knight, beginne you to fainte: nay, defend your selfe hardly, for since you would not esteeme my gentlenes, when it was proffered, you shall see the recompence that belongeth to selfe-will. Then ioynd they againe, till at last the knight of Fortune reached him such a sound stroke, that he brought him on both his knees, at which aduantage, he offered the motion to haue slaine him: but the greene knight considering his estate, beganne in this manner to vse his intreatie. Spy Knight, the puissance I did esteeme in my selfe, in thinking at no time to finde my peere, made mee vse this presumption to you, which I buye now with too deare a price. My life standeth at your courtisie, to whome I know not well how to frame intreatie, for that my rash attempt, doth rather craue a iust reward, then any fauour to be shewne. Yet thus much, on your milde nature I perswade my selfe, that you rather esteeme the conquest, then my death, and will suffice your selfe with the one, though I am unworthie to deserve the other.

Spy (quoth the knight of Fortune,) I account of my victorie much more then thy Death, and because thou shalt knowe, that Patience doth alway conquer my Anger, I giue thee the life vpon this condition, that thou make knowne to mee the knight of the Sauadge man: as also of whence, and what thou art, and why thou doest so labour to seeke him. Trust me Spy (answered the Greene knight) as concerning the knight of the Sauadge-man, his name, nor of whence he cometh, is known vnto me: neuerthelesse, if I did knowe it, and hee had desired me to keepe it secrete, you should haue my life, before I would discouer him. As for my selfe, I am called Don Rosian, de la Bronde, sonne to sir Pridos, the Duke of Galles and Cornwall,

and

and Cousin to Fredericke, the famous King of England. This is all that I can or will declare, which if it will not suffice you, on Gods name take that I would hardly spare.

The knight of Fortune, satisfied with this answer, mounted on Horseback, giuing him this farewell. It had beene much better sir knight, to haue vsed such faire language as I gaue you then to cause both of vs to hazard our liues, vpon a quarrel that hath no foundation, which to prevent against another time, let this I with you serue for a warning. And so Siluian and he departed to a Castle, where, by a Lady named Rianda, he was cured of such wounds as he had receiued: leauing Don Rosian to ride whither it pleased him.

But concerning why hee departed from the knight of the Sauage man, the History declareth, that it chanced in this order. After they were come two dayes iourney from Constantinople, it fortuned they met a young Gentleman, riding a great pace, and bring a heauy clamo: all the way as he rode, to whom they aduanced themselves, desirous to knowe the cause of his complaints. To whome the Gentleman declared, that three knights had taken a Lady from him, desiring greatly to abuse her honour: wherefore he requested them, as they tendered the estate of Ladies, so they would helpe to defend her from iniury.

This heauy tale, urged them to ride with the Gentleman, till by fortune they met with the Damosel, in the Forrest of the Cleare Fountaine, that brought the Shield from the Sage Aliart, to deliuer to the yong Prince Palmerin, who the knight of the Sauage man was desirous to know. When Don Rosian saw, how he had taken the Shield from her, & sent her with the answer you haue heard before, he desired that he might accompany the Gentleman, to reloue the distressed estate of the Lady, promising to returne to what place hee would appoint.

After leaue obtained, he departed with the Gentleman, and had such good Fortune, that he slew two of the knights in combat, and compelled the third to flight, himselfe being before hurt, and his Armour bruised, as you haue heard, when he met with the knight of Fortune.

But because you shall be certified why he was called De la Bronde, you shall heare what in the English Chyonicles is affirmed for this matter. King Marke had by his Quene Yseul, a daughter named Yseul, who was thought by some, to be the daughter of Tristram: she being ioyned in marriage with the Duke of Galles had a sonne by him, named Blasanon de la Bronde, Duke of Galles and Cornewall, who espoused Marlotte, daughter to the king Charlian of Ireland, who having a sonne by her, at her request, named him Marlor, De la Bronde. And in this order it did continue, to the Duke of Galles: who because he would not have his house grow into oblivion, named the sonne of Sir Prides and Attaids, Don Rosiran, De la Bronde. Who after he had thus bene vanquished by the knight of Fortune, was conducted by his Chiqure to a Monastrie, where he remained till his wounds were healed.

## CHAP. XXV .

How the knight of Fortune stayed so long in the Castle of Rianda, that he was aduertised by a Damosell named Lucenda, who was newly come from the Emperours Court, the knight of death, in defence of his faire Alcea, had borne away the prize from all Ladies. And how vpon this report he rode to Constantinople, accompanied with Siluian, and there in the honor of Polinarda, he vanquished the knight of death, who resigned his Tent to the noble knight of Fortune.



Concerning the knight of Fortune, who remained at the cure of his woundes, in the Castle of Rianda, who shall vnderstand, that a Damosell, who was attendant in the Emperours Court, and Cousin to this Ladie Rianda, desired leaue to come and visite

visite her Aunt, in the time that the knight of Death, endured his Tournament for the faire Alcea. This Damosell being named Lucene, arriving at her Aunts Castell, was presently knowne by the knight of Fortune, because he had bene daily in her companie in the Emperours Court, which vrged him thus to commune with her. Mistresse Lucenda, it is maruell to see you so farre from the place, where I with my selfe ever, both for the honour of the persons, as also their happinesse of pleasure.

Lucenda right glad to see the Prince Palmerin, gaue him her answer as thus. Trust mee sir, if you would follow my counsell, not that I speake by way of commaund, but rather on earnest desire to intreate you, I would wish you to haften your selfe to them, and well to discharge you of the Emperours anger, as also to satisfie those, that receiued no small offence at your suddaine departure. The Emperour and his knights thinke more then I will speake, and the Ladies iudge worse of you then I can say, in that the one imputeth it to your small friendship, and the other suppose, you owe them small fauour. But if you are desirous to wipe out this blemish, and to make apparance of your perfect bountie, now is it time to winne you the Spurres, or to gaine you the repect of a continuall shame: and now shall they know, if your affection be such, as preferreth their fame, before your owne ease. The knight of Death, who came thither lately, and hath set vp his Tents, in the honour of his Ladie, hath eclipsed the beautie of our Courtlie Ladies, to the reproch of many knights, and glory of his faire Alcea. If now there remaine in you, either the Nobilitie of knighthood, or vnspotted loue you haue aduouched to your Saint, let him know there is one farre aboue Alcea, that both shall and must beare away the title of beautie: so shall you expresse an inuincible minde, and all Ladies triumph in so gallant a Champion.

These newes set the knight of Fortune in a chafe, for that he knew he had conquered him once already, which made him leaue Lucinda, and take himself to his Chamber, where a thousand beaue thoughts doe on sudden overcharge him.

First, what might be thought of his long absence from the Court, then, how hee might incur the displeasure of his faire Polinarda, whose commandement did binde him out of her sight, yet must come in her sight, if he went to auenge her quarrell.

But when he considered every thing as he ought, comparing likewise the bold attempt of the knight of Death, he determined to thrust himselfe in the face of Fortune, and either to finish his tormented life, or to make known the truth of his inviolate loue. In the morning, Siluian armed him in a verie faire armour, all beset with golden Lyons, and taking his leaue of Ricada and Lucinda, they rode both of them toward Constantinople, the knight of Fortune all the way, being very pensieue and sad, whom Siluian would often chere in this manner. Good sir, consider with your selfe, if you forsake your Lady in such great extremitie, how can you thinke your selfe worthy at any time to haue her fauour? Imagine with your selfe, the honour you shall gaine in this fight, with the noble report, both of your friends and foes: thinke againe the shame that may attaint your knighthood, if you leaue off this enterprize, which is the onely type of renowne. Withdraw these sad conceits, and thinke if you were now in the field, how Polinarda would triumph, to beare the name of all estimation, and the knight of Death die with sorrow, to see his good Fortune dashed in the presence of such a royall assembly. Trifle not the time therefore, with any fond delay, because danger may arise by lingering, and dolor by ouermuch loytering. These words of Siluian, were greatly esteemed by the knight of Fortune, who made such haste, that at last he arrived at Constantinople, where passing by the Pallace, & the Chamber of his Lady Polinarda, he fell into a multitude of amorous complaints, but Siluian left him not with his wonted perswasion. At last he came before the tent of the knight of Death, when he had euen then conquered a Grecian knight, named Titubant, who aduentured for the beautie of Cardigna, Daughter to the Giant Piottan, who was sent presently to the Sepulchre of Louers. While they were brawling Titubant, the knight of Fortune came praucing into the Lists,

Lites; vpon a very faire Countesse that Rianda had giuen him, who being sene of the Emperour, and all the Ladies, had the generall verdict, to be the seemelyst knight that entered there since the Tournament began.

The knight of Death was somewhat offended, to see euery one such make estimation of this knight, against whom his malice so increased, that he auouched to worke him the greatest iniurie he could. It chaunced the knight of Fortune, to lift his eyes to the Windows, where in the Emperesse Chamber, hee perceyued his faire Polynarda, whose presence made him (as it were) cleane beside himselfe: but Syluian (being disguised that none should know him) rounded him in the eare, saying. Syr, you are now in place where you must vse your strength, and not your studie: be mindfull of your Lady, but not to the detriment of your owne life. These wordes awaked him, when hee thus talked to to himselfe. My deere Mistresse, I would thinke my selfe most happie, if you would remember mee in courtesie, not that I feare mine enimie, but that it would giue me the greater courage to maintaine your Beautie.

These words thus ended, the Regardants demaunded of him the Picture of his Lady, as it was the custome: to which he thus answered. I am loath to shew my Ladies fauour, so that it is as daintie in sight, as it is dangerous for me to shew. Neuerthelesse, if I be vanguarded, I will not bee he that shall breake your Order, but will shew you that I esteeme above all Riches. This answer was accepted, and at the sounding of the Trumpets, they encountred one another couragiously, with such laudable behauiour in fight, as was greatly commended of euery one.

At length, the knight of Fortune threw his enimie against the ground, with such violence, that euery one thought he had beene slayne done right, and creeping to him, hee would haue smitten off his head, but the Emperour commaunded the contrary, graunting to him the Conquest, with the Tent of the knight of Death, and the picture of Alce, to vse at his pleasure.

Then came the Emperour and the Ladies done, to see the knight that had wonne this honour, but hee perceyuing them,



coming, and fearing to be knowne, called Syluan to him, and slipped away among the throng secretly, which highly displeased the Emperour, till hee understood, that he would not haue himselfe knowne. Then the knights triumphed, the Ladies reioyced, (though ignorant of the Lady, for whom the knight of Fortune adu ventured) and so they accompanied the Emperour ioyfully to his Pallace, the knight of Death being brought after them, very sore wounded, and lead by his Equyres. Thus may you see sayre Ladies, the vncertainty of Fortune, who raiseth when she list, and throweth downe when she list: so that it is better to keepe at her foote, in a quiet estate, then presume to her head, and gaine so sore a fall.

## CHAP. XXVI.

¶ Howe the Emperour in honour of the good lucke that had chaunced, ordained that night a braue Dauncing, wherein he greatly gratified the Ladies. And how on the next morning, he went accompanied with the Empreffe, and all the Ladies, to the Tent of the Knight of Death: where the Ladies tooke the courage, in the behalfe of their Knightes, to ransacke and spoyle the Sepulchre of Louers.



After that the Emperour had seen this braue Conquest, he desired the Ladies that night, to ende the Triumph, with all Courtly pastimes, both of Masking and of Dauncing, which request all generally gave consent vnto, except the Princeesse Bazilia, who still mourned for the absence of her Lord Vernar.

When the knights that had bin vanquished by the knight of Death, heard of this generall ioy, they to make theyr Ladies amendes, for the repulse they had sustayned, came into

into the great Hall, where Courting their Ladies, they daunced and passed the night, with honest and decent talke, in their delightfull exercise. The Princeesse Polinarda, as by the mutuall consent of the Ladies, she bare the superiortie of beautie from Alcea, so had she commendation, for her stately behauiour in the Daunce, which graced her person maruellously, and made the more liuely appaunce of her beautie.

On the morrow, the Emperour was desirous to see the Tent of the knight of Death, wherefore hee gaue commaundement that his Dinner should be there prouided: and so walking thither with the Empreffe Gridonia, the faire Polinarda, King Friso, and Florendos, with diners of his knights and Ladies. where they were brauely and royally feasted. When Dinner was ended, they went to beholde the whole Tent: where, at the first entrance, was placed the Statue of the faire Alcea, whose beautie made excuse for all the knights, in that they were conquered by one, whose sayre and splendaunt helme, was esteemed excellent, and that the knight of Death, had good occasion to take it heauily: for her, whose Beauty was comparable to any, the Princeesse Polynarda excepted. Then went they to see the Sepulchre of Louers, where the Ladies beheld the names of their knights, with their Armour and Deuises they had made, in the behalfe of their fauours, a thing which displeased some of the Ladies, in that they should be thought Prisoners to the knight of Death, which moued the faire Onitilda, seeing the baseness of the Prince Berolde her Seruant, to begin thus. Faire Sisters, it cometh we are beholding vnto none, but onely the hardie knight, who hath done vs this honour, to defend that by his valour, which else had bene depriued from vs for euer. And because we will no longer be subiect in this Prison of our Loue, I will take the hardinesse vpon mee, to set first hand to the pulling of this Sepulchre. Wherewith shee tooke vp the Table, wherein was the Image of her own beautie, which the Prince Berolde presently caught from her, and hid it vnder his Colours. Then euery Lady began in such order, that they had quickly defaced the Sepulchre of Louers, vsing such courage in their dealings, as the Amazonians, when they came to the ayde of the stately towns

Atome of Troye, where the Greekes were no more earnest in their desire, then these Ladies were in the destroying the Sepulchre of Louers.

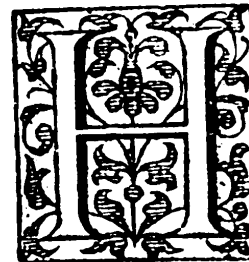
The Emperour upon this sight, was very sorie that he could not gaine the knowledge of the knight, nor for whose sake this honour was done, therefore he knew not to which Ladie to impute it, yet hee somewhat perswaded him selfe, that in time he should knowe him: partly coniecturing that it was the Noble young Palmerin, which caused him to vse comfortable speeches to the knights, that had to their great heauinesse, bene captiues in the Sepulchre of Louers.

When walking into his Pallace, the Emperesse caused the Image of Alceas to be taken downe, and brought into her Chamber, where she placed it according as her rare perfections did deserve, which was taken in very yll part by all the Ladies, that their Beauty should be disgraced by a strange Daine, and shee so highly esteemed in the Emperesse fauour.

The knight of Fortune made great haste, doubting least he should be sent for backe, and so haue discovered what hee was: for that if the Emperour sent, he durst not disobey his will, which the better to prevent, he rode till he resolved himselfe he was far enough from recalling. But as he was greatly contented with his honourable Conquest, so was hee heauily oppressed, in thinking on his Lady, whose angry countenance made a more deepe wound into his heart, then the weapon of his Enemy had power to enter. But Syluian, who was Chyrurgian to his Masters Passions, vied his good perswasions, which was of more force with the Prince, then any other that might offer to talke to him. For Nature willed him to accept his intreaty, when neyther courage nor crueltie in any other, might compell him.

CHAP. XXVII.

How the knight of the Sauage man, leauing Blandidon in the Tristfull Valley, in the Realme of Lacedemonia, tooke shipping to trie the aduenture of great Brittain, but chancing to go on land in Ireland, he came to the castle of the Giant Calfurnien, who kept three Ladies prisoners in his Castle. And how the knight of the Sauage man encountred Calfurnian, and slew him.



Here haue I thought good to remember the knight of the Sauage man, who leauing Blandidon in the Tristfull Valley, came to the cittie of Lambel, where he imbarcked himselfe toward the Forrest of great Brittain, minding to visite King Fredericke, and the Princesse Florida, and then to seek the Castle of Dramusiande, which was greatly talked on, for the losse of the knights. And now had Dramusiande set the Equires of the knights at libertie, but carryed them forth in such politike manner, that they could neither retorne againe to the Castle, nor giue any report in what place it stood.

The knight of the Sauage man had such a prosperous winde, that at last they had sight of the coast of England, but on a sudden, arose such a tempest, as carryed them perforce vpon the coast of Ireland, taking haue at the mount of Saint Cyprian. because they could not reach the port of Moricque. The knight of the Sauage man had a great desire to land: but the maister perswaded him to the contrary, with these words. I desire you Sir, to take good respect in what you enterprize, for well you know, unhappinnesse dwelleth next doore to hardines, and danger is the neighbour to earnest desire: therefore in all your actions, vse a good foresight, so may you the better prevent any

From yonder Mountain, dotheth a Giant of no lesse byle-  
ne of person, then renowned in his puissance, hee hath to  
name Calburnien, whose crueltie is such, that if any chance in-  
to his hands, it is their present death. Wherefore, good Sir,  
be ruled by your friend, who would be loath you should fall in-  
to so great folly. Syr (quoth the knight of the Sauage man)  
I giue you as great thanks, as I perceiue your counsell ten-  
deth to my welfare: But if he be so cruell as you speake of, it  
were good to teach him some courtesie, if he can conceiue none  
of himselfe. And so much trust do I repose in Fortune, that  
she will suffer me to deale with him, albeit not to conquer him  
which if it returne the losse of my life, I esteeme it the lesse, in  
so much as he shall perceiue courage and courtesie, in one that  
would wish as much in himselfe.

The maister seeing no perswasion might auaille, sent him  
with his Esquire Aruifer on land in the little Cocke, commit-  
ting him to the reward of all good Fortune. The knight of the  
Sauage man, accompanied with his Esquire, trauelled vp the  
Mountain, which was very thicke beset with Trees, till at  
last he came to a little Pavilion, before which lay a great ma-  
ny Trunchions of Speares and broken Armour, belonging to  
such knights, as were there soyled, in seeking the Castle.  
Talking on farther in a litle path, which he saw traced with  
very fresh blood, he was lead by the droppes thereof, to the  
sight of the Castle gate, which was placed on such an vnmea-  
surable height, that he was faine to alight, and walk vpon foot,  
his armour being very troublesome vnto him, and walking  
thorow such a narrow passage, that hee was very wearie.  
When he had attained the top of the hill, hee saw the Giant,  
being such a man, as the Master of the Ship reported, before  
him stood seuen well appointed men at Armes, holding some  
knights on their knees before the Giant. Thre Ladies looking  
forth at the Castle window, which the Giantesse kept there (as  
Prisoners perforce) seeing the knight of the Sauage man, and  
sorrowing any good knight, should come to such a Tyrant, they  
all began a grieuous and sorrowfull lamentation. The Giant  
espying the knight of the Sauage man, sent thre of his knights  
to

to take him, and bring him to his presence, who stood leaning  
vpon his Sword, so that he was very wearie with coming  
vp the high hill: then they came to him, commaunding him  
to yield, or else they would slay him. The knight of the Sauage  
man, hearing their rough wordes, stood not waiting for nice  
feartines, but made this answer. I rather chuse to abide the  
danger, in denying your command, then to trust to your cour-  
tesie, in paying my selfe, so as I little esteeme your friendship,  
so doe I make lesse account of your furie. With these wordes  
he saluted one of them so friendly vpon the head, that hee fell  
downe dead at his foote: as for the other twaine, he dealt with  
them so reasonably, that hee paid them their debt in the same  
sorte.

When aduancing himselfe to the Castell gate, Calburnien  
who had knowledge of this mishap, came forth very strongly  
armed with a mightie shield, and a great space of Iron, having  
the head very thicke beset with Ayre nales, that no shield nor  
armour, but it would enter into: and in this manner he spake  
to the knight of the Sauage man. Alas, poor knight, Fortune  
was not ouer much thy friend, when she conducted thee hither,  
but rather thought her selfe much cumbered with thee, and that  
I should sacrifice thee to her for mine owne honour. The abuse  
thou hast offered me, in slaying my knights, hath prepared a rod  
so sharpe for thee, as thou wilt wish thy boldnesse had been bet-  
ter gouerned. The courteous knight, who had neuer seene any  
Giant before, and maruelling at his mightie stature, would  
not be any perswasion to himselfe of prosperous successe, but  
in this manner gaue him his answer.

He thinks sir, it were more commendation for you, and  
greater honour every way, to disburden your heart of cruell at-  
tempts, and embrace a courteous and ciuill kinde of life. For  
as God hath made you more mighty then other men, so to those  
that are your inferiours, you should be a gentle demeanour,  
which would better agree with knighthood, then with sauage  
qualities. Calburnien was in such a rage at these wordes, that  
he presently returned him this answer. I would there were  
before me, tenne of the strongest knightes on the earth, that I  
might

## The first part

might reuenge these taunting wordes on them, because the death can not satisfie my furie, and then shouldest thou perceiue what it were to me with impatience. God Sye (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) disdaine not meake men, though your owne strength be monstrous: but if it shall like you, to Combate in the Court within your Castell, I may hap to saue mine knights a labour, because a tenth is here, who though hee be not so big as ten, will doe as much one. When Calfurnien willed the knight of the Sauage man, to goe with him into the Castell, and at length they came into a faire Court, where stood a faire fountaine, the water issuing forth of the mouthes of two Dwarffes, that were artificially made in Chrystall upon it, and all about it, was very faire Jasper pillers, the court having such goodly lodgings and Chambers, that he greatly pittied so faire a place should be kept by such a cruell person, for as the Historie maketh mention, this goodly Castell was built by the King of Ireland, wherein he would often recreate himselfe, when he rode on hunting: but the father of this Giant, named Raurassor, tooke it from the King perforce, and lived therein, with all his progenie.

Calfurnien and the knight of the Sauage man, being readie appointed, charged one another with such puissant strokes, that the victorie stood very doubtfull, especially in the knight of the Sauage man, who had his shield all broken in peces by Calfurnien his Hache of Iron, beside, the sore blowes he had upon his body, put him in great danger of his life. Yet did he so well apply himselfe to Calfurnien, that he had mangled his bodie, armes and legs, in diuerse places, which moued him to such anger, that he threw downe his shield, taking his Hache in both handes, intending the present death of the hardie knight. But he scraping the stroke, and taking up his shield, which was somewhat too heauy for him: held him play, till he was glad to draw his Fauchion, wherewith he sent such a blow upon his owne shield, that he could not recouer his Fauchion out againe, which the knight of the Sauage man, perceiuing, strooke his hyles vpwards, so that he got him upon his backe, where, with his sword that was halfe broken off, hee left him not

## of Palmerin of England.

not while he found any life in him. Then sate he downe to rest himselfe, being sore wounded. and very saint with the losse of much blood, which made him to lie still a good while, ere he could moue himselfe any way.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

How the three Ladies that were Prisoners in the Castle, healed the wounds the Knight of the Sauage man, had receiued by the Giant Calfurnien. And how when hee was in perfect good health, he gaue the Castle to Orianda, one of the sisters (and all three, the Daughters of the Marquesse Beltamor) and so he departed towards England.



When the three Ladies that were in the Castle, perceiued the Giant Calfurnien to be slaine, and the noble knight of the Sauage man, to lie in such danger of his life, they came all speedily vnto him, and taking off his Armour, were very carefull to stench his bleeding of his wounds. Orianda, the eldest of the Sisters, who had greater experience in Medicine then the other twaine, and was of a more sharpe and ingenious capacitie, would not suffer her other two Sisters to meddle in any thing, but tooke the whole charge vnto her, to prouide him such needefull things as were requisite, and to shewe her selfe thankfull, for his well imployed paines. At last, Artiser his Esquire came by with his Masters Horse, and seeing the great danger he was in, became very penfull and full of grieve, and while the Ladies carried his Lord into a very faire Chamber, he barred fast the gates, so that none might enter in, which they somewhat stood in feare of, because the Giant was slaine, that any should come to his rest to  
There

There was the knight of the Sauvage man kept, untill such time as he had attained to more strength, who when hee had gotten a little health, would faine have bene gone, but the ladies restrained him to the contrary, declaring to him, the danger that might happen vnto him, if so some he would loose his body with his armour, that was brought very low, and rather required more strength. Their great courtesie liked him so well that he was loath to do any thing they should dislike of, wherefore sitting talking with them, he desired them that without offence hee might demand, as considering their estates, their names and Countrey, and by what mishap they chanced into the Giants government: Arcanina, the second Sister, whose beautie was equall with her Spaightly behaviour, resorted him of their names, and then began thus. Worthy Sir, albeit the uttermost of our power, is too simple to gratify our noble paines, yet seeme the valour of our good natures, which is the richest reward we can requite you withall. Letting our estates, we are all three sisters, and daughters to the marquisse Belamor, vassalle to the renowned Fredericke King of England, who upon the envious report of slanderous tongues, (our Father being endued with great riches, and large possessions, when he came to inhabit this place, whereupon these mountains, he caused to be built these faire castles, determining one to each of us after his decease: which place both was, and is yet called, The Mountaines of the three sisters) all this aforesaid living, he was in the Kings displeasure disinherited of, and we left to abide other mens recreation, saving the three Castles, which were left for honours sake, to sustaine vs in. After our Fathers death, we resorted each of us, to our appointed Castle, keeping them a good space from this Giant whom you have slain, that daily laboured to defeat vs of them. But when wee were in good hope hee had changed his minde, because hee had well left his continuall watching, then were we soonest of all deceived. For not full twenty dayes since, wee met by appointment all together, not farre from our Castles, where a little Parliament was erected, to make merry for the time, having in our company five knights, of our deere and loving friends. This Giant

(who

(who by his Spyes was admonished of our being there) came suddenly vpon vs, three of our knights slaine, the other glad to take themselves to flight: and hee brought vs with him into this place. To which place, if good fortune had not conduced you, we had bene deprived of our small wealth, but that which is most of all, the chiefe Ornament of our honour, had stode to an uncertaine award.

The knight of the Sauvage man, who had bene well acquainted with their Father in the English Court, and heard of the good report of his three Daughters: rejoyced that by his only meanes they had purchased deliuerie, and that it was his hap to stand in such a lucky time, promising them to be such meanes on their behalfe to King Fredericke his Soueraigne, that they should againe possesse the Liuinges belouing to their Noble Father, whose offence hee knewe to be so small, that he might easily purchase the Ladies they owe. When he had abode there, till he was well able to beare Armour, he desired Orianda to accept that Castle, in recompence of the paynes shee had bestowed on him in his weakenesse: promising both to her and her Sisters, his Hand and Sword, when any neede should require. The Ladies blessed large thanks vnto him, for his so great courtesie, desiring him to make knowne his Name vnto them, that they might commend his memorie, who had bene so good a friend vnto them.

To which request he thus answered: Ladies, my name is as yet so little knowne, that I am the more vnwilling to shew it to any, till I deserue to be esteemed among those, whose noblenesse is no lesse then their Name. Desiring you to accept of this answer as now, and thinke not that my dares shall reprove my word: but that at any time, I will imploy my selfe in your seruice. But first I must hazarde my selfe, in the Adventures of great Brittain, wherein so many Noble and famous knights haue recouered great advantage, which if I may finish, or in tryall, safely escape, you shall knowe the small estimation I will repose of my life, to trye the deepest doubtles for such Honourable Ladies. Say (quoth Artinarda) if our Prayers may preuaile, or our wishes returne to any good effect, doubt not but we will be

## The first part

earnest therein, for your prosperous successe in great Brittain. And esteeme your poore handmaidens, not stretching beyond the boundes of modestie, yours so farre as courtesie may and shall commaund. After many gentle salutations, the knight of the Sauage man departed, accompanied with Artisar his Esquire, leaving the Ladies in more severity then he found them, not offering them once iniury or disloyaltie, for that hee esteemed the small faults of the noble and famous, were worthy as seuerer punishment, as their haughty deedes of Armes, did rightly deserue eternall commendation, So in this maner he left them, taking shipping with all speede toward the realme of England.

## CHAP. XXIX.

How the Emperour walked to comfort the Knight of Death, who remained in great heauie nesse for his faire Alcea, who by the perswasion of the Emperour, determined to leaue that sorrowfull kinde of life, and to imploy himselfe in seeking strange aduentures. And how the Damosel Lucenda, returned vnto the Court, where shee gaue knowledge of the Knight of Fortune, which greatly reioyced the Emperour, and all the noble Knights of the Court.



**I**t hath bene already declared vnto you, the great displeasure which the Emperour took, for the departure of the knight, who bare the honour away (vnto knowne) in the Triumph, wherefore, now you shall vnderstand, how the Emperour remembring the heauie and pensiu estate of the knight of Death, went accompanied with his Princes and Lordes, to giue him some occasion of comfort, which might bee a meane, to driue forth of his memory the continuall mourning

## of Palmerin of England.

61

nings he bled for his faire Alcea.

The Knight of Death being aduertised, how the Emperour was coming, came to the gate, attired in a long blacke gowne, agreeable to his sad and ioylesse kinde of life, where he receiued the Emperour, according to his obedient dutie. Then would the Emperour vse to giue him such pleasant speeches, as might constrain him to forget his rufull complaints, but he giuing small attendance thereto, made answer to his Grace cleane contrary, to the no small amazement of his highnesse, as also his Courtly attendance, who greatly marvelled, to see how vnfortunate destiny had a power to bereaue a man, both of reason & vnderstanding, which was amply verified, in this sorrowfull prince of Sargignia. The Emperour to perswade the extremity of his fits, would rehearse diuerse perswasions of his owne knowledge, who had bene subiect to the like infirmitie, and either cut off their time by desperation, or continued in a life benomed of all persons: vpon which words he took occasion to vse this talke.

I would Sir Floraman, not onely comend your loyaltie, but likewise attribute high hono<sup>r</sup> to your constancy: if teares could call the dead to life, or the rufull mon<sup>ts</sup>, recover your great losse. Yet doe I consider with my selfe, loue compels you to this, and your settled affection, hath brought you to an immoderate euill: but compare the impossibility, with the state and condition of your griefe, you shall find the one as needlesse, as the other is helpelesse, and the extreame to be refused, when the maine can not be recalled. Consider, if sorrowe eate into the heart, it is not presently to be withdraue againe, if veration haue won the chiefest place, perswasion may weare her tongue to her teeth, ere she can bide the impatient desire, so that if wildome be not in man to intollerate his griefe, it may cost him the dearest him before he haue a quiet life. Doe but thus remember your selfe, impatience bring sorrow, sorrow sickness, sickness consummation, consummation the miserable Anatomy of himselfe, which is a terror to his kinned, an eye sore to his friends, the delight of his enemy, and the continuall heart breaking of all that loue him, so that the sooner he ends, the better he mentes.



On the other side, if a man apply himselfe to any exercise, as either traualle, for the honour of himselfe, & fame of his Countrey or spending his time in martiall exploytes, or according as his estate is, the poore to take paine, the rich, paine with pleasure the Artificer and such, to their handie craft, the noble minde, the Courtly Gentleman, either to the exploytes of the field, or such exercise as may auoide idlenesse. When is the eye directed, the sense quickened, the minde preserved, the heart quieted, the conscience unpolluted, affection governed, loue bidded, and, lust banished, the good name perfected, vertue established, honour well exercised, and fame eternized.

See here the difference, betwene heauen and hell, betwene the contempt in this life, and content eternall to the Soule, which who so seeks shall finde, but they that will not, are ouerfonde. Think of this with your selfe, Alceas is dead, though I thinke her beauty on earth, yet is her substance shouelled in the clay, though I delight in her Image and Picture, yet hath Death made an Anatomie of her fayre person: While she liued I loued her, being dead I remember her, and in her loue, I liue for her, as the honour I will enterprise shall witnesse, and the aduentures I will hazard shall manifest. So do youe this dulled desire, in remembrance of your knight hood, which you employ for manhood, not for mourning, to display your worthy deedes, and not to play in amorous ditties, but one moneths vsing this Medicine, trust me will extingwish this mallady.

When Floraman perceived the earnest wordes of the Emperour, to be both for the honour of his name, and noblenes of his life, he replied thus. Most gracious Emperour, I see that Goates blood will molifie the Adamant, and the little drops of raine, pierce into the hard Marble, so wisdomne reproouing wisdomnesse, she weeth him his follie, and perswasion piercing into the obstinate, doth more by friendship, then others can doe with force.

I confesse, the affection to Alcea, hath both overcharged my minde, and cleane dulled my wit, so that I neither seeme as I should be, nor doe that I bought, but sit musing on her loue, who hath no life, & endamngt name or witte life, by such ouer fond loue.

And

And since your Maiestie hath quickened mine idle nature, and reuiued the dutie which I owe vnto knight hood, I will remember my selfe in forgetting her, and though I cannot exclude her Loue on a sudden, yet tolleration and perswasion, in time may doe something. And because the honoz of the field, can allwaie this fondnesse, and my dutie commaundeth mee, to employ my seruice, I will hazard my selfe on my good fortune, to winne as much by strength, as I haue lost by yll happe. Wherefore desiring that your Maiestie would entertaine mee in your Courte, and vnder your noble name, to seeke after Aduentures, I am resolved to forsake all follie, and pursue that valiantly, whereto I haue bene enemye.

The Emperour seeing the change of Floraman, to be as heartily pretended as himselfe desired: he thus answered: I thinke my selfe both highly Honoured, and greatly steamed in the fauour of fortune, to receiue so good a knight, by whose endeavour, I hope himselfe shall be worthily accounted, and the fame of my Courte for ever extolled. When Floraman would haue kneeled to kisse the Emperours hand, but hee graciously sustayned him in his armes, with great thanks on eyther side, liberally bestowed.

By this time was the Damosell Lucenda returned to the Court, whom the Emperesse among hir other ladies, came walking withall, to the Chamber of Floraman, where knowledge was giuen, that shee could reueale the knight who had conquered Floraman. The Emperour being very desirous to know, willed her to make report of him, when she began in this manner. The knight of Fortune who hath accomplished this noble piece of seruice, is the young Prince Palmerin, that Polendos King of Thessalie did present vnto you, when the Ladie of the Lake sent her Letter to your Highnes. For he happening to the Castle of mine Aunt Rianda, when with your gracious consents I went to visite her, I rehearsed the pensue estate of our Courtly Ladyes, seeing all they knights sent to the Sepulcher of Louers, vppon which report he came, and hath fulfilled that which could not be done by manie. And as I returned to the Court againe, I mette him, very hastily riding, yet stayed to de

I 3

fire

fire me, on his behalfe to craue pardon of your Maestie for his so sudden departure, not intending to returne vnto the Court, till he had assaied the aduenture of great Brittain, wherein he supposed all the famous knights to be lost. Moreover, he desireth your highnesse, to bestow the tent of the Knight of Death on her that had the power to staine the beautie of Alcea, and to whom he is ever dutifull affectioned, his Ladie and Mistresse Polynarda, which said, he departed, leauing me to declare what your Highnesse hath heard.

The Emperour not able to conceale the pleasure which his heart had receiued, began thus. I promise you faire Ladies, my mind did somewhat perswade me that it should bee he, although I would not perfectly resolve thereon: for in what place so euer he shall aduenture, I dare imagine his fortune such, as he shall prouaile, both to the comfort of the distressed, and to satisfie the longing of our minds. As for his Tent, it shall bee bestowed according to his desire: neuerthelesse, I would wish it might be well used, vntill it shall be his good lucke to returne, for I beleue he will employ it with continuall victorie, as hee hath endeouored to win it by valencie. As for you Lucenda, I will not be vnmindfull of your good newes, as also esteeme of you, as you do iustly deserue. So returning into his Pallace, the ioy on euery side, made a pparance of the glad receipt of these wished tidings.

CHAP. XXX.

How Recamon, the Knight of the Greene Tree, and Sonne to the King of Bohemia, came to the Emperors Court, to defend the beautie of his Ladie Lucina, against the faire Alcea, and the Knight of Fortune, whom he heard had conquered the Knight of Death. And how Tremoran, on the behalfe of the Knight of Fortune, waged Combat against him.

¶ et



At long after Lucenda had declared these tidings, when the Emperour sat with his knights reioycing in the towardly behaviour of the young Prince, there entred in a knight in his presence, bearing in his shield a Greene Tree, and his armour of the like color, who after his obeysancemade began as thus. Let it not enter your disliking (most famous Emperour) that I presume so boldly before you, in so much as the cause of my coming doth vige me to this enterprize. I am one whom promise bindeth to conceale my name, till I haue tryed the aduenture of great Brittain, wherein if I proue fortunate, it will giue me the greater courage to bestow my selfe. It hath bene greatly famed abroad, that a Just was proclaimed in your Court, for the beautie of a Lady named Alcea, in which to aduenture my selfe, I haue trauelled hither, to maintaine that my Lady and Mistresse called Lucina, deserueth the perfect praise above all for beautie. But since I arriued here, it hath bene told me that a knight is departed from your Court, bearing the renoune of this Triumph away: which newes do not a little displease me, in that it was my desire to contend with him, or any on my Ladies behalfe. Wherefore if I may desire so much courtesie, as to know where he is, or whither he departed, I shall thinke my selfe continually bound to you in duetie, and will search that knight, though it be to the losse of my life. *¶* (quoth the Emperour) I would as gladly heare of that knight as your selfe, and am as ignorant where he is at this time, as your selfe, but I thinke you shall not trauell very farre, but you shall heare such famous report of him, as will conduct you to the place where he is, because the valour of his behaviour is such, as he is unknowne in no place, but to be heard of euery where. Neuerthelesse, if might counsell you I would wish your minde changed from so fond an enterprize, because I can hardly beleene that the aduenture wil quite your labour.

The good opinion you hold of him (answered the knight) maketh me the more affectionate to seek him, and the more famous his deeds is, the greater estimation shall I conceive to deale with such a one. For if Fortune stand my friend, and I conquer him, that is so well liked of all, I doubt not, but the reputation I shall gaine, will constrain you to thinke as well of me, as now you repose a good affiance in him. Tremoran, the sonne to the Duke Lececia, and Nephew to the Emperour Trineus, hearing the proud wordes of the knight, aduanced himselfe towards him, with this greeting. Imagine that Fortune hath been greatly your friend, to send you hither when he is gone, leaſt by misaduenture, you should chaunce to meete him, who wold so settle your armes to your shoulders, that you would curse your Lady, to abide his Canuazado. Neuertheles, albeit he is not here, yet he hath such friends here, as would bee forrie you should depart without some recompence for your trauell. And vnder the Emperours correction, I will be the man that shall bring you acquainted with the knight of Fortune, so that ere you depart, you shall know he hath left such friends behind him, as will giue liberall entertainment to those that seek him in this manner.

The knight was halfe offended at the wordes of Tremoran, which made him presently to giue this reply. I thinke sir, the good will you beare to the knight, maketh you so foolish hardy in that which appertaineth not vnto you, yet because you dare aduenture so much in his behalfe, and will welcome knights in such a brauery, arme your selfe presently, because I would bee loath a cold calme should come ouer this hotte matter. The Emperour (though vnwilling) accepted their gages, and granted them licence to Combate. When in short time Tremoran came into the fiede, gallantly mounted, wearing blacke Armour, as the signe of his heauinesse, for the departure of the Prince Primaleon, bearing in his Shield a ramping Lion: then at the sound of the Drumpets, they couched their Speares, set Spurres to their Horses, and made a very braue Encounter, that the Trunchions of their Speares flew vp into the Ayre, and wereaine at last to ende their Combate with their

Swords. In fine, what with expence of Blood, grieſe of theyr wounds, and great wearinesse in fight, catching each other in their armes, they fell both to the ground: the Regardants attributing the victory to Tremoran.

The Emperour seeing they were so sore hurt, caused Tremoran to be conueyed into his Pallace, and the Esquyre of the other knight, conducted his Maister to his Lodging: where hee vied such diligence in his Attendaunce, that hee reconered to a little stronger estate: Then sent the Emperour to require of whence, and what the knight was: word being returned, that hee was borne to the King of Bohemia, and named Recamon, vpon which tidings, he presently sent for him into his Palace: where he was honourably vsed, till such time he had gained his health.

And then he departed from thence toward great Brittain, accompanied with Florendos and Placir, Sonne to the Prince Primaleon: who pittying the great sorrowe of theyr Mother, the Princesse Gridonia, aduentured among the other knights, in the search of theyr Noble Father, as also to hazard the Aduenture of great Brittain.

This Recamon being travelling thither, and being one addicted to a great vaine glorie of himselfe, by the trust hee reposed in his owne manhood, hearing how Floraman had attempted at Constantinople, altered his minde, and came thither to defend the beauty of the Lady Lucina, who was Daughter to the King of Denmarke. Spending there so ill as you haue heard, he returned with the knights to his former determination, they leauing the Emperour somewhat sad for theyr departure, yet they haue the attempt, with the glad issue hee looked for, perswaded him to take patiently their absence for the time.

## CHAP. XXXI.

How the Knight of Fortune, taking shipping at Totnes, at length landed in the Realme of England, and chancing into the Forrest where he was borne, he met with the Savage man, that had nourished him so long in his Caue.



**L**ong trauailed the Damosell Lucenda, till at the last he came to the Cape of Totnes, where he toke shipping toward England, and landed at the port of Saint Mathew, two miles from Sorlingue, accompanied with a Gentlewoman, that came in the Passage with him, at whose house he rested one night, and departed on the next morning. Then rode he forthward, friendly talking with Siluian, and reioycing that he was arrived in the place, where he determined to put his fortune in triall. Travelling on along in a Forrest, he came at last to the fountaine where he was christened, where sitting downe by this water to refresh himselfe, he espyed come running forth of a thicket of Trees, a Hart very fiercely pursued by a Lyon, who running still toward the Prince, at last came and lay downe at his fete, as one might iudge, to craue his defence. Therewith he arose, and offering to strike with his sword at the Lyon, he presently yielded himselfe at his fete likewise. Their two horses moued with feare by the Lyon brake their bridles, and ranne into the woods, after them Siluian hied a pace, leaving the Prince with two gentle beasts.

The knight of Fortune looking about, espyed comming from the place, where the Hart did issue forth, a Sauage man with the skin of a beast made close to his body, in his one hand a bow and arrows, in the other a couple with a chaine, wherewith he

ledde

ledde his Lyon. When he had espyed the knight of Fortune, he drew his bow and let flie an arrow at him, with such force, that it pierced into his sheld, but the gentle prince knowing him to be his foster father, who had nourished him so long in his Caue beganne to bee conuence vnto him, & to certifie him what he was. The Sauage man hauing not the patience to heare him, came towards him with such violence, that he was constrained with his sheld to thrust him away, so that therewith he fell on the ground. Then the Prince embraced him, giuing him to stand how long he had nourished him, with his sonne Siluian, who was gone to take his horses, that had started away at the sight of the Lyon. With these words the Sauage man did remember him, and embracing him in his armes, he walked with him vnto his Caue, desirous all the way to tell him, how he had taken him out of the armes of his mother: but because he would not so soone forsake him, he held him with other talke, and so spent the tyme, till they came to the Caue, where the Sauage mans wife embraced him very louingly: requesting what was become of her sonne Siluian. Her husbando did declare, about what businesse he was gone, which did pacifie her very well, and so she desired the Prince to rest that night, in a little closet, wherein he had slept many night when he was there and so feeding on so small pittance as they had, they went to take their rest. On the morrow, the woman wold haue shewn him the linnen clothes he had about him, when her husband brought him home, but he would not suffer his wife to do so, because he should not let her see him til for his father, and Siluian for his brother, who long tarryance abroad all that night, and as they remained, greatly displeased the Prince, as also his parents, who were desirous to see him. At last, seeing he came not the Prince to his leave and departed, to see if he could meete him by the way, because he doubted some harme had salued him: the Sauage man and his wife gently lamenting for his departure, as also because they might not see their sonne.

## CHAP. XXXII.

¶ How the Knight of Fortune departing from the Sauage man, rescued Siluian from foure cruell villaines, that tormented him very grieuouſly, and how he ſlew the Giant Camboldam, brother to the Giant Calſurnian.



After that the Knight of Fortune was departed from the Sauage man, he trauelled on ſot the moſt part of the day, til at laſt he came to the place, where Polendos King of Theſſaly receiued him into his ſhip, when as hee brought him to Conſtantinople, which conſtrained him to remember the great curteſie of the Emperour, with the great unkindneſſe of his Lady Polinarda, on whoſe behalfe hee fell into ſuch extream ſaddeſſions, that what with wearineſſe, and forcible aſſaultes of griefe, he ſuddenly fell into a ſlumber. He had not long ſlept, but in great feare hee awaked, ſo that his minde did perſwade ſome ill aduenture to ward him: then looking about him, he eſpied a ſhip couered with greene boughes, and thither he went to ſee what it might be.

Being there arrived, hee ſaw two men come forth of the ſhip, making great lamentations, deſiring him to ſie, if hee had regard to his owne life. But then to his greater amazement, ſtepped forth foure armed men, with Holbardes and Dagges in their hands, cruelly beating Siluian whom they had taken, and compaſſing the Prince, that he ſhould not eſcape. When the Prince offered to vnbind Siluian, but they told him, that hee muſt abide: which moued the Prince to ſuch anger, that with his Gauntlet he ſtrook one of them ſo ſore vpon the face, that he tumbled him cleane ouer, then with his ſword hee aſſailed the other,

ouer three: that two of them were ſlaine, the other eſcaped in flight: which done, he vntied Siluian, requeſting him to report, how he chanced into that miſhap.

Siluian was ſo amazed with feare, and ſo ſore with beating, that as yet he could not anſwere to this demand, but looking aſide, they eſpied two men come leading their two horſes, and after them a tall and ougly Giant, bearing in his ſhield, three Giants heades, whom Siluian reported to be the man, that had in this order abuſed him. The Prince was ſomewhat in feare at his monſtrous bigneſſe, and offered him reuerence according to his courteous ſtature: but the Giant ſeing his men ſlain, ſtood not to uſe wordes, but ſtrooke at the Prince very vehemently, with which ſtroke, his ſhield was cleſt in the middeſt, that hee knew hardly how to defend himſelfe. Neuertheleſſe, ſuch was the valure of the noble knight of Fortune, (albeit the fight was dangerous to eyther part) that at length hee conquered the Giant, and ſtrooke off his head: preſently falling on his knees, and giuing thanks to God, whoſe prouidence did aide him in ſuch a dangerous Combat.

The men that lead the two Horſes, came and fell do wne before the Prince, deſiring him to ſaue their liues, ſo that they were conſtrained againſt their wils, to attend on that miſchieuous wretch, who uſed them like wiſe too cruelly. Their faire intreaty had quickly perſwaded him: ſo that he deſired them to report what this Giant was, and after what manner he liued. Their anſwere was, that he was called Camboldam of Mulzello, the Lord of Penbroque, one of the cruelleſt Tyrants in all the world: who hauing knowledge, that a knight had ſlaine his brother Calſurnia, he deſired to take ſharpe reuenge on every one that ſhould happen into his hands. Upon this occaſion he ſailed from his Countrey, landing on this Coaſt in vnder ſhip, he went to ſee if Fortune would ſend any, to appeaſe the hell of his bloody minde, and meeting with that yong man running to catch his Horſes which had ſtrayed from him, he committed him to theſe which hee here ſee, that they might torment with ſundry paine. Thus haue we certiſied all we can ſay, deſiring you to ſie us in what ſervice you pleaſe.

The

The Knight of Fortune reioyced in his good lucke, and desired them to go into England, & certifie vnto the King Fredericke, how the Knight of Fortune had slaine the Giant Camboldam, and they should commaund him, in any thing to pleasure them. They promising to fulfill his request, departed presently, and the Knight of Fortune with Siluian, mounted on their Horses: and tooke their journey presently towards great Brittain, where he meant to accompany the noble Princes, & else deliuer them out of their long seruitude.

## C H A P. XXXIII.

How Siluian declared to the knight of Fortune, in what manner of the Sheeld of the Palme Tree was taken from him, to saue it from the cruel Giant Camboldan. And how happened to see the Combate, betweene Plair, Floroman, Pompides and Blandidon: As also how the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, came and brought him to his Castle, where he shewed him many goodly, and notable Monuments.



**D**istune aduancing the hono<sup>r</sup> of her knight, in obtaining this famous Conquest, caused him to procede on further, to discover the depth of other hidden doubts, and as he rode, perceiuing his shield past any means for seruice, asked of Siluian the shield of the Palme Tree, because his journey lay through dangerous places, and therefore esteemed it wisdome to be alwayes provided.

When he saw the shield was gone, wherein he reposed most affection, keeping it for an extreame neede, he willed Siluian to report, how and after what manner, he had suffered it be taken from him, to which demand, Siluian thus answered.

an

All the way as we haue iournied, I was devising how I might make knowne to you this losse, without gayning your displeasure, & mouing you to Anger: which two causes, made to conceale it all this while. When such was my mishap, that this cruel Giant tooke me, a Damsel mounted on a white palfrey, came crossing ouer the Forrest to me, vsing her speeches thus:

Siluian, deliuer the shield thou bearest, to me, ere thou suffer it to fall into the hands of this Giant thine aduersarie, where it can neuer be recouered again, and may cause a great endamage-ment: and thus much I will faithfully promise thee, to yelde it into thy Masters hande againe, when he shall stand in such need as to vse it. Her gentle speech, and the present daunger before mine eyes, did byge me rather to giue it her, then mine enemy, should enioy a thing of such honour: wherefore I gaue it to her, who presently departed, I could not tell which way, and then the Giant tooke me, vsing me as you found me.

The knight of Fortune mused at the Cuent, and could not iudge to what ende it was wrought: wherefore Siluian to put him out of this study, desired him to attend a great noyse, which he heard in a little Groue by them, as thogh it were the flashing of weapons in a Combat. Directing his course thither, he espyed foure knights on foote, very fiercely assailing one another: their Armour so brused, and their shields so battered, that hee could hardly perceiue any of their Deuises, except it were one, which was the head of a white Bull, belonging to Pompides, the sonne of Don Edward. The sharp assaults between these foure, byged the knight of Fortune to break forth into these speeches. Gentlemen, the great danger I perceiue you to stand in, with the grievous endamage-ment that may happen vnto you, constraineth me to desire, you would leaue this great rage, and end your strife friendly with reason, so shall you find it to your own com-oditie, and my selfe alwayes bound to you, if you accept of my counsell. Indeed (answered one of the knights) our quarrell is grounded on so slight an occasion, as we might easily agree to your honest desire. It doth onely consist in the knight of the Bull, who will the name of the knight he seeketh for, although he desired of vs likewise to vnderstand some tidings of him.

At



It is impossible for me to tell his name (answered the knight of the Bull) or if I could satisfie your desires, you could not any way compell me, so long as I haue this hand and sword to defend me. These words procured a fresh strife, and too it they fell againe very fiercely, and without any regard of themselves: which greatly pited the knight of Fortune, to see such courageous mindes, subiect to so great a hazard, which he was very loth to see and behold: but he greatly esteemed one of the knights, who was in white Armour, and dealt his blowes so freely, that he was in least danger of them all. When did the knight of Fortune once more perswade them to leaue the fight, but they were so severely bent the one against the other, that they scant knew themselves what they did.

At last a suddaine backnesse sent from the Castle of the Sage Aliart, ouershadowed them, at the departure whereof, the knight of Fortune saue all the foure knights laid in a Chariot, drawn with foure blacke Horses, which made him somewhat abashed, and moued him to demand of one of the Esquires, that drew the Chariot, what knights they were, that had fought this sore Combate: To whom he answered, that the knight in the white Armour, was Platir, sonne to the noble Primalcon, the other was Floriman, the Prince of Sardignia: the other two knights were Pompides and Blandidon, who entred their Combate, about the enquiring after the knight of Fortune, which made them leaue the Emperours Court: enterprising likewise the aduenture of great Brittain, if they might meete with this knight, whose friendly company they alway desired. But see the misfortune, as they arriued here, not farre from great Brittain, these two other knights met the, demanding also for the knight of Fortune, so words arising on either side, why they should seeke after this knight, they fell to this fierce skirmish, which your selfe hath partly seene, to the losse (I feare) of our noble Masters, except we were neare some place, where wee might make provision for them.

The knight of Fortune was greatly moued at this tale, and perswaded the Esquires, to hasten with their Master to London, where in short time no doubt, they might recover their health,

health, and thus in grief he departed from them. And as he rode very sad, he espied one come riding towards him, with his horn about his necke, attired like a hunter, who began in this manner to greete him.

Behold thou noble Palmerin of England, the time wherein thy famous deeds, shall bring out of oblivion, the worthy Deuotee that long time hath bene hid, so that great Brittain may enjoy the former quiet state. Be not offended, because I did enterprise so boldly to name you: for I am priuie to that, which shall happen by you, although your selfe remaineth ignorant thereof.

The knight of Fortune knew not what to thinke, to heare himselfe named in such a strange place, where he perswaded himselfe he was unknowe to any: at length he beganne to thinke that it might be the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, yet would he not certainly giue credite to his suspicion, out of which doubt to remoue him, Aliart thus spake againe. Be not dismayed worthy Palmerin, for I am Aliart your seruant, who would gladly imploy my selfe in your seruice, to doe you the greatest honour I might. But as concerning what shall chance vnto you, I neither may or will as yet declare, but this assure your selfe, that you shall enjoy a more quiet and happy estate, then as yet you do.

Sir Aliart (answered the knight of Fortune) God forbid I should request any thing, which you are not willing should be knowne, but for the great bounty and friendship you haue vsed towards me, I remaine while my life endureth, both with loue and duetie to honour you. So walking on, at last they came to the Obscure Valley, where Aliart conducted the knight of Fortune into his Castle, and shewed him many rare and excellent Monuments, the liuely shape of men and women, in faire Portraictures, which gaue a great delight to his noble minde, so that he thought this Castle, the fairest that euer he had seene in all his life. There remained he so long as him pleased, very well entertained by the Sage Aliart, who gaue him to vnderstand, how Platir and the other knights should be healed of their wounds without any danger. These newes pleased

pleased the knight Fortune very well: as also the great gentleness, he found into the Sage Aliart, to certify him many things that he desired.

### CHAP. XXXIII.

How the Knight of the Sauvage man, arriuing in England, tra-  
nailed towards the Citie of London, And how Eutropa  
sent a Damosell, and caused him to enter Combate, with  
the Princes Gracian, Francian, and Polinarda. In which  
fight they were all in great danger, till the Knight of Eng-  
land riding on hunting, chaunced to meete with them,  
who set them at vntie, and brought them to the Court  
with him.



**T**he Knight of the Sauvage man, being de-  
parted from Orianda, in the Castle of the  
Giant Calturnien, so long continued on  
the Seas, that at last he arrived in Eng-  
land, intending to take his way straight to  
London, because he would see the king Fre-  
dericke, and the Princesse Florida, but  
greatly lamented to see the foremost so full of  
strange knights, and Damosels that procured perillous ad-  
uentures. At last he espied a Damosell on a white Palfrey,  
come riding towards him, her haire spread over her shoulders  
and her garments seeming to be greatly misused, all the way  
as she rode, she used many shrieks, and grievous lamentations,  
which was greatly pittied by the Knight of the Sauvage man,  
who saw a knight came hastily riding after her, whereupon she  
began to this gentle knight, in this manner.

Good Sir, as you regard the honor of knighthood, and the dis-  
tressed

estate of a poor Damosell, so at this time helpe to de-  
fend me from him that seeks to dishonour me, of that which  
maketh me esteemed amongst all vertuous persons. These  
words pierced so deepe into his noble minde, that he staied the  
knight's coming, who was very well armed, and bravely  
mounted, to whom he began in these words. I perceiue both  
knighthood, and that armor is ill bestowed upon you, that im-  
ploy your selfe in the persecution of a faire Damosel, when you  
are both bound by dutie, and by law of armes to defend her.

Sir (answered the strange knight) I desire you, let not the  
fained teares, and vniust complaint of this Strumpet, inueigle  
your minde, for it is not troth that she reporteth, neither am I  
so base minded, to pursue her causeless. The knight of the Sa-  
uage man, was so perswaded by the Damosell, that he would  
not credite what he said, but answered him thus. Sir, you shall  
rather disadvantage me then dishonour her, and therefore pro-  
vide for your selfe. The strange knight seeing him so egerly  
bent, said, I am content, since you will enforce me to it, and  
not rule your desire by reason. Whereupon couching their  
Speares, they met together couragiously, so that the strange  
knight was cast, and the knight of the Sauvage man faine to  
leape off from his horse, and drawing their Swardes, they  
layde at each other very cruelly, to the great hurt of them  
both.

In the meane time they were in fight, the Damosell had left  
them, and returned accompanied with two knights more, she  
wing them the knight of the Sauvage man, and saide. Behold  
Sir knights, the man that hath slaine my father, and now  
would gladly worke the death of this my Brother, pointing to  
the knight that before had pursued her, wherefore I desire you  
to take reuengement on him. At these words, one of the  
knights alighted, and perceiued the knight that the Damos-  
sell named her brother, to be very sore wounded, stepped be-  
twene them, saying to the knight of the Sauvage man, Come  
Trayfour deale with me, and not with him, whose losse of  
blood and wearinesse beside, desireth rather to take rest, then  
the Combate.

The knight of the Sauage man, was greatly offended at these wordes, wherefore he left the other, and went to him saying: I will make thee either recant thy wordes, or else I will leaue my life in this place. So charging one another very pua-  
santly, the knight of the Sauage man, laide him at last along on the earth, which the other knight seeing, and also the Armoz of the gentle knight, to be greatly broken in many places, began as followeth, I see Syr knight, you are brought into such debilitie, both with the great expence of your blood, as also wearinesse, with long enduring the fight, that I thinke it great dishonour to giue you a fresh assault, and small manhood in mee, to vye you to such extremitie. The knight of the Sauage man still incensed with furie, for the vnkind wordes hee had receiued of them, returned him presently this answer.

As I haue little cause to esteeme of your friendship, so haue I lesse opportunity to craue your fauour, and though my wounds be vnzelsome in your sight, yet can I endure the vttermost that you can charge me withall, wherefore set apart these wordes, and execute the extremitie of thy disloyall will. Thus breaking off their talke, they beganne to assault one another very rigorously, so that the knight sitting on Horse back, conceiued great maruaile at the haughty courage of the knight of the Sauage man. While he occupied his eyes in beholding this noble exploit, such febleness entered the minde of his fellow, that he could scarcely hold his sword, or keepe himselfe from falling to the ground, and fearing he could not escape the death, being in such great disadvantage, he alighted from his Horse, and to the knight of the Sauage man began in this manner.

He thinks Syr knight, it were for your better assurance of health, as also great gentleness you might offer to these knights, to satisfie your desire vpon this victory, then to hope on a farther of me likewise, & so be depriued of that you might hardly spare, which might yeld you greater disadvantage, then the conquest you haue gotten, will enlarge your renowne.

Syr (quoth the k. of the Sauage man) except he recant the shewde wordes he gaue me, or confesse himselfe vanquished, and to rest at my commaund, I will finish his boldnesse, by honour

honour of my sword, say you what you can, and see what he dare. Trust me Sir (answered the knight) if you will not grant to such a small request, as shall both extoll your fame, and manifest your friendship, I shall be enforced to enter Combate with you, which I am very loath to do, considering your present estate, in so much as I would not be hee that should depriue you of your life.

God Syr (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) this care in you is more then I haue deserued, or desire you should vse vnto me: wherefore hereupon assure your selfe, I am as able to deale with you, as they haue found me indifferent to conquere them. At these wordes, the knight (whom this noble Vidoz held in subiection) fell along on the ground, through faintnesse of much blood that had issued from him, as also the grievous wounds, hee had so unhappily sustained. Which made this other knight to assaile the knight of the Sauage man very rigorously, in hope to haue reuenged his friends hurt, with the detriment of his noble Enemies life, but he found the knight of the Sauage man so great of strength, and so greatly affected to a farther Vidozie, that hee partly repented himselfe for entring such hazard. Yet did he be-haue himselfe with greater courage then the other knights, which made him endure Combat a longer time.

It chaunced the King of England, to come on Hunting into this Forrest, where espying these two knights so eager at their fight, and commending both their expertnes, and braue behaviour, he entered betwene them, vsing great intreatie to leaue off their Combate, which they presently did, so that they would not disobey the kings request, whom they knew, and were very glad to see. The knight of the Sauage man, lifting vp his Beuer, came and presented himself to the King, who perceiuing him to be the knight, was nourished in his Court, as also the man hee had greatest delight in, receyued him very graciously, in signe whtreof, he suffered him to kisse his hand.

When the King had knowledge, that the other knight was Gracian, sonne to the noble Arnedes King of France, he alighted from his Horse, embracing the Prince very louingly, and desiring him to shewe the occasion of their discord, as also what the

the other knights were, that lay on the ground. The Prince Gracian, after he had done his dutie to the King, and to the Noble companie, that then were there present beganne as thus.

If it shall like your Maiesty, the knight that lieth hithermost, and is nearest to your Grace, is named Francian, Sonne to the famous Polendos, king of Thessaly, in whose company, to mine owne honour, and eyther of our contents, I trauelled from the Citie of Constantinople, thzough many places where we haue approued our knighthode, and made manifest such deedes of Armes, as our yeares and skill would suffer vs,

To this place wee were conducted by a Damosell, who reported her selfe to bee Sister to the other knight that lyeth on the ground: she gaue vs to vnderstand, that this knight (meaning the knight of the Sauadge man) had cruelly slaine her ffather, and did his endeour to kill her Brother likewise: wherefore she desired vs to stande her Rescue, and to deliuer her forth of such grieve, as shee might conceiue by his death. Francian perceiving her Brother in such estate, as hee could not alowde the heauie blowes this knight charged him withall, entred betwene them: and in like manner was brought to as lowe estate himselfe. Pea, and I perswade my selfe, had not your Grace come to ende the strife, my selfe had bene partner of their hard mishap.

The knight of the Sauadge man, hearing what the Prince Gracian had saide, began in this order to discourse how it happened. By grations Soueraigne, the Damosell of whom this knight hath spoken, came Ryding towarde mee, her haire dispearled on her shoulders, her face all blubbered with teares, her Garmentes torne, and very much polluted: all the way as she came, crying how that this knight (whome she after named to be her Brother) did seeke to dishonour her, and therefore desired mee to defend her in so great extremitie. When I had ioyned Combat with the knight, soone after she came againe, and brought these two knight, reporting to them, as hee hath informed your Maiestie: so leaning vs in this strife, she departed, we know not whither. The King well noting the decepte of the Damosell, which was onely to seeke the ruine of those Noble knights,

knights, caused the Helmet of Francian, and of the other knight, to be taken off, when feeling the ayze, they came to themselves againe, sauing that their wounds made them very feeble. Then was the other knight known to be Polinard, son to the Emperoz Trineus: when presently the King caused Francian and Polinard, to be conueyed in a Chariot to the Citie of London. And by the way, the King questioned with Polinard, for what cause he pursued the Damosell, when this noble knight took in hand to defend her? By your gracious leaue (answered Polinard) I thinke shee was the most wicked, and deceitfullest Damosell on the earth, for thzough her perswasion, Onistalde and Dramisian my friends, were brought into such ignorance, and such credite of her, that they entred Combat, and had almost slaine one another, had not I arriued at their fight, when they were hardly to be indged, if there were any recovery for their health. At my request they ended their strife, and rode together I know not well which way, nor if they be aliue as yet: but I followed the Damosell, to know the occasion why my brethren were fallen to so great debate, whē this knight came and prevented me as your Grace hath heard.

The King was greatly displeased at this misadventure, and sent presently about, to heare tydings of Onistalde & Dramisian, that if their bodics were found dead, they might be interred according to the nobilitie of their birth. But they were found liuing, and by the king sent to the Monasterie of Cleare Victory: where they were carefully cherished, by the brethren of that Religion, which was first found by Amadis de Gaule, nere vnto Henricke, & thither were his bones carried after his death, from the great Brittain, to witnesse the victorie hee had got of the Kings in that place.

The king caused a great many of knights to pursue after the Damosell, but their labour was in vaine, for her Distresse Europa who sent her, kept her safe enough from them.

When the King was come to the Court, hee caused the Princes to be so prouided for, as they recovered againe their health in short time: and the knight of the Sauage man lying in his accustomed Chamber, was diligently looked vnto by

the Princesse Florida, and the king would often visite him, because his minde did still vse perswasion with him, that he should be somewhat allyed to him in kindred. So he resolved wherof, he would intreate the Princesse, and he himselfe would often question with him, to make knowne vnto them what he was, or of whence he iudged himselfe to descend: but he would neuer by any meanes satisfie their request, because indeed, he could not gaine any knowledge of himselfe.

CHAP. XXXV.

How the Sage Aliart brought the bodies of Floraman, Platir, Pompides, and Blandidon, in a Chariot to his Castle, where he healed their wounds, and set them againe in the place where they fought their Combat, which made them know one another, and ioyned together like friends. And how a Damosell came & talked with them, and gaue them Horses and Armour, with foure Esquires to attend on them, so they all departed with the Damosell, to finish an aduventure, which made her liue in great sorrow. And how the knight of Fortune, departing from the Castle of the Sage Aliart, happened to lodge in the house of an ancient Gentleman neare London, where a Damosell came to intreate him of an aduventure hee should take in hand, on her behalfe, against the noble knight of the Sauage man.



Sage Aliart, of the Obscure Valley (as the Historie declareth) caused the bodies of Platir and the other knights, to be brought in a Chariot to his Castle, where separating them in sundry chambers, hee vsed such great care and diligence for restoring their health, that in short time they had escaped the

the point of danger, and were in as good constitution of body as they had bene before. For this occasion vrged him to vse more circumspection to them, that if their liues had failed thorough misadventure, then had not onely their noble kindred bene oppressed with griefe, but also their Dominions remained destitute of their chiefe defence. For which cause he had thus provided for them, albeit out of their knowledge, whence such friendship should proceede: neither how they left the place of their Combate, and were brought into so strong a Castle.

Platir and Floraman, were at last lodged in one Chamber: in like manner were Pompides and Blandidon, where they no lesse marvelled at their sudden recouerie of health, then at the Princely attendance was daily vsed to them: but which was more to their griefe, they could gaine no knowledge of their Host, either what he was, or wherefore he vsed such great curtesie vnto them.

The knight of Fortune, (who as yet remained in the Castle of the Sage Aliart) could neuer compass the meane, to find the Lodgings of these knights, but was very peniue, to thinke of their great hurts receiued in the Combate: Nevertheless, the perswasion that the Sage Aliart vsed with him, as promising, all should bee safely recured, vrged him to exempt so great a debt. When time serued, according as the Sage Aliart thought conuenient, by force of his charmes, hee cast them in a dead slumber, and brought them to the place where they fought their Combate: where when they awaked, they found the place bestrewed with the Trunchions of their Speares, as also pieces of their armour, and the grasse somewhat died with the effusion of their blood.

Euery one well holding himselfe to bee sound of body, in perfection of health, and the place so fresh with their blood, as though it had bene but as then split, fell all ioynly together into a great aduocation, and Floraman beganne thus to expresse his maruaile. If I should speake as I thinke, or thinke as I haue occasion, I should bee offensive to some, and but small to mine owne benefite. In this place I remember we fought our Combate, not to the griefe of one alone, but to the harme of vs all,

all in generall, and in this place are w<sup>e</sup> now, in good and perfect estate, releued out of a danger, and succoured from so great distresse, wherefore I must needs thinke, the adventures of this land to be rare: and rare, because I haue not bene accustomed to the like.

Trust me (quoth the Prince Placir) these two knights were our enemies in the Combate, and invade vs still, that we might ende our former enterprize: but if so be their intent, they are as unprouided as we, and neither of vs horse, weapon, or armour, so rescue himselfe from his enemy. These words thus ended, Floraman came toward the other two knights, desiring them (if they could) to resoluethem of this doubt. We are (answered Pompides) in such an vn certainty our selues, that had not you moued the question when you did, my selfe would haue requested the same of you.

After a litle talk passed betwene them, they fell into knowledge of each other, when forgetting their former enmity, they embraced one another, and greatly reioyced, that they had so happily met, vnto their seuerall contentation. To breake off their friendly purposes of salutations, they espied a Damosell come riding to wards them, mounted on a bay Palfrey, attired all in blacke, and her countenance bewaying a sad and sorrowfull disposition. When shee was come vnto them, restraining the bridle of her horse, and wel eying them, began at last in this manner.

Gentlemen, it seemeth some such accident hath happened, as hath defeated you of such refuge, as sometime you had, which may seeme strange to you, yet not rare to mee, who know the misadventures of this Countrey, to the griefe of my friends, and sorrow of my selfe. Faire Lady (said Blandidon) if we should rehearse in what manner our mischance hath happened, we should be ouertedious to you to heare it, and in danger our selues, while we stand to shew it, wanting our Armour to auoid what may happen, and being in a place out of our owne knowledge. Admit (quoth the Damosell) my selfe would be the meane, to prouide you all of horses and armour againe, would you grant the small request I should put forth vnto you

you? Ladie (answered Floraman) respecting our owne needs, and the dutie we owe to any distressed Ladie, hath wrought that in me, and I am sure the like in all my fellows, (the conditions fulfilled) that we will abide the bittermost extremitie for you, and in your defence.

Every one protesting what Floraman had promised, the Damosell departed, returning in short time with foure Esquires, bearing foure very faire and strong armours which foure more that ledde foure goodly coursers, all of one colour and bignesse: when to the knightes shoe thus begnde. Loe Gentlemen, what your present estate, & my earnest affection hat constrained me to doe, desiring you to make estimation of these gifts, according as you shall finde them in proue. Giuing her great thanks, the esquires armed them all presently, their armour not differing from one another in colour and richnesse, foure shields were like wise deliuered them, the deuils where you shall vnderstand hereafter. When they were armed and mounted on horsebacke, the Damosell shewed them, that they must accompany her thre or foure dayes, in which time (through their assistance) she should enter her lamentable sorrows, and grieuous mishaps, giuing them likewise those foure Esquires to serue in stead of them which were departed.

They not denying what the Damosell had requested, rode on with her, where at this time we will leaue them, and return to the knight of Fortune, who passing the time away with y<sup>e</sup> Sage Allart, in remembring his mishappes, his frowards chances in Loue, and all accidents that had happened him in trouble, determined to take his leaue of the Sage Magitian, who would not let him vnderstand his birth and Parentage, for the reason which you shall heare hereafter. But commending vnto him the adventures of great Brittain, as also what necessitie the good knights stood in for want of his helpe: and arming Siliuan with an armour, much like that which his Maister had alwaies worn, they embraced to together very curtuously, and so depart the Sage Allart promising him to be in all places where he should stand destitute of his helpe, and would assist him against all misfortunes.



So rode the knight of Fortune, towards the ancient and famous Cittie of London, desirous to see the English Courte, the same wherof was blazed through the whole world. After three dayes trauell, he arrived at the house of an ancient Gentleman, which was not farre from London, and there he reposed for that night, conceyving great pleasure to conferre with his Host (who loved to entertaine all wandring knights) about the estate of that Countrey, with the noble adventures in olde time passed, as also at that present in great Brittain. After Supper, they came and sate in the Porch of the House, where at last they sawe entering the gate, a Damosell accompanied with a young Gentleman: who requested of the Gentleman of that place, to have a Lodging there for that night. The Gentleman, whose custome was to entertaine strangers, commanded her a Chamber, with such provision as she should stand in neede of. Shee giving thanks to her friendly Host, for his so great courtesie, came and sate down by the Gentlewoman of the House, which the knight of Fortune perceyving, removed his stole, and sat down by her: and among other talke, requested of her, for what occasion shee was so penfull and heavie, which was great griefe to him to behold, as for her to abyde.

The Damosell taking occasion to behold him, and espying the shield of Fortune, so much esteemed and famed through all countreies, cast her selfe downe at his feete, and in teares began this sorrowfull discourse. I perceiue the anger of Fortune, satisfied with the former iniuries, that shee hath executed on my poore selfe, will at this instant change her rigour, and fauour her that hath bene altogether infortunate, in that I have found the knight, who not onely can, but (as I hope) will end my miseries by his knightly valour. So it is (worthy Syr) that sometime I had a Sonne, ingenious in every exercise, but chiefly well nurtured in Martiall affaires: and had his fortune agreed with his towarde behaviour, then had I bin a Patrone of ioy, where now I am the Mother of Misfortune. At so chaunced, this my Sonne to growe amorous of a young Beautifull Damosell, who had retained in fauour an other knight, before my Sonne was admitted her seruant: but such was her affection toward

toward my Sonne, that her loue to the first Suter died with cold, and she esteemed him as worthy of her good will.

This perceiued in the sight of all, was not hid from the knight, who began greatly to stomacke it, and finding opportunity fit for his purpose, assailed violently my Sonne, who (notwithstanding the danger on both sides) brought his enemy into hazard of his life, and himselfe the better into his Ladies liking. When time had admitted this conquerer into better estate, that his wounds were healed, and his strength conquered (not forgetting the repulse he sustained by my Sonne, as also the earnest loue he bare to the Damosell,) hee returned with a knight attyred in greene Armour, bearing in his shield the Portraict of a Sauege man, leading in his hand a couple of Lions, who seeking reuenge on the other knights behalfe, my Sonne took the courage to enter Combate with him. But such was the spite of Fortune, and so great her malice against mee, that my Sonne was brought in subiedion to this strange knight, who not contented with the victorie, cruelly cut off his head, and gaue it to his mortall enemy. Thus considering the great iniury that the knight had wrought mee, and that none will doe me that fauour to reuenge my vntimely losse, I determined not to leaue my trauaile, till I had found you, who bearing the name of the knight of Fortune, (renowned in all Countreies, that hath either seene or heard of you) can compell my enemy to confesse his fault, and giue him the reward that belongeth to so great discourtesie.

Wherefore most worthy Syr, at which words he staied her thus. Faire Lady, the extreme griefe of your inward thoughts witnessed by the abundance of teares that bedew your cheekes, constraineth me to believe what you haue saide, and to beare a part with you of accustomed heavinesse. Wherefore, considering your wrong, and the great vngentlenesse of the knight of the Sauege man, if my Fortune may bee so good to meet him, I will reuenge your iniury with his death, or leaue my own life for a payne with him. And the rather am I bidden to deale with this knight, for that there remaineth a controversie betwene him and mee, as yet unfinished, and now your mishap

misshap shall giue me good occasion, to recompence him for both together, if I knew certaine in what place to finde him. Truly sir (quoth the Damosell) I left him at the cittie of London, where his valour is held in such estimation, as is more then I can speake, whereof I iudge him not a little proude.

The knight of Fortune, perceiuing the earnest desire of the Damosell, to be reuenged on him, whom he would as gladly finde, promised her to send him defiance on the next morning by his Esquire, and that he would be as diligent on her behalfe as she was desirous to haue it dispatched: to which words the Damosell replied. I can now sufficiently iustifie what I haue often heard, that your care hath bene so great to the welfare of Ladies, as that Fortune hath the better prospered all your affaires, and in so much I can iudge it the more to others, by how much I finde such great curtesie my selfe, which if I die before I deserue, let yet your gentle nature affoord me a good opinion, for that all my life time, shall be spent in the honour of your name.

The ancient Gentleman, vnderstanding that his guest was the Noble knight of Fortune, esteemed his good luck more then he could any way disclose: wherefore he desired pardon, that he had not vsed him according as his famous report deserued: and that his ignorance might serue to excuse any fault committed. And the rather he vsed the lesse suspicion toward him, because he had entertained so many noble and valiant Gentlemen: among whom (as he was well worthy) he gaue great commendation to the knight of the Sauage man, as he had heard of many, and partly had seene himselfe.

Which good report, incited, and greatly moued the knight of Fortune, to vse the more diligence in finding him: in which desire, as time serued, they brake company, and departed to their lodgings. This couragious knight sustaining small rest in his bed: when the cleare morning appeared, arose, and armed him with all speed, taking his leaue of his Host and the Damosell, departing towards London accompanied with Siluian. And drawing somewhat neare the Citie, he tooke a great pleasure to behold the braue Towers and strong Edifices, which by the shining

shining of the Sunne, gaue great contentation to his minde, and vrged him to alight, because he would take good view thereof: vsing much talke with Siluian, as concerning the great fame of that ancient Cittie. So long he stayed there, till he supposed the aged King to be ien, when he rode into the cittie, where both the brauery of the place, and the remembrance of the famous Exploits, there begun and finished, prouoked him to some hautie attempt, that might enrole his name among the number of those, that were held in high estimation, for that the report of noble deeds doth vrgge the minde of the couragious to be equall with those, who beare most commendation of their approued balancie.

CHAP. XXXVI.

How the Knight of Fortune arriuing at London, passed away the time with an ancient Hermit, in seeing the monuments and Funerals of many noble persons: vntill he had sent Siluian to the English Court, where, in the presence of the King, he declared his Maisters challenge to the knight of the Sauage man, which he willingly accepted, albeit the king would hardly agree vnto it. And how they endured the Combate so long, that the king accompanied with the Princesse Florida, were faine to come, and intreate them to leaue off their enterprize, at whose request, they both gaue consent, neither of them giuing the victorie of the other.



Any were the grieuous cogitations, that passed the mind of the knight of Fortune, while he was entred the famous citie of London, as well for the vngentle dealing of his Lady Polynarda, as also sundry other conceits that he had occasion to thinke on. At last, remembryng he might not be licenced the combate till after Dinner, he withdrew himselfe to an Hermitage, where after he had heard seruice, he was desirous to see the ancient monuments that were in the Chappel, which for the most part were ruinated, yet some of them remained in good estate of their beautie. Among all the things that were there to be seene, the knight of Fortune beheld an ancient Sepulchre, which was cunningly framed in workmanship, albeit long continuance of time, had both wasted and dimmed the workes and figures thereof, so that one could hardly reade what was engrauen about it, sauing at the one end to as perceiued the name of Arbam of Norgalles, who was buried when King Lisuarte ruled the crowne of England. Upon the sight of this ancient monument, he questioned with the hermit, if in time past the ancient Sepulchre had not contained a much larger quantity, to which demand, the Hermit thus answered. Good Sir, when first I came to inhabite this place, which by computation of time, I gesse to be about 34. yers since, I found this ancient Sepulchre in the same estate you now behold it. But as I haue heard of many, and therefore may be bold to report it, when the Infidels did inuade this Land, they did ruinate and spoyle this Tombe aboue all the rest. Not sparing these other by it, as you may perceiue, wherein are interred Don Grumedan, and Don Cuillan the Pensue, beside other personages of no lesse nobilitie then knightly behauiour.

The Hermits talke, byged him to remember the discourse of the life of this noble Don Guillan, comparing his haplesse life, with his heauy estate, which was in like manner procured,

as his Lady Polynarda, was the original of his sorrowful mourning. At this remembrance, falling into a great agony of mind he was constrained to leane on the irons that compassed this auncient Sepulchre, uttering such rufull complaints within himselfe, as the græse thereof caused the teares to run down his cheekes.

Standing a great while as it were in amaze, the Hermit supposed he occupied his mind about some euill intent, but Siluian stepped vnto him, declaring that it was his wont to be often incumbred with Melancholy, and therefore willed him to vse no more doubt in this matter. At length he hapned forth of this mute study, turning his head to hide his extreame griefe, when Siluian went vnto him, desiring he would not forget his enterpryse, with the knight of the Sauage man, and to leaue such thoughts, as would draw his estate into such debility, as might greatly hinder his former determination. With these words he was somewhat displeased, saying: I more doubt of that which my late studying hath called into remembrance, then either the feare or force my enemy can vse to me. So taking his leaue of the Hermit, he rode toward the Citty where he met the Gentleman his Host, and the Damosell, on whose behalfe he had enterprised the Combate, then because he would not enter the Citty as yet, he sent Siluian to the Court, to manifest before the King his Masters challenge, and to vse great circumspection, what answer the King returned.

Siluian well noting his Masters commandement departed and in short time arriued at the Pallace, where going vp into the great Hall, he perceiued the King was newly risen from Dinner, walking with his knights, among whom was the knight of the Sauage man, being well and perfectly cured of the wounds he had receiued, when he fought against Gracian, Francian and Polynarda, who were there also in his company. Siluian came into the presence of the king, where on his knee, with such duty as is required in that respect, he began as followeth. Most puissant Prince, the knight of Fortune my noble Lord and Master, by me in humility of his owne person yieldeth the homage of his heart and knightly Sword, at your

Graces command. Such was his intent, as in your Courts he bowed to make proof of his service, but Fortune not so agreeing, in stead of a quiet entry (under your Graces leave) he meaneth to come by way of a challenge. For as he travailed, he met a Ladie, whose cause of misfortune, she doth attribute to the Knight of the Sauvage man, and my Lord taking her distressed case in hand, by me giueth challenge to him of Combat, to meet him if he dare, so that your Grace will allowe my Lord a safe entrance and returns, without the disturbance of any to hinder his determination, the Knight of the Sauvage man onely excepted. The king who had heard the fame of the knight of Fortune, to be such as was extolled in all Princes Courts, was very sorry that his arrivall should move such request, and would willingly have denied the Combate, but that the Knight of the Sauvage man came before his Maestrie, and used these words. My gracious Souveraigne, the Knight of Fortune is of such reputation, as neither may your Grace denie his request, nor my selfe refuse to enter Combate with him. And albeit his puissance hath byged him to a Challenge, and the advantage gotten in other countries, maketh him the more earnest to have his desires knowne here: yet can neither his greeting dismay my courage, nor his presence compell me to leave the fildes. Therefore, I desire your Grace to grant his request, that he may have libertie of the Just, according as hee ought: otherwise will I goe to him, as well to satisfie his desire, as to compasse the affection I have of my selfe.

The King seeing all excuses would not serve to hinder this matter, but that the Knight of the Sauvage man would needs take on him the fight, returned Silvan with this answer. My Friend, tell thy Lord, I am both pleased, and offended at his request: yet seeing his demand standeth with law of armes, which I can no way iustly denie, I graunt him free leave, without contradiction of any. But better would I have iudged of him, had his challenge beene to any other Knight, where being as it is, he will not so lightly escape, as perhaps hee maketh account of.

With this message Silvan returned to his Maister, who having

having heard the pleasure of the king, came presently to the place appointed for the combat, where the king with the Queen, and the Princesse Florida, with all the nobility, were ready placed, to behold this noble attempt. The Citizens likewise repaired thither to see this combate, which was so suddenly noysed abroad, so that the place was filled with abundance of people. The knight of Fortune entered, and made his obeysance to the king, and passed by, then came the knight of the Sauvage man, accompanied with many knights & noble gentlemen, among which company was Argolant who brought him his speare, & Don Rosiran de la Bronde deliuerd him his shield, so marching on by the king they left him, using this talke with the knight of Fortune. I know not sir knight, what should be the cause of your so great challenge, without it be to iniurie him that neuer offended you. Sir (answered the knight of Fortune) behold the Ladie here present, to whom you have offered no small abuse, which I will see you recompence, or constrain you to abide the doome of my mercy. Trust me sir (quoth the knight of the Sauvage man) the Lady is altogether unknowne of me, neither have I offended her, or any body beside, that I should deserve to be thus vngently accused: but I see the good opinion you have of your owne manhood, causeth you to be so earnest in this matter, which I will not deny, albeit I could, yet giue no spot to my honour. So departing themselves to fetch their carres at the sound of the Trumpets, they met bravely together, breaking halfe a dozen staves a peeces, yet neither able to stirre the other. When they saw they could not dismount one another, they took their swords and charged each other with such polittique behaviour in their fight, that it was marvellous to heare, what commendations were generally giuen.

When they had well wearied themselves on Horsebacke, they alighted, and endeavored to endanger each other with such rigorous blowes, that it was thought the Combat would not long last, ere one of them were slaine. For their shields were shivered all in peeces, their Armour so broken, that the blood trickled downe their sides, then fell they to wrestling one with another, their gripes made the blood to issue forth abundantly,

dantly, yet neither had the aduantage of the other in strength, but both so equall, that it could not be iudged, who was likest of victorie. The Princeesse Florida growning at their great effusion of blood, departed in such heavinesse, as if she had known it to be the blood of her sonnes, that was so cruelly spilt. The king with all his Courtly attendaunts was stricken into such a mase, when he saw them take their swords againe, that he thought the flower of all Chivalrie was there present before him, and was in great heavinesse, for that they would not giue over by no means.

The knight of the Sauage man seeing himselfe destitute of sword, shield, and Armour, began somewhat to feare, that his life would stand in great hazard, but yet he contented himselfe, that if as then his death were ordained, he should sustaine the lesse reproch, in that a knight of such honour had giuen him the ouerthrow, wherefore at a pause, he thus began. Why should I discourage my selfe at the death, seeing I shall depart in the flower and prime of mine age, and end my dayes at his hande, who is onely esteemed for good fortune? Yet the oath I haue made to the Princeesse Florida, with the great duty I find in my selfe, as her desert, constrains mee to with a longer time if it might be, as well to exalt her honour, as to trie the aduventure which hath endamaged so many good knights, whereto I did euer bend mine affection, as the onely enterprize in all my life to win me renowne. But seeing I am falne into so great mishap, as both fortune doth deny me, and mine owne manhood faile me, I will yet so behaue my selfe vpon mine enemy, as when he hath wonn the vttermost, he shall not boast of his Conquest, and such a wit will I deliuer him to seale, as I hope shall craue no other signet but his heart blood.

In like manner the knight of Fortune stood debating with himselfe, as well vpon his present danger, as also his passed dollour, not forgetting his Ladie and Mistresse Polinarda, to whom, as had she bene present, he began this complaint. O dame, behold now the time wherein your anger doth kill me, and your fauour reuiue me, which except you will beare the cruell mind to worke my Tragedy, restore in wanted clemen-

tie the encouragement of my haplesse labours, which since it lyeth in your handes, cast a friendly loke on the man, that in all extremities is none but yours onely. If you deny me this small request, neither shall I aduventure the enterprizes of great Britaine, nor doe that honour to you, which my heart hath euer desired, so shall the flower of Chivalrie remaine in their great misfortune, and you though your obstinacie accounted the losse of them all. This knight hath put mee in more danger then euer did any, yet neither of vs both enioyeth the Conquest: and if the infortunate death returne to my share, I shall thinke my selfe honourably failed at his handes, but my poore heart cruelly martyred through your hard dealing.

Then fell they to the Combate againe, not able to charge one another so fiercely as at the first, yet labouring earnestly to end their strife one way or other, which moued the king to disceend, accompanied with his knights, and fearing the losse of their liues, sought to set them at vnitie. But such was their desire of victorie, and so couragious their mindes in middest of most doubt, that the king was faine to returne, because they would giue no care to his perswasion, Then went hee to the Chamber of the Princeesse Florida, where in this manner he began to vse his speech. Maye Daughter, if my noble Sonne Don Edward your Lord be liuing, and that he may be deliuered by the valour of any earthly creature, I perswade my selfe, that one of these knights shall be the meane to relieue his aduerse estate. But if in this Combate, as I greatly feare, they shall ende their liues vpon this hautie attempt, then farewell all hope that I euer reposed, for both you shall lose him, and my selfe shall euer lacke him, where, by them I might (assure my selfe) both to heare of my Sonne, and enioy him in my Court, in his wonted estate againe. Wherefore, if you beare such loue to him, as you haue alway protested, and fauour me in this my earnest desire, boughsafe the paines to walke vnto them, for that one word of of your mouth wil enforce them leaue the combate, so shall you possesse what you haue long wished, and I be honoured in so great a courtesie. The Princeesse, who since the absence of her Lord had seldome come abroad, but alway kept her

her Chamber in her wonted lamentations, at the request of the aged king came walking downe with him, and foure Damo- sels attired all in blacke attending on her, her selfe apparrelled in the same manner: sauing that the baile on her head shadowed all her face, so that none could haue full view to behold her beautie.

When she was entred the place of the Iust, to the great amazement of all that were present, she came to the knight of Fortune, and tooke him by the arme, with these words. Sir knight, if either you make account of the honour of Ladies, or will manifest in your deedes that you owe them any duty, then at my request I intreate you to leaue off the Combate, as well to auoyd the hazard of your liues, as to content this noble company, who are satisfied with your famous exploits.

The knight of Fortune wel eying the Princesse, and percei- uing her to resemble the countenance of his faire Polinarda, he humbled himselfe on his knee, with these words. Faire Lady, my desire hath bene greatly bent to end this Combate, and to render this knight the victorie, as he hath well deserved, but seeing you haue charged me with such a courteous command, I rather desire the death, then to yeld any denyall.

Sir (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) if I should report the estimation I haue of your knighthood, with the forceable charges I haue receiued at your hands, I might say that iustly, which you haue rightly deserved, you are the onely knight to whom I will grant my Conquest. But seeing you haue made grant to her, whom in duty I must alway reuence, and that her intreaty hath moued you to end our debate, if I should contrary what she and you haue appointed, I might worthily be reproched among all knights, much more dispeed among faire Ladies.

The Princes was so well pleased with this good agreement, that giuing each of them hartly thanks, she returned to her Chamber, and the king not a little pleased at this good euent, commanded the knights should bee brought into his Pallace, where such respect should be shewed to them, that in short time they might recouer their former good health. But the knight

of

of Fortune would not accept the knights offer at that time, but departed with the Gentleman his Host to his house againe, whether being carefully brought in a Chariot, such prouision was ordained for him, that by the helpe of the Gentlemans Daughter, who was maruailous expert in the Arte of Medicine, his weake estate was relieued into indifferent good plight. Then was the Damosell sought for, who was the cause of this Combate, but answer was made, that so soone as they had entered the fight, she secretly shynke away thozow the preace, so that they could gaine no knowledge of her.

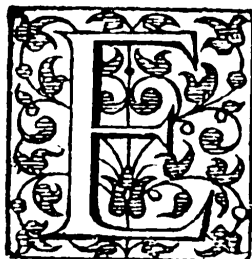
The knight of the Sauage man was conducted to his Chamber, where hee had such great attendance in the curing of his wounds, as by any meanes they could deuise, what might best serue for remedie. For neuer were his hurts so dangerous, as those that he had receiued at this Combate, nor his life in greater hazard, then it was at this present, which made the Princesse so diligent about him, that she enterprised as much as the simplest, that had any occasion to trauaile for his health.

The king was greatly displeased, that the knight of Fortune would not vouchsafe the lodging in his Pallace, where he will leaue awhile the two vnknown brothers, till they haue attained their health, that the we may haue more occasion to speake of them. And loth were I to be forgetfull of the knights of the Court of Constantinople, who assembled themselves in trauaile in the Forrest of great Brittain, trusting to the tickle dealings of flouing Fortune. Who if she fauored them a day, it would on them againe for a months space after, and when they thought themselves in surest estate of good hap, then were they nearest to their owne destruction.



## CHAP. XXXVIII.

How Eutropa the Enchantresse, who had sent this Damosell, that procured the Combate betweene the Knight of Fortune, and the knight of the Sauage man, caused al the Grecian Knights to come before her Castle, where they seuered themselves in maner of two Armies. And how she sent two Damosels more, who (by their faigned reports) set such a discord betweene both parties, that they prepared themselves to a dangerour Battaile.



Eutropa the enchantresse, and Aunt to the Giant Dramusiande, seeing her Castle storcd with good knights, and fearing the time drew ne to preuent her wicked purpose, she sought to set such discord among the knights that were lately arriued in England, as they should without knowledge spoile the liues of each other. For to this ende and purpose she framed her intent, that if she could execute her will on the couragious knights, who endenoured themselves in the search of the strayed Princes, she would set such strife and enmitie thorow all Christendome, that the Paganes should ruinate and spoile all the Dominions, and be Lords ouer the kingdoms and Countreys.

And the better to bring her deuises to passe, shee sent Damosels continually abroad, through the circute of great Brittain, to set strife and discention betweene all the traauyling knights, and the Damoselles were so diligent in theyr Mistresse commaund, that they daily brought many good knights into hazard and danger, as you haue partly heard, and shall doe hereafter.

One

One of these Damosels was the occasion of the Combate, betweene Polinarda and Knight of the Sauage man, the very same Damosell brought the Horse and Armour, to the Prince Platir, and his companions. She also set the strife between the Knight of Fortune, and the knight of the Sauage man, for this Damosell had heares at her commaund, and such subtile reports for the auaille of her Mistresse, that shee was onely beloued and esteemed with Eutropa, yea, shee referred the whole substance of her practise, to the deceitfull reports of the Damosell.

The knights that were lately come from Constantinople, and remained a while for their pleasure in the English Court, were enforced by these craftie meanes to take their departure, and to seeke the aduentures that were in great Brittain.

So when the Combate was ended, betweene the knight of Fortune, and the knight of the Sauage man, they disguised their Armour, changed the deuises of theyr Shielbes, least they should be knowen, and put themselves in trauayle, which way they were enforced, to finde the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande.

Eutropa had brought all the knights into the field where the Castle stode, seuering them in two companies, and a Riuer running betweene them, where their Tents were pitched, and such prouision appointed, as though they had determined to fight a maine Battaile. On the one side was the Prince Gracian, a maine Battaile. On the one side was the Prince Gracian, Onistalde, Dramain, Francian, Polinard, Tremoran, Claribal, and Emerald the Faire, on the other side was the Prince Belde, Dridan, Belizart, Guerin, Estrellant, Germaine of Orleans, Platir, Floraman, Blandidon, and Crispian, with diuers other. And both the sides brought into such estate, that they nsither could tell what the other were, nor by what meanes they were brought into that place. At last forth of the Castle came two Damosels, the one accompanied like a persō of great grauitie, the other hauing no body with her, but a yong Gentleman that was her guide, who presently went to the Daillions next the Castle, and the other to the Prince Gracian and his company, that were on the further side of the Riuer.

After she was come into the presence of the Princes, & very gently

gently and courteously entertained, preparing her selfe to a deceitfull course, and intermedling her talke with teares, she beganne in this manner. Sir knights, the crown of your noble doedes, and continuall fame of your well employed knight-hood, is sufficient to irritate your vsurping enemies, and to confound all such as swell against honourable duety, so that their owne drifts shall prepare their iust destruction, and their euill devices runne into contempt of the whole world. As concerning the presumption I haue vsed in my rash entry, with the bold behauiour you may perceiue, to my reproch, I shall desire you, first to consider the extremity of my grieue, and then to pardon my enterprise, when you are priuy to my Passions. This auncient Castell which you may here behold, doth belong to me that haue liued in it, both a heauy and happy time, in that in times past, I haue bene better acquainted with pleasant concepts, then for a long time I could enioy the like tranquillity, as they to whom my misfortunes are very well knowe, can witnesse the great alteration of my former estate. For Fortune among all the liberall benefits she had bestowed on me, as wealth to maintaine me, and a quiet government to protect me, gaue me a Daughter, so perfect in beauty, so pure in modesty, so precise of her personage, and so exquisite in her vsuall behauiour, that many noble Gentlemen haue put their liues in hazard, to deserue her good liking, that was liked of all.

Great hath bin the intreaty of many Honorable personages, to haue her in marriage, which I haue alwaies denied, till now, making choyse of one aboue all the other, I haue agreed to accomplish his importunate desire.

This being knowne to a knight, who had long time bene a Suter, yet neuer so fortunate as to gaine his intent, now presumeth vpon his strength to take her from me perforce, & to inuade him that hath obtained my consent to espouse her. In signe wherof (pointing to the Pauillions of the other knight, on the farder side of the riuer) behold where he hath placed his Tents to inuade my Castle, and through the helpe of his friends, purposeth to ruinate this mine ancient dwelling, & to vse violence to her, who is betrothed to another. When I considered there was

was no meane to remedy the necessity of my case, but eiter to keepe my Hold, and there be famished, or yeld me selfe to my foes, and so be dishonoured: I sent one of my Damosels to the English Court, at whose request you are here arriued in this place, where you may behold my vsurping enemy, and the great danger I stand in of the hard award of fortune. And once more haue I sent by way of intreaty, to will them breake vp their siege, and not to trouble me for her whom they cannot haue, though they vse neuer such violence. But such is the great malice of this knight, and his intent linked to such an extreme purpose, that neither gentlenesse may intreate him, nor faire demeanour serue to perswade him. Wherfore noble Gentlemen, as you respect the honour of an oppressed Virgin, and the oath that your knighthood hath auouched in this behalfe, stand now her friend who is voyd of all defence, and maintaine her cause, which is both for your renowne, and her good fame for euer.

She hauing thus ended her coined protestation, they stood debating with themselves what answer they ought to make her: at last, the prince Gracian (they hauing referred all to his disposition) toke the Damosell by the hand, and thus shaped his answer. Faire Lady, since this honorable company haue appointed me (vnworthy) to answer on their behalfe, and that we are perswaded you would not informe vs of any misreport: thus I dare awakeant for them all, that you shall finde them as ready to defend you, as your enemy dare presume any way to molest you. The Damosell hearing the answer of the Prince Gracian to be such as serued fit for her purpose, gaue the all hartg thanks and calling her teares againe into remembraunce baged the knights to such pittie, that they greatly desired to enter Combate with the other company. Then returned the Damosell, that had bene with the other knights (informing them likewise of such a false report): when being entred the Pauillion, to the Damosel (with curtesie) she gaue forth these speeches. What the enemy to your honour, and friend to his owne damage, will not be perswaded, but will follow his enterprise: and in derision scoffeth at this noble assembly reporting them to be so weake, that they dare not shew themselves.

These

These words byged Onistalde vnto such anger, that he presently brake forth into these speeches: I beleeue, that had they tryed those whom they haue aduentured to dare, they should finde the chastisement of their peremptory bragges, to be answerable in effect, as they haue iustly deserued. Eush (quoth Polinarda) it is easie for our enemy to talke his pleasure, but when he shall find his trechery, rewarded with due recompence, hee will wish he had vsed himselfe more frendely to this Ladie, whom he hath so greatly iniured. When Francian was desirous to send them defiance, which the Damosell would not suffer, lest her dealings should be espyed, but to worke the surer in her deceits, she sent the other Damosell once more, to will them to depart presently, whereto if they made denyall, that she should summon them in armes, to prepare for the fight. In meane while she was gone on her message, this other craftie Gyze, vsed such familiaritie with the Prince Gracian and the other Knights, that their heats were enflamed against them beyond the Riuer. To whom the other Damosell had reported, that the Prince Gracian and his company, did endeavour themselves to take the Castle from her Distresse perforce, whereupon she requested them to defend her Distresse right, and to cause them know they went about a disloyall enterprise.

The Prince Floraman hauing well pondered the words of the Damosell, returned her presently this answer. Albeit out duettie is to defend any distressed person, and to gainsay the mishap of any iniured Ladie, yet reason willeth vs, ere we presume too hastily, to be acquainted with the cause, and well aduised ere we begin such a rash attempt, else may our enemy iudge, we come more vpon a brauerie, then Knighthood may warrant our behauiour, and so runne into danger our selues, for that the rightfull cause hath alwaies the victory. Wherfore thus resolute your selfe, wee will first know if your reportes be of truth or no: least we enter into such defects, as we may happily repent vs. With that the Damosell began to rehearse their promise, at such time as she deliuered them Horses and Armour in their great necessitie, for which cause she desired them

then to accomplish their promise, threatening them, that their Nobility might be defaced in denying their words. Trust me (an swered Platir) I haue such a good opinion in her dealings, that she would not vse perswasion to vs of an vntroth. Wherfore tell vs faire Ladie, doth your enemy still remaine resolute in his determination? albeit my Companions deny to ayd you as they haue auouched, yet will I abide by you to the death, in what I haue promised.

Then the Prince Berolde coming to the Damosel, began as thus. Can we (faire Ladie) see you in such great hazard, and not employ our selues to giue you succour? No, assure your selfe, for mine owne part, and so I dare auouch for the rest of my company, that we will pawne the blood of our hearts, ere we will see you remaine in such a heauinesse. The Damosel, at these words returned to the Prince Gracian, certifying them of their willingness to the fight, and not long she staid, but returned to them againe, her face all besprent with teares, which was chiefe baile to couer her treason, and thus she spake.

Now Gentlemen, your quarrel is of more force then before, for they hating my Ladie and Distres in their hold, haue bowed not to let her depart, without she will render to them her castle. And moreover, they send you word by way of defiance, that they are so ready to deale with you, as they iudge you dare not come forth to them, either to defend the cause of my Ladie, or to make proofe of your loyalty.

This report prouoketh such an earnest desire in the knights that they mounted on Horseback, and beganne to shew themselves in the field, vsing such behauiour with their often recourses, that the other knights could enioy no rest, till they were likewise prepared. For such was the enuious dealings of Eutropa, that in this fight, she set the Sonne against the Father, one Brother against another, and the dearest friend to be enemies one to another: and to see how furiously they behaued themselves (not knowing them they fought against) would haue made one iudge, there was no other meanes but present death. Such was the force of her diuellish deuises, in the Treasonable attempts the Damosell undertooke, that

## The first part

neither ciuilltie was regarded, nor their owne safetie at this time respected.

### CHAP. XXXVIII.

How after the Damofels had ended their subtle perswasions the knights ioyned themfelue together, to a dangerour and doubtfull fight, wherein they had so fore endamaged one another, that their liues stood in hazard of any recovery. And how the Sage Aliart, seeing the intent of Eutropa, to worke the vtter spoyle of these couragious knights, came and charmed them in such order, that they quickly left of the battaile. When as the Giant Dramusiande came forth wirth the captiue Princes (who greatly lamented to see their sonnes and kindred in such doubtfull estate) and tooke them all prisoners into his Castle.



**N**ow that the Damofels had accomplished the disloyall practise of their Mistresse Eutropa, they departed, leauing the knights in readinesse to enter battaile, who had so changed their Armour, and the deuices of their Sheldes, that they had no knowledge of one another. The Prince Gracian was attired in gréene Armour, mingled with spots of white, and a Coate of Maile ouer it of the same colour, in his Sheld he bare a red Lyon rampaunt, in a field of Sinople. Onistalde had his Armour blacke, whereon in artificiall deuise, was made pretie things, resembling the scales of a fish, and in his sheld he bare a Gorgons head, his Brother Dramian being armed in the same manner.

The

## of Palmerin of England.

The Armoz of Baziliart was somewhat gréene, very thicke beset with Lyonesses of Gold, bearing in his shield for his deuise an Eagle. Francian had his Armoz resembling little flames of fire in his shield likewise the same order of deuise. Dridan was armed in blacke, bearing in his shield the Tower of Babilon. Polinard had his Armour of a sandy colour, whereon was painted many broken Speares in token he had lost the victory, against the noble Floraman, whē he aduentured for the beautie of faire Polinarda, & hauing for his deuise in his shield, a speare broken in the middell. Frisol had his Armour in colour red, beset with sundry pretie antiques faces of Sable, and in his shield he bare a white Lyon, in a golden field.

Tremoran was attyzed in a Carnation coloured Armour, very brauely beset with golden Pellicans, and the deuise in his Shield, was the Image of Sagittarius. Luyman of Burgondie, and Clariball of Hungaria, had their Armour white, and theyr shieldes alike in deuises. Flauian, and Emeralde the Faire, had their Armour blacke, finely bespotted with red, and in their shieldes the resemblance of a faire Clowde, in a field of silver.

The Knights on the other side of the Riuer, were in like manner disguised, giuing shewe to their enemies, of their haughty courage and magnanimitie. The Prince Berolde, first aduanced himselfe in the field, his Armour blacke, whereon was cunningly bespzent the teares of a Lcuer, and in his Shield, a blading heart, rent violently in a number of pæces. Don Rosuell and Belizart came next him, their Armour of gréene and carnation colour, bearing in their shieldes, the amozous passions of a Louers minde, in a fiede of Azure. Estrellant would not change his Armour, but defaced the deuise of his shield, that he could not be known. Trofollant had his Armoz gréene, whereon was figured many golden Doves, and in his shield he bare the Troyan Horse, in a field of Sable. Guerin was in white Armour, bearing in his shield a Becorke, in a fiede which resembled the coullour of many feedles. Rotandor, and Crispian of Macedon, were both Armed alike. Germayne of Orleance had his Armour of Azure, bearing in his shield

Shield a beautifull Damofell, which he kept in remembrance of the fayre Florenda, Daughter to Arnedes King of France, for whose sake he determined to trye the adventures of great Brittain. Platir, Floraman, Blandidon, and Pompides, to whom the Damofell of Eutropa, had deliuered Horses and Armour, came forth, their Horses all alike, and their Armour blacke, beset with silver Swannes, their Helmes very sumptuously guilded, and adored with rich Pearles, and in their Shielde their deuises were all alike, which was the smokie Forge and Anuill, of God Vulcan the Smith. Both the companies marching forward till they met, where they beheld each other in maruailous great contempt, when taking occasion as it serued, they couched their Speares, and encountered together very valiantly. Betwene them continued such a dangerous fight, what with the sore hurtes they receiued, as also the great debilitie they were all brought into, that the effusion of their blood, witnessed their earnest desire of victory, and the aduerse estates of them all, remained as a patterne of their great perill.

Don Edward, Primaleon, Recinde, Arnedes, Belcar, Vernar, and the Soldan Bellagris, standing with Dramufiande in a window of the Castle, beheld the fierce assaults of these courageous knights, whereto they gaue such commendation, as the most haughty exploit that euer they had scene, which moued Don Edward to say, I haue in times past, not onely scene many a notable skirmish, but also haue had experience, of the behaviour of many noble knights, yet comparing them past, with this which I now behold, I must needs say, all the rest hath bene counterfeite, and this is onely worthy eternall commendations. Ande (quoth Primaleon) the adventures in this place is maruailous, which maketh mee to suspend my iudgement of this couragious assembly, but if it be a naturall fight indeede, and no imagination giuen vnto vs by the practise of Enchantment, I must commend this for the most knightly adventure, that in all my life time I could gaine the sight of.

Dramufiande likewise was abashed at this present spectacle, and knowing it had come to passe by the meanes of his Aunt,

and fearing least in this Battaille some of them should be slaine, he went to her, and intreated her to pacifie this grievous Strageme, but her minde was bent to such cruelty, that she would vse no respect to his words. So long endured their violence to each other, that faintnesse made them let fall their weapons, and catch hold of one another, in the manner of wastling: which was great grieve to the Princesse in the Castle to behold, and soze paines to themselves to continue fight so long.

The Sage Aliart vnderstanding of this great mishap, and scorning that Eutropa should attribute the triumph of this victory wholly vnto her self, came to the place where these knights were assembled, and entring into the Camp like an ancient olde man (hauiing a rodde in his hand, whereabout was wound a Serpent,) he strooke vpon the ground with it, when presently the knights fell all to the earth, in such a strange and maruailous alteration, that one would haue iudged, they had bene deprived of their liues.

After he had there finished what pleased him, he went vp to the Castle of Dramufiande, sending such a darke smoke ouer all the Valley, (wherein might be perceiued great flashes and flames of fire) that the Princes in the Castle were maruailously affrighted. This moued Eutropa to such great anger (because she could not gaine the knowledge how this had hapned, no worke her will on the knights, as she had certainly purposed,) that she went raging all about the Castle, moued to such disquietnesse, that no body could perswade her.

At last this great darknes banished away, and nothing could bee scene but the knights, that lay all grouelling vpon the ground: which caused Dramufiande with his noble Prisoners, to goe forth and fetch them all into his Castle. When they had taken off their Helmes, the King Recinde knew his children, and the King Arnedes his sonnes: Polendos knewe Francian his sonne, and Bazilliart and Don Rosuel, were visited by the valiant Belcar, Dridan was carried the armes of Maiortes, and Platir was borne in by his noble Father Primaleon, who because he had left him when he was somewhat yong, did hardly knowe that it was his sonne. In briebe, they all

lamented to see their kindred and friends in such great misfortune, and conveyed them into the Castle, where they were so honorably used, that in short time they had good hope to recover them from this danger.

When they had attained some part of their former health, they rejoyced greatly that they had happened into the company of their dearest friends, and declared in what manner they were deluded by the two Damosels, which was not strange to them, who perceived the daily practises of Eutropa, to be grounded on such trecherous deceits,

Now did Dramusiande greatly commend his good fortune, in gaining so many couragious and well approved knights: as he was fully resolved, he should now easily conquer the Isle of the Lake, which as yet he would not make knowne to any of the knights, but used himselfe so pleasant in their company, and frequented them daily with such delightfull exercises, that generally they bare him great good will and affection,

For this opinion he conceived, that using them with gentleness, and shewing himselfe curteous in all attempts, he should winne their good wils, which he made more account off, then all the riches in the world. As it is alwaies seene, that friendship sooner winneth the gentle minde, then the rich promises and delivery of Coyne, can purchase any faithfull perswasion: which craueth a more couetous interest, then the persons esteeming vertue, will straine their mindes to amount vnto.

Chap.

CHAP. XXXIX.

How Eutropa after she had obtained all the Knights prisoners in her Castle, began a new trechery, to bring to ruine the Emperour and Citie of Constantinople, by sending Letters to the Soldan of Babylon, declaring how the Emperour was destitute of his chief knights, & how he might easily ouercome the citie. And how the noble knight of the Sauage man, after he was healed of the wounds he had receiued by the knight of Fort une, left the Court of England, and trauelled to seeke the aduentures of great Brittain, in which endeouour he arriued at the castle of the Giant Dramusiand, where he vnhorsed the Prince Primaleon and his noble Father the Prince Don Edward. Likewise how he preuailed against the kings Arnedes and Recinde, and foiled the Giants Pandare and Alligan: so that he entred combate with the Giant Dramusiande, each of them fore wounding the other, yet neither could enioy the victory. And how the Sage Aliart came againe, and made such a maruellous darkenesse, that the knight of the Sauage man was carried away no body could whither.



Had was Eutropa that she had gotten these knights her prisoners, whom she stood in great feare of, and Christendome in most need of: and yet not contenting her selfe with this extreame crueltie, would practise another mischiefe, to bring to destruction all the noble knights on the earth. It so fortun-  
ned, that by politike meanes, she was aduertised of the death of Olorique Alchediane, the great Soldan of Babylon, and deere friend to the Emperour Palmerin: who had a sonne remaind aliuie, not of the gentle nature of his father, but a great enemy to the whole estate of Christendome.



This serving for fit her diuelliſh purpoſe, ſhe gaue him by Letters to vnderſtand, what great and grieuous miſchances, his Progenitors had receiued by the Emperours of Greece, in that many Princes of his blood and linage, had bene cruelly ſlaine beſore the walles of Conſtantinople, which naturall loue and dutie, did inforce him to reuenge, elſe ſhould he be iuſtly contemned and reproched of the whole world: where if now he would vere his enemy vpon ſo iuſt occaſion, & vge him to the ſmall defence he had left for his ſuccour, he might be Monarch of the whole world, and haue more at commaund then all his Predeceſſours had.

As for a conuenient time, he could wiſh for no better then was at that preſent: when if he would lay ſiege to Conſtantinople, it had no other ſtronger of defence, then the aged Emperour, whoſe yeares forbade him to enter the field, and whoſe dominions lay ready at his owne appointment. As for the noble couragious knights, whom all the world feared, and were the onely ſafegard to that famous City, were in ſuch place, where they had more need of ſuccour themſelues, then come to defend the aged Emperour. Yea, and all other realmes were ſo vnprouided, of thoſe that were the meane to let this determination, that neither could they helpe him, or promiſe ſafety to themſelues, ſo that if he would, he might bring vnder his obedience, the moſt of all Chriſtendome.

Theſe letters were conueyed to the Soldan of Babylon, who provide for the attempt which Eutropa had willed him: where to his determination, we will forſake him at this time, till we gaine more fit occaſion to diſcourſe of proceedings.

The hardy knight of the Sauage man, was purpoſed now to ſee the aduentures of great Brittain, for which cauſe (when his wounds were perfectly healed) he tooke leaue of King Fredericke and the Princeſſe Florida, proceeding in his trauell, till fortune brought him to the Valley of Perdition, where he preſently eſpoſed the Caſtle of Dramufiande. Not long had he ſtood to take view of this Caſtle, but hee perceiued to iſſue forth a braue company of well appointed knights, among whom were Giants of a monſtrous ſtature, which gaue him

occaſion

occaſion to ſuppoſe, that hee was arrived at the place where ſo many famous knights were detained Priſoners: yet was ge-  
 ouen into a great doubt, in that ſuch comely knights ſhould keepe company with ſuch ougly fellows. At laſt, hee beheld the knights preparing themſelues, as it were to Juſt: when (after he had done his deuotions in prayers, as was his accuſtomed uſe) he receiued a Speare from his Eſquire, which he charged toward Recinde the King of Spaine. When Dramufiande ſawe the courage of the knight of the Sauage man, they all came downe to the ſote of the bridge, meaning, as it was their cuſtome, the Prince Don Edward ſhould haue the firſt courſe: but through intreatie, the King Recinde got leaue firſt to trie his ſtrength. The knight of the Sauage man being readie prepared, encountred the King with great valure, but ſuch was his miſfortune, that he was ſent to the earth. Arnedes, who had alway in trauaile borne him company, preuailed through earneſt deſire, that hee was granted the ſecond Juſt: but he was inforced to beare the King Recinde company. Primaleon ſeing his friendes receiue ſuch diſhonour beſore his face, without taking leaue of the Prince Don Edward, tooke the Speare and ran couragiously againſt the knight of the Sauage man, when they brake their ſpeares, yet neither of them any thing ſhaken. Dramufiande, who deſired to ſee the ende of this noble exploit, commaunded the ſpeares ſhould be preſently brought forth, when each of them tooke their choiſe, and ſell to their enterpriſe againe.

At the third attempt, fortune turning her backe to the noble Primaleon, cauſed him likewise to be diſmounted to the earth. This miſhappe greatly diſpleaſed the Prince Don Edward, and hee taking one of the ſtrongest ſpeares, gaue the Encounter to the knight of the Sauage man, which was diſcharged with ſo great magnanimitie, that both their Horses and themſelues were layde on the ground. Don Edward quickly taking his ſate againe, and maruailling at the puiſſant ſtrength of the knight of the Sauage man, who came vnto him and ſaluted him with theſe wordes. Truſt me (ſay knight) I would eſteeme my ſelfe both honoured of fortune, and highly

preferred vnto all good lucke, if I were in a place where, to doe you such seruice, as is your reward through your braue behaviour.

For this assure your selfe, that you are the knight who ought to beare the general praise among men, especially of me, who in all his life time neuer sustained so sharpe a plunge, as at this encounting you haue put me too. Syr, (answered the Prince Don Edward,) I knowe not if my behaviour seeme so praise worthy to you, but this I speake vnfainedly (not to cause you conceiue a pride in your selfe) that I neuer met with a stranger knight, since I knew what belonged to the bearing of Armour.

Pandare came to ende their tale, giuing these wordes to the knight of the Sauage man. Since (Sir knight) you haue done more in the fust, then euery one supposed to bee in your power, you must now endeavour your selfe to deale with me a while, for that all such as enter this Valley, are bound to fulfill this ancient custome. But if your heart serue you not to fulfill this enterprize, because feare may somewhat allay your youthfull courage, I wish you to yeelde your selfe, which will be more honourable, then to hazard your life, where you are certaine to lose it.

So he (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) it seemes your father was a Senator, by your Clarkely perswasion, and that you being his sonne, would do more with words then he could with deedes: but if your father hath giuen you more wit then you can beare, I meane to beate it out of you, rather then you should be ouerburthened. Pandare somewhat offended to heare these scrumpes, beganne to charge the knight with his yron Mace, and hee change blowes with his good sword, so that betwene them passed such notable behaviour in fight, that Dramusiande, Don Edward, and Primaleon, commended marueilously the hardnesse of the knight of the Sauage man. At length, such was the good Fortune of this noble knight, that he brought Pandare on both his knees, when he had sent his head from his shoulders, had not the Giant Alligan come presently vpon him.

Then was he constrained to leaue Pandare and atward the mighty blowes Alligan charged him furiously withall: but such was the great foresight of the knight of the Sauage man, that he still bare off his strokes, and would not strike againe, as well to refresh his owne wearinesse, as to make the giant see what stract with his long labour. In fine, when he perceiued his time, and saw Alligan was out of breath with his long continuance in fight, he came vpon him with such fresh delivery blowes, and followed his enterprize with such exceeding courage, that he brought stout Alligan likewise vnder his obedience.

This Combate was so well esteemed of all the Princes, and so greatly displeased the minde of Dramusiande, that he approached to the knight of the Sauage man as, thus. The good fortune (Sir knight) which hath returned you victorie, beyond our expectations, or your good assurance: me thinks should moue you haue respect to your bladding wounds, which may more cum damage your person, then all the perill you haue sustained in fight.

Wherefore, let me intreate you, to finish your desire in this trauaile, and to strue no farther, but yeild your selfe to my friendship, and by my sword I sweare, to vse you in such honourable manner, as shall be for your health, and mine own honestie.

If you refuse this my courteous offer, and a private pride shall cause you run without regard, I shall be vrged to that, I would be very loth to do, which is to giue you a fresh assault, when the estate you are in, doth rather require ease, which may be to your gracious detriment, and to my great dishonour.

These courteous words (answered the knight of the Sauage man) would serue very well to a faint hearted man, or to him that is so soze as I in bodie, but not to him that is so sound in minde: wherefore I am to thanke you for your great pittie, and would accept it, if that I did conceiue any such pleasure. But as it seemeth to me, you are the Lord of this faire Castle, that at this present doth deaie the flower of

of all Chivalrie: wherefore I would gladly haue you to vnderstand, that though my limmes be not in their best estate, my heart is in such sure hope, that my life shall purchase their present deliuey.

Dramusiande seeing he scorned his good will, and esteemd his words of no better account, presently returned him this replie. I perceiue Sir, it is high time to cause you know what benefite you might haue receiued, in following my Counsell, and what danger shall happen through your owne folly, so arming his head, and commaunding his Sword and Sheld to be brought him, he charged the knight of the Sauage man in this manner. I would wish to ioyne combat with a knight so hardy as your selfe, so that the disposition of his health were such, as my blowes might be well welcome vnto him. But seeing your stomack so good, yet your body soe hurt and ouertrauailed, I haue small pleasure to be thought I would deale with such a one, sauing that your fond words doth withhold my pitie, and denying my gentle offer, doth vge me to exact the vttermost.

The knight of the Sauage man would make him no answer, but taking vp the Sheld of the Giant Alligan, which was in much more better estate then his owne, he aduanced himselfe to Dramusiande, shewing such agility and nimble behaviour in his fight, as though he had not bene so wearied as he was, but yet his dexteritie, and magnanimitie of courage, had not the power to abash the hardy Dramusiande: who was both esteemed and apoꝛoued to be one of the strongest knights vnder the Sunne.

The knight of the Sauage man, found this enterprise the worst that he had yet attempted, the happy ending whereof, were sufficient to win him perpetuall renowne: wherefore he did eueuour himselfe with such good foresight, as all the prizes receiued good occasion to commend his valour. For oftentimes the desired hope of victoꝝy, doth encourage one to aduenture, the greatest danger: so that receiuing but a good opinion of successe, doth so animate the courage, that he followeth his purpose with an inuincible pretence. Don Edward & Primaleo

mar-

maruelling at this haucie exployte, seeing Dramusiande, neuer gaue blow, but it was so fiercely rewarded, verily supposed the perfect nobility of knighthood, to remaine in thy neuer dimaying knight of the Sauage man, which after a long times fight, caused Dramusiande to vse these speeches. Trust mee (sir knight) the perfect prooue of your infallible minde, constraineth me to lament your present approaching daunger: in that the greuous expence of your blood, cannot long sustaine you from the unhappy death. But if Fortune appoint the ruine of your dayes at my hands, and that (as it is no other like) but it must of force be so, I shall condemne my selfe of monstrous ingratitude, in that such a hardy knight shall be cut off in his flowing yeares. Wherefore let me intreate you, that our Combate may here take conclusion, and to venter no more the daunger being imminent, which if selfe will may not suffer you to grant, yet the ruine of your Armour, the soe wounds on your body, and the blood that hath coloured the ground vnder your feete, me thinks should prouoke you to satisfie my request. God counsell is better late followed then neuer, where it tendeth to the aduancement of honour, and maintenance of the spotlesse estate of knighthood.

Sir (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) your request doth aske such a scope of argument, that I rather desire to renew the Combate then consume time in making you answer. And hereupon assure your selfe, that neither your eloquence can allude, or your force compell to hinder my enterprise, but I wil haue it, or else resigne thee my carcase, to glut vp thy greedy minde. With these words they went to it againe chereely, deliuering such forceable blows to each other, that in short time their weaknesse withheld them from any more hurt. For though the knight of the Sauage man were in great debilitie, Dramusiande was brought into as great danger, that the Medants knew not to whom to impute the most hurt: so that the Giant would gladly that the knight had made acceptioun of his offer, because he felt himselfe to haue receiued small aduantage in this fight.

But no maruell if the knight of the Sauage man were weake

weake indeede, hauing iusted and dealt with so many before, yet did he alway beare such a courage, that they who beheld him supposed the contrary. Primaleon and the Prince Don Edward came, and were uery desirous to separate them asunder, because they feared the death of the knight of the Sauage man, but they laboured in vaine, for no perswasion could withhold the hardy knight, who saluted Dramusiande with such a mighty stroke vpon the Crest, that he cleft his Helmet, and wounded him very dangerously on the head, wherewith his sword brake in a great many pices. Dramusiande seeing his sword was broken, and himselfe lie likewise vnprouided of weapon, came and caught the knight about the middelt, who receiued him in like maner, that they threw ech other to the ground with great violence, being iudged as men depriued of their liues, so that it could not be said whether had the victorie.

The night approaching very hastily on, the Sage Aliart knowing of this Combat, addrested himselfe thither in all the hast, who made such an obscurity ouer all the Valley, as he had done before at the other battalle, in which darknesse he departed, and the knight of the Sauage man was taken away, no body could imagine how or which way, so that theregardants, who thought to haue carried him into the Castle, could not tell themselves in what he was gone.

Dramusiand was conducted into his fortreffe, where he was diligently tended by his Aunt Eutropa, who fearing least at this time, the knights would seeke meanes to escape away, she locked them into a great hall all together, where they had no light but what came in at a very small window, at which likewise they receiued such things as was needfull for them. In this order she vsed them till Dramusiande and his Giants had recouerd their former health, when she brought them forth againe into their accustomed chambers, greatly displeased that Dramusiande would behaue himselfe so friendly to them as he did. But such was the conference he reposed in their oath, in that they would not attempt any thing contrary to his wil and pleasure, that he exempted all discourtesie from his heart, continuing his wonted friendlinesse to the captiue Princes.

For on this he alwayes grounded his perswasion, that it were a point of marueilous ingratitude, to breake the vowed oath a man had made to his friend, and hee that would so greatly dishonour himselfe, should be esteemed and reputed as one that alienated and estranged himselfe from the course of all vertuous deedes.

CHAP. XL.

How the Knight of Fortune, staying in the house of the ancient Gentleman his Hoste, had his woundes very well recouered, and his body established in sound and perfect estate of health, which moued him to depart from thence, to seeke the aduenture of great Brittain. And how in trauaile he arriued at a little Pauillion, wherein he found the Knight of the Sauage man, lying sore wounded on a Knightly Beere, and Don Rosiran de la Bronde, standing by him, vsing many sorrowfull and heauy lamentations. And how the Knight of Fortune, by markes he perceiued in the face of the Knight of the Sauage man, and by conferring with Don Rosiran about him, had knowledge that it was his brother Florian, whom when he thought to take further view of, was presently carried away by the art of the Sage Aliart. And how the Knight of Fortune departed on his iourney, and Don Rosiran, carried the Armour of the knight of the Sauage man to the English Court, where he manifested the death of the hardy knight, and presented his Armour to the aged King Fredericke, who caused it to be placed in the House of Ensignes, amongst the Armour of many famous Knights.



**T**he renowned Knight of Fortune, (whom through occasion we left to speake of) remained so long in the house of the ancient Gentleman his Hoste, that his woundes were perfectly healed, and his body well able to endure the bearing of Armoz. When Siluian had prouided him new Armoz like his other, and a shield with his vsuall deuise of Fortune vpon it, he departed which way he thought fittest to finde the Castle of Dramusiande. At last arriuing at the foote of a mountaine, he espied a little Pauillion, wherein were a great many of lighted torches, which because the darke night was somewhat entred, gaue a very great shewe of light to the place. This strange sight moued him to take his way thither, as well to see what it might be, as to driue other fancies away that greatly annoyed his mind. When he was entred the Pauillion, he perceiued two samely knights, the one lying on a sumptuous Bære, moze like a dead then a liuing creature, the other making great lamentations, and pittious bemonings ouer him, whom hee presently knowe to be Don Rosiran de la Bronde, the Cousin of the aged King of England, which made him suppose that the knight on the Bære, was some man of great authority & estimation. Comming to Don Rosiran, and saluting him very friendly, hee presently had knowledge of him, that he was the noble knight of Fortune, to whom he began in this manner following.

Sir, I see that Fortune hath greatly fauoured you, in permitting you to see the dead body of the knight of the Sauege man, to whom you were alway a mortall enemy, yet could not bee he that should vanquish him in fight. The knight of Fortune hearing the wordes of Don Rosiran, was overcome with such heauinesse, that the teares trickled down his cheekes, when he began to frame his answer thus.

Indee, neuer had I moze desire to preuaile against any man, then my minde laboured to conquire this hardy knight, whose

whose prowesse is no lesse bruted euery where, then his knightly behauiour deserued. But now since death so hath cut off this famed Champion, whom I laboured to know, yet could neuer attaine my wish, I will end the enmity that hath bin betwene vs, with so sharpe a reuenge of his vntimely death, as were it possible for his ghost to embrace my friendship, himselfe should perceiue his enemy, is become as deare a friend to him as euer was any. Therefore of all courtesie, shew me the place where he hath receiued this misfortune, and I will die on him that hath bene the death of so good a knight.

Trust me Sir (answered Don Rosiran) my arriuall hath bene here so lately, that I am ignorant how he happened to this mischance: neuerthelesse I was aduertised by one, who departed not long befoze you came) that at the Castle of Dramusiande, where all the knights remaine that haue bin so long lost, he hath sustained this vnfortunate hap, yet not without inuiring him and his traine, as the memory of this knight, shall remaine to him whils he liueth, albeit Fortune would not suffer him to end the aduenture.

The knight of Fortune greatly displeased, to see this knight brought into such extremitie, began to conceiue better estimation of the aduenture, then euer he did befoze, albeit he was greatly abashed, that so good a knight had failed in that enterprise. When began he to behold the Armour that lay there by him, being defaced and hacked in so many places, which urged him to commend them that had the strength to vse it so, but moze the man that had the might to resist such an extreme danger: whereupon he saie. I may well perswade my selfe, that the hope to end this aduenture is altogether lost: the knight being dead, who had the puissance to finish all other. At these wordes he approached to the Bære, to see if he were cleane depined of life, when lifting by the sharte of Silke, he perceiued his countenance so grim and hardy, as it was at the time he entred Combate with him. As he stood wishly beholding this noble knight, his heart began greatly to conceiue an inward ioy, and his minde began to muse on a thousand matters. But chieflly the lesse of his Brother was his greatest thought, whom he

he suspected this knight to be, by diuers markes he knewe ie his face, for the better assurance whereof, he called Siluian, willing him to behold the knight, and report as his minde serued, his answer was comfortable to his matters opinions, giuing credite that it was Florian, who returned not after he departed with the Lyons. Upon this perswasion, the knight of Fortune desired Don Rosiran, to certifie him of the name of the knight of the Sauage man, insonmuch as it should neither disprorite the one nor the other, but that he might resoluie him in a matter, which caused him to vse great suspicion, to which words Don Rosiran thus answered.

Sir Knight, in what I may or can satisfie your desire, assure your selfe I will do my best. As concerning his name, neither my selfe, nor any other that I know, were so happy as at any time to vnderstand it, for that he vsed no of her name, then to call himselfe the Fatherlesse. But in times past, he hath often declared vnto me, that the best friend he had remembrance off, was a Sauage man, who nourished him a long time, and whom he supposed to be his ffather, but because he could not certainly assure himselfe thereof, he termed himselfe as I haue told you.

The knight of Fortune, whose minde was maruellously reuiued at the words of Don Rosiran, perswaded himselfe, that the knight of the Sauage man, was his Brother Florian, for which cause he offered to embrace him as he lay, but on a sudden there entred foure men, who lifting vp the Beere vppon their shouiders departed away with it in very great hast. The knight of Fortune endeouoring to folloin them, they willed him to the contrary, giuing him to vnderstand, that such good prouision should be vsed to him, as if the Diuine bountie would agree thereto, his life would be preserved, & his estate recomforted. With this perswasion he returned to Don Rosiran, to know which way he intended to trauaile, because he had determined himselfe, to go seeke the place where this good knight had bene so ill handled, and to reuenge his cause, though it were the losse of his owne life. Sir quoth Don Rosiran) I meane presently to take my way towards London, where I will present the ar-

mour

mour of my deare friend, to the king mine Vncle (at whose hands he receiued the order of knighthood) that it may be reserved in such a place, where the remembrance of his deedes done in his life time, may eternize the memorie of his infortunate death. With this answer, the knight of Fortune was very well pleased, desiring if he could shewe him the way to the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande, to whom Don Rosiran replied. Credite me Sir, I thinke few or none can accomplish your demand, such incantations and exorcismes are spread ouer all the wayes, but as it should seme by this good knight, it cannot be farehence, as you might iudge by his wounds.

Thus with sundry embracings they departed, the knight of Fortune which way pleased him, and Don Rosiran with all speed rode to London, bearing before him the Armour of the knight of the Sauage man, which he could not put vpon his body, because it was so cruelly martired. Being come to the court, he found the king sitting very solitary, for want of the noble knights that were wont to keepe him company: and comming into his presence, with dutifull reuerence he began in this manner. Most gracious soueraigne, I neither thought my heart in quiet, nor the time so happy as it should be, till I had presented your Maiestie, with the Armour of the couragious knight of the Sauage man, whereby you may perceiue (although the more misfortune) he maintained his life in honour, and with fame ended his dayes in the face of Fortune, prouing himselfe no lesse then he was, the man that deserued most the name of a Champion, And in reward of his taken paines, he crauech no more of your Maiestie, but that his Armour may beautifie some place of honour, to witnesse the vertuous behauiour he was wont to employ it in.

After hee had certified the king of the whole request, hee declared at large the aduentures of this hardy knight, against the Giant Dramusiande, and his noble Company, not forgetting to tell him, how hee mette the knight of Fortune, at the Paullion, who tooke such great grieve for this mis-happe, that hee is gone to reuenge his death on him, and all his.

The



The King thinking on this sorrowful mischance, and breaking forth into diuerse passions, expressing the great dolour of his minde, he commended the valiant attempt of the Knight of Fortune, and bemoaned the losse of his son Don Edward, with his princely children, attributing this mishap to be procured through his search, and how many aduenterous knights were lost to finde him. So he began to bespayre, that he should neuer heare of him againe, since the knight of the Sauage man was dead, in whom he placed sure trust for his deliery, yet againe he remembred the knight of Fortune, iudging the aduventure such, as none but he could finish. Then went he into the Chambers of the Quene, and the Princes Flerida, shewing them the Armour of the knight of the Sauage man, and by what misfortune he had lost his life. As concerning theyr heauines for these unhappy tydings, because I will not Gentlewoman that you should conceiue any sorrow through their dealings, I referre their lamentations to your gentle iudgements.

The King commaunded the armour of this good knight (to whom he gaue the name of the Fatherlesse) to be placed where the auncient Kings of England kept their Armour, so that their worthy deedes should not growe into oblivion: and this place was called the House of Ensignes, which they alwayes vsed to adorne their Triumphes, and wherein was registred the perpetuall renowne, atchieued by such, as vsed their Armour to the aduancement of vertue. Here was the Armour of the valiant Marlot, and also of the aduenterous Sir Launcelot du Lake, as also of diuerse of the knights of the round Table: in this place the Armour of the knight of the Sauage man, was royally hanged vp, to witnesse what aduentures he had knightly discharged.

The knight laboured in deuotion, to put out of memory the losse of this hardy knight the Fatherlesse, setting his minde on euertlasting, true and permanent things: as for the other, as they were transitory and vaine, so to their frailtie hee gaue them ouer. For Nature hath bestowed so great a benefit vpon vs, that shee hath left vs iudgement to discerne betwixt good and

and euill, and by what meanes we shal purchase our eternal heritage, which is the chiefest and best riches she could indue vs withall, and the onely direction wherein to spend the whole course of my life.

CHAP. XLI.

How the Knight of Fortune being departed from Don Rosiran de la Bronde, arriued in the Valley of Perdition, at the Castle of Dramusiande, where a Damosell brought him the shield of the Palme Tree, which was taken from Siluian, when he was Captiue to the Giant Camboldam. And how the Knight of Fortune Iusted with his Father the Prince Don Edward, vanquished Pandare, and cut the head of the Giant Alligan, entring Combate with Dramusiande, whom he likewise conquered, setting all the captiue Princes at libertie. And how an aged man came with two Damosels, and healed the wounds of the knight of Fortune.



After the knight of Fortune had taken leaue of Don Rosiran de la Bronde, he had not trauailed long, before he arriued in the Valley of Perdition, when because it was night, and he knewe not well which way to take, he alighted, sitting downe at the roots of a Tree, where he determined to sleepe vntill the next morning, but such was the griefe he receiued, at the wounds of the knight of the Sauage man, with sundry other cogitations that tormented his minde (being all this while ignorant,

rant, of whence or what he was, so that hee could not suffer his eyes to receiue any sleepe, nor his troubled thoughts to enioy any rest. For still desired to be at the Castle, where so many noble knights were held as Prisoners: desiring to redeeme them from that aduerser estate, or hee would leane his life there, as pledge of his valure. In the morning, Siluian brought him his steed, when presently they mounted on horsebacke, and rode on which way he thought soonest to ende his presence, Eutropa hauing now brought Dramusiande, and all his knights to their wonted health, that they could beare Armour and resist their enemy, suffered the knight of Fortune to come before the Castle, where he perceiued the knights newly come forth, making a shew of resistance if he durst offer to venture.

This sight caused him presently to couch his speare, when on sodaine a Damosell came riding on horsebacke, with a shield upon her arme, and this staied him. Sir knight, I desire you before you begin your Combate, to take this shield for your better defence, because this is the day you shal haue most need of it, and this day it shal stand you in chiefeest steede. Here ending her talke, & deliuering him the shield, immediately she departed in such great hast, that he could not haue the leisure to speake vnto her, or to giue her thanks for her so great courtesie. When he deliuered his Shielde of Fortune to Siluian, fastening the other upon his arme, when he knew it to be the Shield of the Palme Tree, that was taken from Siluian, when he slew the Giant Camboldam of Mulzella, which made him to expect some good aduenture, for the wordes the Damosell spake when she toke it from Siluian, how y she would restore it again, when he should haue most neede to imploy it in seruice. This moued him to approue the shield, because of the speeches of the Damosell, before the Emperour of Constantinople, wher the Sage Aliart sent her, as you haue heard before: likewise because, this was the most dangerous aduenture, that in all his life time he enterprised, he could not wish for a more fit occasion, then at this instant to make triall of his shield. Don Edward being ready provided, menaced his corage to y knight of Fortune, who receiued him, with such exquisit behauior of fight, that Don Edward was sore hurt,

hurt, but the good knight by receiuing his stroke vpon the shield escaped the force of the lance, The knight of Fortune vpon this good lucke would haue entered the combate with the sword, but Pandare coming forth of the Castle, commanded the Prince to retorne, so that he could not satisfie his request. Don Edward entering y castle, the knight made such speed that he entered with him: which when Pandare perceiued, he shut the gate, and came vantageing with his sword toward the good knight, who in short time disheartned Pandare, because his blows could not pierce the shield, but he so spoiled the armor of the giant that in short time he brought him vnder his obeyesance, being greatly commended of Dramusiand, Don Edward, & Primaleon, for his noble exploit.

The Grecian knights had partly knowledge of him, in that some of them were at Constantinople, when the damsel brought the shield, which they knew by the beautie, and the braue deuice: and such was their opinion of this knight, that if he sayled to end the aduenture, they doubted they should neuer get deliury from that cruell Castle. Yet so great was the pleasure they conceiued of him, as they could not tell whether they should go to welcome him, or enter the combate, and so deliuer him: but seeing how he vsed Pandare, vrged them to beleue he should haue good successe in this hautie enterprise.

Alligan seeing Pandare was nere losing his head, came and fiercely assailed the knight of Fortune, but he welcomed him with such a pure paiment, as he made him quickly retire to take his breath.

Dramusiande seeing Alligan so shrewdly handled, was so vexed he knew not well what to say: for he thought it impossible to conquer this hardy knight, hauing such a shield as could not all this while be pierced, so that he began vtterly to denounce Fortune, that had fauoured him so long, and would now leaue him at the last. Alligan (albeit very vntwilling) began againe to assaile the knight: but such was his reward for his trauaile, that he was brought vnder his subiedion, and left his head on a gage to the knight of Fortune.

When Dramusiande saw that Alligan was slaine, in a great rage he called for his Armour, desiring to execute seuerer

revenge on the good knight, in the meane time, the Prince Don Edward came vnto him, requesting such friendship at his hands as he would suffer him to haue a fight of his fate. Floriman seeing he was vnwilling to discouer himselfe: saide to him, that he ought not to deny such a small request, to so noble a Prince as Don Edward was.

When he heard Don Edward named, who was reported to be such a singular knight in Provence, and for whose sake, so many valiant Princes had left their countrey and kindred, to finde him who was lost, none could tell where, he caused Siluiano to take off his helmet, when the Prince delighted with his comely countenance, presently said. I hope (Sir knight) as God hath endued you with such a seemely and honourable shape so he hath reserved you to finish this perillous and strange adventure, for that your behaviour doth encourage vs all to so good an opinion. Nevertheless, if fortune do allow you the victorie, I desire you to vse curtesie to this Giant, who prepareth himselfe to encounter with you, for that his gentle vantage to vs, doth constrain me to speake so fauourable in this case. The knight of Fortune, had not the leisure to make him answer, because he perceiued Dramusiande coming towards him, when Siluiano hauing armed his head, they began to charge each other very furiously, so that now began the p[er]se of the fight, for al that had passed before, was nothing in respect of this present exployt.

The strokes of Dramusiande entred the knight of Fortunes shield, as easily as it would haue done in any other, which vnto the good knight to think, that the promise made of the shield was false and of no truth, seeing it failed when he stood in most extremitie. But then he perswaded himselfe againe, that if he gained the victorie, it should not be attributed to the vertue of the shield, but rather to be gotten by the valour of his person, which should be esteemed of more renowne, then to achieve the conquest by such a prouided meane. Therefore reposing no longer confidence in his shield, he trusted to his strength, and the good successe he did assure himselfe off: vsing Dramusiande in such sort, as he had little cause to boast of his bargaine. But

to speake vprightly, small was the aduantage on either side for they were both sore wounded, both alike wearied, and both in great danger of the present death, which made all the Princes heauy, and the regardants sorrowfull, to see such an vnfriendly spectacle,

Dramusiande resting to take pause, beganne to suspect that this was the knight should bring him and all his vnder obey-saunce, of whose coming, his Aunt Eutropa did alway cast a great doubt: which to prevent, hee thought best to render him some of the Princes, and so to will him leaue off his enterprize: but when he considered, that to present such a condition to his enemy, might expresse his cowardise, and extinguish the good report of his wonted knightly deedes, he determined to end his life with so good a champion, rather then to be reproched by continuall infamy.

The knight of Fortune walking vp and down, communing with him selfe in this manner. If I doe lose my life to deliuer so many of my deare friends, I account it the chiefest hono[ur] of my life, and the best aduventure that euer I enterprised. When suddenly turning his thoughts to his faire Polinarda, in this manner he began to vtter his amorous complaints. O Adam, if at any time you respected the bowed dutie of your seruant, then at this time vouchsafe to remember me in your Princely fauor, so that if the victorie returne according as I wish, I may manifest the honour of mine attempt, to your soueraigne bounty, by which I live, and in which I haue hope to confound my enemy.

Then they began againe in such wrathfull manner, that all supposed there was no other remedie, but the death of them both, such was their feeble estate, and so great the losse of their blood, that Dramusiande was constrained to fall downe, he could no longer sustaine himselfe, when the knight of Fortune fate downe by him, as glad to haue a little rest, he was become so faint. Don Edward, and the other Princes came running to Dramusiande, and took off his helmet, that he might receiue the Airc, desiring the knight of Fortune to content himselfe with the victorie, and not to worke the death of the friendly Giant, to which he answered.

Although mine intent was to part his head from his shoulders, yet will I not at this time execute such cruelty, respecting the honour you haue done me to intreate for him, and I haue done as much as my heart desired. The Princes conducting them both into y<sup>e</sup> castle, were so diligent about thē, at their dangerous estate required, especially to Dramusiande, who was reduced into very weake estate.

As they were so busie about thē, they heard a great knocking at the gate, which the prince Platir opened in all speed: where he beheld an ancient man, appavelled after the Grecian fashion, who entred the Castell, accompanied with two comely Damosels, carrying in their handes two golden Bores of precious Oylment, wherewith they enbalm'd the Knight of Fortune, as also the other Knights that had receiued any hurt.

The auncient man would not suffer any to be about the wounded knights, but onely the two Damosels: wherefore he commanded all the other forth of the chamber, promising them they should recouer their wanted health againe. This promise did greatly content the Princes, who desired nothing so much, as the health of the Knight of Fortune: in that by his conquering the Giant, they had receiued their former libertie againe, and all the cruell Enchauntmentes that Eutropa had practised in the Valley of Perdition, were now fully finished, and her power to be no more esteemed. The auncient man tooke his leaue of the Princes, commaunding the Damosels not to depart from thence, till they had all recovered their sound estate of health againe.

The Princes did daily accompany the Knight of Fortune, and Don Edward woud often visite the Giant Dramusiande, labouring to shew him great courtesie, because he would not be vngratefull for the friendship hee had found at his handes. In this manner did the Princes passe away their time, vntill their dearest friend had gained a good constitution of his body, which the Damoselles accomplished, before they would depart from the Castle.

CHAP. XLII.

How the Princes in the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande, for joy of their deliury by the puissance of the renowned Knight of Fortune, sent Floraman the Prince of Sardignia, to the court of the king of England, to whom, in the presence of the Queene and Princesse Florida, hee declared the ioyfull newes of Don Edward, as also of the other Princes that had bene long time kept prisoners. Which caused the king to send Argolant againe, to the Emperor of Constantinople, to declare the glad finding of the prince Don Edward, with his sonne the noble Primaleon. And how Sir Pridos came to the English court, to verifie the Prince Floraman.



Ramusiande being thus happily ouercome and remaining in such great debilitie, as it was doubtfull of his speedy recovery, the Princes would not depart from thence, till the knight of Fortune were able to beare them company, to whō the Damosels neither spared labour, nor good endeavour, so that they had good hope in short time he should be of strength to trauaile with them. In the meane time, they determined with themselves to send a Messenger to the King of England, that he might vnderstand the good fortune that had happened to them, which would make amends for the great sorrow hee had sustained of a long time.

The Prince Floraman, because of his great wisdom and judgement, was appointed by generall consent to beare these glad tidings: who went into the Armourie, belonging to the Giant Dramusiande, and put on his owne Armour, which was battered & broken, as also coloured with the blood which came out of his body in the skirmish, before he was taken prisoner into the castle. When he was armed, he took his leaue of them all, and rode in such haste that on the second day he arrived at London, where he was very much beheld, because his armour was so greatly abused.

At length he came to the Court, at what time the king was ready to goe on Hunting: to whom Floraman presented himselfe, desirous to kisse his Graces hand. After his Esquire had taken off his Helmet, the king had knowledge of him, when he embraced him with these words. Certainly Sir Floraman your Armour brought into such a great alteration, doth witnesse the great danger hath bene incident to your person: which trust me is as grievous to me in beholding, as it hath bene pkesome to your selfe in abiding. It seemeth you should bring but sorrowfull tidings, being in such great mischance as it seemeth you have tasted: Nevertheless, having often received such a sad reports, I can the better endure this, therefore say on.

My gracious Lord (answered Floraman) if you would vouchsafe to returne into your Wallace, where I might behold your Quene, and the Princeesse Florida, I shall discover such isyfull newes, as your long continuing wishes shal be now presently satisfied.

At these words, the king took Floraman by the hand, and walked with him to the chamber where the Quene and princeesse were sitting, who welcomed him very graciously, and blessed him according as his noble birth required. Floraman being never so happy, as before this instant to have a sight of the Princeesse Florida, esteemed himselfe the gladdest knight alive, to bring tidings to such a rare Princeesse of beautie, then after he had done his dutie, according as the place and persons became, he began to salute them with these speeches following. To be tedious in words (my gracious Soueraigne) or to trifle the

the time with long circumstances, might offend your patience to stay to heare it, and cumber my memory to stand to shew it. Wherefore to be breuity in such a case, as you have long desired, and at last desired: I thinke it expedient considering your heavinesse, and therefore attend how it hath luckily happened. Don Edward your noble sonne, Primaleon with the other Princes and Knights, that have bene so long time lost, and now found at last, in remembrance of their obedient duties, do all kisse the hand of your Maestie. Their long oppression hath now obtained a happy end, and their grievous sorowes finished with a generall delight, in that they have recovered their wonted libertie, albeit it hath bene bought with a sharpe resistance. It will not belong before they come themselves, for honour and dutie willeth them to stay as yet, because the renowned Knight of Fortune, whose Power hath freed them from bondage, hath not recovered such health as may permit him to journey. Untill which time, they remaine in the Castle of Dramusiande, who hath kept them prisoners, till this long adventure hath bene so worthily brought to end, and thus have I certified your Grace what hath bene given me in charge to accomplish.

These words moved them to looke on ech other, doubting whether they might give credance to the report of Floraman or no, who seeing them all in such an amazement, as though they did hardly believe what he had said, began againe to perswade them as thus. I trust your Grace doth not thinke, that I would presume to manifest before you a tale of vntroth, which to do, might remaine a blemish to mine honour, beside the offence unto your Grace did deserve no pardon. And therefore I desire you, not to mistrust what I have bene so bold as to disclose, nor credite me, your noble sonne Don Edward is alive, and yesterday I left him with the other Princes, for the causes which I have already declared.

The king perceiving the earnest protestations of the Prince Floraman, came to him and embraced him with these words. I have that opinion (Sir Floraman) in you, that you would not delude us with any false report, yet blame not my hardnesse of believe,

belasse, because I haue bene so often certified of tydings, which gaue an impossibilitie to what you haue declared, so that for this cause I was filled with the more suspect. Neuerthelesse, yet such is the confidence I repose in you, and such is the grauitie that accompanieth your dayly attempts, that I am resolved of your ioyfull tydings, and giue you a thousand thanks for your implored pain, then which nothing can be more acceptable to me, nor any thing more welcome then these long desired tydings.

The Quene and the Princesse withdrew themselves into a Chamber, manifesting such ioyfull discourses to each other, as might witness their great contentation, yea such were the severall motions of gladnesse, that toke place within their sorrowing mindes, as themselves had not power to expresse it, nor I the leysure to declare it: The king was desirous to know, by whom Don Edward and the other Princes, had bene so long time kept Prisoners, as also how the knight of Fortune behaved himselfe, in that so many had ventured, yet none so happy to preuaile as he. Floraman rehearsed the whole state of their imprisonment, from the first to the last, with the continuance of accidents happening in that time: but when he declared the last combate of the knight of Fortune, against the Giant Dramusiande, the king was taken with a marvellous astonishment which urged him to enter into these speeches.

Certainly, the war that the Giant Frenaque made against my father, hath bene the cause that all this mischief and aduerse mishaps hath chanced: so that my life had likewise come into danger, had not God in mercy vsed more respect vnto me: but tell me Sir Floraman, is the Giant Dramusiande yet liuing?

Certes my good Lord (answered Floraman) I left him in very grieuous and doubtfull estate of health, and your sonne as carefull for his welfare, as he is for his owne prosperitie, and he desireth your Grace, at such time as he shall come to your court that you would entertaine him as gently as you will receiue himselfe, so great is the affection of your son to him, and surely his behaviour hath deserued no lesse.

The

The king well pleased with this report, promised to fulfill the desire of his Sonne in any thing: and so he went to the Chamber of the Princesse Florida, to whom hee rehearsed all the talke that had passed betwene him and the Prince Floraman.

These newes were so blazed thorow the Cittie of London, that many came to welcome the Prince Floraman, and many toke the way to the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande, theiuing such ioyfullnesse for recovery of their lost Prince, that the passed sorrowe was nothing thought vpon. The gladnesse of the Citizens being vnderstood by the Princesse Florida, eriled from her heart all her former feare, and made her be more conuersant with the Courtly company, then of long time shee had bene, and would sit talking with such as returned from the Giants Castle, witnessing that the Prince Floraman had before declared.

The king thought good, to giue knowledge of this happy chance, to the Emperour Palmerin of Constantinople, and calling Argolant (who had bene Ambassadoe thither before) gaue him his commaundement following. Because you carryed tydings to the Emperour, when the great mishap befell to my Sonne, I am minded you shall now goe giue him a cause of as great ioy, as then you did of heavinesse.

Declare vnto him, how my Son Don Edward, with his noble Sonne Primaleon, and all the other knights that were lost, are now deliuered from their Captiuitie, and enioy their former libertie againe.

With this Message, Argolant armed himselfe, and departed speedily towards Constantinople. Within three dayes after, the king desirous to see his Sonne and the other Princes, determined to ryde to the Castle of Dramusiande, but the arriual of S<sup>r</sup> Pridos, changed his minde presently: certifying him, that so soone as the knight of Fortune, and the Giant Dramusiande were able to abide frauaile, they would not stay, but come to the Court with all the speed they might.

The



The King embraced Sir Pridos, and conducted him to the chamber of the Princes Florida: who reioyced greatly to see him, but more gladly would haue had sight of her husband Don Edward, whom till she sawe, she thought all their words to be but tales and fables.

CHAP. XLIII.

How the Damosels, hauing cured the wounds of the Knight of Fortune, and the Giant Dramusiande, tooke their leaue and departed to the ancient man againe. And how Don Edward with all the Princes, left the Castle and came to London, where they were royally welcomed by the King Fredericke.



Atentimes would the Prince Don Edward, with his company of renowned knights, visite the Knight of Fortune: vntill at last they had attained such strength, as they could well endure to beare Armes, when hee concluded to abandon the Forestresse, but would appoint such a knight to gouernoit, as should render it into his hands, whē he werc willing to receiue it. And to Eutropa (albeit her discourteous dealings deserued small fauour, her stephe being vanquished) hee would giue her another Castle, as well to manifest his noble minde, which had the power to pardon her extreame cruelty showane to him, as also to cause her leaue that hellish & abominable exercise of life: wherein she had not onely bereed him, but a number of Princes of great reputation. This granted, and well esteemed by general consent, the Prince Berolde was appointed to goe giue her knowledge therof: but presently they heard

heard such a noyse in the Castle, as they supposed it would haue fallen downe on their heads: beside, there arose suddenly such a terrible darkenesse, as they could neither behold one another nor had they power to abide there altogether. At last, in the aire (as they iudged) they heard a grieuous crie, which sounded in their eares after this manner. Don Edward, seeke not to pleasure her, who shall requite thy friendship with great vnthankfulnessse, nor labour thy selfe toward her good, whose extreame cruell nature delighteth in thy griefe. I am that Eutropa who all this while hath plagued thee and thy noble friends, and will continue in tormenting thee and thine, vntill this world hath made an end of me. I go now to the place where I shall haue leysure, to forget the iniurie thou hast done vnto me, and powner to fulfill my desire in thy continuall veration.

These words thus ended, and the Aire waring somewhat cleare againe, they might perceiue the Enchantresse in the Aire, inuironed with a darke and glomy myst like a cloud, and and how she cut the Aire with a great many fiery flashes about her. When she was departed forth of sight, they remayned in a great amazement: yet being all glad that they were rid of her, who was so ill affected to them.

The Damosels, who by the commandement of the ancient man, had stayed there till the knights were perfectly recouered, came to the Prince Don Edward, vsing these words.

God sir, giue vs leaue now to depart: seeing the knight of Fortune, and the Giant Dramusiande, are out of danger, and strong enough to endure the trauaile of their Armour. Trust me Ladies (answered Don Edward) your great courtesies hath so severely bound me, that I might be iustly reproached of ingratitude, to suffer you depart, not vsing such honourable recompence as you haue well deserued. Nevertheless, such is the simplenesse of this place to your worthy desert, and so great affection to see you liberally rewarded, that if you would vouchsafe the courtesie, to come to the English Court, or report where I may send to your abiding, what I will do, I leaue to your good opinions to report.

Sir (quoth the Damosels) the vertue which is alway resident in

in your noble minde, and sameth your knightly deeds throughout the whole world: that neither Envy can blot out, nor accident of time haue power to extinguish, so that we may well be esteemed happy, who hath so good a Champion to defend her honour. As for your Princely offer, we find our deserts so simple, as we were loth to presume in place to seeke any recompence: yet if our presence at London, may either profite you or pleasure your friends, we will be as ready to come, as you can be desirous to wish vs there. But such is now our businesse, that your friends being reduced into their former estate, we must needs depart, wherfore we desire you to vouchsafe vs leave.

Ladies (quoth Don Edward) he that should seem to deny you and you not giuing consent thereto, should by his boldnesse with my blood, that would offer them iniury, who haue deserved more then I can say. And therefore when you shall thinke good to depart, you may right willingly, for here is none will gaine you, or that dare deny you. The damosels perceiuing the great humanitie of this gentle Prince, failed not to giue him courteous thanks according: so taking their leaue of the knight of Fortune, with all the other Princes, they went to the gate of the Castle, where they found two Palliys appointed for them, and being mounted thereon, returned to the place from whence the ancient man brought them.

Don Edward seeing al was in good readinesse, and that Dramusiande was meetely strong againe, he offered the castle to the knight of Fortune, who wold not refuse it vpon condition, that from that day forward it might be called the Fort of Fortune: so leaving Pompides there to keepe it, they departed al towards London, accompanied with Dramusiand, bearing the Armour wherein he had combatted against the knight of Fortune.

The Citizens being admonished of the coming of their long lost Prince Don Edward, gathered themselves in such heapes in the streets, that the Princes could hardly passe, without hurting some of them with their Horses. Some of them pleased to see the Prince Don Edward, because he had bene so long absent from them, other some to see the giant Dramusiand maruelling that

that the knight of Fortune had the power to conquire him, who had subdued so many. Thus passing on, they arrived at last at the Court, where Don Edward casting his eyes on the princeesse Flerides Chamber, the teares trickled downe his cheekes, remembering how long time he had bene from thence, and had not sene her, whom he most honoured and intirely loued: but seeing he was come againe at last, and at his gentle behauiour should recompence what had bene amisse, he quieted himselfe, least any should behold his amorous passions.

King Fredericke at the entrance of the Court, came and received them all graciously: giuing them such Princely entertainment, as their nobilitie of birth, and honourable estate required. Don Edward and Dramusiande, were the last that presented themselves to his Maestie: where kneeling downe, and humbling himselfe to kisse his hand, the Prince began as folloiweth.

My Soueraigne Lord and Father, if I either haue, or may find fauour at your highnes hands, then let me not at this time be denied of the same, as to entertaine this Giant, not after the cruell deserts of his father, but euen as the most courteous and friendly knight in the world. The king embracing his sonne, received him in his armes from the ground: bedeauiuing his white any hoary Beard with abundance of teares, which through more loue he shed for the presence of Don Edward, when hee began to answer him in this manner.

What he is my son, who conceiuing so great desire, as I of long time haue to see you, that could find in his heart, to deny any thing that you should require? Then comming to Dramusiande, who endeouored to kisse his Graces hand, embracing him in his armes, he thus began.

My intent was not to shewe courtesie to him, that hath bene the cause of my long continuing heauinesse, but the report my sonne hath made, of your great bountie and gentlenesse, hath conquered the extremitie that I once had sworn to vse vnto you, so that hee which would now offer to bere you any way, should be enemy to me, and so not escape unpunished.

The knight of Fortune humbling himselfe in his presence, the King cast his armes about his necke, with this greeting. My minde did assure me, Sir knight, that the heauy sorrowes I endured too long a time, should be ended by the valour of your haughty deedes of Armes, who is so welcome to my Grace, as no liuing creature on the earth could be more.

My soueraigne Lord (answered the knight of Fortune) what I haue done, hath bin thorow Gods appointment, whose power assisting me beyond my desert, haue finished the aduventure, which no pollicie could otherwise bring to passe. In honoꝛ of this happy victoꝛy, they went al to the chiefe Church of London, where seruice was accomplishe with great solemnity, and then returning to the Pallace, the Quene and the Princesse Florida, receiued them all with great bounty, the knights vsing such courteous demeanour, as beseeemed the royalty of theyꝝ persons, being right glad to haue a sight of the fayre Princesse. While Florida was vsing courtesie to the other knights, the king lead the Quene to the Prince Don Edward, saying, Madame, behold now your Sonne, for whom you haue wished so long, now may you at leisure make knowne vnto him, the grievous passions which for his absence you haue suffered. And I desire you to entertaine these noble Princes, with as great fauour as you can any way deuise, for that we are greatly bound vnto them, considering the danger they haue passed, to finde our Sonne Don Edward. Then he shewed her the noble Primaleon, to whom she went, embracing him in her armes, and gaue him a swete kisse for his welcome. The like she did to the Prince Vernar, the king Polendos, Recinde, & Arnedes, with all the Princes and knights.

Then Florida comming to her brother Primaleon, embraced him in her armes, with these wordes. Let it not be offensive to you my noble brother, that I haue stayed so long, not welcoming you as I ought: for sure the glad comming of my Lord Don Edward, made me vnmindful of any other body. Your reason Sister is allowed (answered Primaleon) and he that should blame you for it, were not worthy to be esteemed among those that seeme to professe honour and vertue.

Then

Then the King commanded their lodgings should be presently provided, which they found in euery point so royally adorne, as they could not speake sufficient in praise of the court of England. Thus staid they a good while in the English Court, euery one desirous to returne into their owne Dominions, more to set such things in order as their Deputies had failed in, then for any desire they had to leaue the Court of England. But because those whom they left in charge with their kingdomes, had dealt in such order with their subiects, as they were ready to rebell against their rightfull Prince, therefore they thought, the sooner they departed, in the lesse time they might allay all the troubles againe.

## CHAP. XLIII.

How Trineus the Emperour of Allemaigne, hearing of the happy deliury of the Princes, out of the Castle of Dramuslande, left the Court, and with the Empreffe Agriola, trauailed till he arriued in England, where he was very royally and Princely entertained.



Report had blazed in all Countreies, how the Princes and knights that had bene so long time lost, and could not be heard off, were now at libertie, and the aduventure of great Brittain fully ended. Trineus the Emperour of Allemaigne, who had spent his dayes in great sorrowes & grievous complaints for his two Sonnes, Vernar and Polinard, now vnderstanding that they remained in the English Court, his heart was supplid with so great ioy, that not bestoying his intent to any, hee determined to trauaile, till hee came into England. So accompanied with the Empreffe Agriola,

la, and such knights as beseemeth his royall estate to haue with him: he passed thorow Germanie, where, at diuers Cities hee was honourably receiued, & at last landed on the Coast of England. King Fredericke had knowledge of the coming of the Emperour Trineus, wherefore he commanded the Chamber should be prouided, wherein the Emperesse from her childhood had talke with her, at such time as the Emperour Palmerin and he came to present their seruice to the King of England. Many noble Estates prepared to goe meete him, thre miles from the Citie of London, and the king accompanied with Vernar and Polinard, came to receiue him into the Citie.

But to rehearse vnto you, the royall and gracions entertainment they receiued by the king, with the sumptuous and rare deuises, framed by the Citizens to welcome him withall, would aske a greater time, then I can well stay so long from discoursing of our History, but so great was the kings fauour, and so liberall the expences of his dutifull subiects, that they said within themselves, England had no fellow. When they were come to the Pallace, the Quene and the Princesse Florida, being very gorgeously attyred, against the coming of such a great State, receiued him with such royaltie, as is not here to be spoken of. With great honour they were conducted to their Chamber, all retyring backe, except Vernar and Polinard their sons: whom the Emperesse commanded to stay with her, because shee had a great desire to talke and conferre with them.

All the knights determined with themselves to prepare some notable shewes of pleasure, wherewith they might delight the minde of the Emperour, that he might perceiue, what losse both Christendome, and their noble Parents should haue had, if fortune had determined their continuall seruitude to the Giant Dramusiande, and had not wrought the meane to grant them their libertie.

The Emperour and Agriola, passed away the time in pleasant communication, to heare what aduentures their noble Sons had passed, & yet safely to escape such a bitter plunge, for which they both lauded Fortune, and esteemed their age, the happiest time

time of their life. Then would he often declare to Agriola, what sharpe assaults he had endured in that chamber, being amorous of her loue, and bestowing his affaires in her seruice: wishing for the time againe, wherein he spent his flourishing youth so valiantly.

But knowing that his desire, was impossible to be recovered, he delighted to rehearse what pleasant conceits had passed betwene him and her, as well when she was coy, as when she made acceptation of his courtship, and shew her the secret places of danger, which full many a time he made hazard in, when he had desire to speake with her. But now considering how his ancient time had cut off such amorous drifts as then he put in practise, betwene teares and pleasant talke, he passed this remembrance in his silent thoughts, knowing that youth must of force giue place to age, and as then he had pleasure in amorous deuises, so now to content his age with ancient discourses. And often would he rehearse what strange and rare aduentures his sennes had reported, during the time they sought for the strayed Prince, as also the pleasures of Constantinople: which was a meane to perswade his vrgent passions, and to forsake such complaints as were bootlesse to be rehearsed.

The faire Aurora had no sooner left her old and ancient husband, and shewed her bright beames vpon the earth, but that galleries and scaffolds were made about the Tiltyard, where the knights determined to shew the Emperour their valour.

The knights of England and Allemaign, held both one side together, and the Grecian knights maintained the other side: each one behauing themselves with such haucie courage, that the Emperour did assigne them singular commendations. For sometime Fortune maketh theyre of a weake Champion, and alloweth him to be as aduenturous as the most hardy knight: euen so the weake and streng prevailed so well together, that both sides were praised, and the noble states sufficiently pleased.

CHAP. XLV.

How Argolant arriued at Constantinople, where in the presence of the Empreſſe Gridonia, Polinarda, and the faire Bazilia, he declared how the knight of Fortune had deliuered Don Edward, Primaleon, and the other captiue Princes, out of the cruell Enchanted caſtle of Eutropa and Dramufiande.



Argolant (who by the commandement of the king of England) was departed on his voyage towards Constantinople, to declare vnto the Emperour Palmerin, the good ſucceſſe of his ſonns Primaleon, and the other Prince inducoured himſelfe ſo well in his journey (thorow the helpe of good wind and weather) that at the laſt he attained the end of his trauaile. And as he rode throughe the Citie, he eſpied the Emperour among a great many of ſouldiours, whoſe beard was growne ſo white, with anguiſh of minde, and his face ſo wanne by reaſon of his continuall mourning, that he ſtood in doubt whether it were the Emperour or no, but that he was certified thereof, by the people which made their recourſe thorow the ſtreets. Who told him, that report was giuen abroad, how the Soldans of Babylon and Perſia, had gathered a mightie Armie, intending to beſiege their Citie, which made the Emperour in his owne perſon, to goe ſee to the fortifying of the walles, that his Kampiers of defence might be readie to reſiſt the enemy. Argolant comming beſore the Emperour (who preſently knew him) alighted, and kneeling downe, humbly kiſſed his hand, to whom the Emperour thus ſpake. You may ſee Argolant in what neceſſitie the citie of Constantinople is now unhappily ſalne, which in times paſt, hath begged me to the

the opinion, that neither warres could ſurplant it, treaſons inuade it, nor any diſloyall accident once vſe ſpight againſt it. But ſuch is the alteration of times, and ſo vncertaine the fauour of Fortune, that the famous monuments of moſt honour and antiquitie, are as ſone ſubuerſed as the weakeſt defence, ſo that it remaineth to me to ſay, which once I could iuſtly ſay, I haue bene happy. For ſuch is the danger threatened to our eſtate, and ſo doubtfull the miſchance that may ſuddainely annoy vs, as my ſubiects ſtand euery houre in feare of their liues, and my ſelfe in diſpaire of mine owne ſafety. Becauſe I want thoſe, whoſe names in the eare of mine enemy, hath carried as great eſtimation of hot reſiſtance, as they now being abſent, doe ouercharge me with a cold comfort. But how ſareth thy Soueraigne Lord, the king of England, to demand for other tidings, were as needeleſſe, as I ſuppoſe them helpeleſſe.

If it ſhall like your Highneſſe (answered Argolant) the king my Soueraigne and Lord, ſaluteth your imperiaall eſtate, with all happineſſe that he can wiſh, or you poſſibly deſire, as for my charge, if you will purchaſe the place, where the Empreſſe Gridonia, and the other Ladies may be preſent, you ſhall all be certified (I truſt) to your contentations. The Emperour at theſe wordes rode ſtraite to his Pallace, not ſtaying till he came where the Empreſſe, Gridonia, and the faire Polinarda, were ſitting altogether, but Argolant miſſing Bazilia, wiſe to the Prince Vernar, began on this wiſe to intreate the Emperour. Let it not be offenſiue to your highneſſe, in that I tride time ſo long, becauſe I want one here to be partner of my happy tidings, which is the faire Bazilia, whoſe heart (I am right ſure) thought the abſence of her Lord Vernar too long.

The Emperour ſuppoſing there was ſome glad tidings toward, in that they concerned not one alone, but all ſuch as had long time bene oppreſſed with heauineſſe, and knowing likewiſe, the Princeſſe Bazilia would hardly leaue her Chamber: toke the paines to goe for her himſelfe, when being al ſet down together, Argolant in this manner vttered his Ambaſſage. As it is not vnknown to you moſt mightie Emperour, as alſo theſe gracious Ladies, who ſince that time haue endured no

small oppzession of heauy conceits, that at my last being in this place, I brought the vnfortunate report, which caused (as you know full well) a grieuous mishap, ensuing vpon the losse of our no lesse famous then redoubted Prince Don Edward, which prouoked your noble sonne Primaleon, with a number of valiant Princes and knights of your court, to pursue in his search: So now, I durst not present my selfe, where my former newes caused such grieue, without I might bring those tidings, as shuld (in recompence) cause a mutuall and generall gladnesse: which loath to conceale from you too long, thus it is.

The knight of Fortune, the myrrour of Chivalrie, the onely Lampe and Load-stone, to draw the aduenterous minde to all valiant attempts, as his employes in your Court against Floraman, who for his fayre Alcea, made the onely challenge for the supream title of beautie, may not onely remaine a witnes, but as a perfect example of all worthinesse, to such as shall ensue after him, for his memory, and their learning. This worthy Champion attempted the aduventure of great Brittain, where, by the Magique of Eutropa, and might of Dramusiande, (sonne to the Giant Frenaque, whom you slew before your departure forth of England) our Prince Don Edward, your sonne Primaleon, with a number of Princes and noble knights, were all this while kept as prisoners, onely to renenge the death of the aforesaid Giant Frenaque. Wherein he speeded so happily, that (notwithstanding the cruell enchantments, dispersed ouer the whole Forrest, and retaining the knights in such a seruitude, as they might doe nothing without the consent of this wicked Eutropa) he withstood her hellish charmes, the force of her nephew the giant, & fulfilled that haughty attempt, which could be finished by no other. And our Prince Don Edward chancing first in to this mishap, was appointed to endure the first Iust against all that came: so that through the helpe of two Giants (whom the knight of Fortune hath valiantly foyled) all the wandring knights were caught captiue in this Castell. In fine, when this famous Conquerour had found the way to this Forrest, and behaued himselfe against the resistance with singular magnanimitie: hee entred the Combate with Dramusiande, where

where a bloody and doubtfull fight was presently begun.

The Emperour suddenly staying Argolant at these words, in amaze and great feare put forth this demand. Good Argolant before you proceed any further, resolve me of a doubt, wherein the last report of your discourse hath brought me: know you where as now the knight of Fortune remaineth, and whether he be alive as yet or no: for if he fare otherwise then well, my state cannot endure without bearing him company: to which Argolant replied. At such time, my gracious Lord, as I departed from the Realme of England, I left him in such good disposition as himselfe could wish, or your Maiesty desire, when euery one reioyced for the good successe he had against the Giant Dramusiande.

But may I (quoth the Emperour) vpon your faith and knight hood, assure my selfe of this report? If it may please you my good Lord, answered Argolant, to giue credite to my Message, then beleue me, that the knight of Fortune is in good estate of health, and hath done what I haue manifested before this honourable assembly. Likewise the Forrest of that disloyall Eutropa is subdued from all her Enchantments, so that Don Edward our unfortunate Prince, Primaleon your noble Sonne, and all the other captiue Princes, in despite of her and the giant Dramusiande, are released from their long & unhappy imprisonment. Then turning to the Princesse Bazilia, he began courteously to salute her, as thus. It stood with good reason, faire Lady, that your presence should be partaker of these happy tidings inso much as you, I am sure, haue suffered no small afflictions, for the absence of your deare friend the Prince Vernar, whom I can assure you to be in as good health as you can wish: sauing that he is not here, as you could willingly be content, & he himselfe, as in short time he will, I dare a warrant you.

Gridonia rauished with the report of Argolant, was so suddenly overcome with exceeding ioy, that she caught the Princesse Bazilia in her armes, (either of them cured of one sickness) that one could hardly iudge, whether their present gladnesse excelled their passed grieue, or in what order they receiued these newes, but it sufficeth, they had good cause to be pleased.



The Emperesse came, and tooke either of them by the hand, conducting them into her Oratorie, where in heartie and sollemne deuotions, they gaue thanks to God for this prosperous successe. In the meane while, the Emperour desired Argolant to rehearse the names of such noble Princes and Knights, as were partners in this long captiuitie, which when he had heard he greatly reioyced that the flourishing noble mindes of all Christendome, bare parts of the mishappes of the renowned English Prince, a token of their great loue and friendship, in that they disdained not the terrour of such hard misfortune, to beare him company, whom all haucie hearts did honour. And the rather was his ioy the greater, because the knight of Fortune contained the magnanimitie of courage, as (notwithstanding all bitter brunts to threaten the contrary) he was the chosen Champion to accomplish this rare aduenture.

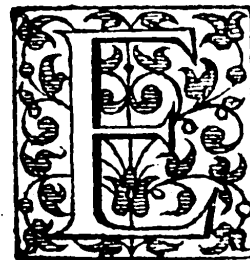
Now he called to remembrance, the letter sent by the Lady of the Lake, the same day as Polendos king of Thessaly deliuered him that royall present, as also the message of the Sage Aliart, which had now discovered the full effect of their promises. Whrough all the Cittie, was presently noyled the recovery of the Grecian Princes, which caused euery one to make small account, of the presumptuous brags of the Soldanes of Babylon and Persia, in that they iudged themselves vnder the surest defence that might be, now they had obtained those, whom they euor esteemed. The Emperour causing Argolant to be brought to his chamber, went straight to the Closet of the Emperesse, where he rehearsed all that Argolant had declared, as concerning the successe of the knight of Fortune.

Argolant departing on the next morning, was desired by the Emperour, to will the knight of Fortune make hast vnto Constantinople, because he had a great desire to see him. And now the Emperour with all his court was indued with as great ioy, as he conceiued sorrow at his departure, which he had good cause to do, hauing lost his cheefest defence, in the absence of the Princes and knights, that were kept prisoners in the Castle of Dramasiande, by the accursed meanes of the Enchantresse Eutropa, and now possessing the freedome of his losse, he might well

wellefteme the valour of this hardy knight. But such are the changes and mutabilities of Fortune, who when the heart is drowned in grasse past any hope, she sendeth a happy successe, to requite the former mischance, and likewise, where most pleasure hath continuall residence, there she soonest provideth the greatest mishap.

## CHAP. XLV.

How the English knights and the Grecian knights, in honor of the Emperour Trineus and the faire Agriola, enterprised a braue Tournament, wherein each one behaued himself very valiantly. And how three strange knights arriued there, whose noble behauiour vrged the royall assembly to great admiration.



Eight dayes after that the Emperour Trineus was arriued at Court, the knights among themselves determined a triumph, for which cause, the Tiltyard had many scaffolds and galleries built about it, that they might the better behold this haughty attempt. When the Emperour with the faire Agriola, the king Fredericke, the Quene, the Princesse Florida, Don Edward, Primaleon, with the other noble Ladies and gentlemen of the Court, were come to the place appointed for them to see this Tournament, the English knights entred the lists, where they meant to manifest the affection they bare to their Ladies, that in honour of their fauours, they feared not to hazard the vttermost of their liues.

After them entred the Grecian knights, euery one brauely mounted, and attired in faire new complets Armour, which graced

graced with their persons maruellously, the Prince Gracian by their generall consent, was chosen Captaine, to whom they referred the state of their conduct for that day, because Palmerin of England would not enter the fount against his friends, lest his valour should turne to their disadvantage.

At the sound of the Trumpet they all prepared themselves encountering one another with such knightly courage, that the Estates presents, with such a whole multitude of people, attributed great commendation to this hardy exploit, for that they dismounted one another on either side, as it was doubtfull to say which company were likeliest of victory.

Gracian ran fiercely against Eutrope of Beltran, an English knight of great strength, and very well esteemed, but fortune turned her backe towards him that day, so that he could not withstand the knightly puissance of the French Prince. Placir encountred with Normant the Proude, & gaue him such a colde welcome, that they were faine to carry him forth of the field.

In like manner Cariente sped, at the hands of the Prince Berolde, & consequently the English knights (albeit their deeds did iustly merite eternall commendations, both at the Tilt and Tourney) were byged to the repulse, because the Grecian knights were the stronger side.

Berolde breaking through the ranks, using such singular behaviour in all his attempts, as was greatly liked of the Regardants, came to Clariball of Hungaria, who settled themselves stoutly against each other, that they endured both a doubtful and a dangerous fight, neither having the advantage of the other, but such an equall condition passing betwene them, as the Emperour with all the royall company were greatly affected therewith.

The king Recinde (albeit the sharpe strokes his Sonne received, byged him to take it somewhat impatiently) yet the generall applause which was given vnto him, constrained him to thinke well of his valiant proceeding. Eutrope came now to the assistance of Clariball, accompanied with Syr Pridor, Archirin, Labert, Roquendar, Rugerold, Flovandrisse, Alber-

raz, Lamonstrant, and Brutamont, against whom to maintaine the quarrell of the Prince Berolde, came Gracian, Frisol, Luyman, Onistalde, Dramlan, Tenebrant, Don Rousel, and Bazilharde, all these behaving themselves very gallantly at Armes: yet at this hant was too weak, to resist the hot assaults of the valiant English Princes, which was still maintained with fresh supply of noble minds.

They being in some doubt to gaine the ouerthrow, suddenly entered the field. Placir, Floraman, Francian, Germaine of Orleans, Vernar, Polinard, with others, so that as then began the brauery of the fight, which, as it was well worthy, past not without notable praise, and the English knights came still as fresh so fiercely on them, that the Grecian knights were through more constraint byged to retire.

But behold, on a sudden, to aide the Grecian Princes, there entered three strange knights very brauely mounted: the first of them bearing in his shield on a ground of sand, the God Saturnus, compassed about with starres: the second had for his device, in a greene field, the Image of the House of Sadnes: the third would not haue his shield knowne, and therefore bare it couered.

These three seeing how the English knights prevailed marvellously in their resistance, couched their speares, and ran among the thickest of them, whom to the great danger of both sides began a fierce battaile, so that Vernar, Tremoran, Tenebrant and others, were faine to be carried out of the field, they were so sore wounded.

In like manner were diuerse of the English side, till the retraite was sounded, when the Prince Gracian with his company retired into his Campe, and the English knights conducted the Emperour and the king into the Pallace, where sweet musicke, and other delightfull exercises, ioynded them all friends in their former unity.

graced with their persons maruellously, the Prince Gracian by their generall consent, was chosen Captaine, to whom they referred the state of their conduct for that day, because Palmerin of England would not enter the foust against his friends, lest his valour should turne to their disadvantage.

At the sound of the Trumpet they all prepared themselves encountering one another with such knightly courage, that the Estates presents, with such a whole multitude of people, attributed great commendation to this hardy exploit, for that they dismounted one another on either side, as it was doubtfull to say which company were least of victory.

Gracian ran fiercely against Eutrope of Beltran, an English knight of great strength, and very well esteemed, but fortune turned her backe towards him that day, so that he could not withstand the knightly puissance of the French Prince. Plair encountred with Normant the Proude, & gaue him such a colde welcome, that they were faine to carry him forth of the field.

In like manner Cariente sped, at the hands of the Prince Berolde, & consequently the English knights (albeit their deeds did iustly merite eternall commendations, both at the Elite and Tournay) were byged to the repulse, because the Grecian knights were the stronger side.

Berolde breaking through the ranks, using such singular behaviour in all his attempts, as was greatly liked of the Regardants, came to Clariball of Hungaria, who settled themselves stoutly against ech other, that they endured both a doubtfull and a dangerous fight, neither having the aduantage of the other, but such an equall condition passing betwene them, as the Emperour with all the royall company were greatly affected therewith.

The king Recinde (albeit the sharpe strokes his Sonne received, byged him to take it somewhat impatiently) yet the generall applause which was giuen vnto him, constrained him to thinke well of his valiant proceeding. Eutrope came now to the assistance of Clariball, accompanied with Syz Pridos, Archirin, Labert, Roquendar, Rugerald, Flocaudriff, Alber-  
raz,

raz, Lamonstrant, and Brutamont, against whom to maintain the quarrell of the Prince Berolde, came Gracian, Frisol, Luyman, Onistalde, Dramian, Tenebrant, Don Rousel, and Bazilharde, all these behauing themselves very gallantly at Armes: yet at this hant was too weak, to resist the hot assaults of the valiant English Princes, which was stil maintained with fresh supply of noble minds.

They being in some doubt to gaine the ouerthrow, suddenly entered the field, Plair, Floraman, Francian, Germaine of Orleans, Vernar, Polinard, with others, so that as then began the brauery of the fight, which, as it was well worthy, past not without notable praise, and the English knights came still as fresh so fiercely on them, that the Grecian knights were through more constraint byged to retire.

But behold, on a sudden, to aide the Grecian Princes, there entered three strange knights very brauely mounted: the first of them bearing in his shield on a ground of sand, the God Saturnus, compassed about with Starres: the second had for his devise, in a greene field, the Image of the House of Sadnes: the third would not haue his Shield knowne, and therefore bare it couered.

These three seeing how the English knights preuailed marvellously in their resistance, couched their speares, and ran among the thickest of them, whom to the great danger of both sides began a fierce battaile, so that Vernar, Tremoran, Tenebrant and others, were faine to be carried out of the field, they were so sore wounded.

In like manner were diuerse of the English side, till the Retreat was sounded, when the Prince Gracian with his company retired into his Campe, and the English knights conducted the Emperour and the king into the Pallace, where sweet musike, and other delightfull exercises, ioyned them all friends in their former unity.

## CHAP. XLVII.

How the three Knights that came to the Tournament, were knowne to be the Knight of the Sauage man, the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, and Blandidon. And how Aliart discovered in the presence of all the Princes, how Palmerin of England, and Florian of the Forrest, were the sonnes of the noble Don Edward, and the Princes Florida: for prooffe whereof, he brought the Sauage man, and his wife (who had nourished the two young Princes so long in their Caue) into their presence, by whom this great ioy was fully confirmed.



When the Triumph was ended, and the Emperour with King Fredericke returned into the Pallace, the Tables were ready prepared, when immediately they sate downe to take their repaste, being serued in such honorable and comely order, as the princes were greatly in loue with the court of England.

Against supper was done, the King gaue in charge, that the knights should prepare themselves to the dancing: which done, a sumptuous Banquet should presently be serued on the tables.

The Dancing and the Banquet finished, and they sitting pleasantly ieausting one with another, they entred the Hall the three knights, who had behaved themselves so brauely in the Tournament. Many desired to come nere them, because they would know of whence they were: but to hinder their intents, such a mist on a sudden arose in the Hall, as the lights were dimmed, the Torches burned very scarcely, and the Ladies being dismayed, caught their knights in their Armes.

To put them out of this feare, the mist departed, and the Hall was

was as cleare as it was before, when straight way they beheld in the middest, a Lion and a Tiger enduring a great fight together, and to set them at vnitie, there entred a faire Damosell with a golden rod in her hand, wherewith she touched them both, and they humbled themselves at her feet. This done, she departed, and they arose againe in the forme of two fierce and untamed Bulles, which caused such an astonishment to all the beholders, that they wished themselves to be footst of the Wall. But the knights seeing their Ladies so greatly discouraged, perswaded them that it was but some deuise, artificially procured for the delight of the Emperour: but they would hardly beleue them, because the two Bulles fought so vehemently the one against the other, and being overcharged with wearines of fight, fell to the ground, breathing from their mouthes an horrible and ougly blacke smoke, as was before.

The Wall auoided of all these accidents, and in the same estate it was at first, they might behold the three knights, with their heads vnarmed, so that he, who would not haue his shield known, was found to be the gentle knight of the Sauage man: who presently went to the King, and kneeling downe, kissed his hand, with these words. My gracious Soueraigne, I earnestly intreate at your hands, this knight may receiue the courteous entertainment, your Grace will afford him at my request, for this is the Sage Aliart, your Maiesties most affectionate seruant, to whom your griefe hath been so displeasing, that he thought himselfe not in perfect quietnesse, till he might manifest his humble deuotion to your Grace.

King Fredericke, who had often heard report of the Sage Aliart, by reason of the renowne and fame, was spred abroad of him. Hee in a doubt how it should bee hee, because his youthfull yeeres was much unlikely to embrace so great cunning and learning, as was euerie where famed of him: neuerthelesse, giuing credit to the knight of the Sauadge man, hee embraced him with these salutations. Certainly, sir Aliart, I am bound in duty to make good account of you, as well for your vertuous dealings, which doth iustly deserue it, as also for bringing me my Fatherlesse knight, in so sound and good disposition of health,

health, wherein you haue not onely honoured me, but likewise approued the vnspotted faith of your knighthood.

By gracious Lord (answered Aliart) the desire I haue to manifest the loialtie of my seruice, bygeth me to this opinion: that might I liue neuer so long, I could not accomplish so much as duty doth require in me, respecting the great friendship, I haue found at your Graces hand vnderdeserued. But may I vnder your Soueraigne pardon, presume to disclose so great a secrete, as shall both content your Highnesse, as also this illustrious assembly? The King supposing some glad tydings toward, requested all the Princes to vouchsafe their audiance, when being euery one quietly placed to their owne content, Aliart humbling himselfe to the Princesse Florida, began as folloiweth.

Madame, it were hard for me to distinguish, betwene your extreame griefes passed, and the swete solace you enioy at this present: for albeit, this is to be thought beyond comparison, yet in time when you were heauie, your wofull complaints were equally as vehement, as they that were priue to their aduerse case, could easily beare with the vrgent cause. But referring long discourse of matter, you are to esteeme your selfe highly honoured, by this no lesse hauty then happy, and famous knight of Fortune, who for your sake hath suffered the annoyance of paine, in recompence of the dangerous trauaile you sustained for him, at such time as you were deliuered of two Childzen in the vnforsunate Forrest, when your Lord had left you. For when the Sauage man had taken him, and this redoubted knight, your Sonne Florian, his Brother, to sacrifice them to the rauenous talwes of his greedy Lions, pittie so pierced the heart of his poore and louing wife, that shee saued them from the bloody slaughter, and nourished them as carefully, as she did this other, who is her owne Child. And Madam, let not be forgotten the wordes sir Pridos rehearsed vnto you, (at such time as you had lost both husband and childzen) which was reported to him by the Ladie Argonida: for loe at this instant her promise is accomplished, your noble Lord Don Edward is restored, and your two lost sonnes safe and sound recovered,

uered, whose knightly valure, hath sufficiently discharged the sorrowe, that then your afflicted person suffered. The knight of Fortune, is your Sonne Palmerin, to whom you gaue that name, in honour of the Emperour Palmerin, your Father, who by the meanes of the knight Polendos, receiued your son into his Court, when he likewise caused him to be tearmed by his owne name.

And this aduenturous knight of the Sauage man, is your other Sonne, which according to the place of his birth, you called him Florian of the Forrest, him haue you nourished & brought vp by your motherly care, albeit he was known to you for no other then a stranger. Thus to knit vp your former ioy, I thought good to presume so farre, as to make you partners of that, which was not known to any, but onely God and my selfe.

The Princesse Florida, and Don Edward wel biewing one another, were suddenly raiued with such an inward ioy, as it is impossible for me to giue iudgement thereon: then Palmerin and Florian came & embraced each other, which moued the king and all there present vnto such delight, that they could not containe the great pleasure they conceiued, wherupon the king entered into these words.

Trust me sirs Aliart, these newes were altogether vnlookt for at this present, albeit they haue bene earnestly desired long before this time; but yet doe me the fauour, to certifie me how you are assured of that which you haue giuen forth for a manifest troth, it may be, here are some that dare hardly aduenture to beloue it. If I should my good Lord (answered Aliart) faile in such a case, I were well worthy such seuerer punishment, as is due to him that should falsely informe a Prince. But nevertheless, to giue you the better assurance thereof, make what shall ensue, and then answer how you are satisfied.

Then drew he forth a little Booke, whercon hauing read a prettie while, the Sauage man and his Wife entered the Hall, who had nourished Palmerin and Florian so long in theyr Cauer, when presently the two Princes beholding them, went and embraced them both with great courtesie, the like

the like did Siluian, who hauing learned more ciuility in court, then when he remained with his Father in the Caue (kneeled downe vnto them as was his duetie. The Princesse Florida receiued such exceeding ioy, that she embraced them both very louingly: and Palmerin thinking it great dishonour to him, to be vnkindfull of his nurses that had vsed him so gently, took them by the hand, and brought them befoze the King: giuing him to vnderstand, that they twain had deserued a good reward, in recompence of the great affection his Brother & he had found at their hands.

The King taking them from the ground in his armes, promised that their labour should be honourably rewarded: so lifting his eyes vp to heauen, he vttered his ioy in this manner. O heauenly Father, this is the last good happe that euer I desired to see, wherefoze now if it be thy pleasure, take me out of this miserable world, befoze vnconstant Fortune determine any more mischance to me. This done, he took his two Nephews, and brought them to the Princesse Florida, befoze whom they humbled themselves on their knees, kissed her hand a great many times, and she casting her armes about their necke, in teares remembred the great danger she saw them both in, when they endured the bloody Combate, at such time as shee was faine to set them at vnitie.

Then Don Edward their noble Father, in remembrance of the valiant behauiour, he had scene in them both at the Castle of Dramuliande, receiued them in his armes, with such courteous greetings on either part, as the ioy in such a case did bge them to manifest.

The Emperour Trineus, a partaker of thisfortunate sight, came to both the Princes, and vsed many friendly speeches to them, in like manner did the Emperesse Agriola, the Kings Recinde and Arnedes, with all the Princes and Ladies, whose ioyes were not small for this happy successe. Then Palmerin vsed great courtesie to the Prince Primaleon, for that he vnderstood him to be father of his Lady and Mistresse Polinarda, and Sonne to the Emperour his Grandfather, who had bouchsaued him his honour, during the time he remained in his Pallace at

at Constantinople. The Sauage man and his Wife were very graciously entertained, who seeing the two Princes in dignity, beyond their expectations when they were in their Caue, did greatly reioyce that Fortune had so fauourably preserved their noble liues. Palmerin seeing the time that euery one prepared themselves to their chambers, commanded Siluian to conduct his father and mother, to a faire and rich Chamber which was provided for them. Euery one departing, the king accompanied Aliart to his Chamber, where he desired to know, what the other knight was that came in his company? If it please your Grace (answered Aliart) to morrow morning you shall be resolved to the vttermost, in the meane space assure your selfe that he is such a one, as his valour deserueth to be remembred amongst the most renowned. Thus with a generall gladnesse, euery one went to take their rest, forgetting all grieffe that was passed befoze in remembrance of the fortunate successe, that had happened at this instant determination of ioy.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How on the morrow, Blandidon was knowne, and Aliart bewraied himselfe and Pompides, to be the Sonnes of the Prince Don Edward & Argonida the Lady of enchanted the Isle. And how the Emperour Trineus with the other Princes, determined to depart from the Court of England, but were desired first to goe see Castle of the Giant Dramuliande, wherein the Princes had remained Prisoners so long time.



The pleasures in the Court of the aged King of England, of the Prince Palmerin, and Don Florian his Brother, that the Cittizens passed away the night merrily, in making of great Bonfires & ringing of Bels, to manifest the ioy which they likewise conceiued for this happy accident.



cident. In the morning the king went to the chamber of the two Nephewes, where he found Primaleon and the Prince Vernar, merrily disposing themselves together: and so accompanied with Arnedes and Recinde, they went to the chamber of the Emperour Trineus, who being already sitting, prepared themselves to go heare diuine Service, which was accomplished with maruailous great solemnitie. When they returned vnto the Pallace, such was the assembly of people to see the two Princes, that they could hardly ascend the staires to the great hall, the people were gathered into such a press.

The strange Princes endeauoured themselves to entertaine the Sage Aliart very honourably, so that from the highest to the lowest he was greatly made account of, in so much as euery one thought his labour well imployed to do him service, and euery one were desirous to question with him, he w<sup>th</sup> Don Florian was guarantizd of his wounds, which he had receiued at the Castle of Dramuande. When dinner was ended, they went all to the chamber of the Emperesse Agriola, with whom the Quene and the Princesse Florida had dined: and the king desiring silence when they were all placed, began in this order to the Sage Aliart.

Let it not seeme displeasing vnto you good Sir, that I presume to remember you of a promise made yester-night, as also to deliuer me from a doubt that I haue conceiued of your selfe, which is (if I may request so much fauour) to tell me of whence you are, because the great cunning and science, I haue heard to be in you, doth argue you are descended of some noble lineage. To which demand Aliart presently returned this answer. I was determined (deere Soueraigne) neuer to betray my selfe to any: but since your Maestie hath commanded me, whose words are more of force to compell me, then any prince or potentate may or can constrain me, I will certifie you of that, which neither friend nor foe could yet get of me. This knight whose name you are desirous to know, is called Blandidon as concerning his birth and Parentage, the Prince Florian can at large giue you to vnderstand, for which cause I will

pass

pass no further to discouer what he is. But as touching my selfe, this knight here named Pompides, and my selfe are Brethren, both of vs the sonnes of the Prince Don Edward, and Argonida, the Lady of the Enchanted Isle, as hath bene affirmed to vs by the oath of diuerse.

Don Edward sitting by his beloued Florida, & loath to conceale any thing that might profite in this case, humbling himselfe to the king his father, began as followeth. Deare father, what Sir Aliart hath deliuered to your Grace, I must and will auouch to be most true, they are both my Sonnes, wherefore I desire you to entertaine them as your Nephewes. And my swete Florida, let it not seeme as disliked of you, because it was long before I entered acquaintance with you: and such were the craftie deuices Argonida vsed with me, that what with perill of my life, and the pleasure I had also in her company, these twaine are the fruits of our long familiar labours.

The king came to them, and imbraced them very louingly, when presently Florian (at his instant request) declared the hautie Exploites and knightly doedes, hee had both tryed and found in the noble Blandidon. Florida forgave her Lord Don Edward this offence, smiling at the subtil inuentions Argonida vsed, to gaine the desire she bare to the English prince, when immediately Aliart and Pompides came and submitted themselves to her, whom she welcommed as hartily, as had they bene her owne children, and so continued pleasantly talking with them, till time required they should depart to their Chambers.

Palmerin of England held y<sup>e</sup> Sage Aliart in great estimation, when he perceined he was allyed to him in kindred, so that altogether he steamed his delight to be in his company, and would not attempt any thing, but he should be prime to it. The Triumphes and sumptuous feastes continued daily abundantly, and euery night there was Masking, Dauncing, & rare deuises put in execution: so that the Grecian knights, highly honoured the Ladies of England, whose braue gesture of Courtly entertainment, was not onely esteemed of them, but as much commended (at their returne) in the Court of Constantinople.

After

After a long continuance of this exceeding icy, Arnedes and Recinde concluded to depart to their kingdomes, leaving their sonnes to accompany the other Princes in their pleasure: which the Emperour perceiuing, determined to iourney towards Allemaigne also. But when they prepared themselves to take their leaue, Don Edward and the other Princes, desired them to bouchsafe the paines, to see the Castle of Dramusiande, wherein so long time they had bene kept as prisoners. This request pleased the Emperour very well, so that he desired Arnedes and Recinde to beare him company also, and then they would depart together. Intreaty had quickly wonne them, so that on the morrow they departed themselves thither, accompanied with the Ladies and Gentlemen of the English Court, who greatly longed to see the Castle so much spoken off, that had caused great Brittain to stand in such feare, and by the promise of the Noble Palmerin, was brought into subiection.

## CHAP. XLIX.

How the Emperour Trineus, the King of England, with all the Princes and Ladies, rode towards the Castle of Dramusiande, where by the way, they saw the Caue of the Sauege man, wherein the two Princes had bene so long time nourished. And how all the way as they rode, the Sage Aliart presented them with many rare and braue deuises, vntill such time as they arriued at the Castle. Where they met with a strange knight, who in honor of the beautie of his Lady Miragarda, Iusted with diuers of the Princes, and departed againe from thence, vnknowne to any but the Sage Aliart, who discovered to Palmerin of England his name, and whence he was.

In



In the morning, the Knights, who had behaued themselves so worthily in the triumph, prouiding them of new and rich Armour, made great haste, because they would bee ready to goe with the Giant Drausiande, onely because they would gratifie their Ladies, in bearing them company to see this Castle. At their departure south of London, the King by sound of Trumpet and Heraldie, caused them to be proclaimed, that no Citizens should offer to follow them, because hee had determined (being so many of themselves) that none should enter the Castle, but the Ladies and the Knights. For that night hee concluded to lye in the Forrest, and therefore sent such provision of Tents and Pauillions, that when they were arriued there, they found euery thing to their owne contentment.

The Princesse Florida, was desirous to sport her selfe about the Forrest, and walking by the place, where shee had suffered the extreame panges of her trauayle, the Sauege man came and humbled himselfe vnto her, declaring how in that place he toke the two Princes from her, and nourished them in his Caue, which was nere adioyning. On this report, the knights were desirous to see his Caue, so taking leaue of the Princesse, they walked with him thither: where, after Primaleon, Maiorces, and the Soldane Bellagris, were entred, they began euery one to be greatly amazed, seeing this Caue to containe so large a breadth and length: which made them suppose it to be in manner an intricate Dedalus. All about on the walles was hanged Tapistrie, not of Gold, Silke, Caddis, or such maner of stuffe, but the skinnies of Beastes, which the two Princes had slaine, very finely laboured into an artificiall frame, and so decked south the Chambers, that the knights marueyled in so desert a place, to finde such a fayre dwelling. A great while they stood debating with one another, about the strange conceyts they perceiued in this Caue, which made them to iudge, that in  
times

times past, it had bene the solitary dwelling of some noble man exiled from his Countrey, but therein they were greatly deceived. For this ancient edifice, was erected by the Enchantresse Mellia, who kept that place a great while, during the raigne of the laing Armace her Brother, Vrganda and she lived both at one time, as it is rehearsed in the History of the Emperour Splandian, Sonne to the valiant & most magnificent king Amadis, and the Princes Oriana his Wife, Quene of the great Brittain. When the Princes and knights had satisfied their mindes in beholding this place, they returned to the Pavillions to their Ladies, who welcomed them all very lovingly, and Primaleon sitting downe by his sister Florida, rehearsed to her the manner of the Cause where the two Princes were nourished, which did not a little content her minde, in that the place was not ruinated and put into obliuion. This night they reposed themselves in the Forrest, as honourably seru'd, as if they had bene in the English Court, and in the morning they prepared themselves towards the Castle, being all the way delighted with such fine deuises, sent by the cunning of the Sage Aliart, that every one took great pleasure in this Princely iourney. There were Hunters who pursued wilde Bores, Harts, Bucks, and all such noble game, and came wearily falling downe at the Ladies feete, but when they offered to touch them, they were presently slipping on the sarder side of the Riuer, these deuises so pleased the Emperour with all the company, that they gaue great thanks to Aliart who frequented them with such pleasant pastime al the way as they rode. At last, they arrived at the Valley of Perdition, where they had a sight of the Castle of Dramusiande, which went somewhat to the heart of the Princesse Florida, seeing the prison wherein her louing Don Edward had so long remained. The Emperour Trineus, & king Frederick, fel into great commendation of the sumptuous building of the Castle, then which, they had not often scene a fayrer: which moued the to intreate Dramusiande, who was the founder of such a singular peece of workmanship: to which demand, Dramusiande presently gaue this reply. By gracious Lords, this Castle was first builded by mine Aunt Eutropa, & through her

her meanes, it hath remayned thus long out of knowledge. Trust me (said the Emperour Trineus) a Fortresse of such strength and beantie, ought not to be in the hands of one, who could imploy it to such great abuse, but commonly we see, the wicked do thriue as well as the good, and enioy as great account in this world, as they that maintaine all their actions by iustice and equitie. So riding on, at last Dramusiande willed them to a suddaine stay, where he began in this manuer to unfold the cause. He thinks I see at the entrance of the Bridge, a secret knight ready appointed to the Toust, but I can perceiue no body that offereth him resistance, which maketh me suspect, that he hath attempted to keepe this passage. At this vnlooked for accident, they stayd to behold the knight who was very well mounted on a gray Courser, his Armour spotted with white and blacke, which greatly pleased the eyes of the beholders. In his shield he bare the naked body of a Lady, the beauty of whose countenance was so excellently figured, that Al-ea (for whom Floraman accomplished such chiuallricus deeds at Constantinople) might not seeme to offer comparison to this beautifull spectacle, neither the faire Princesse Polinarda, might not presume to equall her selfe, with the bzaue shape of this Lady, and at the lower end of this shield in letters of Gold was written Miragarda.

While Princes occupied their eyes in beholding the singular forme compacted in his shield, they perceiued his Esquire come towards them, who after he had done his dutie to them all, began to salute them with these protestations. Faire Lords and Ladies, the noble knight my Master, whom you behold on the Bridge, by me giueth you to vnderstand, the cause of his trauailes vnto this place. He is of a far countrey, from whence he had aduentured himselfe (in honour of his good fortune, and at the command of his Lady, whose humble seruant he remayneth at this houre) to try his knighthood at this Castle, which hath bene blazed abroad to be most infortunate.

But being here arrived, he is aduertised how the Enchantment is fully finished, and the strength of the Giant Dramusiande, with all his retinue conquered, by the valour and

hautie Princes of a knight named Palmerin of England, who hath deliuered the Princes, that were kept Captiue by the cruell meanes of the disloyall Europa, which newes are most welcome vnto him, in that he desired nothing more. Yet for that he is loth to returne to his Lady, being at the place where knighthood hath bene tryed, and he to passe backe againe not approued of any: he craueth to enter the Ioust with such as are disposed, referring the Conbate of the Sword, because he will aduenture for pleasure.

This challenge encreased such courage in the knights, that they entred into it with who should first ranne with the strange knight, which the king perceiving, returned the Esquire with this answer. My friend, tell thy Lord his enterpryse is worthy perpetuall renowne, & if he containe such courage in proufe, as both his Message and himselfe giueth in show, his Lady shall haue occasion to vse him, according as his valiant attempt deserueth. The Esquire receiuing the kings pleasure, returned to his Lord, to whom he had no sooner made it knowne, but Tremoran shewed himselfe before the bridge, inuiting the strange knight to the Ioust, who stayed not to accomplish his desire, but encountering him with such a pleasant charge, that Tremoran was forced to leaue his saddle.

This chance somewhat displeased Luyman of Burgondie, who thinking to reuenge the repulse of Tremoran, was sent himselfe to keepe him company. Belcar being desirous to shew his prowesse among the young knights, couched his Speare against the strange knight, who sent both Horse and man to the ground, when presently Don Rosuell took the cause in hand, and was made partaker of the same mishap.

In like manner Guerin, Frisol, Blandidon, Floraman, & diuers other were serued, which moued the king Polendos vnto such cholere, that he would haue ventured against the strange knight, had not the prince Don Edward perswaded him to the contrary. Then there went a great murmuring amongst the knightes, who supposed the Sage Aliart had brought this Champion by his Art. to be a disgrace vnto all their attempts, and that he had vsed such meanes vnto him, as he might not be

vanquished

banquished, but herein they greatly deceiue themselves, for it was onely the noble force of the knight, which was continually animated, by beholding the faire face of his Lady, which was so brauely proportioned in his shield. Floraman being greatly bent against the knight, and believing that his victorie, proceeded from the beauty of his Lady, would once more put his Fortune in hazard, thinking the feature of his faire Alcea, to be as soueraigne in authoritie, as the strange Miragarda, whereupon he thus began to conferte with himselfe.

Albeit Madame, I haue suffered your name to be absent a while from my thoughts, yet hath your beautie bene alwayes extant in my memory, so that I neuer belovd the title to any but you, although mishap would haue vrged me to the contrary. Wherefore, at this time let your beautie so fauour me, that I may soyle mine enemy, in the perfect honour of your fame.

When they encountred one another againe courageously, passing the first course with the breake of the Staffe: but at the second time, Floraman and his Steede was throwne to the ground very violently, when making recourse to his former secreete speeches, he began as thus. I perceiue now Alcea, that my misfortune chanceth thorow your forward opinion of mee, and that the more I attempt in your honour, the more you repay me still with hatred, which will vrgue me to forsake your service, and neuer assay any thing hereafter on warrant of your courtesie.

The Emperour Trineus and all the Princes, were very sad to behold the sorow of Floraman, as also to see Onistalde and Pompides reduced into like mischance: whereat the strange knight triumphed, which Don Florian stomaking, to see his friends on euery side soyled, and the knight to vant himselfe in such sort, giuing a Conge to the Emperesse and her Ladies, ranne violently against the strange knight. Thrice times they met, yet neither preuayling against the other, when the strange knight looking on his shield, and perceiuing the faire face of his Lady, to be somewhat raised with the Speare, began in this order to talke to himselfe. How can I execute my selfe of the dishonour I haue receiued, in suffering her faire

face to be polluted, to whom I owe most dutifull affection: for neither can I preuaile against him that hath done it, nor endure long the Combate, I am so attached with sorrow.

At the fourth attempt, they met so furiously together, that they were both layde along on the earth, when because the night approached so fast on, Palmerin could not compasse the meane to enter the Iust, which made him suppose he should displease his sayre Polinarda, but Aliart to put him from that opinion, he came to him with these wordes. Good Syr, let it not seeme offensive to you, because you have not Iusted with this knight, for if your valoure should returne him any disadvantage, your Lady and Mistresse would thinke great vngentlenesse in you. I thanke you Syr Aliart (answered Palmerin) for your courteous perswasion, in wishing me from that which might be my hurt, albeit vnknown vnto me, yet by your Arte made manifest to you. But may I request the name of this knight, wherein you may make mee greatly beholding to you, as also it will cause me vse moze circumspection in mine attempts, wherein I onely desire to escape the anger of my Lady Polinarda, to which question, Aliart shapd this reply.

Your courtesie is such, and so great in mine affection, that I cannot conceale the thing, which may doe you pleasure, wherefore you shall vnderstand, that this knight is named Florendos, who putteth his noble deedes in prose, for the honour of her, whose Image you may perceiue figured on his Shielde euen as you hazard all your adions, to purchase the fauour of her who is your Lady, and his Sister. At these wordes Palmerin embraced Aliart, giving him hartie thanks, in that he had satisfied his earnest desire, which he vowed to keepe secrete, and not discouer to any.

Don Florian being mounted on Horsebacke againe, was somewhat offended, that he had receiued no better successe against the strange knight, whom he perceiued with his Esquire, ryding alway in great hast, as loath to be knowne, because he had not sped according to his haughty desire, for which cause hee departed in no small sorrow.

CHAP. L.

How after the strange knight was departed, Sage Aliart bewraied to them the faire Miragarda. And how they entred the Castle of Dramusiande, which Palmerin gaue againe to the giant his friend: who in his honour caused it to be called the Inuincible Fort of Fortune. Departing from thence, Aliart brought them to his Castle in the Obscure Valley: where he shewed them many rare and strange deuices, from whence the kings, Recinde and Arnedes, (taking their leaue of the Emperour, and the king of England) departed home into their countries. And how in a while after the Emperor and the Princes iourney from the court of England, when as Don Edward discovered to Soldane Bellagris that Blandidon was his sonne, begotten on the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia.



The strange knight being very speedy in his departure, the Emperour with the other Princes, ceased not to commend his renowned enterprize, greatly desiring to know what he was, which made them very importunate to the Sage Aliart, but they laboured in vaine, for he would not in this matter satisfie their desire.

But to the Prince Primaleon hee told in secret, that hee was a personage of great authoritie, whose valour was excellent, and his vertue equally thereto apparant: and that the

Ladie whose Portraite he vsed in his Sheld (to whom he bare such affection, as he would in nothing disobey her will) causeth him to absent himselfe from the company of all other, till he haue attained that title which his Lady desireth, and himselfe deserueth. And to satisfie his Ladies pleasure, he hath ventured his life to arrive at this place, thinking the aduenture of Dramusiande to be reserved for him: but when he perceined it was already finished by the Browe of the knight, to whom he do weth his humble service, he could not with his honour but proffer you the Ioust, to cause you know both his bountie and courage is sufficient, to haue enterprised such a haucie and perillous aduenture.

When Don Edward desired him to shew the name of the Damosell, to whom he had vowed such earnest affection, whose will Aliart loth to gaine say, beganne in this order to answer his request. The Lady to whom this knight hath vowed his service, is named of enery one the faire Miragorda, whose face if any would take occasion to contemple, should behold the perfect, rare and substantiall Image of only beauty. As concerning her birth, she is daughter to the Countie Arlae, and of great authoritie in the dominion of Spaine, whose singular forme when this knight had beheld, he could not chuse but thrust himselfe among the pykes of hazard, inso much as none that hath seen her, could withdraw their effections, but haue aduentured limme and life for her, who is beyond any in comparison.

Trust me (said the king Recinde) I haue bene well acquainted with the Countie himselfe, but as for such exquisite perfection to remaine in his daughter, I neuer before this time could gaine the knowledge: for indeede when I left the kingdom of Spaine, she was so little that none did make account of her beauty. Then alighting from their horses, and taking their Ladies each one by the hand, they entred the Castle of Dramusiande, so greatly delighted with the sumptuous building, and braue conspauance of the commodious places, the galleries and chamber made ouer such little fine Brooks and Riues, that they imagined all their commendations not sufficient for this place

Dra-

Dramusiande endeouored himselfe for their entertainment, according as the time of the yeere, and their suddaine coming would permit him, but in such good order was euery thing disposed, with fine, neate and excellent quicke dispatch, that the Princes were very well pleased, and Dramusiande accordingly thanked.

On the next morning they concluded to depart from thence, because the Princesse Florida was become somewhat sickly, when Palmerin beleueth the Castle againe to Dramusiande, who both in reuerence of his worthinesse, and in memorie of his owne good lucke, called it the Inuincible Force of Fortune. Departing thence, the Sage Aliart conducted them the way to his habitation, frequenting them still with such singular deuises, that the Ladies by their weak nature were somewhat dismayed, but the Princes themselves maruellously delighted.

When they were arrived at the Obscure Valley they beheld the Castle of the Sage Aliart, which was so ingeniously edified, and strengthened so sure by his industrie, that if I should stay to relate their opinions hereon, I should weary your minds with tedious discourse. Where they stayed for the space of foure dayes, hauing such royall service by the meanes of Aliart, that they supposed in their owne Courts, it was impossible to bee more princely serued.

Arraies and Recinde desirous to their owne Kingdomes, toke their leaue of the Emperour and all the company, the one taking the way towards France, & the other towards Spaine, hauing no body with them, but ech one an Equire attending on him, as for their Sonnes, they left them still with the other Princes, for that their yeares were more fit to endure trauaile then as yet to incline them elues to the ease of the world.

Then returned the Emperour and king Frederick, with the rest of their traine to the English Court, where in a while after the Emperour and the faire Agriola toke their leaue likewise, when was such grace on either side for their departure, as because your indgements is sufficient concurre, I cease to speake of the Soldane Bellagaris and Maiores, hauing kissed the hands of the king Fredericke, came & embraced the prince

Don



Don Edward, for whose sake they had left their Countries, to be partners in his imprisonment, when the Prince accompanying them part of the way, began in this order to the Soldane Bellagris. I trust Sir you are not of so base memory, but you remember the pleasure, that vnder colour of my name, you receiued with your Sister in Law Pandritia, in the realme of Lacedemonia, which for the Ladies cause, I cannot admit into obliuion, your labours being growne to such a knightly issue. Assure your selfe that this knight named Blandidon is your sonne, which vntill this time I haue kept in secret, yet thought to discouer it to you when time and place required, because you should amend the default of your faith, passed vnder supposition of my selfe. Wherefore you brother being long since dead, and her people sorrowfull at her austere kinde of life, you shall manifest your honour to espouse her at last, beside, you shall enioy a Princeesse of excellent beautie, and a Sonne highly esteemed for his knightly bountie. Bellagris paused hereon a pretty while, debating in his minde on the qualitie of his enterprise, which he supposed to craue a deeper iudgement, then the remembrance of his offence which was done past, at last hauing remained mute for a good space, he required the Prince Don Edward with this answer. Credite me Sir, I was neuer more amazed at any thing, which either Fortune hath sent me by mischance, or mine owne folly by accident, then at this report which you haue vouchsafed to disclose, being as farr from my thought, as I am from my native Country. Nevertheless, I make such estimation of Blandidon, that I accompt my selfe happy to haue such a Sonne, and for the affection I beare to him, I wil accomplish that, which else I neuer thought to haue done, and hereupon I bid you hartly farewell, bowing to send you word of my proceedings, so shortly as possible I may.

Thus departed the Soldane Bellagris and Maiortes accompanied with Polendos, Belcar, and Vernar, whom the loue of his faire Bazilia called home to Constantinople. Shortly after the Prince Primaleon left the English Court, traouailing alone by himselfe without any company because hee meant to trie the

the aduentures, that Fortune could any way present vnto him, not sparing his person, but would leopord himselfe in the places of most perill and danger. Knowing very well, that the life and loyalty of the couragious, ought to be imployed in their defence, whom misadventure kept in restraint, or the terror of the time in any sorrowfull seruitude.

CHAP. L I.

How Primaleon, being departed from the Court of England, arriued in the Realme of Lacedemonia, where he intended to visite the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia. And how in the Tristfull Valley, he met with the Knight, who behaued himselfe so well in the Iust before the Castle of Dramusiande, on the behalfe of the beautie of his Lady Miragarda, hauing giuen himselfe the name of the Knight. Where they twaine entred into a dangerous Combate, till Pandritia and her Ladies, were faine to come and set them at vnitie, and how Primaleon had the knowledge, that it was his sonne Florendos.



Primaleon hauing left the English Court, and betaken himselfe to the honour of good Fortune, made little stay in any place, till hee arriued in the Kingdome of Lacedemonia, where not forgetting his last conference with the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia, as touching the manner of her solitarie and sauage kinde of life, he concluded to visite her againe, to try if she continued in her former constancie.

Because

Because some, either upon mallice or misbeliefe, haue reported the conditions of women, to be linked to vnconstancie, and that no certaintie might be reposed in any of their dealings: but if they wept, it was for wantonnesse, if they smile, for subtilty, so that their teares was as full of treason, as their pleasant conceits, mixed with spightful attempts. Which opinion Gentlewomen, how farre it is from my thought of your Noble Sex, so farre I wish disliking from you, in misconstruing any of my saying.

Long rode Primaleon, without any aduenture worthy the rehearfall, till at last being come to the Tristfull Valley, (where no knight entred, but was presently conuincied with sadnesse) he espied two Horses coming from the Castle of Pandritia, one of them he knew to belong to the knight, that maintained the Just before the Castle of Dramasiande, which made him somewhat amazed, to see him wander without his Haister. At last, casting his eye about, he espied the knight sitting behinde a Tree, attyred in blacke Armour, and in his hand the Shilde with the Portraite of his Lady, whereto he vsed many amorous complaints: which Primaleon desirous to heare, alighted, and deliuering his Horse to his Esquire, drew nere vnto the Knight, who was so farre rauished with beholding his Ladies counterfalte, that he perceiued not the coming of Primaleon, but thinking no body to be nere, continued his discourses after this manner.

O Madame, if the desire of him, who hath but once had the sight of your sweete face, can be qualified by no means, till he come againe into your presence, how happy may they esteeme themselves who not onely haue the continuall view of your heavenly beauty, but are partakers of your incomparable courtesie, which being sufficient to inuigle the mindes of the gods, hath larger force to intrap the heart of any earthly Gallant. How often doe I embrace your Picture with an vnfained heart? And how after pteace stopp my complaints in the midst of all mishaps: liuing by the nobilitie of your name, as the Elephant doeth by the Tree, and reioycing in your Shrine, when God knowes I am too far from the substance: Oh Florendos, beare to

to great happinesse if thou esteeme thy Parentage, but brought into infinite mishaps through thine owne perswasion, in that thou dost contemplate a thought without end, and beginnest to loue her, who endeth in likeing thee. Tell me if thou call thy selfe Miragada, and good occasion had he that gaue thee that name, for which my poore heart hath paid indifferently, but more shall do if thou vse me with rigor.

Continuing these and a great many such like speeches, Primaleon well knew that it was some Florendos, whose greiuous passions caused him to call to memory, the like sorrows which himselfe had endured, when he spent his trauailes for the Princesse Gridonia: wherefore, drawing nere vnto him he would not as yet take any knowledge of him, but saluted him in these termes. Sir knight, would you not impart some of your graces to him, who sorroweth to see you ouercharged with such heavinesse? Truly Sir (answered the Tristfull Knight) I receiue such contentation in my troubled thoughts, and haue vsed them so long to my good liking, that I would be loath any should be priuie to my passions, but onely my selfe, to whom they are alway welcome. But what are you that make your selfe so hardy, as to disturbe me from my contended exercise: certainly if you dare expect a while, I will either force you to repent this discourtesie, or bring you as a bassaille to my Lady and Distresse.

So calling his esquire to arme him, Primaleon mounted presently on horsebacke: so greatly offended at his Sonnes words, that he would make him no answer, but stayed his coming a pretty way from him. When the Tristfull Knight was ready provided, and had bethought himselfe of his gentle wordes, he came vnto Primaleon with these speeches. Sir knight (pardon me I pray you) if I haue forgotten my selfe towards you, assuring you that I am sorry for the wordes I gaue you in my choller. Truly Sir (answered Primaleon) that is nothing to me, to whom you may vse what talke you please: but provide your selfe, for I am determined to trie your courage, because you would attempt to giue me the dare. At these wordes they touched their speares, which were deliuered on either side with

with such force, that the Tristfull Knight was sent to the earth, Primaleon bearing him company, because the girts of his Saddle were broken. Being either of them greatly abashed, they drew their Swords, and charged one another with very fierce strokes: Primaleon vsing no pittie vnto his sonne, but backed his armour as eagerly, as had he bene his greatest enemy in the world.

By this you may perceiue, that furie little regardeth friendship or affinitie, but is so extreame, both in the Father, and in the Childe, that it stretcheth beyond reason, or the limits of nature. Long was the fight, and very dangerous on either part their armour spoyled, their bodies sore wounded, and their strengths so much altered, that one would haue supposed death to be the next remedie.

Then withdrauing themselves to pause a little, they cast their eyes vpon the House of Sadnesse, the windows being couered with blacke, where Pandritia and her Damosels stood to behold the Combate, which was a great græfe to them to see, as to the two Champions to endure it so long. Primaleon being greatly afflicted to behold the Ladyes, as also angered at the haucie courage of his sonne: stayed his hand, and entred in to these speeches. Sir knight, I will trie at this very instant if the Portraite of your Lady will stand you in any moze need, or the deuotions that you vse vnto her, to deliuer you out of my hand, which if she faile you beyond your expectation, you shall know how vaine it is, to spend your time in such foolish cogitations.

Trust me sir (replied the Tristfull Knight) if I stood in need of her ayde, to make resistance against you, I thinke she would as willingly grant thereto, as you are witlesse to moue such a rash presumption, which ere long I haue no doubt, but you shall dearly know the price of.

After they had fought a good while againe, and Primaleon seeing what sore wounds he had giuen his sonne, beganne to rue his dangerous estate. Inhercupon he vsed these speeches following, I thinke it best Sir knight, to leaue our weapons, and so to end our Combat with some louing words: which  
may

may returne to our greater honour, then so to seeke the spoile of one anothers life.

Not so Sir (sayd the Tristfull Knight) for at first you might haue remedied all this mishappe, but seeing you would not essteeme of it then, my selfe thinkes scoyne to graunt it now. During the time of their talke, Pandritia came forth of her Castell, accompanied with the Damoselles, being desirous to pacifie the dangerous strife, wherein they perceyued these two Champions to remaine, so Primaleon seeing the courtesie of Pandritia, left the Tristfull Knight, and thus saluted her. Madame, I trust ere long you shall receiue moze contentation, then the grieefe you were in, at the first entrance of this Castle: which cannot be moze welcome to you, then it hath alwaies bin desired of me.

Sir (answered Pandritia) pardon me because I haue no knowledge of you, but for your good wil I giue you hartly thanks, being vrged by the great distresse I see you in, to make entreatance that you would leaue the Combate, and vpon the report of your name (if I may without blemish to mine honour) you shall enter my Castell, where I will doe the best for the relieving your weake estate.

Credite me Madame (sayd Primaleon) I haue so earnestly desired to doe you seruice, that I haue not spared the trauaile of my person from a farre Countrey, to bring you such tydings, as I hope shall agree with your good nature: and because you shall not remaine in suspicion of me, I giue you to vnderstand, that I am called Primaleon, Sonne to the famous Emperour of Constantinople.

When the Tristfull Knight heard these wordes, he was overcome with such extreame sorrow and heauinesse, because he had entred Combat with his Father Primaleon, that he had much adoe to sustaine himselfe: which the Prince seeing, came to him with these wordes. Florendos, let no grievous motions see me to abate your courage, for I had knowledge of you before we fell to the Combat, as for what hath passed, I forgoe and freely forgiue, being glad that I haue tryed your right to be of such reputation.

The

The Tristfull Knight kneeling downe, and in great humilitie kissing his Fathers hand, hee sustained him graciously in his armes, and great were the salutations that passed betwene them. Pandritia being glad to see the Prince Primaleon, conducted them both into her House of Sadnesse, where they were lodged in a goodly chamber, and their wounds attended by the Ladies, with very diligent and loving respect.

CHAP. LII.

How Primaleon and the Tristfull knight, being healed of the wounds they had receiued in the combat, by the courteous entertainment of the sorrowfull Lady Pandritia, after they had staid there a little space (and Primaleon certifying her of the happy deliury of the Prince Don Edward) they both departed from thence, the Prince toward Constantinople, and the Tristful knight in his iourney towards Spaine: when Pandritia likewise for these ioyfull tidings, left her House of Sadnesse, and went to the Garden of Damofels. And how after Primaleon, and the Prince Vernar were arriued at Constantinople, the Soldan Bellagris, sent a Messenger to the Emperour, who gaue him to vnderstand of the dealing of the Soldan of Babilon, who had staid his army, to contend with certaine Lords of his dominions, that rebelled, and entred into armes against him.



For as the Tristfull Knight, and his noble Father the Prince Primaleon, made their abode for the space of certaine dayes, in the carefull Castle of the solitary Pandritia, where they were so carefully visited and their feeble estates so lovingly tendered, that in short time they recovered their

perfect health. In which time, Primaleon had certified her, of the prosperous successe of the Prince Don Edward, whom she verily supposed to be dead long before: so that she conceived such great delight in this report, as at the request of the Prince, she left her House of Sadnesse, and returned to her Mansion named the Garden of Damofels, vsing more pleasant conceits, then for a great while she might suffer to thinke on. Primaleon hauing bozned her company longer then willingly hee would, and declared to her the names of the knights that were prisoners with Don Edward, as also the manner of their happy deliuerance, accompanied with the Tristful Knight, he took his leaue of her, she being loath they should depart so soone, but perswaded by their earnest affayres, gaue them the courtesie, and so they left her.

They twaine thus ryding together, the Tristfull Knight desired his Father, that hee might leaue his company, because the affection to his Lady, directed his trauaile into Spaine, who not denying his sonnes request, because himselfe was minded to ryde alone, to the ende hee might make the better proofe of his valour, embraced one another, the Tristfull Knight riding towards her, for whose swete sake he liued in great affliction and anguith of minde, where at this time we will leaue him, and returne to the Prince Primaleon, who not encountering any aduenture, by this time is come to Constantinople, whereas full often he wished himselfe, because he had heard of the Soldanes Army, which was of such force, that it caused the whole Empire to stand in great feare. Primaleon being entred into the Citie, kept close his Beuere, because he would not be knowne to any: but intended to come suddenly vpon his friends, which wold make him to be the better welcome. Being come to the Palace, and hauing deliuered his Horse to his Esquire, he went vp into the great Hall, in the same Armour that he vsed against the Tristfull Knight, which was very much defaced with the blowes he had receiued, causing great astonishment to all that were present, who gaue him way to come before the Emperour. When kneeling downe, and desiring to haue the Emperesse and the Ladies present, he would discourse to his

Highbresse, what had happened lately in England: which the Emperour desirous to heare, yet not knowing what or who he was all this while, receiued him from the ground, saying. That the honour of the place from whence he came, should make him a great deale the better welcome: and so he conducted him to the Emperesse chamber, where (by good hap) the princeesse Gridonia, Polinarda and Bazilia, were present, when the Emperour toke occasion to begin as thus. Faire Ladies, this knight commeth from the Court of England, and would not declare his message to me, until such time as he might come to your presence, before whom he desireth to shewe his Ambassage, which I wish to be otherwise then I thinke for, because of the tariance of my sonne Primaleon, whose absence is no small cause of my heavinesse. With that the Emperour sate downe by the Ladies, whom Primaleon began to behold very earnestly, because he perceyued them growne into great alteration, especially the Emperour his father, whose countenance was much changed, then when he saw him last, and the Princes Gridonia, had greatly offended his faire face, with the continuall mourning shee vsed for the absence of her Lord: so generally beholding them all, and staying from speaking an indifferent long space, to the great amazing of the Emperour, as also the company of the courtly Ladies: at last he vnclasp'd his Beuer, & began in this order. I desire you, my gracious father, to pardon my long silence, as also the great time of mine absence from your royall Court, hauing no other Message to present you, but the good health of your noble friends in England, as also of your Sonne Primaleon, who humbly himselfe before your gracious presence. The Emperour was suddenly wapt with such an inward ioy, & for a great time he remained as it were in a trance, in like maner the Emperesse, Gridonia, Polinarda, & al the Ladies, who came running altogether, & embraced him with such ioy, as it is impossible for me to giue iudgement thereon. After hee had vsed curtesie to them al, the Princeesse Bazilia came & kissed his hand, to whom he said. Faire Sister, feare you not, your Lord Vernas will not long absēt himselfe frō you, but you shal haue him here right soon. I dare warrant you. Then was he vnarmed, when the Empe-

your

your could not satisfie himselfe, till he heard the ioyfull newes lately chanced in England: but when he vnderstood, how Palmerin was sent to the Prince Don Edward, and his daughter Florida, he receiued great contentation, in that he was nourished in the company of the princeesse Polinarda, who concealed her ioy from any one, Dramacian excepted, to whom she was accustomed to disclose her secrets. Great was the pleasure for the returne of Primaleon, whom the nobles and gentlemen of the cittie came daily to welcome: but to their greater content, within a while after, the Prince Vernar with a great many of the Princes & knights of Greece, arriued at the Court, whose company was not so long desired, as now they were ioyfully and hartily embraced. In the midst of this great triumphing and solace, a Messenger sent from the Soldane Bellagris, presented himselfe before the Emperour, who disclosed his message in this manner.

Illustrious Prince, the Soldan Bellagris, my Lord and master, in humble duty kisseth the hand of your excellency, giuing you to vnderstand, that so soone as he was arriued at his court he was aduertised how the Soldan of Babilō hauing with him a great and puissant armie, prepared himselfe to ouerrunne your country and Empire, and to make a generall spoile of your people and Dominions, your estate being weakned through the losse of those knights, who haue left your Court to seek the aduentures of great Brittain. But when he was taking ship, and his Army at poynt to hoyle their sailes, word was presently brought him, how certaine Lords in his Realme, had leuied a number of his owne subiects, to enter armes against him, for that they were able no longer to suffer his oppressing tyranny. Upon this occasion he stayed his armie, to bring them in obedience, that had bene so hardie to rebell against him: which thing he can hardly do, without the losse of 20000. Pagans, but when he shall finish with them, they he intendeth to visite you. Which that you might prevent, my Lord thus willed me to make knowne vnto you, wishing to see the houre of his owne death, before your imperiall estate should be any way distressed.

Gramercy my good friend (said the Emperour) at this instant I perceiue the great good wil which the Soldane thy Lord hath alwaies boyned into me, to whom I pray the commend me with honourable thanks, protesting to do as much for him if (as God forbid) he stand in the like needs. I thinke it best for you to take your rest a while, because hauing endured so long travail, you cannot else chuse but be very sore laboured: yet first I desire thee to rehearse, how fareth thy Lord since his coming home? My Lord (answered the Messenger) euer since his arrival, hath delighted to discourse of the strange adventures, which not long since are brought to ende in great Brittain, which how rare they be, I know your highnesse hath heard, wherefore I need not to rehearse them. You say true (quoth the Emperour) and assure your selfe that the imprisonment of the English Prince Don Edward will cause the Castle of Dramusiande, to remaine in perpetuall and renowned memory. Thus concluding their talke, the Emperour went to the Emperesse chamber where, in the presence of the Ladies, he rehearsed the Message from the Soldan Bellagris: and on the morrow the messenger departed, bearing with him the Emperours letters to his Lord. Now was the Court and Citizens replenished with as great ioy, as before they were filled with heauinesse, when they stood in feare of the Armie of the Soldan of Babylo.

CHAP. LIII.

Here the History discourseth at large of the Tristfull Knight, who after hee was departed from Constantinople, in the company of the other Princes and knights, that went to pursue the search of the Prince Don Edward, through occasion of ill weather on the seas, landed vpon the Coast of Spaine. And how in trauaile he came to the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where he became enamoured of the faire Miragarda; for whose loue he foyled the Giant, and kept the passage there a great while, in the honour of her picture

Because



Because the Authour, hath all this while made no mention of the prince Florendos, (who at this present tearmeth himselfe the Tristfull Knight) and endeuoured himselfe likewise in the search of Don Edward: now as well to excuse his owne negligence, as also to fauour the hard Fortune of this Knight in trauaile, you shall bee perfectly resolved of all his proceedings.

At such time as he departed from Constantinople, in the company of diuers Knights who pursued the Prince Primaleon, euery one taking a contrary way, his course directed him to a haue of Sea, where imbarcking himselfe in a Merchant of England, time and occasion so serued, that they tooke their departure. Hauing endured so long on the seas, that they knew themselves to be within a ken of England, on a suddaine a contrarie winde came vpon them, and held them in such danger betwene hope and feare, that at last in great hazard of their liues, they chanced vpon the Coast of Spaine, where they tooke landing on a Roocke, which at this day is called Lisbone.

Florendos, seeing himselfe so farre from the place, whither he directed his course, and would haue so gladly attained, rode on ouercharged with extreme heauines, & complaining on fortune for his unlucky trauaile. After he had passed through the Province of Portingall, and by his haucie Chivalrie obtained a generall commendation, he happened to come to the Riuer Tamesis, where riding on, & contemplating his amorous thoughts, he espied a goodly Castle situated vpon a Roocke, which gaue him great occasion of pleasure to behold it. This Castle urged him to aduance his course thither, but there lay a blocke in his way, which was a great let to his former pretence, for vnder the greene shade as he rode, he perceiued three Ladies of such singular beautie, as in all his life time he supposed neuer to haue seene the like. These Ladies continued a very serious discourse among themselves, so that they took no heede to the arrivall



of Florendos : who gaue a great good liking to them all, but especially shee that sat in the midst, to whom the other twaine shewed very great reuerence, being of most stately beautie, as also of a singular and exquisite behauiour. But shall we say, that Florendos was enamoured at this faire spectacle? No, hee could as well eschew it, as the Bird fast caught in the Fowlers snare, and he liked her no better, then he that did most honour and heartily loue her : so that hee changeth his mirth into mouns, his talke into teares, and his whole cogitations, to a Louers complexion : aiming the whole course of his affection on the Lady, whose face had the power to detain his freedom, and her behauiour the operation, to be chiefe starre within the compasse of his Sphere. Still he stroue with himselfe, to goe backe againe, and shun the blaze that had set on fire his senses: but affection had hung such a clog on his conceits, and one looke brought his heart into such a Labyrinth, that Ariadnes thread could do him no good, but only the saint that had giuen him this glaunce. While he remained in these muses, such occasion the Ladies receiued, that they leaue the field, and walke into their Castle, which gaue such an vnkind cossey to the heart of Florendos, that now his mind was in some more outrage then before: yea, they were no sooner gone, but he fell into such rigorous accusations against himselfe, partly because timoritie withheld him from speaking to them, and then againe, how necessary his cause was to haue mooued speech, so that betwene the one & the other, he was euē as a man distraught of his wits. Then began he to feeble the seuerall accidents, which loue imprinteth in the hearts of those, that delight to dally vnder her Banner, and how the little son of the Goddess Citherea, can pierce more deepe with his aiming shaft, then the hardy enemy can enter with his lance: so that he confessed himselfe to bee in more surstie when the Bullets flew about his eares, then when Beautie had sent her charges to warre against his eies, which was able to do more in an houre, then the other had power in the space of a yeere. Well, said as he was, he walked to the Castell, where finding the gate shut, hee fell into his former agonies: but by fortune, casting his eyes aside, hee beheld a

Shield

Shield hanging on the wall, wherein was liuely giuen to view, the Portrait of the Lady (who was mistresse of his hart) which he iudged to be handled in such perfection, that it wanting nothing but in resemblance of the person. Under this shield in golden letters, was artificially written the name of Miragarda whereby Florendos verily supposed that it belonged to her who iustly deserued it: because her beautie did not only merit to be viewed, but would likewise inuegle the hearts of the stoutest that durst conceiue the hardinesse in themselves, to come to her place of abode. Yet were not those letters placed there to that intent or purpose, but only to aduertise such knights, as took occasion to trauaile that way, to be carefull to themselves for feare of the Giant Almarol, who was Lord of that Castle, and kept that Shield there in the behalfe of this faire Miragarda, against any knight that durst presume to take it from thence. While Florendos stood vsing a thousand amorous deuotions to this singular picture, he espied the Giant to come forth of the castle, armed with a Iacke of Asier, no lesse faire then strong, and mounted on a sturdy blacke Courser, when to Florendos he began to vse these words.

Credit me sir knight, the mystery of these letters, hath gottē such a mastery of you, that I feare you will repent when first you saw them, and that fortune was so much your enemy to conduct you to this place. Trust me (answered Florendos) if I did not more fauour the portrait, then I stand in feare of thy puissance, and regard more her swete face who owes it, then I respect these words thou vsest in thy ruffe, I should hardly shew her my desire, or giue thee thy dutie, which since thou wilt haue no forbearance but ready payment, I will cause my sword at this time to seale thee quittance. These words, caused one either side cruell blowes with their weapons, not so dangerous to the one, but as doubtfull to the other: yet fortune fauouring the Prince Florendos, brought the Giant Almarol into such estate that he had bene made shorter by the head, had not Miragarda presently discomded, who perceiuing Almarol brought into subiection, vsed these words to the Prince Florendos.

Sir knight, I desire you to make acceptation of the victory & bears

beare not such a bloody minde to desire the losse of his life, but if for my sake you will do so much, then fauour him to whom I am very much beholding, as well for his gentlenesse, as also because he did giue me, and of this Fortresse. Florendos seeing he had gotten such good lucke, that he might speake to her, to whom before he durst not, requited her presently this answer.

Madame, of such force are your gracious speeches, as also the good opinion I conceiue of your selfe, that I not onely bow my heart at your command, but also my hand to maine- taine your cause, wherefore I grant him his life, desiring that your gentle nature would afford me the like, for that your beauty claimed such a conquest of me, as none but your selfe can any way mitigate. Miragarda giuing him great thanks for his curtesie, departed into the Castle againe, accompanied with the Giant: Florendos still remaining without, complaining on the wound he received by her beautie, and not of the hurts he had gained through the Giant. In whose company he enterprised to keepe the hold of Miragarda, entering the Combat in her defence, with all the knights that made their iourney that way, which indeed were many, through the singular report of her beautie, yet fortune at that instant preferring Florendos, caused him still to remaine the Conquerour.

Thus remained the Prince in extreame conflict of his loue, frequencing dayly his Ladies picture, with his amorous and pensiue complaints, which Miragarda took such pleasure to behold, that she fained for to loue him, onely because she would scoone at his fond and foolish dealings. But when fame had blowne abroad the aduentures of great Brittain, how the knights were continually lost in the Castle of the Giant Dramusande: Miragarda conceiuing such an opinion of him, did earnestly request that he would take his iourney thither, perswading him that the aduenture of the Fortresse, was only reserved to be finished by his valour.

Florendos loath to disobey her commandement, took upon him to trauaile, that he arrived in England, at such time as he heard the aduenture to be finished, and the Princes were preparing themselves to come to the Castle, where on the bridge he

he attended their coming, and behaued himself against them as you haue heard before. But now gentlewomen, whose rare excellencie is such as you may perceiue, that it bygeth the gentle minde to attempt the deapest danger in your gracious seruice, you shall be resolved how the fauie Miragarda chanced to this Castle, and why the Giant Almorol defended her as you haue heard.

At such time as the King Recinde, was Prisoner in the enchanted Castle, and that many Princes of Spain had betaken themselves to his search, the Quene remained in such grievous sorowes, that nothing could more procure her to any pleasure. Whereupon, the Countie Arlae presented his daughter Miragarda to the Quene, to the end that we might receiue some pleasure by her company, but the noble Gentlemen delighted with this rare peece of beantie, enterprised Iousts and Triumphes, onely to winne her to whom they were so affected. So that expences of them were so great, to doe her pleasure who little regarded it, that many of them were brought into great necessitie, onely by the riotous charges her beauty set them at.

The Quene seeing her Lord so long absent from his Kingdome, and that the noble Gentlemen of the Court, striving to excell one another in braue and rich deuises, were brought to an hard exigent of many of their livings, which was onely procured through the loue of Miragarda, by the aduise of the Countie and her honourable Councell (who pittied to see this great inconuenience) sent for the Giant Almorol, to whom were given certaine knights and Gentlewomen to attend upon her, and he should keepe her till such time as he should appoint her Marriage, which at that instant he could not dispatch, because of the great discord that was risen about her, amongst all the Princes and knights of the Court. And so he sent her to the Castle of the Giant Almorol, untill the princes should be in quietnesse againe, where in the meane time, she often used to walke in the greene fields for to delight her selfe, even as she did at the time when Florendos came and found her, and there she liued, till some one might releue her from Captiuitie, as here

hereafter you shall vnderstand how euery thing happened, during the time of her abiding there.

CHAP. LIIII.

How Palmerin departed from the Realme of England, and in his trauaile met with the Prince Gracian, lying fast a sleep vnder a greene tree, who gaue him to vnderstand of an hard aduenture, befalln to the Prince Platir and Floraman: And how he riding to helpe them, met with a Damosell, who brought him to the place where they were fighting the Combate, and there Palmerin slew Dramaco, who was Lord of the Castle, and redeemed three Ladyes from their tyrannicall seruitude.



So long remained Palmerin in the Court of the King of England with his noble father and his friends who reioyced in his company, that euery one supposed he would not trauaile again, which he could hardly keepe himselfe from all this while, but that the earnest intreaty of the King, with the Princes Florida his Mother, vrged him to stay longer then gladly he would.

At last, when they perceiued al means could not serue to hinder his determination, but that he laboured night & day in pursuing his pretence, they gaue consent he should depart whither pleased him, so taking his leaue of the aged King his Father, Mother, and all his friends, who were not a little sorrowfull to enioy his absence, he gaue the euery one a gentle Conge, & so left them in their great heauinesse. But within a while after, Don Florian seeing his Brother Palmerin was gone, and how his

his honour was imbraced by staying so long from trauaile: hee began a fresh sadnesse throughout all the Court, especially to King Frederick, whose affection was more inclined to him, then to the Prince Palmerin, because hee had nourished him in his Court, and therefore his loue was a great deale more surelie grounded on him.

But first to discourse what happened the Prince Palmerin, who riding encumbered with a thousand conceites, durst not take his way to Constantinople, fearing to displease his Lady Polinarda, but remembering how neere they were in affinitie, he had good hope she would make more estimatiō of his seruice. Contenting himselfe with this thought, hee rode on till he arrived in a very vnfertile Valley, whose scarcitie of Trees, or of any other thing delightfull to the eye, vrged him to dispencc with his thoughts a sudden sadnesse, till at last (after hee had ridden a good while) he came to a faire and mightie bigge Tree, whose compasse of Boughes, contained a fine and very coole shade vnder it, where he espied a knight to lie fast asleepe, hauing neither horse nor Esquire to beare him company, which made him somewhat amazed, and loath to leaue him in that dangerous estate, he moued him with his lance, and these speeches. Sir knight, this place is not for such an one as you, to repose your wearie limmes in, because you are as vncertaine of any safetie, as you may assure your self it is to be feared. The knight suddenly awaked, and setting hand to his sword, presently started vp: When Palmerin had knowledge of him to bee the Prince Gracian, whose company was not a little welcome to him, being in such a solitary and vnfrequented place of passage, wherfore he began in these termes following. Sir Gracian, let not my presumption be admitted to any offence, but rather esteemed of in this sort, that I am yours any way to command in seruice. Gracian being glad to see the Prince Palmerin, knowing that his puissance might remedy part of his misfortune, which being willing to disclose, he imbraced the Prince in his armes, and in this order began to vtter his tale. As it is not vnknowne, worthy sir, how your knightly chivalry hath brought to end the aduerture which was feared beyond any possibility,

so knowe I that your affection is inclined to ayde those, whose misadventure requieth the helpe so good a knight, and how happie your actiuall at this time is, let the spectacle you shall shortly see, remaine as an vndoubted and infallible witnesse, which because delay in words may turne to some danger, thus it is.

If you follow on the way you see right before you, it will not be long before you shall come to the place, where the Princes Platir and Floraman abide in great danger, to whom you may geelde maruailous friendly succour, if you make hast to them, who would gladly be so happy as to haue a sight of you.

In the meane time, if Siluian will doe me the fauour, that I may mount vpon behinde him, if we come not vnto you, I desire you to except vs at the Forgetfull Stone, where haue you no doubt but we will meete together.

Palmerin being sorry to heare these newes, but highly commending his Fortune, that he came so luckely to the aide of the two Princes, promising to fulfill the request of Gracian, he set spurres to his Horse, and rode as fast as possible he might towards them. He had not rode very long, but that he came to a place, where two pathes seruing two seuerall wayes, made him to stand in a muse which way he were best to take, but to driue him from his doubt, he espied a Damosell come riding towards him, vsing such heauy clamours, as if one had pursued her to depriue her of her life. Palmerin abashed at this vnlooked for aduenture, stayed his Horse to question with her, but she perceiuing his intent, in a great feare gaue him these speeches.

Good Sir offer me not the discourtesie, to be a hinderance to my happy trauaile, for that you may endamage me, with greater harme if you stay me, then the discourse of my misfortunes, can geelde you any content to heare, which I am afraide to disclose, because I doubt your valour can giue me no comfort in this great mishappe. Trust me Lady (answered Palmerin) as for my valour, I can hardly make you any warrant of it, but so great is my desire at this instant, that I must request you shewe me the cause of your grievous lamentation. Well Sir (quoth she) since you are so desirous to vnderstand the extremitie

extrem itie of my case, come with me, and you shall be certified hereof, as much as you can possible craue. So rising on with her, at length he espied a goodly Castle, and heard a great rushing and bruit of weapons, to which noyse the damosell brought him, & shewed him where ten knights had settled themselves in fight against twaine, who defended them with so great pollicy, and charged their enemies with such courage of minde, that in a little space they had laid fine of them dead on the ground.

By these knights stood certaine men, holding two faire and comely Ladies, with whom they would haue entred into the Castle, but that these two knights kept themselves still against the gate, so that it was not possible for them any way to enter in.

Palmerin beholding the Combate very fierce on both sides, their blood cruelly wasted, & their strengths altogether brought into great weakenesse, had not stayed long before he perceiued a mighty bigge knight to come forth of the Castle, who was very strongly armed and mounted, with him ten well appointed men, that garded his person, and were very diligent about him. Aduauncing himselfe, to the remainder of those that were left aliue of the ten knights, and endured still the Combate with the other twaine: verie Maiestically he gaue forth these wordes. Retire you Warlets, and let me breake the bones of these Caitifes, who haue procured me to high and heauie displeasure. When Palmerin saw the two knightes in very feeble estate, so that this fresh resistance were the vtter losse of their liues, he stepped to the knight, replying in this manner. If thou haue either regard of knightthod, or the honourable conditions, thou oughtest to vse in any martiall attempt, then leaue them whom thou seest are too weake to resist, and prouide thy selfe for me, who haue enterprised their quarrell.

The knight offended at these words of Palmerin, caught his speare, and ran against ech other with such puissance, that being not able to resist the encounter, they were sent together violently to the earth. When falling to the combate of the sword, the other armed men came in defence of their Lord, when

when by good fortune, the Prince Gracian came and ayded them with such couragious helpe, that they fourc assailing the knight and his companions, in the end preuailed, and slue them all outright, which caused the other standing by, and seeing their Lord and his knights slaine before their faces, to run into the Castle, and betake themselves to darke Sellers and Vaultes, onely because they stood in feare of losing their liues.

Palmerin seeing the field was theirs, and no body came to offer any more resistance, he went to the Ladies, who were very pale of colour, by reason of the great feare they stood in, when the cruell Dramaco tooke them, seeking to dishonour them, and to offer them what villany he could: wherefore the Prince in these words began to salute them.

Faire Ladies, shew me I pray you the occasion why this villanous wretch endeoures himselfe to your dishonour, because I am ignorant how it hath happened, yet being certified of your misfortune, came to do you the best service I might. Platir and Floraman, when they had knowledge how it was the Prince Palmerin, stayed the Ladies answer, conuining and embracing him with great courtesie, gaue him hartly thanks for his friendly succour. Nay trust me (answered Palmerin) giue your thanks to the Prince Gracian, for I had not come vnto you at this time, if he had not declared vnto me the heaviness of your estate. When taking the Ladies by the hand, they went into the castle, where they found no body but two aged women, who sate wringing their hands for the death of Dramaco: and seeing them coming in that had slain him & all his companions, dissembled the grief which remained in their hearts, & submitted themselves, fearing lest they should tast of the same cup themselves, onely requesting that their liues might be saued, which the renowned Palmerin of England did presently grant them. Then were they and the Ladies brought into a goodly Chamber, where their Esquires bound vp their wounds, and made provision to get them their strength againe: but Palmerin desirous to haue more knowledge of the knight which was slaine, questioned with one of the old women, who was his mother, when she presently returned him this answer.

The

The knight whom you to my griefe haue slaine, was called Dramaco, hee being my sonne, and begotten by the valiant Giant Lurcon, sometime my husband: whom Primaleon slew in Constantinople, at such time as he enterprised to reuenge the death of the famous Perrequin of Duras. Here haue we long liued to our owne content, vntill froward fortune conducted you hither: what more you are desirous to heare, pardon me, for my griefe wil not permit me to rehearse it. The Prince contented himselfe with this report, when departing from her, hee went to visit the Ladies, to vnderstand of them, in what manner their mishaps had chanced.

## CHAP. LV.

How the Lady declared to the prince Palmerin, in what manner they were brought to this Castle of the hardy Knight Dramaco, and how they met with the Prince Gracian, who sent Platir and Floraman to rescue the Ladies from thence: where Palmerin found them at the Castle, labouring still in their aduenturous enterprise.



Ramaco and his companions being thus happily soyled, & the knights remayning in the Castle till their wounds were healed, Palmerin determined to depart fro thence, but first he desired the Ladies, to tell him how it happened, that they became so oppressed by this cruell Dramaco. The eldest of the Ladies, perceiuing the earnest desire of the Prince Palmerin, satisfied his request in this manner. Worthy Sir, we are the daughters of a Lady, who inhabiteth not farre from this place in her Castle, where we liued in such quiet content of life, and so well guarded (as we supposed) from any ensuing danger, that we feared no mishap, being so well governed by our Lady Mother.

But

But as none can auoide what the destenies haue ordained, but must abide the doome of their appointed fortune: so we allowed to this great unhappinesse, haue felt part of the rygour of this cruell tyrant. For he being addicted to such a cruell nature, that the Noble he rewarded with bloody murther, saye Ladies and Damoselles he defaced of their honour, and bled all alike in his villainous furie: he sent tent knights to the aforesayde Castle of our Mother, who finding vs altogether vnprovided of refuge at that time (inasmuch as our wonted safetie gaue vs small cause of doubt:) without respect to her teares, or our complaints brought vs away by extreame violence.

By the way as they brought vs, we met this knight, meaning the Prince Gracian, whom they dismounted from his Horse: and because they perceiued him such a comely knight, they saued his life, but tooke his Horse, and left him on foote to goe whither him pleased, thinking scozne to accept the Combate, which by sundry meanes he offered vnto them. Leaving him there alone, they brought vs with them to the Castell, when these other two knights swiftly pursuing after vs, stood our defence in such order, that they would not suffer vs to bee lead into the Castell.

When Dramaco seeing these knights, preuailed so well against his seruants, came himselfe to accomplish what they could not fulfill, but then how well you stood our friend, the happy effect remaineth as a substantiall witnesse. When Palmerin had well marked the discourse of the Lady, they great misfortune, and the monstrous crueltie of Dramaco, he reioyced that he found Gracian in such a luckie time, by whose meanes he had brought the aduenture to such a good and happy conclusion.

When Gracian rehearsed, how in the time hee stayed at the tree, Platin & Floraman came that way (after the knights that conducted the Ladies had taken his horse, and left him there in the order as you haue heard:) to whom he declared the mishap of the Ladies, whereupon they ran hastily after them, and continued the Combat, as you haue already heard, vntill such time as one of the Ladies escaping away, met the Prince Palmerin, and

and brought him to defend their oppressed cause. After they had sifted euery matter, according as themselves desired to knowe, the Prince Palmerin gaue the Castle to both the Ladies, & taking his farewell very gently of them all, he mounted on horse backe, leauing them at the cure of their woundes at the Castle.

The Ladies were very carefull to helpe the Princes, who at length were brought to their former strength: where they passed away the time pleasantly with the Ladies, recounting the strange aduenture which they had happily passed. But the death of Dramaco comming to the eare of these Ladies mother, caused her to come thither to see her daughters, who, when she was there arriued, gaue great thanks to the Princes for their imployed paines, and gratified them with such honour, as they could deuie expedient for the time and place.

When the Princes saw euery thing in due and desert order, they determined to depart from thence: desiring the Ladies to vse courtesie to the ancient mother of Dramaco, because shee was innocent, and not culpable in his mischieuous practises. At their request, the Ladies willing to shewe, that liberalitie is a vertue of great commendation, gaue her the castle of her sonne Dramaco, for which they rewarded them with very courteous thanks.

So the Princes going into the Armoury of Dramaco, where they provided themselves each one of a notable Armour: and from his stable likewise tooke three of his fairest Steeds, which might better serue their necessitie, then to abide there, and put to no exercise. Then leauing the ladies there in the Castle, ready to depart to their owne abiding, they vowed to stay in no place, till they had attained the Citie of Constantinople, where how they sped, you shall heare more hereafter.



CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin, after he had left the Princes and the two Ladies in the Castle, rode on accompanied with Siluian his Esquire, til at last he arriued on the sea shore: where finding a ship lying at Anker, he entred into it, when presently so sonne as he was in the ship, the Cable burst in the middest, and the billowes of the Seas brought the ship to a strange Iland, in which Palmerin went on land, and encountred a strange and hardy aduenture at a Fountaine. And how Siluian met with Francian and Onistalde, to whom he declared the mishap of his Maister: for which cause, they be-tooke them presently to his search. In like manner, Siluian arriuing at the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande, vrged him vpon his report, to aduance himselfe presently in tra-uaile.



When Palmerin was departed from the Castle, where he left the Princes, and the Ladies with their Mother, he rode without any aduenture, for the space of thre dayes together, till at last comming to the Sea side, which by reason of distemperature made a great raging, he alighted and gaue his Horse to Siluian, desirous to looke a while on the surges, which would driue other pensue matters forth of his minde: Talking along on the side of a Rocke, he espied a Shippe hard by him which lay at Anker, but no Barriners nor any body else, he could perceiue in it, or neare it: which made him desirous to goe aboard, to see if there were any body there, of whom he might be resolu'd from whence the vessel was, and wherfore they strooke on land in such an vn-frequented place. A while he stayed, supposing they had bin all gone on land, to fetch fresh water, or such necessaries as was needfull for their vie: but when he saw no body came in all that

space,

space, neither could he perceiue whether any had bin gone there on land, he prepared himselfe to enter the ship. But Siluian desired him to change his minde from so send an enterprise, and that in an aduenture of no better countenance, it was but mar-fully to hazard his person, but when he saw his words might at-taine no perswasion from his attempt, he suffered him to enter the ship according to his own desire. No sooner was the prince fully entred, but the Cable rope which held the Ship burst in the middest, when Siluian presently cried to his master, who offered to cast himselfe on land againe by the boughs of y<sup>e</sup> Trees, but all was in vaine, for y<sup>e</sup> Ship lanch'd forth in the deepe, and with a full gale of wind rode merily vpon the surges. In that time Palmerin had lost the sight of the shore, still thinking what fortune did intend by this scdain aduenture, & not dishartning himselfe, but iudging all for the best, he reposed on the mercy of God, and fauour of the waues, expecting some good issue of this vnlooked for chance. Siluian remained in such heauinesse for the losse of his maister, that he thought to stay in that place, till he had heard some tidings of him, either good or bad, but seeing that in thre dayes no news would happen, he rede sadly fro thence, leading his Hailers Horse in his hand, when he espied two knights in white Armour, beset with Pellicans of red & Car-nation colour. Siluian presently knew them to be Francian and Onistalde, who demanded of him, what was become of his ma-ster: but when Siluian had declared the manner of his mishap, how he entred the ship, and the Cable brake on such a suddaine they feared some mischance would annoy their deare friend, whose happinesse they wished as their owne health. Wherfore they concluded that Siluian should not go strait to London, be-cause king Fredericke would conceiue great græse, if he should know of this unlucky chaunce, but desired him to shew them which way he thought they might soonest find him, and on pain of death he should not go to London, nor reherse the losse of the Prince to any, but such a one as he knew to beare his maister great affection. Siluian promised to accomplish their pleasure, and so they departed from him, bowing not to spare any labour by Sea or land, vntill they might heare of the noble Palmerin.

Then Siluian being not fully resolved what he were best to do, tooke his way strait to great Brittain, where arriving at the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande (who entertained him with kinde and louing courtesie) he discouered to him the losse of his Lord: when presently Dramusiande clapping his arm on his backe, promised neuer to returne vnto his Castle, without he might attaine the good recovery of the famous Prince. Siluian seeing the affection of the Giant to be so great to his masters welfare, as himselfe could wish, presented himselfe to serue him as his Esquire, till he might be so happy as to finde the Prince againe: thus leaue we them to the good fortune of their trauaile.

Returne we now to the noble Palmerin of England, who enduring the sharpe brunts on the Seas, too long as he thought, at last the ship staying at the side of a Rocke, where, the Sea had left an Island which was inhabited, and there he forsooke the ship, being very glad that he had gained the shore. Leauing the Sea side, he betooke himselfe to trauaile in a little path right before him, which in a little while brought him into a faire Greene Meddow, in the middlest whereof was placed a Marble Stone of the height of a man, with an inscription vpon it: Take heede thou goe this way no further. When he had read this Woesey (the Stone being placed there as he supposed, to cause all Passengers be afraide they knew not of what,) his minde was greatly moued to see the end of this accident, and being accompanied continually with a haughty courage, he went on, taking great pleasure to behold the high Rocks, and the Greene Trees, which spread their boughs to brauely over the path as he went.

Palmerin seeing no aduenture would happen all this while, the Marble Pillar giuing such a terrifying manner of words) went on still without any feare, till at last he was be nighted, when laying him downe in the grasse to take his rest, he made his Helmet his Pillow, and so determined to sleepe there for that night. But such were the motions in his mind, that the more he thought to take quiet rest, the farther off he was from his intent. For one while the remembrance of his staye Polinarda,

narda presented it selfe as best worthy his memory, because hee had bene so long absent from her, yet durst not enterprize to come into her presence: and the the losse of Siluian, whose counsell alway serued, as an especial remedy to his amorous assaults, and wanting his company now in this heauy case, hee was forced to vtter diuers and sundry complaints.

Thus spent hee all that night, in a Courtly debate betwixne reason & his earnest desire, the one to perswade him from that dangerous kinde of trauaile, and to exclude from his mind, the fond allarmes giuen by his fancy: the other, how continually it wozapped him in an intricate or endlesse variation of his senses. But as often we see, Reason is subiect to the amorous Desire, so the prince not able to resist the aspiring drifts of his eger passions, resigned both his will and wit, to follow the loue and amitie he had begun to his Lady and Distresse. When hee had wasted the night in this small order of rest, & the cherefull morning deliuered her faire countenance, he went on, still musing on the wordes he had read vpon the Pillar, which he esteemed to be flat mockage, because he could perceine nothing that deliered such a forewarning.

But as he trauailed in a faire plaine field, still vsing his minde with his former exercises, hee came to a Fountaine of singular beautie, the Pillars whereof, was of fine wrought Azure, & the water issuing forth at the mouthes of diuers beasts very artificially made. The Prince standing a good while in a muse at this Fountaine, how so much water should ascend by such a high Mountain, and why such a faire thing should stand in such a vacant place, could not readily thinke with himselfe what he might iudge thereon, for at the lower end of the aforesaid Pillars, lay two cruell Tygers, and two fierce Lions, who as hee supposed kept Passengers that they should not drinke at this Fountaine.

This strange sight made him somewhat abashed, and to stand in feare, that it was some Enchantment practised, to get him into some present danger: because the beastes behaued themselves in such order, as though they might easily be brought order subiectio of the chaine, which was of such bignes, as was requi-  
3

Quisite to holde such furious beastes, yet were they tyed at such shortnesse, that they had very litle scope of walking. Palmerin knew it was needles, to aske leaue to drinke at this Fountaine, of those that had no reaso to make him answer, albeit they were too strong in force, to offer him resistance: wherefore he attempted to try the friendlinesse of Fortune, and to put his life in hazard vpon this aduenture. When aduancing himselfe to taste of the water, vpon one of the Pillars in letters of Gold, was engraued these words: Behold here the Fountaine of the wished water. And going a little farther, he espied an other, which was thus: He that hath the courage to drinke of this Fountaine, shall bring to ende any enterprise that belongeth to the aduancement of Honour and Fame: so that he shall accomplish as much, as may be comprehended in the strength or prowesse of a man. But ouer against it, was written these words: Passe, and drinke not. This made the Prince not a little astonished, in that as the one gaue him encouragement to approach the fountaine, so the other stood in the way to hinder his determination. But yet he concluded to try the aduenture, in that he iudged it was impossible, to make with an occasion of more hautie enterprise.

CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin encouraged at this rare aduenture, entred the fight against the Beasts that kept the Fountaine, and at last (albeit with great danger) he vanquished them all & then approached to drinke of the water. Also when he departed from thence, he arriued at a Castle, whereon he sawe foure Shields placed, and being vrged by the Poesies hee sawe written on them, to try the ende of this vnlooked for accident, hee entred the Combate against foure knights that came forth of the Castle, whereof he slew three, and saued the life of the fourth, to discouer to him the ende of this strange aduenture.

Many



Any were the doubtles the Prince conceiued in his minde, as concerning what might happen by this gorgeous spectacle, because the poesies were placed in such vncertaine manner, that he verilie supposed it was but some trappe or secret fetch, to allure him to venture on his owne destruction.

Wherefore hee determined to depart from thence, and not meddle with the Beasts, because he sawe their faire shew of gentlenesse, was but onely to haue him approach the Fountaine. When he had walked a little way from thence, he began to accuse and blame himself, that either feare should cause him to forget his duty, or any occasion withdrew his mind from such an honourable attempt.

Then returning courageously backe againe, he aduanced himselfe against one of the Tigers at the corner of the Fountaine: who likewise gaue himselfe in such manner against the Prince, catching hold vpon his Shield so forceably, that the handle brake off, and detained it in such wise, that the Prince could not by any meanes get it againe, but charged him with such a sound stroke ouer the legges, that the Tiger could not vse himselfe so well as he would.

To succour the feeble estate of the Tiger, came the other three Beastes, behauing themselves so furiously against the Prince, that he thought this the most doubtfull aduenture, in all his lifetime he had attempted. Hauing wounded one of the Lions verie sore, so that he was constrained to fall to the earth, the Prince stouped downe to recover his shield, which the Tiger had abandoned, but the other Lion approached so nere vnto him, that catching hold vpon his Helmet, he drew him within his reach so violently, that hee was enforced to fall vpon his knees, when the other Tiger crushed him with his pawes so cruelly, that had not his Armour been the stronger, he had tozned the Prince in a hundred peeces.

W 4

When

When he perceiued himselfe attainted with such an extremitie, that his life stood on the very point of danger: with his sword he saluted him so deepe through the heart, that the Tiger sprawled on the earth cleane bereft of life. In brasse, the courage of his noble minde, did animate him with such hardinesse, that (albeit with great paine and trauaile) hee made a dispatch of all their liues, when then he fate him downe to take a little rest, because the Tiger had pressed him to the ground with such extreame violence, that he thought verily all his bones had bene broken. After he had red him for a prettie while, he went to the fountaine, being desirous to quench his thirst, but he perceiued another little Dosey, which was so darkly couched, that he could not gather any meaning of it, wherefore he presently drauke of the water, finding no more pleasantnesse in it, then any other running Riuer or spring. But he iudged both the fountaine and the aduenture, to be placed there by some cunning Enchantresse to disharten the timorous, and glut the eyes of the valiant with a faire and pleasant show.

When he saw no other hazard to be tried in that place, he went on still in the path, that was made from the fountaine, but at last on a suddaine, he espied a very goodly and well fortified Castle, so finely moated round about, with a draw bridge at the entrance, and the Trees shadowing it in such a delicate manner, that his minde was altogether delighted in beholding this rare and seemely castle.

Before the gate there stood foure very faire Jasper pillars, and vpon ech of them was hanged a knightly shield, which Palmerin taking perfect view of, beheld in the first vpon a Silver ground, this Dosey, No man dare conceiue the courage to take me downe. No (quoth Palmerin) by your leave I will be so bold as to trye, for if the taking downe of a shield should feare me, no matter if the aduenture did worthily foyle me, and since your protestations are so hautie, I will enforce you to humble your selfe to me, as well to serue my neede because I want a shield, as also to proue the bragges contained in these words. When Palmerin had fastened the shield to his arme, he espied a knight comming forth of the Castle, with a verie great

great Maiestie, being strongly armed, who seeing the Prince without a Helmet, (the Lyon hauing brused it in such sort, that he could not weare it) proude began to utter these speeches. He that will presume to take downe one of these Shielde, being not armed according to finish such an enterprize, must taste the punishment due to his fault committed, because hee may learne against another time, to arme his head, which standeth in most danger.

With these words, (not staying to heare the answer of Palmerin) he began to charge him with very mightie strokes, and still aimed to hit him on the bare head, but Palmerin preuented his determination so well, that closing fast vpon him, he brought him downe vpon both his knees, & making semblance as though he would haue slaine him, the knight desired mercie, and yeelded himselfe to the Princes courtesie. Palmerin sauing his life, demanded of him if hee had any more to deale withall, to whom hee answered, that the chiefe danger was behind, wherupon the Prince arming his head, with the Helmet of the vanquished knight, went to the second Pillar, whercupon the shield in a Campe of Azure, he read as thus, I am more perilous, and therefore worthie to be feared, for in me consisteth the greatest danger. Trust me (quoth the Prince) it may bee thou saist true, yet shalt thou not supprise my minde with any cowardly feare, and so leauing the first shield, he took downe the second, when presently came forth another knight, who spake to the Prince in this manner.

Trulie sir knight, you haue done vnwisely to hazard your selfe in this place, especially to take downe the shielde, which requireth no rther rancome then your heart blood. Sir (answered Palmerin) if you see that dutie, or knightly behauiour hath failed in me, behold me here ready to deliuer a recompence with my sword, so leauing their words, and setting themselves skoutlie the one against the other, in the ende the Prince reached him such a sure warrant on the Crest, that the sword pierced so deepe into his head, as he fell to the earth, discharged of his life.

Then pausing a little while, at last he went to the third Pillar,

ler, wherein the middest of the Shield vpon a field of Sineple, in Azure Letters was written these words: By mee is to bee gotten the honour of this aduenture. When he had taken it downe, he expected the coming of the third Knight: who very sone after came forth in great haste, and without vsing any words, entred a more dangerous Combate then the other twaine passed: but Palmerin hauing cut off one of his armes, and wounded him very sore in many places on his body, brought him with leng enduring the fight into such weaknesse, that he fell downe, and yeldd by the ghost at his feet.

This good fortune caused the Prince to aduance himselfe to the fourth Pillar: where viewing the Shield, he beheld in Letters of gold this good encouragement: In me remaineth the happy victorie. These words made him desirous to end this fortunate aduenture: when taking downe the shield, came out the fourth Champien with these speeches. I did not think your fondnesse had bene such, that you could not content your selfe with a sufficient conquest: wherefore that your painment may witness your iust desert, prepares your selfe to receiue my hardy blowes. Palmerin not accustomed to make answer, in place where knightly strength ought to shew it selfe, deliuered him his mind in halfe a score strokes well laid on, that (not withstanding he was of more force then the other three) yet he serued him of the selfe same sauce, for ioi whereof, he kneeled downe and hartily gaue thanks to God, that his prouidence had permitted him to enter this haughty exploit. Then demanded he of y knight that had stood by al this while, and sawe his noble behauiour, if there were any other aduenture in the Castle, that he should hazard himselfe against: to which request he made this answer. Credit me, worthy sir, there are as yet things to be finished, which I perswade my selfe may be accomplished by your worthinesse, because I well perceiue, in spite of any thing to the contrary, your valor must and will enter into this place. For in you haue I sawe that, which I neuer thought to find in any, as your present behauiour constraineth me to confesse, that vertue so gouerneth all your actions, as she will see you Conquerour in any attempt you undertake.

## CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin hauing vanquished the three Knights, entred the Castle, where he likewise slewe a Giant that offered him resistance. And how he passed ouer a blacke riuer in great danger, where he met with the Enchantresse Eutropa, Aunt to the Giant Dramusiande, who threw her selfe headlong into the riuer, thinking to haue pulled the prince after her, but she failed of her pretence. Likewise, how the Knight (whose life he saued) reported to him the death of the three Knights of the Emperours Court, when they assayed to enter into the Castle, and deliuered to him Baziliart and Germaine of Orleance, who were kept prisoners there in a Dungeon, and certified him, that the Castle was called, the perillous Isle.



After that Palmerin had vanquished these four knights, and he sawe no more come to offer him resistance, accompanied with this other knight, he entred the Castell. Which being a thing of such admirable beautie, all about the Courts were pillars of Iasper stone, ten cubits in length, whereon many goodly chambers, and faire lodgings were built, the Court paved with Marble, wrought into colours of red and Greene, with euery thing so curious and ingeniously framed about the Castle, that the Prince supposed it the most excellent thing that euer he had scene. When hee had wearied his eyes with beholding this sumptuous Paralell, hee walked thorow a faire Gallery, which brought him into a Hall of singular beautie: at the entrance whereof a mighty giant presented himselfe before the prince, holding in his hand a knagged Staffe of yron, which hee held vp in sight to resist his passage. Palmerin perceiuing his bold intet, would not seeme to dismay himself: but remembryng how fortunately he had begun without,

determined to ende as valiantly within. And so setting him to the Giant, found him play a while, but in the ende he payde him home, so that he made him quiet enough for speaking any more. Having thus worthily conquered his enemy, he walked a while by and downe the Hall, till at last thow a little gate, he entred into a more sumptuous Gallerie, wherein he could finde no way out, but first he must passe ouer abroade place of water, where ouer was layde a little Wood or Planke, of so small breadth and strength, that he supposed it not able to abide the least wayght in the world. Faine he would haue bene on the further side, but this vnhappy place hindered his determination, which moued him to so many grievous conceits, that he began greatly to blame his aduerse fortune. For if the Wood did breake, he should fall into a water so blacke and ougly, that the Riuer Stix whereon Acheron carryeth the damned soules to hell, might not be compared to this fearefull lake. Well, ouer he would though it cost him his life, wherefore disarming himselfe, because the heauinesse of his armor might be the chiefe occasion to breake the planke: with a good courage he beganne to venture vpon it, hauing nothing to defend him withall but his sword, what euer might happen. When he had attained almost the middelt, this olde rotten planke began somewhat to cracke, so that Palmerin then verily supposed, there was no other remedy, but he must fall into the hellish gulfe, wherefore calling his faire Polinarda to memory, he began in this manner to desire her fauour.

Madame, if hitherto I haue aduenture my life, both in Martiall exploits, and dangerous attempts for your sake, craving nothing at your handes but your ayde and fauour, I ought at this instant, by greater reason to wish for the same, seeing that now I try the greatest hazard, onely to aduance your honour. Whose friendship if I may be so happy as to finde, which is the onely meane to encourage me in this distresse, I shall assay such reuolue on your behalfe, as you shall be faithfully serued, and my selfe for euer fully satisfied.

Thus concluding his speeches, to his no little ioy, he had gained the further side, when he perceiued an olde withered Creature,

ture, to come forth at a doore into his presence, her face all wrinkled, her haire ougly blacke, and disappeared all abroad ouer her shoulders, so staying awhile began in this manner.

What estimation shall I make of my selfe? or what shall I iudge all my cunning to a uaine, which can warrant me safetie in no place, but suffers me to be vanquished by one knight so often? Then stretching forth her hand to take hold on Palmerin, verily thinking to plucke him after her, she cast her selfe headlong into that filthy puddle, ending her life as wickedly, as her treacherous and villanous deeds had deserued.

The Prince seeing she had failed of her intent, and overcome with sadnesse at this wretched sight, went through diuers chambers to get downe, where he found many Hayden seruants, of whom he enquired for the knight, whose life he saued in the Combate, and when he had found him, he desired him to shew the name of this Castle, as also what she was that had so desperately drowned her selfe.

Worthy Sir (answered the knight) the proofe of your noble valour is such, that I cannot conceale any thing from you, which may do you pleasure to know, wherefore marke what I shall shew vnto you. This Castle is called by the name of the Perillous Ile; whereof some hold opinion, that the Sage Vrganda was the first founder and Lady, and that in this place she hid her selfe because after her heath this Castle remained Enchanted, so that no person could attaine to inhabite here, in this sort she left this faire Pallace, and the fountaine which you see a little from the Gate. And because you may the easier beleue it, it was no longer agoe then sithence our time, that it was inhabited by any, who could giue assurance of the scituation of this Ile, but only the Dame who is drowned, who was named Eutropa, Aunt to the Giant Dramusiande. For after he was vanquished by the prowess of a famous knight of England, she conceiued such inward sorrow, that she had almost distraught her selfe of her wits, and to reuenge his mishap, she sent with all speede to the Soldan of Babylon, that he should prepare a mightie Army, wherewith he might ruiuate the Citie of Constantinople, and the whole Empire of Greece.

But



But her diuelish desire could not take effect, because the Soldane had enough to doe with his owne subiects, who had raised themselves in a mutany and open rebellion against him, for which cause, shee seeing all her drifts could not accomplish her wish, came vnto this place, accompanied with the three knights that you haue slaine and my selfe, so were we perforced (more by her damnable Art, then any voluntary affection of our selues) into this Isle, where round about the hath so dispersed her enchantments, that she might allure all wandring knights vnder her power, either to slay them presently, or to keepe them in continuall prison. And to satisfie her insatiable and bloody desire, we here haue maintained her safety a long time, being alwayes so fortunate, that many knights we slew, & some we tooke captiue. But it chanced not long since in an evening, that Fortune conducted hither five noble knights, who after we had slaine three of the, the other twaine conquered me, and two of my fellows, but yet at last they were brought in subiection of the fourth knight, and remaine as prisoners here in the Castle. I pray you sir (said Palmerin) shew me the names of the three knights that were slaine, as also the Prison where the other two are, that I may bestow vpon them their former libertie: to which demand he made this answer. The first knight was called Medrusian the Fearefull: the second, Titubal the Blacke: and the third was Foruolant the Strong: whom I am sure sometime you haue scene, in the Emperour Palmerins court at Constantinople. And (quoth Palmerin) I haue scene their great ill wil, & wicked disposition, which was alway bent to molest & trouble him, that wished them most good, and euer honoured them: wherefore the lesse I esteeme their losse, but rather reioyce that the world hath cut off their enuious practises. During the time of this talke, they were come to the place where the two Prisoners lay, who were without any company, by reason of y<sup>e</sup> small abode Eutropa as then had made in that place, wherein she had determined to execute such tyrannous cruelty, y<sup>e</sup> this Castle should be ten times more feared, then that where Dramusian made his abiding. But the Sage Aliart, to whom all her drifts and practises were discovered, willing to stop all the mischiefs that this Enchant-

tresse

tresse did strue to commit, caused Palmerin to enter the Ship, which he had sent for that purpose, only to shew him to disapoint her vile pretence. Downe went the knight with the Prince to the prison, carrying a Torchlighted in his hand, because it was so deepe vnder the ground, as a man might shoote with a Crosse-bow in length, which moued Palmerin to be greatly agast, thinking on the paines the two knights endured, in such an obscure and uncomfortable Prison, which made him to enter into these words. Certainly this Castle can I hardly beleue to be erected by Vrganda, for that as the report goeth of her, she was neuer wont to vse cruelty to any wandring knights. At last they came to a grate, which they opened, & saw whereas the two knights were, attending the coming of some to do them villainy as they supposed, rather then to set them at liberty, which was the least part of their thought, when presently the Prince knew them, the one was Baziliart, the other Germaine of Orleance, who had great yrons vpon their legs, and yron chaines about their middles, which caused him presently to fall into teares, and not able to suffer that they should abide any longer in that heauy case, commanded the knight to take off their chaines and irons. But Baziliart did not like this very well, because he feared they should now be lead to some tormēt: wherefore he began to speake vnto them as thus. Sir knight, you might doe vs more pleasure, to let vs rest in this captivity, then to lead vs now to any place of punishment. Sir Baziliart (said Palmerin) they that imprisoned you in this place, would hardly consent to deliuer you so soone. Then minding to put them out of this feare, he would not hide himselfe any longer, but off his helmet: when Germaine of Orleance catching him in his armes, renewed his acquaintance in this order. I see well, Sir Palmerin, that hereafter I must abandon all foolish feare, because your promise is wholly applied to redeme their captivity, on whom fortune befoth her loving bowles, as Dramusian can amply testifie. After they had saluted one another very courteously, they came presently forth of this noysome prison, and then they were all conducted into a very faire chamber, where after they had refreshed their hungry stomachs, they discoursed with each other, what had hapned in their sundry aduentures.

Chap.

## CHAP. XVIII.

How during the time, that Palmerin remained in this Castle called the Perrillous Isle, accompanied with Baziliart, Germaine of Orleance, and Sarransfort the Knight that keepeth the Castle, Francian and Onistalde (who at their departure from Siluian, tooke vpon them them to trauaile in the Princes search) arrived there at the Castle, with whom Palmerin departed from ahence. And how sayling on the Sea, he attained the Coast of Spaine, where being desirous to see the faire Miragarda, he changed his Armor, and vnder the title of the Dispayring Knight, he traualled toward the Castle of the Giant Almarcl.



**L**ong time these knightes spent in their friendly discourses, till it drew towards night, when the knight of the Castle named Sarransfort, had prouided two faire beds, one for the Prince Palmerin, and another for his two companions, who that night tooke more quietnes, then since their first coming into the Castle. In the morning they concluded to depart from thence, but first they desired, to see all the Chambers and commodities in this goodly Castell, which they found so rare and excellently ordered, that they could not chuse but commend it, as it did highly deserve.

Then walked they from thence to the Fountaine, yielding no lesse laud to the noble Conquest of Palmerin, then the dangerous attempt of such an exploit did worthily merite. Returning vnto the Castle, where, at the earnest request of Sarransfort, they staid for the space of foure dayes, and coming forth

forth in an afternone, to sit in the pleasant shadow vnder the greene Trees, they espied a farre off two knights come hastily ryding, who were presently knowne by their Shields: for they were Francian and Onistalde, endeavouring themselves to seeke the Prince Palmerin. At such time as Siluian had declared vnto them the losse of his Lord, such was their good fortune, that they came to the place where Palmerin entred the shippe, and there they found passengers ready to crosse the seas, so that by intreatie they sealed with them, hauing such sayre winde and tyde, that at length they discovered the Perillous Isle. This place made all the Passengers greatly abashed, because they were both ignorant of the soyle, and knew not the danger they might receiue in that place: yet at the request of the two knights, they were somewhat pacified, & set them on land in the same place, where Palmerin entred first on shore. When they had attained the top of the hye Rockes, they came to the Pillar that had the fearefull sentence vpon it, which vsing very litle regard (because the affection they bare vnto their deare friend, incited them so) they came as I haue told you, both into sight & knowledge of the Prince and the knights: where they were receyued very curteously, and embraced one another, in token of their mutuall and inuiolate friendship.

During the time of their abiding there, they visited the noble aduerture of the Fountaine, and also the dead bodie of Titeball, Medrusian & Foruolant: then came they to the place where Eutropa drowned her selfe, all the way extolling the worthy Worthesse of him, that had the power to atchieue and ende such singular exploitcs. When occasion so fell that they would needs depart, Palmerin left the Castle, in the custody of the gentle knight Sarransfort, intending to make a present of it to the noble Sage Aliart. So friendly departing from thence, they came to the Sea side, where they imbarqued themselves among diuers Passengers: the foure knightes by themselves, and Palmerin alone as was his desire. When they were enired the seas, from the sight of any land, Sage Aliart who conducted the ship of the Prince, made him to sayle a contrary way from the other knights, so that he knewe not where he should land: although

thought he had determined to goe to Constantinople, to see his Lady the faire Polinarda, for whose sake his heart endured diuerse grievous thoughts and passions.

At length, such was his fortune, that he attained the Coast of Spaine, which pleased him very well, because he would try his valour in the presence of the faire Miragarda, to the intent that he might know, if her beauty were comparable to his Mistress Polinarda. When he was come to the chiefe city of Portugal, he heard marvellous commendations of Florendos the Tristfull Knight, who because his father Primaleon had buyed his armour very soze, made himselfe a notable faire new armoz, and hauing done many famous Actes in the Court of Recinde King of Spaine, came home at last to the Castle of the Giant Almarol. Miragarda so soone as he was there arrived, would needs know of his successe before the Castle of the Giant Dramusiande, albeit she had bene admonished thereof before, yet would she neuer accept of that which the Tristfull Knight had done in England, but was of this mind, that whatsoeuer he had done, she made no account of it. But being desirous to see, if his deedes might bee agreeable to the reputation hee had deserved, commanded him to keepe the passage there at her Castle, thinking that so many good knightes would endeavour themselves thither, so that this aduenture should be as much renowned, as was the Castle of Dramusiande.

The Tristfull Knight, loath in any thing to displease the faire Miragarda, caused there a Sheldoe to be made with the Image of her beauty, the report whereof allured so many knightes thither, that in her defence he had conquered more then two hundred, from whom he tooke their shields, and in remembrance of his victory, hanged them vp on either side the faire Portraite of his Lady. Miragarda perceiuing by the Sheldoes, the Portraite of Florendos the Tristfull knight, receiued an vnspokeable contentment, yet making no shew of praise, for this so haughty an enterprize: where to his noble victory we will leaue him, & returne to the prince Palmerin, who is traauailing in Portugal. In al this time, he had made him an excellent faire armour, spotted with colours of scarlet and white: which

which gaue such great delight to them who beheld it, that euery one was desirous to make himselfe the like.

In his Shield on a plaine of Sinople, was curiously figured the Image of Deadly Hope, which was so singular well ordered, for the liuelinesse of her face and lineaments, as also the seeme shadowing of her attire, that euery one iudged it a very naturall proportion: her name was likewise presented vnder her, so that thzough this deuice, he was named of euery one the Despairing Knight. In this manner he ridde toward the Castle of Almarol, very desirous to trie his force, in this aduenture esteemed of so great fame, not fearing the perill, if Fortune should unkindly turne her selfe from him. But perswaded himselfe, that it was vnpossible to attaine the top of Honour, if a man doe not hazard his person in those places, where victorie is worthily presented to the minde that beareth the affection, to leaue perpetuall renowne to his posteritie.

## CHAP. LX.

How Palmerin, vnder the title of the Disparing Knight, came to the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where hee saw the shields of diuers famous Knights and his very friends, were hanged among the number of the vanquished: whereupon he entred the Combat against the Tristfull Knight, whose strength was such, that neither of them could win the victorie. And how Miragarda tooke such anger thereat, that shee commanded the Tristfull Knight, to absent himselfe from thence, and to weare no armour for the space of twelue moneths.



Certaine adventures, which are not to be mentioned, were finished by the Prince Palmerin, in the time hee trauelled towards the Castle of the Giant Almarol: where when hee arrived, hee was greatly abashed, to see it placed on such a high Roke, which was a sore trouble for any to come vnto it. The Desparing Knight being come somewhat nere it, espied two knights were entred the Combat, which being desirous to see, hee set spurs to his Horse, to bee there before they had made an end: but before he could come thither, the Tristfull Knight had vanquished his aduersarie, and placed his shield among the other: by which meanes Palmerin had certaine knowledge of the conquered knight, who was called Carmelant, as the writing vnder his shield made manifest.

Palmerin beholding so manie shields about this Tree, esteemed the valour of the Tristfull Knight of great reputation: at last hee perceiued the shields of Frisoll, Estrellant, and Tenebrant, who were his friends, and of great renowne, whereat he was so amazed, that he knew not what to say.

But when he saw the picture of Miragarda, which represented such beauty, as his senses were ravished, he could proceed no farther till he had vied these speeches. Certainly Madam, I see at this present the thing I neuer thought to doe, and cannot thinke amisse of your knight, who may wel hazard his life for so hure a Goddesse: but yet I desire to approue my selfe against him, bearing this opinion with me, that the beautie of his best fauored and beloved, neither is or may be equalled with her, for whose sake I will adventure the Combat.

The Tristfull Knight hearing these words, could not withhold himselfe, but returned the Prince this answer. If your chastisement and correction sir knight, were giuen according as your proud wordes haue deserued, you should bee repaid with extreme crueltie. Wherefore, fearing least in fauouring you

you, I shall deserue a rash report my selfe: I will try if your valour be such as may maintaine the dishonour you haue ingently offered. Percupon they fetched their carice, and met together with so great a force, that they were both enforced to abandon their horses, and drawing forth their swords, they delivered one another such rigorous blowes, as one would haue iudged, neither of them able to endure.

The Giant Almarol abashed at this noble Combate, called the faire Miragarda to come and see it, hauing spread a faire cloath of Gold along the window, and a very rich Cushion whereon she leant, her Damoselles standing by her to behold this knightly Chivalry. When shee had presented her selfe in the window, the two Champions retired themselves to take a little pause, by which meanes the Tristfull knight gained the commoditie, to contemplate his faire Miragarda with these tearmes. What man is he, albeit his state were oppressed with neuer so much debilitie, that would not assure himselfe to remaine victor, maintaining the quarell of so excellent and rare a Jewell? In like manner, Palmerin complained to his faire Polinarda, but to breake of these cogitations, they began courageously againe, the Tristfull knight beholding his Lady with great griefe, that he could not vanquish this knight, hauing before sayled so many. Very forceable were the assaults they gaue one another, their Armour cut and cruelly mangled, their blood effused on the ground where they fought, their shields broken in an hundredth pieces, so that they were faine to take breath againe, as vnable to endure such penetrable and grievous trauaile.

Palmerin standing leaning vpon his sword, beholding his Armour reduced into such estate, and remembryng the cause of his entrance into the Combate, with a sad conceyt he beganne to say. Madame, either I am not sufficient to doe you seruice, or else you esteeme so little of mine affection, that I am vnworthy to be your seruant. As none but you grant me the honor of this fight, hauing the onely power to maister me: so I desire you to assist me with your friendly fauour, since I haue made hazard of my life, to aduance the fame of your loyaltie, and suffer not

this Knight to remaine the Widow, seeing, in mine eye, his Lady neither may nor will presume aboue you. The Tristfull Knight walked vp and downe, debating with himselfe on the ende of the combat, which he began somewhat to feare, because in all his life time, he had not dealt with a moze hardy and valiant Knight, wherefore lifting vp his eyes to the place where Miragarda stood, he began to discouer his minde as thus.

I had sometime (deere Mistresse) a Sister named Polinarda, whose beantie, both of others and my selfe, was esteemed the most rare and perfect on the earth, but after I had behelde the inequall state of your surpassing beauty, I perceiued my iudgement on her to be very grosse, in so much as she neither may or ought, to paragon her selfe with your heauenly perfection. Wherefore swete Mistresse doe me the honour, that your fauor may support me against mine enemy, and suffer me not that haue bene vanquished by your beantie, to be brought into such subiection to any other.

Then feeling themselves somewhat refreshed, they charged one another againe very valiantly, and continued frustrate of their expectations so long, y they caught one another about the middest, endeououring that way who should gette the maistrie, but they laboured in vaine, for their strengthes were of such equalitie, that one could hardly iudge who had the greater advantage.

Miragarda commended this Combat, for the best that euer she had seene, and desired that the victoery might returne to the Tristfull Knight, but both her wish and expectation was deceived, for the night approaching so fast vpon them, they had not the commoditie to trie for the conquest.

Then came forth the Giant Almarol, and by his intreatie they parted themselves, because in dede they could hardly see one another, so Palmerin returned about halfe a mile from that place, where he remained till his woundes were healed, determining when he had gained a little moze strength, to come againe to the Castle, where he would so knightly behaue himselfe, that he would beare the Shielde of Miragarda from thence, as the honour of his prize to Constantinople.

Almarol

Almarol conducted the Tristfull Knight into his Chamber, which was there in the field, where he alwaies vsed to lodge: but Miragarda being greatly offended, that he had not the power to vanquish the Prince (standing vpon the triall betwene her beauty, and the Lady of the valiant Palmerin) sent a messenger to Florendos with these tidings. That he should straightway absent himselfe from that place, and not to weare any Armour for the space of twelue monethes, because he had not bene so fortunate, to vanquish his enemy in so iust a cause. This greeting was so displeasent to the Tristfull Knight, that he became resolute, to make his life in sorrow, agreeable to his peniue name, verily supposing, that Fortune had determined his vtter detriment.

## CHAP. LXI.

How the Tristfull Knight, at the commandement of his Ladie Miragarda, departed from the Castle of Almarol, accompanied with his Esquire Armello, who brought backe his Masters Sheeld and Armor, and left it at the Tree among the other conquered Knights. And how Florendos met a Shepheard in his trauell, with whom he ioyned in such amitie, that they vowed neuer to leaue one another. And how the Prince Palmerin returning to ende the Combat, was certified by Armello, in the cause of his masters departure, wherefore he likewise presently departed from thence.



When the Tristfull Knight had receiued this sharpe Message of Miragarda, being loth in any thing to disobay her minde, hee called his Esquire Armello, to whom he bare great loue and affection, and going into a little thicket of Trees, the brinish teares trilling downe his cheekes, he began to his Esquire this heauie discourse. Armello my friend, lo here the guerdon that frowning Fortune, in recompence of my trauailes hath ordained for me: which how patiently I suffer, both God, thy selfe, and these solitary woods remaine my witnesse, that I am neither moued at this mishap, nor stoyme against her great discourtesie: but say with the Philosopher, Patience is the most noble conquest. Yet had I alway this opinion with me, that my trusty trauaile deserved a better reward, and that but onely respecting my faith, I did worthily merit some moitie of friendship. And what of that: thy ioy, thy mirth, thy happinesse, and all thy comfort in the world, is changed to the hard lot of all misfortune, onely be thou patient & preuaile, vsing this for thy continual Epithite: *Quid non facit Amor?* Yet haue I one hope, which will be my chiefe remedie in this extreame affliction: that Death will speedily finish my heauie complaints, and cut off the miseries wherewith I am so cruelly assaulted.

Wherefore my good friend Armello, as thou wilt manifest thy wanted curtesie, and pleasure me now in mine extreame neede, take here my Horse and Armoz, and depart to Constantinople, and there giue sooth for a certaine truth, that Death hath claimed his due at my hands, and that I haue ended my life in this vnfortunate aduenture: wherein I know thou shalt not do amisse, because my griefe doth assure me, I shall end, and that right soone. Onely let me request at thine hands, that thou conceale my late mishap to thy selfe, and let neither friend nor foe vnderstand it, but say to euery one, thou art a witness of my death.

Armello

Armello hearing the words of his Master, which strooke into his heart a grieuous and extreame passion, with the teares in his eyes, he began in this manner. Trust me my Lord, I know no place that can content me more, or be any thing like to my desire, then in your oppression to beare you companie: whom if I should forsake, God knowes the danger might happen to you, as also the sorrow I should conceiue of my selfe. Neither doe I thinke it expedient to blaze abroad your death, because a number of mishappes might arise thereby, which entering severely the minds of your friends, will much more seeme displeasing to your Parents and alliance. Wherefore, a while beare with the furie of Miragarda, and thinke not but her own rash dealing, will ere long moue her unto repentance: by that time shee hath considered your faithfull seruice, how her aspyring minde hath bene honourably maintained by you, shee will recall her vngentle wordes, and recompence you with that you haue deserved worthily: therefore expect a while good Sir, and all will frame well enough I warrant you.

I know (answered Florendos) the perfection of thy trustie zeale is so carefully bent for my welfare, that in the despaire I am at this present, I haue small occasion to thinke on it. For I know my fault is such as I shall not be fauoured, and her ingratitude so severely bent against me, as were all the torments in the world adioined, they might not deserue comparison with her great displeasure. Yet what is that knight in all the world, that would haue been vanquished, seeing he defended the onely Phoenix of beautie: or where is he that would not haue made hazard of his last extremitie, being encouraged to the Combat by such an excellent meane? And can such crueltie dwell in such a porelesse person, or such an angry minde harbour vnder so faire a face? Well, *For fur & hoc olim meminisse iurabit.* But tel me, how can I esteeme of my selfe, hauing been conquerour ouer so many, and could not bring in obedience this one knight? Certainly I perswade my selfe, that on him I haue vsed lesse prowesse, then in any aduenture wherein thou hast seen mee. Wherefore, I haue good occasion to take it heauily, & to lament the



the honour I haue lost, being exiled from her gracious presence. Therefore good Armello, receiue here my Horse and Armour, and suffer me to walke alone in heauinesse, that am the cause of mine owne hurt.

After he had ended these speeches, he forsooke Armello, and wandring along by a River side, till at last he sate him downe under a Tree, desirous to receiue a little rest, but the verations of his minde would hardly suffer him. When hee awaked, hee perceiued a great heard of sheepe feeding in the Pasture ground by him: and vnder a tree nere by, hee saw a Shepheard playing on an Instrument, whereto hee recorded so many sweet ditties, that Florendos tooke great pleasure to sit and heare him, perswading himselfe, that the Shepheard was not of such base condition as he seemed, because his deuises was so excellent well ordered, both in the commendation of Loue, as also the great iniuries he had receiued thereby. The Tristfull Knight well noting his complaints, and that Fortune had conducted him to the place, where he might enioy a partner to lue in heauinesse, he came and vied such friendly meanes, that in short time they grew into good liking of each of other, Florendos being very glad, that hee had met such a friend to the solitarie life. After that the Shepheard had vttered the secrets of his mind, and the Tristfull Knight had beloyaled the sum of his griefe, they bowed such amitie to remaine betwens each other, that no misfortune should haue power to sunder their friendship.

Armello hauing stood musing a good while, that his Master was gone out of sight, and determined to trauell without any company he came backe againe to the castle of Almarol, where at the foote of the Tree, directly vnder the Shield of the faire Miragarda he placed his Masters Shield and Armour among the vanquished knights. And there in the presence of Miragarda, hee vttered so many rusfull and grievous complaints, that they would haue moued any gentle heart to compassion: but shee being entered into such great disdain, esteemed them not worthe of any account, but triumphed in the paines of the Tristfull Knight, whom at this time wee will leaue in the Shepheards company.

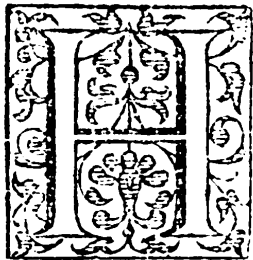
Now

Now the prince Palmerin hauing his wounds wel cured, and prouided him of a new Armour, because his other was cruelly defaced, returned to the castle of the Giant Almarol, intending not to depart from thence, befoze he had conquered the Tristfull Knight. When he was arrived at the Castle, he heard the lamentations that Armello vsed, whereby he vnderstood, that the Tristfull Knight was the renowned Prince Florendos, which moued him to great displeasure, because he had entred the Combate against him. And then he supposed, that the hatred of Miragarda, might worke an occasion of some greater mischance, in that the losse of so valliant a Prince as Florendos was, might cause the great griefe of the Emperour Palmerin, as also the Lords and Ladies of his royall Court. These thoughts vrged the Prince to so great vniquietnes, that he could not determine whether he might abide there in that place, or pursue after the Prince Florendos, to cause him abandon that Tristfull kinde of life, and be a remedie to any misfortune that might annoy him, by meanes of the princeesse Miragarda, whom he supposed to be the sayrest Lady that euer he had sene. Thus musing vpon a thousand matters, as also the beauty of Miragarda, to compare with the heauenly helo of his Lady & Mistresse, at last, remembering the effect of his duty, hee set spurs to his Horse, and galloped from thence, not respecting which way he went, but desirous to attaine the Citie of Constantinople.

## CHAP. LXII.

How the Giant Dramusiande, accompanied with Siluian, arrived at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where being amorous of the Picture of the Miragarda, hee entred the Combate with Almarol, and foyled him. And how Miragarda gaue into his custodie her Portrait, as also the keeping of the passage, against the Knightes that came thither.

How



Ere we must remember the Giant Dramusiande, who after he had trauailed many strange Countries, accompanied with Siluan, to finde againe the Prince Palmerin) arriued at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, within a while after the Prince was departed from thence. When he had beheld the Castle hee desired so long to see,

and could perceiue neither any body nere or about it, he came to the Tree which he saw was laden with the Shields of the vanquished Knights, whose names being subscribed vnderneath euerie one made him to haue knowledge of diuers that had bene there soyled.

At last, at the foote of the Tree, he espyed the armour & shield of the Tristfull knight, which made him greatly to muse: that the Armour of the Conquerour should deserue no better estimation, then to be placed there among the number of the vanquished. Nere to the Armour he beheld Armello, who hauing endured his teares and pittifull complaints a long time, at length chanced to fall fast asleepe, but Dramusiande desirous to heare some tidings, vsed such meanes, that he awaked him. But when he vnderstood of the aduentures of the Foxtresse, as also the departure of the Tristfull knight, he began greatly to rebuke himselfe, in that his fortune failed to encounter with so good a Knight, whose Shield he would haue placed as highest on the Tree, but that Armello desired him to the contrary.

Dramusiande taking good viewe on the picture of Miragarda, was brought on a suddaine into such an alteration, that his stout and haughty stomacke could not any way resist, the cutting rates that overcharged his mind, yea he was brought into such a great quandary, that he could not hold his Lance, but trembling as a leafe stirred with the wind, euē so he stood (as it were) cleane bereft of his senses, whereupon he began to vtter these speeches.

Madame, beholding in this Portrait, the beauty wherewith Nature

Nature hath plentifully adozned you, I with and desire to keep this Passage, that I might by my faithfull seruice, make you renowned thoro in the whole world. For since your countenance hath the courage, to conquere this heart of mine, which as yet was neuer done by any, I desire that vnder your noble conquest, I may endue my strength to exalt your Princely beauty, which who so dare presume to speake against, shall receiue the punishment due to so great an offence.

While he continued in this amorous thought, the Giant Almarol came brauely forth of my Castell, whom Miragarda had sent, being offended to see the Giant Dramusiande, wherefore aduancing himselfe in his presence, Almarol deliuered him this greeting. Sir Knight, I thinke it might be more for your auaille, to set your shield in the rancke of the vanquished, then thus to busie your selfe in beholding this Portrait, which thing I would rather perswade you to by gentlenesse, then to shew you the constraint that may happen by my force, to which words Dramusiande replied thus.

If I were perswaded, that the Mistresse of this picture, would be pleased with so small a matter, I had rather accomplish the desire, then to doe any thing that might returns the contrarie, for then my trauaile should belittle, my losse lesse, and my heart at libertie, where now it remaineth captiue. And because I would gladly recure it againe, I intend to enter the Combats with thee, to the intent thou maist report, thy words could not foile mee, nor yet thy workes had the puissance to daunt mee. Almarol, who naturally was accustomed to cruelty, and not of such courtesie as was the gentle Dramusiande, receiued these speeches in very angrie manner, and being both ready provided, encountred with their speares valiantlie together. Being both throtone beside their Horses, they charged one another very fiercely with their Swords, and Miragarda standing in her window to behold this exploite, gaue great commendation to the behauiour of Dramusiande, in whom she feared would overcome the Giant Almarol. When they had soe hurt and well wearied themselves, they retired a while to take a little pause, when Dramusiande beholding the faire Miragarda was

was suddenly stroken into such a maze, that the remembrance of the Combat was cleane out of his minde. Almarol seeing into what estate he was brought, only with beholding the face of Miragarda, awaked him out of his study with such a sure stroke on the Crest, that the sword cleft it, and wounded him very sore upon the head. Which Dramusiande taking in very ill part, returned to Almarol with so great fury, that he enforced him to start this way and that way, as glad to auoide the blowes wherewith he was charged. At last Almarol fell to the earth, when Dramusiande setting his foote vpon him, vnclasp'd his Helmet, because he would haue smitten off his head, but Miragarda presently sent downe one of her Damosels, named Lardemia, who staied Dramusiande with these words.

Most noble knight, the Princesse Miragarda by me doth send intreaty, that you would satisfie your selfe with the hono<sup>r</sup> of your victorie, and not to deprive the Giant of life, whose losse might be more grieffe to her, then all your indeuours can any way recompence. Madamie (answered Dramusiande) I not onely grant him life, at the request of such a gracious Princesse, but bow my selfe to keepe her famous Shield, if so bee she can except of my loyall seruice, and if Fortune conduct any knight hether, that can conquere me, I desire her (setting all pittie aside) that she will suffer me to enioy the death, so shall both my trauailes and troubles, possesse a long wished ende. Lardemia hauing lead Almarol into the Castle, out at the window returneth him this answer. Sir knight, my Lady and Mistresse sendeth you a thousand thanks, and in recompence of your courtesie, committeth the safegard of her shield into your hands, wishing good Fortune may alway gouerne your enterprise.

Dramusiande at these words was greatly contented, because he desired aboue all things to pleasure the faire Miragarda, whose beauty had deprived him of his wonted libertie, forcing him in loue to grow somewhat amorous. For which cause he remained there, keeping this faire Portraite, accomplishing such haughty deedes of Chivalrie, as was altogether supposed incredible: but the honour which he got, had no long time of tarrance, for that

that fortune hauing a while fauoured him, at last in her anger she forsooke him: euen as she is accustomed to falsifie her promise to those whom she perceiueth haue any entrance into prosperitie.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Dramusiande, keeping the shield and passage of the Giant Almarol, entred the Iust with the Prince Gracian and Don Rosuel, of whom he had the victory, and ended their strife with friendly acquaintance.



In the next morning, Dramusiande to accomplish his promise to the faire Miragarda, came forth and sat downe at the Tree, where the Portraite and the knightly Shields were placed, vsing such grievous complaints, that Siluian maruelled to see so mighty a man brought into such subiection by the force of loue. The faithfull and trusty

Esquire Armello, keeping them company, and frequenting still his grievous moanes, thought none worthy to keepe such a precious treasure, as was the shield of the faire Miragarda, but onely his Lord and Maister, who did best of all deserue it: wherfore being not able to conceale the passions his heart conceiued, began in this manner to the Giant Dramusiande. I knowe well sir knight, that Fortune hath greatly fauoured you, in that my master is absent, and you keepe the Jewell of his toy: but burst hee the we him selfe in this place, which he is constrained to forsake by the command of Miragarda, you should well perceiue, that her faire Portrait is to be kept by none but he: whereto Dramusiande replied thus.

My friend, the faith and affection thou bearest to thy Maister, someth to me worthy of great commendation. And as his words remaine a true confirmation and witnesse of your wordes, yet you must not vse any euill suspect to him, who is altogether unknowne of you, and would also enter combate with your Maister, were he present in this place. And if it were any chauce to be vanquished by him, I would content my selfe to be placed among these other conquered, whose assurance haue bene as likely as mine, and peradventure it might be more to my profit, if I left my Shield vnder her obersance, whose will I onely seeke to satisfie, by ending my life in such a haucie enterprise. Again, it might so fortune, if it were your chauce to see me combat with your Maister, you would conceiue another opinion then as yet you doe, and iudge me either better or worse, then I perceiue at this present you make your account. Wherefore I perswade my selfe, that I am as well worthy and able to keepe and defend this shield of the faire Miragarda, as the knight your Maister, who is unknown to me, albeit I confesse, not so worthy of her, as he that hath so dearly deserued her, not onely (I am sure) by this notable conquests, but also by proofes of this knightly courtesie. For if I should that way equal my selfe with him, It might well be thought no trueth remained in me. And if you shall stay here a certaine space, I doubt not but you shall see as haucie attempts ended, as at any time haue bene by your Maister finished.

While he continued these speeches, hee espied a farre off two knights, come riding along the Riuer side: one of them had his Armour coloured blacke and white, with diuers borders of Gold finely wrought vpon it, bearing in his Shield for his deuice, a murdered body in a campe of Sinople: the other had his Armour of a greene colour, very thicke beset with Lyons of Gold, & in his shield two Lions rampant. These twaine were no sooner arrived at the Castle, but Dramusiande incontinently knew them: for the one was Don Rosuel, and the other was the Prince Gracian, who sometime had bene his Prisoners, and whose amitie hee alwayes made great account of. But albeit their friendship was very acceptable to him, yet the promise

mise he had made Miragarda, commanded him to the contrary, considering also that loue had gotten the maisterie of him, and directing his minde in this enterprise, made him neither to spare friend nor foe, but vsed all alike that trauailed thither. When mounting on his steed, he came forth befoze them, when they perceiuing he prouided himselfe to the Iuste, were very well pleased, because they desired to approue their strength, in the behalfe of the faire Miragarda. But casting their eyes on her beautifull Picture, which they beheld in the middell of the Shieldes that Florendos had conquered, they were surprised with such a suddaine amazement, that they had quite forgotten for what cause they came thither: which Dramusiande seeing, addrested himselfe to them, with this manner of salutation.

Sir knights, the Portraite of this Lady is not here placed, to be contemplated with so great ease, but hee that desireth to enioy such a Jewell, must first combat against me, who denyeth him that priuiledge, till I am vanquished, and if that Fortune in this respect doe fauour him, yet shall he feele a double torment by remaining victor.

Trust me (answered the Prince Gracian) if a mans life may attaine the honour of such a singular personage, behold him who hath the courage to aduenture first. So concluding his speeches, he met Dramusiande valiantly with the breake of the Speare, which was with such force, that hee was throwne to the earth with so strong a violence, that for a great while he was voyde of any feeling. This moued Don Rosuel to such displeasure, that to reuenge his friend, hee picked forth against Dramusiande, who being ready prouided with another Speare, sent him to beate the Prince Gracian company.

This rude encounter made them both maruaile, and supposed that their enemy was the renowned Palmerin of England, whereof being desirous to be resolved, Gracian as the hardiest of them both, with his sword drawne in his hand, entred into these tearmes. Sir knight, although fortune hath bene your friend to soyle vs in the Iuste, yet I pray you to discende on soote, to the ende we may finish the Combat with the sword, because I would trie your valour to the vttermost, if I may depart

depart from hence with the benefite of my life. Dramusiande, who was euer accustomed to great bounty and gentleness, seeing the desire of the Prince Gracian, on whom he had gotten the honour of the victory, would not in that respect satisfie his mind, but made him answer in this maner. Sir Gracian, I do not make so small estimation of your life, that I would be the man sh<sup>d</sup> bring you into such danger, beseeching you not to take in all part, that which I have already so boldly ventured, being my selfe bound by duty, to doe any thing I may for your honourable welfare.

Gracian hearing himselfe named by the Knight, of whom he had no knowledge, was greatly abashed, and replied thus.

Most my sir, since my fortune hath bene so good, as to obtaine the friendship of so hardy a Knight, I esteeme my selfe the happiest vnder the Sun, desiring to haue knowledge of you, if you shall finde it expedient. At these wordes, Dramusiande toke off his Helmet, when presently they both ranne and embraced him: conceiuing such an unspeakable ioy for his company, that their mischance was now put cleane out of memorie, because they iudged it no shame, to be foyled at the handes of Dramusiande: of whom they requested, for what cause he remained in that place. To satisfie their desires, he recited the whole occasion of his iourney, and how he made promise to Miragarda (after he had conquered the Giant Almarol) to keepe the Shield in that place, untill some Knight by his prowesse could bring him vnder his obediante. Certainly (said Don Rosuel) then I perceiue you intend to keepe it all your life time, because I knowe nothing but death can overcome you. Trust me (quoth the prince Gracian) I haue in times past, both extolled & verily believed, that my faire Claricia might be equal with any for her beautie, but hauing now beheld this admirable Miragarda, I exempt from minde all other, desiring to accomplish the meane that I might doe her seruice. And credite me (said Don Rosuel) I haue so forgotten the loue I bare to my Lady, that if I depart not the sooner from hence, I shall fall into contempt, both of her, and all other Ladies, giuing the enely laud to this peerlesse Miragarda. When mounting on Horsebacke, he ridde away so fast as possible

possible he could: in like maner the Prince Gracian passed presently after him, neither of them vsing any friendly departing to the Giant Dramusiande, who could not refrain from laughter, to think on the weake stomacks of these two Princes.

CHAP. LXIII.

How Palmerin of England traauailing toward Constantinople, laid him downe to sleepe hard by a faire Castle, from whence came foure Ladies, who carried him into the Castle. And how one of the Ladies bearing him louing affection, but he disdainig her great good will, vrged her to keepe him there as her prisoner.



Palmerin of England, after he had left the Castle of the Giant Almarol, happened on the frontiers of Nauarre, in the Dominion of France, which he perceiued altogether to be inhabited and gouerned by mighty Giants, whose vnciuility of life, wrought many cruel spoiles and villanous deeds in these parts: among whom Palmerin behaued himselfe so worthily, that the effect of his deeds returned his due commendation. Continuing his trauaile along the Coast, at last in a faire green valley he espied a goodly and well fortified Castle, and nere vnto it, was a faire large Doole, well stored with choise of fish, where the Prince alighted from his Horse, to let him feede a while in the pasture. In the meane tunc, he looking all about and could see no body, that on a suddaine might come to endanger him, sat downe by the water side, the beholding wherof, drove many solemne fancies out of his remembrance.

As he was about to take a little nap, his Distres Polinarda approached his thoughtes, as also the remembrance of his manie

manifest courtesies, which he receiued while he remained at Constantinople: so that some of these motions prouoked him to good opinion of toy, but other some to a number of heauie lamentations, as especially the sharp command of his mistres: which being loath to breake, made him to absent himselfe from Constantinople, longer then otherwise hee would gladly haue done.

In these thoughts hee fell into a sound sleepe, when foure Damosels came walking forth of the Castell, who beholding the Prince his cheekes all dewed with teares, and his eye lids very redde with ouermuch weeping, were all constrained to great compassion. Then one of the Damosels, being of rare and excellent beautie, called for certaine of her seruants, who with their helpe, caried the Prince into a faire Chamber in the castel, causing his armes to be fastened together with a chaine, to the ende he might vse no resistance against them. When he awaked, and found himselfe in this great alteration, he was so overcome with griefe, that he knew not what to say: but the Ladie bearing great affection to him, (at euery instant changed colour, which witnessed the ardent loue shee had conceived in her minde) at last made manifest the sum of her desire, wherefo Palmerin by no meanes would giue consent. For, being desirous to shunne any occasion, whereby he might bee thought disloyal to his Lady, determined to depart from thence without Horse or Armour, onely to auoide her importunate sute.

This moued the Lady to such extreame griefe, that shee violated the bondes of Reason, whose limits duty had alwaies warned her to keepe within: and seeing that neither tears nor intreaties might mollifie the heart, shee commanded him to be brought into her Chamber, where irons were made fast about his legs, and great speeches giuen forth to terrifie him, because he would vie no pittie to her outrageous passions. Palmerin not esteeming either her selfe or her words, bare greater affection to clogging irons, then to all the amorous speeches the Lady could vse: who at last turned hee hot loue into extreame hatred, so that absenting her selfe out of his companie, caused him to be

vse

used in very rigorous manner. But her crueltie had no long time of lasting, for her wonted affectio caused her to repent her hasty fury, and in her mind she thought to discharge the Prince, seeking all meanes possible to banish him out of her memorie, for which cause she inclosed her selfe in her Chamber, labouring both by examples and present proofe, to ertinguish the furious flames of her continuall Passions. But when she saw nothing would serue, but her griefe was driuen to an impossible cure, she concluded to keepe the Prince in Prison so long, that at length shee would glut her selfe with his remembrance. Or else, at last the Prince would be so wearie, that he not able any longer to endure the cruell practises she used, would repent him of his so long deniall, and so bee enforced to accomplish her amorous desire. But Palmerin hauing already made faithful vowe of his loue, by no torment or cruelty would be perswaded to violate his promise, to the no small griefe of the Lady, who frequented himselfe still with her wonted sute, as also for his obstinacy encreased her seuerall deuises of cruelty.

## CHAP. LXV.

How Don Florian remaining in the Court of England, made such entreatie on the behalfe of Orianda, and her sisters, the Daughters of the Marquesse Beltamor, remaining in the Castle of the Giant Calturnien: that they were restored into Kings fauour, and married to three noble Gentlemen of his Court. And Don Florian departing out of England, arriued at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where he entred the Combate with Dramufiande, where ending their strife with great friendship, he departed accompanied with Siluian, desirous to finde his brother, the noble Palmerin of England.





On Florian of the Forrest, of whome no mention hath bene made, since the Prince Palmerin departed out of England, stayed a certaine time in the Court of the King his Uncle, to intreate fauour for Orianda and her Sisters, the Daughters of the Marquesse Belmont. For rememb'ring the great seruice they had done to him, at such time as the giant Calturnien had wounded him so sore: willing to discharge the promise he made them at his departure, which might manifest his honour, and redeme them from that misery wherein they remained, approached the presence of the King in this manner. I haue alwayes heard my Soueraigne Lord and Uncle, that laudable deedesought to be recompenced with the like, and that ingratitude and unkinde dealing, should euer be banished from the heartes of Princes, wherefore, fearing least my selfe should be found faulty in such a hainous crime. I shall desire your gracious furtherance in a cause, as shall present my duty, and your owne honour.

It is so my good Lord, that at such time as I imbarqued my selfe from Greece, the tempest ouer-reacht me with such a violent meane, that our Ship attained the Coast of Ireland, where I would needes goe on land, albeit both the Passer, and all in the Ship perswaded me to the contrary. Being then on land, such was my Fortune that I met with the Giant Calturnien, whose strength, although it was redoubted indeede, yet good hap gaue me the honour of his death.

In this bloody fight, I receiued so many grieuous and dangerous woundes, that I could no way haue escaped the death my selfe, had not three Ladies, Daughters to the Marquesse Belmont, (whome this cruell Giant kept there perforce) vsed such honourable and goodly prouision, that to their no small labour and trauaile, I recouered a sound and perfect estate. Assuring you my Lord, that I not onely make high estimation of

of their friendly courtesie: but also confesse my selfe indebted to them for euer, to spend my heart blood in their gracions seruice.

Wherefore rememb'ring their infortune, that for their Fathers offence they are disherited, I promised to vse such intercession to your Grace, as they should be restored to their lost patrimonies. In the meane time they liue in hope, and I expect your wanted noble forgiveness on their behalfe.

The King perceiuing the desire of Florian, with the great friendship he had receiued by these Ladies, returned him presently this answer. Indeepe I confesse, the Marquesse their Father, both intended and accomplished a treasonable enterprise against me and my state: yet would I not that his daughters being ignorant and innocent of their Fathers crime, shall suffer punishment for his offence. And since he hath sustained Law according to desert, and his whole possessions are fallen into our hands, we returne them to the vse and profite of the Damosels, in recompence of the friendly fauour you haue receiued at their hands. And for their moze honour, I will that the eldest of them be married to Don Rosiran my Cousin, and your great friend Argolant, shall not refuse to marry the second: as for the third, we restore her to the Marquise of her father, and will ioyne her in marriage with Belmont, Brother to the forenamed Don Rosiran.

Don Florian kissing his highnesse hand, in token of the unspeakable pleasure he receiued at the Kings wordes, by the meanes of Don Edward his noble Father, sent a post withal speede to bring the Ladies to the Court, as wel to see the Kings will accomplished in effect, as to make proofe of his good will bare to the Ladies.

When these Ladies were come, end euery thing in due and decent order finished, Don Florian tooke leaue of the King his Uncle, and also Don Edward, & the Princess Florida, because he would try the aduentures at the Castle of Miragarda, whose beautie was so renowned thorow the whole world.

With great griefe they suffered him to depart, so that when in trauaile, he had passed the Court of the King Redinde, hee

arrived at the Castell of Almarol, when Dramusiande had even then vanquished three knights, whereof one was the valiant Pompides, which made Florian somewhat abashed, because he was ignorant that it was the gentle Dramusiande. Wherefore, being desirous to hazard himselfe in the Combate, he prepared his Speare to encounter with him, which Dramusiande seeing (not knowing him to be Florian of the Desert, the son of his deare and loving friend Don Edward, against whom he would not have entered the fight in any case) to satisfie the will of his Lady Miragarda, he met so strongly with him, that they were both dismounted to the earth. Up againe they rose, and fell to it very violently with their Swords, in so much as Dramusiande would not best of his bargain, nor Florian bragge of the choise he had made, for that the Combate was so dangerous betwene them, as it was not to be iudged who was likeliest of victorie.

Miragarda leaning in her window, extolled marvellously the haughty valure of them both, so that excepting the Combate of the Tristfull Knight with Palmerin, she gave the onely commendation to this singular fight, which continued with such outrage betwene them, that they were constrained to retire, to take a little breathing. Dramusiande feeling the prowess of his aduersary, supposed him to be Florian of the Desert, and therefore concluded many times to discover himselfe, without bringing their Combat to any end. But fearing least it should be reported, that he gave over for want of courage to maintain his quarrell, changed his opinion, in that hee was so desirous, to finish the intent of the faire Miragarda, to whom secretly he began in this manner. My deere Mistresse, I know that the merite of my traavailes, shall bee to burie their commendation in the piete of oblivion, by you that little regard them, yet is it great and insupportable griefe, to him that is so unkindly requited. Nevertheless, so great a conquest have you gained of me, and my whole endeavours lincked to fulfil your good liking, that I can no waies contrary what you have ordained, but remaine more affectioned to doe you honour, then all my actions can merite your favour. Regard then the knight against whom I

may

maintaine your cause, and the forces of his deliverer attempts, will witnesse in what neede I stand of your friendly furtherance, which I beseech you not to denie him at this presente, who in faith and loyaltie, is more yours then his owne, lest my enemy winning the victorie, cast in my teeth, that he hath brought me under in beholding your beautie.

Don Florian desirous to finish his enterprize, came and charged Dramusiande the second time, so that Almarol debating with Miragarda, and Lardemia, esteemed marvellously the valour of the Giant, in keeping the Shield, as also the knight that offered him resistance. Siluian standing in doubt that Dramusiande would be slaine, which would be great griefe to his Lord and master, came to the Esquire of Don Florian, whom hee presently knew, which made him very ioyfull, believing now verily, that he should save the lives of them both: wherefore he came to Florian with these wordes. I desire you Sir, to passe no further in this doubtfull fight, for he whom you labour against, is Dramusiande your trustie and loyall friend. Siluian had no sooner spoken these wordes, but that they presentlie threw downe their Swords, embracing one another with such gentle salutations, as though they had been the greatest friends in the world. Florian was greatly amazed, to see Siluian there without his master, wherefore hee demanded of him how all things had hapned: but when he understood the losse of his brother, hee remained in griefe beyond all perswasion, so that he determined to goe straight to Constantinople, and if he failed of him there he would seek all the world over, but he would find him againe.

So taking leave of Dramusiande, accompanied with Siluian, he departed from thence, not desiring to see the faire Miragarda, least he should be brought into like opinion, as was the gentle Giant Dramusiande. Not farre from thence, hee met with Pompides, lamenting very heavily that hee had been so vanquished: then presenting himselfe to beare the Prince company, they embraced very courteously, and so ridde on lovingly and friendlie together, desirous to meete with some

one

one to cure their wounds, that they might make the more expedition, in seeking after the renowned Prince Palmerin of England.

CHAP. LXVI.

How Don Florian and Pompides, being cured of the wounds they had receiued, in maintaining the Combat against Dramusiande, arriued at the Castle of the Princesse Arnalte, who was the Lady that kept the Prince Palmerin prisoner. And how in discoursing with her, about the faire Miragarda, they at last got Palmerin with them, and so departed from thence.

**T**he Giant Dramusiande being very sore wounded, was carried into the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where as great care was bled to him as might be possible: but so dangerous were his hurts, that of a good while after he was not able to endure the trauaile of armoz. In which time, Miragarda would not suffer Almarol to enter the sight any more, because she had seene him thrice times vanquished: so that many knights coming thither to try the aduenture, were faine to stay while Dramusiande was recovered, or else to returne and lose their laboz.

Don Florian and Pompides journeying still together, happened into the house of an ancient knight, whose skill was very great in the science of Chirurgery, where they passed away the time, in discoursing the haughty aduentures enterprised, at the Castle of Almarol, on the behalf of the rare and excellent Princesse Miragarda, to whom Pompides attributed high commendations,

dations, though he were maruailously offended at his infortunate soyle.

When they had well recovered their strengths againe, yielding great thanks vnto their gentle Host, they departed from thence, intending to iourney toward Constantinople, thinking there to find the noble and courageous knights, who had worthily proued themselves, as the onely and perfect flower of all Chivalry. Whereupon they took shipping at the next Haven, and fortune saouring their honourable intent, in few dayes brought them before the Castle, wherein the noble Palmerin of England remained prisoner. Staying to rest themselves a while, they beheld a Damosell mounted on a white Palfrey, accompanied with two Esquires, to come south of the Castle, to whom the knights presently took their way, and with a friendly grating, requested to whom that goodly Castle belonged, if their demand might be no hindrance to her hasty affaires: whereto the Damosell made this answer.

Albeit Gentlemen, the busines wherein I must presently imploy my selfe, are matters of waight and great importance, yet the gentle denaunds both of your speech and outward behaviour, hath commanded me to stay til I haue satisfied your desire. This Castle was first founded, at the comandement of the noble & courageous Prince Bazelic, sometime the king of Nauerre: he being now deceased, the Princesse Arnalte his faire Daughter, is come to inhabite this ancient and famous Mansion. For she being unwilling to gouerne her people, by reason she is but young of yeeres, as also unmarried, committed the guiding of so waighty a charge, to such honourable persons in her Court, as she knew both vertuous, wise and discrete, to vse Justice to the vanquishing enemy, and equitie to her louing subjects in generall. During the time she hath remained here, report hath blazed abroad the aduentures finished at the castle of the Giant Almarol, in the maintenance of the beauty of faire Miragarda, whose lately magnificence being so highly commended, is the cause as she supposeth, that there is not beloued of a knight, who remaineth in the Castle, and to whom she beareth great loue and affection.

In this belife, she hath comanded me to goe see the Princesse Miragarda, whereby she may be certified, if her beauty that is so highly extolled, may surmount that wherewith nature hath so plentifully adorned her selfe. Which if it so fall out, that the Princesse Miragarda carry the credit from her, then is she minded to deliuer the Knight, and he shall remaine no longer her prisoner: but if my Lady prove superiour to the canonized spectacle, then know I she will put the knight to death, considering the injury he hath offered her, who hath so much abased her selfe, as to beare an ungratefull person such affection, of whom she can gather no knowledge or acquaintance. Don Florian well pondering the Damoselles wordes, and being somewhat pleasantly disposed withall, demanded if the beauty of her mistresse might compare with the indifferent condition shee had of her owne. Must me Sir (quoth she) if you finde any thing in me, that deserued to beare the title of beautie, when you shall chance to haue a sight of my Lady, you will say you haue made a very simple comparison. Faye Damosell (saide Florian) would you followe my counsell, you should here make stay your hasty iourney: for credite me, Miragarda is much more beautiful then you. Lady (quoth Pomides) let not these wordes seeme to stay you from your Mistresse commaund; but procede in your enterprize, and you shall see that, which neither of vs is worthy to vse any talke of: so shal you saue the life of the knight whom she loueth, and certifie your Lady with a certaine report, as for what it hath pleased this knight to say, his wordes are but iesting, for he neuer sawe the faire Miragarda. It seemes then Sir Knight (answered the Damosell) that you haue bene affectioned to the faire view of this Princesse, that you can so readily stand for a witnesse, in the behalf of her beautie. I desire you therefore, to returne with me to the Princesse my Lady, so shall you saue me a iourney, in that you are able to speake vpon iudgement, where perhaps I might stray by vsing affection. So alighting from their Horses, they went altogether into the Castle, when the Damosell gaue her Lady to vnderstand, that she had met with two knights, who were lately come from the Castle of Almaroll, and could at large informe her

her, concerning the beauty of the faire Miragarda. The Princesse Arnalte being very glad of these newes, caused a fayre Chamber to be provided for the two knights, where when they had disarmed themselves, and taking a little ease, being wearie with trauaile, she came and courteously welcomed them to her Castell, shewing all the commodities that might bring them to pleasure, and walking forth to the Ponde side, sitting them downe vnder the Cipresse Trees, in a very pleasant shade, she began in this manner.

Gentlemen, albeit I am ignorant how you can accept my wordes, or in what manner it shall please you to shap mee an answer, yet will I not be so timorous, but that without any ill suspect I may craue such leaue, as to cut off a doubt, which hath of long time been concealed. At such time as the King my father, who gouerned all this countrey, had finished the course of his terrestriall time, I betooke my selfe to liue solitarie in this habitation, till the Gouernors of my Kingdome had chosen me such a Phoebe, as might in all respects satisfie the will of my late deceased Lord and father. But fortune, the enemy to all mine actions, permitted an unknown knight to happen to this Castell: whom I made such choise of, that he was the onely man I loued, because I neuer liked any but him, so that according to my affection, I concluded him as Lord, both of mee and all my Princely possessions. But hee neither regarding bountie nor beauty, applieth himselfe so disdainful to my gentle desire, that he rather taketh pleasure in irons, wherewith I haue charged him, then in the Princely offers whereto I haue chasen him. And although his great despising me is an insupportable torment, yet haue I dissembled my disquietnes, supposing that his affection to some other hath ouercharged his wittes, so that he could not perceine the honour wherewith I presented him. And yet this opinion I vied fondly with my selfe, that no ladies beauty was sufficient to win him from me, the Princesse Miragarda onely excepted, whose report filleth euery Climate, with extolling her benefit. Yet because I had some doubt of her, I commanded one of my Damosels to take her iourney thither, to see if my beautie might not stand equall with hers, if so

be, the were onely perfect without compariso, then had I deter-  
mined to set the knight at libertie: but if I were found to de-  
serve as high a title as she, then would I reward him with pu-  
nishment, according as his disdainfull nature did worthily de-  
serve. Florian well noting the proud minde of Arnalte, deter-  
mined to cause her abide in her vaing opinion, as thus.

Truly Adam, I would wish you not to vie any other tor-  
ment to the knight, then to let him persist in his obstinate and  
peruerse minde: for in the ende, the punishment of his chwe-  
follie will be all, when himselfe shall lament the state of his  
losse. And hereupon assure yourselfe, that y<sup>e</sup> Princesse Miraga-  
da is as faire as she is famed, yet are you very little beholding to  
the knight, considering that if both your features were liuely  
to bee seene in one uniforme, it might hardly be iudged which  
should be worst abased. The Princesse Arnalte, was very wel  
pleased with these words of Florian, & stedfastly setting her cou-  
tenance vpon him, euen as lightly she grounded her loue on  
Palmerin, so according to the mutability of an vnstedfast womā,  
she began to grow in as great good liking of him, vtterly abo-  
lishing Palmerin out of memory, as though she had neuer seene  
him in all her life. & therefore, being in euery part replenished  
with an unspeakable ioy, she take each of the knights by the  
hand, and returned with them into the Castell, where against  
their coming, the Table was ready couered, but before they  
sat downe, Florian desired to see the knight, at whose request,  
he was immediatly sent for. But when Florian and Pompides  
had a sight of him, they were not able to conceale the great ioy  
they sustained, especially Siluian, who as they embraced his  
waister, he cast himselfe at his feet, being neuer so glad in all  
his life, as he was at this present. Which made Arnalte so a-  
mazed, that she wished they were all departed her Castle. Well,  
downe they sat, and were feasted with honour and great reue-  
rence, the Supper being ended, Palmerin and Pompides were  
lodged in one Chamber together, and a very faire Chāber was  
provided for the Prince Florian, to whom she gaue such friend-  
lie entertainment, that they staid there the space of eight  
daies. Then Florian and the other knights would needs de-  
part,

part, leauing the Princesse very pensieue and sorrowfull, to de-  
part from his company she desired to saue, but he made her pro-  
mise, that so soone as he could, he would returne to her. Whereon  
they all departed merrily away, the Princesse Arnalte greatly  
commending her good fortune, in that she hoped of the Prince  
Florians returne, when she had no doubt to haue his heart, but  
he being a litle out of her sight, was fallen into such oblivion of  
her, that he made a iest to his brother & Pompides, of the great  
sauiour Arnalte had bestowed on him.

CHAP. LXVIJ.

How Palmerin of England, Don Florian his brother, and  
Pompides, being departed from the Castle of the Princesse  
Arnalte, met the faire Florenda, daughter to Arnedes  
King of France, at whose request, Florian ran with twelue  
Knights, who kept the Princesse company in her pro grace.  
And how during the time of the Iust, a Damofell came and  
intreated Palmerin, to haue his helpe in the finishing of a  
strange aduenture: with whom he presently departed, and  
after the Iust was ended, Pompides and the Prince Flori-  
an rode after Palmerin, to giue him aide if hee stood in  
neede of any.



When these three knights were thus depar-  
ted from the Princesse Arnalte, Palmerin  
by the way, rode with Siluian aside, to  
whom hee expressed the great perplexitie  
wherein he remained, for the loue hee bare  
his faire Lady and Princesse Polmarde: to  
whom he feared to approach, because of the  
comandement she gaue him, at such time as he departed from  
Constantinople.

Arthalto

Whereto Siluian vsed this kind of perswasion, what she had giuen him in angry speeches, was rather to try his constancy, then to moue him conceiue any opinion of discourtesie. But Palmerin would hardly giue any credence to his wordes: because he supposed we had heard already, that he could not vanquish the Tristfull Knight, entring the Combate on the controuerſie, betwene the beauty of her and the Princesse Miragarda which oppressed his minde with many grieuous thoughts, and was much displeasent to Florian and Pompides, who were altogether ignorant in the cause of his heauinesse.

When they had ridden for a few certaine dayes, they came at last into a valley in the Kingdome of France: where vnder a fine shadowe of Trees, they perceiued foure faire Tents erected, whereupon was placed twelue goodly Shildes. But that which was most to their admiration, was a braue company of Ladies, who disposed themselves there vnder the greene Trees.

The Knights reioycing to finde company in such a solitarie place, betooke themselves presently toward the Tents, but on a suddaine came forth of one of the Tents, a Knight attyred in a very faire Armour, all thicke beset with golden Glasse, who hauing put on his Helmet, mounted on his Steede, and tooke a strong Lance in his hand, preparing himselfe courageously to enter the Iuste. When Palmerin perceiued the intent of the Knight, he caused his company to stay a while, when presently an Esquire addrested himselfe from the Ladies, saluting the Princes in this manner. God saue you Gentlemen, Florenda Daughter to the famous King of France, who abideth in these Tents with her courtly attendants, by me greeteth you in all courtesies possible, giuing you to vnderstand, that delighting herselfe to ride in Prograce, she stayeth here in this pleasant valley, til the heat of the day be somewhat more declined. And for as much as she hath seene in you, the perfect appearance of knightly and worthy behauiour, she desireth, if you will fauour her request so much, that you would breake a fewe Lances with certaine of her Knights, the fulfilling whereof will cause her to reward you with all honourable thanks.

Trust

Trust me (said Palmerin) we all desire to fulfill any occasion, that may be found pleasant to the Princesse Florenda, and seeing it is her pleasure to see vs Iuste, certifie her, that we remaine at her gracious command. No sooner had the Esquire deliuered his answer, but the Princesse Florendas Knights came forth of the Tents, when Don Florian hauing obtained leaue for the first Iuste, encountred the first Knight with such haughty courage, that he sent him to measure his length on the earth. In this manner he serued five without breaking his Lance, but on the sixt he shruered it in pieces, wherefore Pompides deliuered him his Lance, being very glad to see him sped so luckily. The Princesse somewhat moued, to see her Knights soyled so fast by one, exhorted the other to make better proofe of their Chualrie, but in the meane while, a Damosell came crossing the valley on a blacke Palfrey, and yielding her selfe at the foot of the renowned Palmerin, began to vtter these speeches.

I desire you Sir Knight, for the honour you haue receiued in your knightly doodes of Armes, at this instant to conceiue such courage as to followe me, & you shall receiue the greatest praise in giuing me ayde, as in all your life time you neuer gained the like. Palmerin, who bare Armes only to succor the weak estate of the distressed, desired Pompides to keepe his Brother Florian company, not sayling to ayde him in finishing that noble enterprise, and he would not be long before he returned to them againe, so giuing a Conge to the Ladies, he rode away in all the hast with the Damosell.

One of the Ladies belonged to the princesse Florenda, seeing Palmerin to depart on such a suddaine, came to Pompides with these wordes. Truly Sir, it seemeth you deserue not to beate Armour, or that you are afraide it should be too much bruised, that suffer your Companion to depart alone, not knowing the mishap of the Damosell, or the hard fortune that may hap to attach the Knight. Lady (answered Pompides) the Gentlewoman is in the gouernment of so good a knight, as I dare warrant she shall haue little cause to feare, but because you shall not account me of such rewardise, I will presently direct my course after him, rather to behold his hardy piewesse, then to thinke



he should stand in neede of my helpe. Whereupon he took his leaue of the Lady, & endeouored himselfe that way the Prince was gone before him, but he had so far outreaht him, that Pompides could not ouertake him a good while after. Florian hauing dismounted eight of the knights, could deale with no more because his lance was broken, but one of the ladies came and presented him with another, desiring him to breake that one lance for her sake. Florian thanked the Lady very courteously, promising to employ that lance, as a present come from the hands of her, to whom he would aduenture his life in seruice: which to witnesse, he prepared himself against the ninth knight, who hauing a good opinion of himselfe, began in this order to speake to the Prince. I haue a great desire, sir knight, to try your valour which is of such estimation, being in hope that I shall manifest that to you, which you haue not yet seene. Thus concluding his speeches, and casting his eye vpon Carmelia, the handmayde to the princeesse Florenda, whom he had chosen as chiefe mistresse of his heart: he couched his speare against the Prince Florian, thinking to honour his Saine with his ouerthrow. But reckoning without his host, he was faine to make a new account, and possesse the place on the ground himselfe, being now as sorrowfull for his ill fortune, as he was pleasantly disposed before he entred the list. Having thus vnhorsed them all the last knight came and took his turne, being the valiant Germaine of Orleans, who had undertaken the charge to conduct the Princeesse, being her affectionate and leyal friend: he bare in his shield, a Wyger bearing a white Lyon in pieces, and not knowing the Prince Florian, to reuenge the dishonour his companions had receiued, encountred the Prince with such courage, that at the third attempt he was enforced to keepe his friends company, not a little displeased to be scyled in the presence of her, to whom he had becomed the honour of all his victories. The Princeesse seeing the Tourning was finished, desired the Prince that she might see his face, as also to report his name, & of whome he was: at whose request he alighted, and hauing taken off his helmet, desiring her pardon, offered in humilitie to kisse her hand, but she would not suffer him so to do. Germaine of Orleans,

ance,

ance, who had knowledge of him presently, came and embraced him in very courteous manner: and turning to the Princeesse Florenda, he uttered his speeches on this wise. Faire Princess, I account it no dishonour to be vanquished by this knight, so that in all his attempts he euer remaineth victor. When the Princeesse vnderstood, that he was Florian of the Desert, somewhat allied to her by kindred, she came running to him, and embraced him with a maruellous protestation of exceeding loue. And then commanding the Tents to be taken downe, because it was the time of her departure, she desired Florian to accompany her to the French Court, where she might do him more honour, then she was able in that solitarie place. But Florian desired pardon, for at that time he could not satisfie her desire, because he would follow the Lady, who allured his brother and Pompides, to stray from him in that manner. The Princeesse vnderstanding, by the knight, who went with the lady, was the famous Palmerin, took Florian by the hand, with these words. Now trust me sir Florian, it grieueth me that I was not so fortunate as to know him in the time he remained here, being the knight that I alwaies desired to see: wherefore I desire you to make haste after him, and at your returne to passe thorow the kingdome of my father, that I may do him the seruice my hart desireth. Then the lady, whose words procured Pompides to depart after Palmerin, came to the prince Florian, with these speeches. Sir, I would faine haue knowledge of the knight, who hath betaken himselfe to traualle after my Lord your brother, desiring you to certifie him, the sorrow I conceiue for the words I gaue him. Faire lady (answered Florian) he is such a knight, as I am sure will be ready at all times, to employ himselfe in your seruice: he is named Pompides, my brother and euer approved good friend. I humbly pray you (said the lady) that you would excuse me to him, in the greatest offence I haue vngently offered. Florian promised he would accomplish her will, so taking leaue of the Princeesse Florenda, and all her noble company, he posted apace that way as the Prince Palmerin took, standing in great feare, lest any mischance should happen vnto him.

## CHAP. LXVIII.

How the Damosell hauing brought Palmerin from the faire Florenda, conducted him to the Castle of the Duke of Ronfillion, where he enterprised the Combat, to redeeme three Ladies, whom the Duke kept as prisoners there, to put them to death.



Great hast made the Lady that conducted Palmerin, all the way vsing no words, till they came to a litle village in the Dukedom of Ronfillion, where she desired the Prince to stay a while, and she would go in the village, where she would not stay but returne to him presently. In the meane while, Palmerin tooke off his Helmet, and sat him downe to rest him, because he was somewhat weary with trauaile, when the Damosell returning, and beholding him to be so young and beautiful, she despaired with her selfe, that he was not able to fulfill her earnest desire, for which cause she presently fell into teares.

Palmerin not knowing the cause of her sorrow, desired her that she would expresse it to him, whereupon she began to answer him thus. Alasse Sir Knight, no other cause haue I to lament in this order, but that I am the onely infortunate woman in the world, who haue trauelled through the whole kingdom of France, thinking to find a valiant and renowned knight, but now I perceiue I am greatly deceiued. For when I thought to intreat the Princeesse Florenda, to giue me one of her most strong and hardy knights, I finding you in the company of those, who vnhoised her Lords with great valiancie, I had so good an opinion of you, that I intreated you to follow me, not rehearsing the perillous danger I should bring you too. So that now being at the place, where you should put your

hands

hands in prose, I finde you so young and of such small force, that I am voyde of all hope to haue any good successe. Faire Lady (answered Palmerin) I shall not faile to doe as much as my power will permitte, and perhappes cause you to haue a better opinion of me, then I see as yet you are willing to vse. Therefore I desire you to tell me, to what intent you haue caused me to trauaile with you, and doubt not but I will aduenture my life, to doe you seruice in what thing soeuer. O Sir (quoth she) how happy were I, if the effect of your words would agree with your wordes, for in this Village there remaineth three Ladies prisoners, the Daughters of one of the most noble Lordes in this Countrey, who because their Father would not giue them in Marriage, to the Duke of Ronfillion and his two Brethren, they found the meanes to murder him, and these three Ladies they kept here in a Castle, to whom they haue graunted the commodity, to finde a knight that can preuaile in the Combat, and then they shall be restored to their former libertie. So that this is the prescribed and appointed day, when the Combat must first be tried, against Bramerie the chiefe gentleman belonging to the Duke, and one of the most renowned knights in all this Countrey. If it chance that he be vanquished, then must you hazard your self, against Chaster and Altarin his two kinsmen, yet all these being conquered, will not returne this victorie, for then must you deale with the Duke and his two brethren, who are knowne to be such stout and noble knights, that no one will conceiue the courage to deale with them. Yet must the Ladies, this day finde a knight to auenge their quarrell, or else the Duke hath sworn they shall lose their heades, and to put the Ladies in some hope, I went and told them I had brought a knight, who would undertake to deale in their cause, which the Duke no sooner hearing, but hee began to be greatly offended. Surely saide Palmerin, I must needs venture my selfe again those, that will take vpon them to vse cruelty to any faire Lady, and will alwaies disallow, that a King or Prince should suffer any injury, to be vsed to a Lady within his Dominions, and in token that my words shall agree with my wordes, I will goe presently to the abiding of the Duke, where I will inuay so much

against him, that his owne wicked will shall worke his ouerthrow. The Damosell perceiuing the noble minde of Palmerin, and the little doubt he had to deale with his enemy, vsed better affection to him now then she had before, wherupon she brought him to the Castle where the Duke made his abode, to see the ende of this noble enterpryse.

## CHAP. LXIX.

How Palmerin being come to the Castle, entred the fight on the behalfe of the three Ladies, wherein hee vanquished Bramerin, and slew Cliafar & Alfarin. And how he fought with the Duke and his two brethren, against whom hee preuailed, and restored the Ladies.



The Prince and the Gentlewoman being come to the Castle, where where were assembled a great multitude of people to see the Combate, the Damsell-Bride was let downe by the Dukes commaundement, when Palmerin prepared to enter the Castle, but Bramerin being prouided, and seeing his enemy before his face, came vnto him with these wordes. Abide Sir Knight, and before you approach any farther, you must deale with me: but I belieue you haue made such an ill bargaine, that when you see your ware, you will not bragge of your penyworthes. Trust me Sir (answered Palmerin) how euer it happen, I must hold me content, but I am of this opinion, that to whom the right belongeth, to them will returne the best aduantage: and therefore I am fully determined to the fight, because I feare I shall lacke daylight to finish mine enterpryse. Sayde the Knight, you shall not neede to complaine on the lacke of time, for I warrant you we shall end, and that right soone: at least wise, if so be that I chance to faile, you shall deale with such fellows in the Castle,

Castle, as will be loth to prolong the time with you.

So giuing scope to their Horses, they met with their speares so nobly together, that Bramerin was throwne to the ground, void of any feeling, which Palmerin perceiuing, alighted from his Horse, and set his Sword to his throate with these wordes. Veld Marlet, and sweare henceforth neuer to iniury any oppressed Lady, or by my Sword, thou shalt die the death. Bramerin seeing his life to stand in such a jeopardy, deferred not to fulfill his desire. When Palmerin mounting on Horseback again, entred the Castle, and in the Court espied Chaster and Alfarin, each of them in a very faire greene Armour, thicke beset with Azure flowers, who when they beheld Palmerin, they ran both at once against him very fiercely, but with his Sword hee saluted one of them so soundlie on the head, that he made him sure enough for doing any more harme. Which his fellow perceiuing, came & behaued himselfe with very great courage against the Prince, but in the ende, Palmerin brought him vnder his obespance, when demanding if he would yeld, he made answer no: because he thought some would come to his rescue, but Palmerin seeing him so obstinate, failed not to send his head from his shoulders. All this while, he was so happy to escape without any hurt, wherupon he came to the gentlewoman, and asked if there were any thing els, wherein she would haue him to imploy his seruice. Certainly sir (quoth she) I see no danger can withstand your courage, but now you must hazard your selfe, against the Duke & his Brethren: and their vse is to Combat about in the Castell, where I pray God to send you as fortunate successe, as hitherto you haue had against these iii. knights, in hope whereof, I will not leaue your company, but be partner of all the Combats you shall try, to deliuer these three distressed Ladies. After the Gentlewoman had thus concluded her talk, she shewed him the Staires, which he ought to ascend, where he might find the Duke and his brethren, when Palmerin commanding Siluian to stay his coming without, tooke his sword and went vp, till at last he came into a very faire Hall, where he beheld three Ladies sitting attyred all in blacke, and endued with such singular beauty, that he greatly lamented their vngentle oppression.

He had not long stood beholding them, but he perceiued three knightes very well armed to come before him: and to the Ladies, one of them began in this manner. Faire Ladies, why should you procure so great misfortune to your selues, and also labour to worke our ruine and destruction? you are the cause our three knights haue been so cruelly abused, whose deathes I intend to reuenge so sharpe, and your lines shall satisfie part of our losse, wherat your Champion shall be but little pleased, and we not with all this fully satisfied. The Duke who spake these words, came from the Ladies accompanied with his Brethren, bearing all one manner of deuise in their shields, which was Cupid chased away, leaning his Bow and Arrows all bloody, and broken in peeces, the Duke aduanced himselfe to Palmerin, on this wise. Sir knight, suff're your selfe with the slaughter of my knights, and yelde your selfe friendly into my hands, for surely it would bee to my great griefe, to be the death of so good a knight, whereto Palmerin shap'd his answer. Sir, thing not to abuse me, albeit I am in place, where you suppose you may command me, for I am come to no such ende, but rather to constrain you to vse recompence to these ladies, whom you haue so highly offended, then for any fauour I seeke at your hands. With that the Duke and his Brethren strooke freely at Palmerin, and he on the other side charged them courageously, the Ladies wasping, desired God in the force of the Prince, to shew some fauour and louing regard vnto them, for they well perceiued how dangerous the fight was, especially on his side to contend against three. Yet in the end, such was his valor and high good fortune, that by one and by one he ouercame them all, but the Duke seeing his Brethren vanquished, and himselfe left alone to abide all the hazard, tooke occasion to pause with these words.

I pray you Sir knight if you thinke it good, to tell me your name, and of whence you are, that I may know him I shall vanquish, or at least that shall remaine victor ouer mee. Sir, said Palmerin, the knowledge of me is so needlesse, that I will not stand to satisfie your desire, first, let vs make an end of our Combat, and then perhaps I will let you vnderstand more.

Belike

Belike (quoth the Duke) you make such account of the victory, that you will admit no lecture to Parley: well, since you are so bent, I do not yet conceiue such weaknesse of my selfe, that I will make sute to you for any fauour. Then they began againe, the great effusion of their blood, witnessing the perillous danger of their fight, but at last the Duke was constrained to fall downe at the foote of the Prince, as it pleased as he was shrewdly handled, especially because he thought neuer to see his Lady and Mistress againe. Wherefore humbling himselfe, he desired the Prince to saue his life, who being alwaies accustomed to great pittie, and seeing him so affectionate towarde his Lady, tooke him from the ground in his armes, promising to vse the matter in such sort, that he would make him to be highly esteemed of her. The Duke receiued the Princes offer, but vpon this condition: that if she scorned to be mercifull vnto him, then should he presently bereaue him of life, because it was vnpossible for him to suffer such furious and sharpe assaults, as he daile proued for her sake.

## CHAP. LXX.

How Palmerin hauing conquered the Duke and his brethren, procured such meanes with the three Ladies, that he caused them to be married together. And how Florian and Pompides arriuing there, Palmerin departed with them towards Constantinople.



After this great broyle was fully finished, and all things ordained in a decent order, on a suddaine there entred the Hall about twentie Souldiers, and two knightes very well armed, who spake aloud, that it was necessary he should be slaine, that had killed the most famous and noble Knight of the world:

world: wherewith they came to Palmerin, who defended himselfe with his sword, intending to be his Watcher that should first lay hands on him. But the Duke seeing so great a tumult risen without his knowledge, put himselfe betwene them, desiring a farther pause, that all matters might be taken by quietly. Then was the Duke conducted to his Chamber, and Palmerin went to the Chamber of the Ladies, where his woundes were very diligently dressed by Organel the Dukes Chirurgion, who was as carefull for him, as ever hee was for the Duke his Lord. During the time that Palmerin staid with the Ladies, he reported to them the great estimation both the Duke and his Brethren made of them, how also the cause of his sharpe dealing, was onely because they denied his loue, with diuers other reports, which the Ladies esteemed both laudable and henceit: so that they granted themselves, onely to be ruled and gouerned by the aduise of Palmerin, because he had stood so much their friend, and therefore they promised to graunt what he did thinke well of, seeing he determined nothing, but what might stand with his owne honesty, and maintenance of their honour. Palmerin was so ioyfull to see the Ladies conformed to his appointment, that he made more account of the conquest of them, then he did of the honour he receiued in the Combate. Therefore he walked to the Dukes Chamber, where after hee had embraced him, he declared the good agreement and conuersion of the Ladies, wherewith the Duke receiued such content, that for a great while he remained as it were in a sound: but being come to himselfe againe, he began in this manner to utter his speech. Sir knight, if at your hands I haue receiued any damage, I must needs confesse your recompence is double, if so bee your reeds agree with your words (as blame me not Sir, if I am somewhat hard of beleefe) you haue brought me the endly comfort and solace of my life. Worthy Sir, said Palmerin, what I haue spoken, your Grace shall find the effect according, I doubt you not, but both you and your Brethren shall now at last purchase the delight, which neither your long study nor compulsion could bring to passe. While they continued this talke, the two knights that were in the hall with the souldiers, came into the Dukes

Dukes Chamber with their Helmes off: when Palmerin seeing they were his two brethren, Florian & Pompides, ran and embraced them with very great ioy, desirous to know how they had sped at the Tourning before the Princesse Florenda, which Florian rehearsed from point to point, as also in what manner they happened thither. The Duke seeing these three knights to be all brethren, supposed them to be persons of some great birth: wherefore he commanded Organel, because it drew towards night, to conduct them to their chambers, where Palmerin certified them what he had done in the Castle, as also the Marriage he had appointed, betwene the Duke, his brethren and the three Ladies, and thus they discoursed, till sleepe commanded them to leaue off. In the morning, the Duke and his brethren married the Ladies: Dragonell the second brother, chose to him Armisia the second sister, and Darofant espoused Arismena the youngest of all. Then was the feast solemnized with marueilous great royaltie, when Palmerin discovered himselfe and his brethren, which made the Duke to conceiue the better opinion of himselfe, that he had bene soyled by such a worthy knight: to whom he sheweth great honour, during the time their staying there, which was longer then they would haue done, but only to pleasure the Duke and the Ladies. At length, taking their leaue of all the honourable company, they departed from thence, intending to goe strait to Constantinople, if no other chance did come to turne them againe.

## CHAP. LXXI.

How Targiana the Turkes daughter, commanded her knight Albayzar to goe to the Castle of the Giant Almaroi, there to maintaine her beautie against the Princesse Miragarda. And how he arriued there, and entred the Combate with Dramusiande, whom he was not able to vanquish, wherefore, in the night he tooke downe the Shield of Miragarda, and brought it thence away with him.

Now



**N**ow must wee a while, leaue the Prince Palmerin and his brethren, who hauing left the Duke and the Ladies, are traouailing in their iourney towards Constantinople, and now let vs see what hath happened at the Castle of Almarol, in maintaining the beautie of the faire Miragarda. I haue already certified you, that Oloricque Alchediane the Soldane of Babilon, had left a sonne behind him, who was a great enemy to all Christendome, who seeing himselfe brought into the despising of Fortune, determined to folle in the course of knightly aduentures, and to make his valour knowne among the number of the most famous knights. It happened, that first he went to the great Turkes, Court, which being stored with couragious knights, he had the better meane to try his hardinesse: which proved so effectually, that aboue all there, the fame was attributed to this patterne of all their Chiuallry named Albayzar, who became the amorous seruant of Targiana, the Turkes daughter, to whom the onely name of beautie was giuen, though all the Turkes Dominions.

And as Loue is usually an augmentor of their mindes, who endeavour themselves to be vnder his obeyesance, hauing now enflamed the hart of Albayzar, maketh him to forsake his wonted liberty, and to wandre in the selemne conceits of his inuigled fancy, which made him to brooke his passions more makelesly, haui' greened the originall of his griefe from such an excellent occasion. Targiana likewise bearing him good affection, would haue if Loue had such a soueraigntie ouer him, as in protestation is a whorpe payler he often confessed, & hauing her platfome laid, and the order of her inuention ready coined, she callet him to her Chamber minde to as was her wont, and there she began this selemne deuise.

¶ If Albayzar, if your loue be grounded on such an insubstantial foundation, as you haue often both said and thought, it shall bee  
as

It is as easie for you to driue me from doubt, as to prouide your selfe against any encroching danger. And I haue often told you, that it is requisite I should vnderstand the depth of your words, as wel as to be lead away with your amorous & fabulous words, for you haue often told me, that I am the fairest Princesse liuing on the earth, and that you would venture your life in maintenance thereof: to bring you to your triall, giue care to the aduenture I shall giue you in charge to finish.

It hath bin blazed abroad, that in Spaine, at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, there remaineth a Princesse named Miragarda, who is reported to be the onely Goddesse of beauty, because the Gods neuer frame one more beautifull then she, yea, and by the iudgement of those that haue seene her Picture, truly and iustly figured by the perfect proportion (being a Shield placed before the castle, which who desireth must first aduēture his strength) this report I tell you, affirmeth her to be no lesse faire, then the aduenture of it selfe hath been tried famous. To this place should I haue you to depart presently in treuaille, and in my fauour and defence of beauty, shew your haughty courage against the Giant her Champion, whom if Fortune will suffer you to vanquish, you can neuer do me greater pleasure, then to bring me hither the Shield of the faire Miragarda. And at your returne, I pray you to iourney to Constantinople, where in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, you may witnesse your selfe against all those, that dare denie you to be the most faithfull seruant to the fairest Princesse aliuie: the fulfilling hereof, maketh you Lord both of me and mine. My gracious Lady (answered Albaizer) I see at this present the perfect loue you beare me, in that you will vouchsafe to employ me in your honorable seruice, whereto I will presently betake my selfe, promising to bring you the Shield of Miragarda, which I will place at your feet, because all the Ladies in the world ought to humble themselves to you.

Thus breaking off his speeches, he took his leaue of her, wearing a very fine Greene Armour, wheron was wrought many golden Spheares, and in his Shield vpon a field of Silver, bare for his deuise a Phoenix, where vnder was written in gol-



den Letters, the name of Targiana. Trauailing thus through diuers Kingdomes, at last he arrived at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, some after the combat that Dramusiande had finished with the Prince Florian. Albayzar perceiving the number of shields at the Tree, esteemed greatly the valure of him, who had the power to accomplish so rare exploits: but when he beheld the picture of Miragarda, he could not chuse but confesse the advantage she had above his Lady Targiana. Percei thelesse, he would put her will in due execution, albeit that night he could not, time was so farre spent: but in the morning he presented himself before the Castle, when Dramusiande aduertised of his arrivall, armed himselfe, and came forth on horseback, so after a litle friendly greeting passed between them, they couched their speares, and at the third encounter, sent one another to the ground couragiously. When drew they forth their swords, delivering such cruell assaults to one another, that Miragarda and her Ladies did highly commend them: but yet she stood in feare, lest Albayzar should vanquish Dramusiande. Albayzar, who all his life time had not felt such hardy blowes, thought not his promise so certain, as when he departed from the Princesse Targiana, & Dramusiande found his enemy so strong, that he could hardly assure himselfe of any victory: so cruelly did they deale with one another, and wounded one another in such grievous manner, that one would not haue thought, how possible the life could remaine in them: whereupon Dramusiande began thus to the faire Miragarda. *Spye good Lady, doe not now refuse your servant in so great a neede, that he which hath neuer done you service, shall cause your Dramusiande to lose the recompence, which he thinketh by his travels to haue worthily deserved.* On the other side, Albayzar was in his complaints to the Princesse Targiana, desiring her but to remember him in fauor, and that was sufficient to overcome his enemy: so commending himselfe to his God Mahound, he began again afresh with Dramusiande. Long they fought, yet neither could preuaile, for they thought themselves indifferently matched, so that the night approaching on, made the to leaue off their Combat, and to finish it on the next day if they could. Dramusiand entred his lodging,

meaning

meaning on the morrow to ende their strife one way or other, and Albayzar retired being of the same minde: but knowing no where to rest him for that night, that hee might the better deale with Dramusiande on the morrow, he returned to the tree of the Shields, where remembering the promise he had made to his Lady, euery one being fast asleepe, he took downe the shield of the Princesse Miragarda, which he purposed to beare with him into Turkie. But first he would passe the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, according as his lady Targiana had commanded him: and fearing least he should be pursued, he stayed in no place, till he was twenty miles from thence, bearing the shield covered that no body should know it. And there where he lodged, he stayed untill his wounds were healed: very sorrowfull because he could not vanquish Dramusiande, to bring the perfect prize to his Lady Targiana.

## CHAP. LXXII.

How after Albayzar departed with the Shield of Miragarda, Dramusiande left the Castle of Almarol to followe after him. And how Armello brought word to the Prince Florendos, of the Shield, which made him presently leaue his shepherds kinde of life, and with his fellowe shepheard tooke themselves to trauaile.



Now Dramusiande hauing dressed his wounds, so well as he might in so short a space, in the morning returned to the Tree, intending to ende the Combate, or to leaue his life in the field: but when he began to græte the picture of Miragarda, according as hee was wont, and found himselfe disappointed thereof, hee was taken with such sorrow, that he could abide in no place.

Then

When he had sought all about the Tree, and could not finde it, he began to suspect, that the Knight against whom he main-  
tained the Combat, had caried it away with him: wherefore as  
secretly as might be, he concluded to persue presently after him,  
not staying till the Princesse Miragarda was certified thereof,  
because he could not yelde account of that, which she had so  
faithfully committed to his keeping. Then was he determined  
to seek all the world over, but he would be reuenged on this  
discourteous Knight, whose treason he rehearsed to the Giant  
Almarol, of whom he took his leaue, not staying till his wounds  
were healed, nor yet thinking on the danger wherein he took  
himselfe to trauell.

After that Dramusiande was gone, Miragarda vnderstood  
by her shield was stollen by a Knight, after whom Dramusi-  
ande had determined to trauaile which matched to take it scer-  
ely, thinking though Dramusiande were gone to re-  
couer it againe, yet when this mishap should be knowne to the  
Trustfull Knight, he would not take his weapons to followe  
him, that offered her so great discourtage, so in him she reposed  
a better confidence then in Dramusiande. Armello seeing the  
shield was stollen, and that Dramusiande was gone in that or-  
der, had good hope now of his maisters good Fortune, which  
made him trudge in hast from the Castell, and all the way he  
went by the River Thefin, till at last he found him keeping  
shope by a Fountaine: where staying himselfe a while, he  
heard the sound of a Flute, which often stayed, to vtter the  
complaints of an euerecharged wight, so that Armello was  
greatly moued to heare his lamentations. Then came he a  
little neerer to behold his face, which was so much offended with  
effuse of teares, that Armello could not insly say, whether it  
was he or no: at his late late another Shepheard very sin-  
gly apparell'd, and playing many delightfull deuises vpon his  
Flute, so that Armello verily thought that place a wilderness  
of woes.

The sight made him in such case, that he durst not be so  
which way to beginne his tale, for well he knew his Lord had  
indeed led a solitary life, at such times as he left the Castell of  
the

the Giant Almarol, yet hardly did he knowe that this was he:  
wherefore encouraging himselfe, he approached vnto them with  
these speeches. I pray you my friend, to report to me if you can,  
some tidings of a young knight, whom Loue hath caused to en-  
dertake a solitary kinde of life, when his estate doeth rather  
command him to vse knightly Armes.

Trust me my friend (answered the Shepheard) I am my selfe  
so cruelly vrged with the outrages of loue, that I can hardly en-  
dure to make you any answer, for I am he whom Loue hath  
allowed to all misfortune, but neuer to no day, houre minute  
of quietnesse. With that the Prince Florendos began in this  
order. Oh sir, doe not you seeme to blame Loue so much, if you  
haue sustained any losse, impute it to the feblenesse of Fortune  
and not to Loue, let me alone to complaine of Loue. Armello  
cast good view vpon him, and knew that it was the Lord, albeit  
he was changed out of all remembrance, wherefore, falling  
down at his fete, he desired him, not to execute on himselfe such  
extreame grieve, as he would not fauour himselfe with some pit-  
tie, which would greatly displease her, who had power to com-  
mand him otherwise. Then was Florendos somewhat offen-  
ded with himselfe, if he had done any thing that might displease  
his best beloued, which Armello seeing, stayed him thus.

Sir, I haue taken the paines to come hither, that you might  
vnderstand a matter greatly for your profite. Dramusiande  
hath long time kept the shield of Miragarda, and many knights  
hath he brought vnder her obersance, but such is the misfor-  
tune, that her shield is stollen from thence by a Knight, of  
whom she hath no hope to recouer it, but only by your meanes.  
Florendos, to whose heart was already stricken a suddaine ioy,  
began in this manner. What will you Armello wish me to doe  
succour other, seeing me scant able to helpe my selfe, how may  
I in this weaknes presume against any one, when being in my  
chiefest strength, I could not conquer one onely knight? Neuer-  
theles, because I wil not still remaine in sorrow, which hither-  
to hath daily and vsually borne mee company, I will followe  
the Knight that hath borne away the shield of my Lady, and  
will (if I can) make him to yelde it me againe, but if Fortune

Yend him the victory against me, then I shall be out of all troubles and sorowes in this world. Thus rising vp, he desired his fellow shepheard (who was his only delight to accompany him in heauinesse) to beare him company, and leaue that sad & silent kind of life, to follow the noble exercises wherein he had bene alwaies trained, for albeit he was as then simple, yet had he bene tried a good knight at Armes. The knight, though he was content with his sorrowful life, yet had he not that power to refuse the request of the gentle P. Florendos, for whose amitie they left their sheepe, and went into a Colone hard by, where they remained till they were strong enough to endure trauaile. And in their time of stay there, they made each of them a fine new blacke Armoz, both alike, without any deuise at all, because the Prince would not be knowne, which made him not to send for his Armoz at the Castle of Almerol. Then departed they from thence, and trauailed to seeke the shield of the faire Miragarda, but they trauailed not long together, for that a misadventure unhappily parted them, as you shall be certified moze hereafter.

CHAP. LXXIII.

What and who the Knight was, that bare Florendos company while he was a Shepheard, and what was the occasion that they parted company. And how Albayzar proceeded with the Shield of Miragarda.



Because you shall vnderstand, who the knight was that kept Florendos company all this while, the Historie declareth, that after the knights (who were Prisoners with Don Edward) were departed from the realme of England, Floramã the prince of Sardignia, took his trauailes on the Coast of Spaine, purposing to trye the aduentures of the Princes

princesse Miragarda. And because he arrived at the Castle of Almarol, when Florendos was gone into England, to trye the aduenture at the Castle of Dramusland, he had leisure sufficient to behold and muse on the faire Portrait of Miragarda, which seemed apparant in his eye, that he entred into prayles, and surpaises of this beautifull Image.

Which made him desire, that some knight would take his way thither, to the intent he might shew some seruice to the gracious Princesse, the semelinenesse of whose Picture, caused him verily beleue, that there was none in the world might compare with her for beauty. But as he remained in this opinion, the old remembrance of Altea claimed one title in his cogitations, which vged some motion of strife to arise, because he became no lesse affectionate to Miragarda, then the knight that on her behalfe had won so many shields, whereupon he began in this order. O Floraman, why wilt thou undertake to exercise Armes, seeing thou hast not the power to appease thy tedious trauailes, but labouring to get out, thou enrollest thy selfe the farther in? Thou wast once content to be vanquished at Constantinople, wherby thou mightst shun any moze to follow this deceitfull Loue, and art thou now desirous to enter Armour, when both Fortune flies from thee, and thou not able any way to endure it? Oh blinded affection, that must roue on euery stranger, and knowest how strange Loue made thee of late. But seeing to late, I come to the knowledge of mine errour, and haue gone so far, that I cannot returne without my feet wet, I purpose to pursue her, by whom Fortune hath allowed mee a laboursome life, resigning ioy to those that are wont to be familiar, & contenting me with heauines, since I can no way eschew the happe. And seeing a graue is meetest for a dead man, a solitarie Wildernesse for a comfortlesse wretch, I meane to beare her company with my mournfull heart so long, that she shall die to lesse me, and I twise dead at any time to seeke her, then shall my mishappes haue a full conclusion, and dispaire strike me dead once for all.

Thus breaking off his lamentations, he walked along by the River Theba, forsaking hope, Armour, & all knightly behavior,

entring a little shade of Trees, where he determined to liue so-  
itarie. And the greatest contentation he had, was when he sat  
keeping Sheepe, to play mournfull deuises vpon his flute, and  
to write and graue in the barke of Trees, certaine amorous son-  
nets, and Passions of a Louer, which as the Trees grew, so  
his seuerall Sonnets flourished vpon them.

And albeit he was resolute to liue from al company, yet when  
Florendos came vnto him, he found him so nere agreeing to his  
complexion, and his manners and motion coynd in the like  
fampe, that he was glad to receiue him for a partner in his hea-  
uiness. So that they liued together with Hearbes and roots,  
pangs, grieffe, sobbes, sighes and salt teares, the daily foode and  
sustenance of a Louer, this was both their sollace and sorrow,  
till Armello caused them to depart from thence, as you haue  
heard discoursed already.

It so fortun'd, as these two careful Princes rode along by the  
Sea side, they espied a little Galley comming towards them,  
wherein sat a Lady endued with such singular beauty, attyred  
in blacke, and accompanied with such a modest behaviour, as e-  
uery one might iudge her to bee some person of Nobilitie. At  
this Ladies seate sat two aged women, who espying these two  
Princes, commanded the Marriners to row to the Shoare,  
when beholding the Princes very rusfully, the Lady saluted  
them in this sort. Sir Knights, I desire the one of you to doe  
me so great fauour, as to come aboard my Galley, to aide me in  
a cause, which desireth the helpe of one onely Knight. Faire La-  
dy (answered Florendos) we beare Armes for no other purpose,  
but to imploy our selues in the aide of distressed persons, so en-  
tring the Galley, he commanded Armello his Esquire, to take  
his Horse, and expect his comming at the Castell of the Giant  
Almerol, where he would not faile to meete him.

Thus leauing the Prince Floraman, the Galley launched  
forth, that it was quickly out of sight: wherefore he rid on, de-  
siring the company of Florendos, to whom he became maruel-  
lous affectionate. After he had trauailed thre daies, he came to  
a very strong Bridge, at the four corners whereof, was four  
very faire strong Towers erected, being desirous to approach  
there

there into, he espied a Knight willing to passe, but an other de-  
nied him, saying: if he would leaue his Shilde behind him,  
and giue vp his name to be signed in writing, as was the cu-  
stome of the Forsterre, he should be permitted to passe quietly.  
Such an ill custome (answered the Knight) was not ordained  
to hinder such as my selfe, but rather for such, as could not make  
their part good against their enemy: this sayde, he gaue his  
shild that he bare to his Esquire, and receiued another of him,  
and so encountred with the knight of the bridge, but he not able  
to withstand the force of the Speare, was dismounted from his  
Horse, and throwen into the water. Floraman somewhat a-  
bashed at this hardy encounter, approach'd nere the Bridge,  
where he beheld in the Esquirs hand, the Portraite of the faire  
Princesse Miragarda, which made him desirous to stay, to see  
how this enterprise would take conclusion. The Knight of  
the bridge was no longer giuen the turne euer, but there in one  
of the Towers one sounded a Horne very vehemently, at sound  
whereof a knight came forth, bearing in his hand a mighty Axe:  
wherewith appproching to the knight, he charged them with ma-  
ny sharpe and dangerous strokes, but in the ende, such was the  
valour of the other Knight, that he laide him flat vpon the  
ground, giuing his place to another, because he had no leisure to  
arise. Then came forth a tall and eugly Giant, bringing in his  
hand a Hache of iron, & to the knight he deliuered these taunts.  
Thou destroyer of my blood, doe thy duty to defend thy selfe, for  
to reuenge the horrible iniury thou hast offered me, I intend to  
cutte thy body in so many pieces, that the fowles of the ayre  
shall be glutted with thy carcase. The knight refusing to giue  
him any answer, centered himselfe with his Shild, so that  
betwene the Giant and him, began a terrible and dangerous  
Combate, but in the ende, the Knight who was named the va-  
liant Albayzar, so conuired the giant, that he left him not while  
there was any life in him. Albayzar being very sore wound-  
ed, and seeing no more resistance come, entred the Forsterre,  
where he stayed till he was able to deale with Floraman, who  
desired to haue a sling at him, for to get the Shild of the faire  
Miragarda. For being in that low estate, he did esteeme it great

## The first part

dishonour to assaile him: because couragious mindes, rather desire to encounter those who haue might to resist them, then to deale with such as haue no power to defend themselves. Wherefore he past the Bridge, not knowing whether he were best to take his way: for his desire was, not to absent himselfe farre thence, because he would not loſe the commoditie to fight with Albayzar: in the meane time he wasted away the idle houres, in this wanted silent and amorous Passions.



Chap.

## of Palmerin of England.

161

### CHAP. XLXIII.

Here is declared, to whom the Fortresse vpon the Bridge belonged, where Albayzar behaued himself so worthily, and why the Custome was ordained. And of that which happened to Florendos, sailing in the Galley with the Lady.



A circumstance of the History it is mentioned, that the Duke Artilio in Spaine, had a daughter, who living to enioy his possessions after him, was nourished in company of the faire Belizarda, daughter to the King Recinda. But lone hauing gained the power of the aforesaid Lady, caused her to be fancied of the Prince Onistalde, with such continuance betwene them, that in the end their desires happened to take effect.

But after the Prince had receiued the order of Knighthood, in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, hee changed his minde, and became affectionate towards a Princeesse in the Emperours Court, so that he forgot the Duchesse, in such sort, as neuer since his departure, it was her fortune to see him.

The Duchesse perceiuing his unkind dealing, and shee not able to exclude it from her memorie, ordained this Custome at the Bridge, where she had a Castle, and caused the passage to be kept by the Giant Lamortan, with two Knights more of his lineage, who suffered no Knight to passe the Bridge, without leaving his Shield and haire in waiting, perswading her selfe by this deuise, at length to recover her beloued Onistalde.

For his sake were many Knights in great danger, who assailed themselves in that strange adventure, till the valiant Albayzar came, who ended the custome, to the great griefe and vexation of the Duchesse. Nevertheless, for the beuntie and valour shee perceiued in him, shee comanded that hee should bee

honourably used, till he had recovered the hurt of his wounds, so that Albazar stayed there in the Fortresse of the Dutchesse a good while, till at last he departed from her, and tooke his iourney toward Constantinople.

Now as concerning the Prince Florendos, who sailed at the night with the Lady, till in the morning they discovered a Castle in the midst of the Sea, which was very artificiall founded upon a Rocke: where taking occasion to strike on shore, she began to Florendos in this manner. Sir knight, now will I declare for what cause I haue brought you to this place, letting passe my boldnesse vnder your knightly courtesie. Within this Castell abideth a Damosell, of as little vertue as beauty, who vnderstanding that I had espoused one of the fairest Lords in this Countrey, deuised the meane to acquaint her selfe with him, by reporting that a knight had depriued her of one of her Castles, so that by her intreaty, she won him to stay her Champion in her distressed cause. At the time as she had gotten him to her Castle, she fell into such vnlawfull liking of him, that she vowed neuer to suffer him to depart from thence, vnlesse such a knight came, as could preuaile against five knightes of maruellous strength, but against more then one knight, shee will not suffer Champion to enter combat, so that I stand in doubt, neuer to recouer my louing Lord and Husband againe, faire Lady (saith Florendos) send you to summon these five knightes to the fight, meane while I will prouide my selfe to stand in your defence.

Shortly after, he aduanced himselfe toward the Castell gate, he espied the five knightes to com forth at a talc doore, who were all strongly armed, and to the Prince one of them began in this order. Sir knight, wee esteeme it best for you to yeld your selfe, seeing Fortune hath been so much your enemy to conduct you hither: so shall you find vs friendly to you, where otherwise you may incurre your selfe double despite.

Trust me (saith Florendos) first I intend to trie your cruelty, before I will vse any regard of your gentlenes: afterward I will make you answere of my further intent. Upon this they came and assailed the Prince, and he likewise behaued himselfe with

with great agility against them: so that they confessed, they had neuer found such valour to remaine in one knight, and he, neuer to haue assayed a more perillous aduventure. Often they staied and fell to it againe, the Prince hauing slaine two of them, and the Lady vsing reprochfull wordes vnto them, that they shue had not the power to preuaile against one, which set the other in such a chafe, that they began to charge him with vnmereciful bloues, seeing they had no way to escape from him, because on the one side the sea hindered them, and into the Castle they could not retyze, for the lady within had commanded the gate to be made fast. Wherefore two of them fell downe dead before him, when the last knight seeing the danger he stood in, tooke the point of his Sword in his hand, and humbled himselfe before the Prince, as thus.

Worthy knight, since fortune hath allotted you the honour of this victorie, and that you haue preuailed against all my companions, let pittie enter into your heart, to saue the life of him, who most humbly submitteth himselfe to your mercy. I grant thee thy life (saith Florendos) because I will not be thought of such a bloody mind, to kill him that is not able to resist me.

Then sat he downe to rest himselfe, the Lady vsing great care to bind vp his wounds: when the Lady within the Castle, standing in feare lest her stubbornnes might procure the greater iniury, sent one of the damselfs, who opened the gate, which Florendos seeing, tooke the Lady by the hand, and entered the castle, where they met the Lord that had been prisoner so long, who embraced his Lady with very great thanks, for bringing the knight that had won him his liberty, to whom he began in this order.

Worthy sir, your knightly daedes haue gained such honour, that I cannot make estimation of them according as they haue worthily deserued, but if it shall please you to rest here a while, we will yeld you what contestie we can, and then we will depart together. Florendos gaue him great thanks, and stayed there to see the Lady that kept the castle: but he could not attaine to his desire, because she had made her selfe fast in her Chamber,

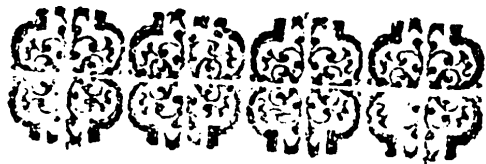


so that no one might come to haue a sight of her.

Then went he to see the place, where the Lady vsed to impris-  
son the knights, amongst whom he found the Prince Guerin:  
who receyved maruelously to see Florendos, and knowing that  
he had finished this hard aduenture, he accounted himselfe hap-  
py to be in his company.

After that eight daies were expired, they departed in a Gal-  
ley from thence, to the house of the Knight and the Lady, where  
Guerin and hee found themselves so gratioously vsed, as if they  
had ben in the Court of Constantinople.

Within a while after, they tooke their leaue of the Knight  
and the Lady, who gaue to each of them a very good Horse, and  
in their traouelling together, they parted from one another, be-  
cause Florendos desired to iourney alone, that he might better  
apprecue the aduenture, which Fortune had reserved for him.



CHAP.

CHAP. LXXV.

How Palmerin, Florian and Pompides, in their trauaile met  
with a Damosell, who brought them to the Castle of Dra-  
morant the Cruell: where they found Albayzar with the  
shield of Miragarda, who had vanquished twelue knights,  
and slew Dramorant the Lord of the Castle.



Almerin and his brethren, continuing in  
their trauaile towarde Constantinople,  
riding thorow a Forrest, saw a Lady come  
riding towards them in very great feare:  
who being come somewhat neare them,  
Florian staid her Walfray, saying: Faire  
Lady, I pray you to shewe vs the cause of  
your feare: Alas sir (quoth she) how can I stay to report any  
thing, seeing I dare scant assure my selfe in your company: for  
when I enterprised my iourney to the Court of the French  
Ducene, two knights came and resisted me, endeavouring them-  
selues to abuse mine honour. But Fortune was so favourable  
to me, that at my cry, a knight came who defended my cause:  
and behaved himselfe so worthily against them, that in open  
fight he slew them both. Then passing by a Castle at the end of  
this stone wal, he was assailed by twelue knights: who, I feare  
me, will be the death of him, if he be not speedily holpen by some  
good rescue, and trust me Gentlemen, the losse of him would be  
very great, being one of the most hardy knights in al the world.  
I pray you Lady (said Florian) bring vs to the Castle where the  
knight remaineth in such danger as you seeme to report: for it  
were great pittie, to suffer such a knight to die for lacke of helpe,  
Although (quoth she) I was otherwise determined, yet will I  
bring you to the place, as well to try your worthinesse, as also  
shew my good will to the knight, who in his owne danger hath  
pleasured me so much.

This said, they rode on together, & in short time they heard  
the

the clattering of the weapons, where they found the knight to haue slaine five or sixe of the knightes, behauing himselfe also very manfully against the other, whersat the Prince fell into great admiration, which the Lady seeing, how they sate still and looked on, began to enter into these wordes. Why Gentlemen: if you determined to doe nothing when you came, it had bene moze honour for you to haue kept en your iourney, rather then to suffer so good a knight to be slaine in your presence, and you stand by refusing to aid him, which maketh me iudge, that your weapons are very ill bestowed on you. Faire Lady (answered Palmerin) the knight doeth so well discharge his dutie, that we should offer him great wrong if we presumed to aid him: for so might we cut off the praise, which he should worthily beare in the obtaining the victory, which is the only cause of our stay. Mary, if we should perceiue the knight, to haue any dangerous aduantage ouer him, then would we shewe him such ayde in their resistance, that you should recall your wordes, and haue a better opinion of vs. While they continued this Parle, the knight (who was the famous Albayzar) of the twelve knights had left but foure aliue, which baged Florian to this opinion in wordes. I belieneth that this knight is ordained, to darken the deeds of all knights, yours onely accepted dore Brother Palmerin, whereunto I know he neither can nor may appoach, neuertheless, I know not any one that professeth knightly Armes, but would strue to exalt his deeds, seeing the behaviour of so noble a Champion. In fine, they perceiued all the knights to be slaine, except two, who were constrained to yelde themselves to this noble conquerour, when presently came forth Dramorant himselfe, very brauely mounted & strongly armed, which Albayzar seeing, mounted on his horse, & came to the prince Palmerin and his Brethren in this manner. I pray you gentlemen, to bestow one of your speares vpon me, to receiue the knight that prepareth himselfe against me, assuring you, that I will not forget to remember your courtesie in so doing. Sir, said Palmerin, because it is dutie to fauour such a knight as you, I am content to giue you mine, but mee thinkes, seeing your selfe soze hurt, you should rest awhile, and referre the Iust to one of vs.

Albayzar

Albayzar taking the Speare of Palmerin, said: If fortune bee so much mine enemy, that she suffer me to be brought into this knights subiection, you shall haue the better leisure and loue, to manifest the prowesse which remaineth in you. Then his Esquire seeing his master to want a shield, came and presented him the Portrait of the faire Miragarda, but Albayzar refusing it, said. That it was rather made to looke on, then to employ it to any vse in fight. So preparing himselfe to run at Dramorant, who seeing him destitute of a shield, cast his olone to the ground with these wordes. Albayzar, I am very soze to see thee in this poze estate, because the victory I might obtaine in vanquishing thee, cannot returne any great honour to me: and because thou shalt not thinke me, to haue any aduantage of thee, I giue thee this priuiledge which neuer yet had any. Here ending his talke, they fetched their course, and met each other with such puffsance, that they were both forced to fall to the ground, very soze hurt: then rising and taking their Swords, they beganne so fierce a Combat, that Palmerin did highly commend the valour of Albayzar, whom he would gladly haue knowledge of, which made him to begin in this manner.

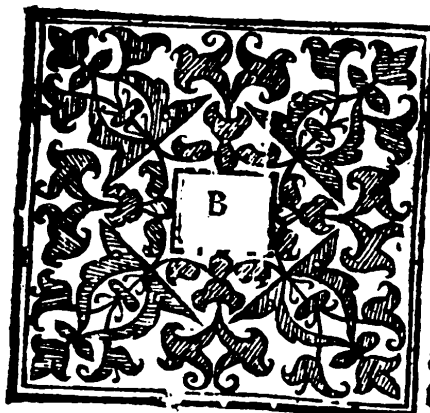
Truly I make such account of him, that detaineth in his puissance the Shield of Miragarda, as I verily beleue, Dramusiande who had it in keeping, hath bin vanquishing & brought into his subiection, which doth bage me to great maruell, seeing I could obtaine very little moze at his hands, so that were this knight so well disposed as I, I would hazard my selfe against him, to bring the shield to the place from whence he hath brought it. Credite me, said Florian, I can hardly beleue that Dramusiande is as yet vanquished, albeit the deeds of this knight may moue vs to thinke it: wherefore let him first finish his combat, and then we may be resolu'd out of this doubt. Albayzar & Dramorant stroue so long together, that Palmerin would haue parted them, but his labour was in vaine: for Albayzar would by no meanes giue ouer, till hee had discharged Dramorant of his vitall breath. When himselfe being at the point ready to faint with his long trauaile, as also the losse of his blood: Palmerin, Florian, and the Lady came and sustained him,

## The first part

him, leading him into the Castle, where they were better received then they looked for, and had good leisure to attend the wounds of Albayzar, which were very many, as also very dangerous.

### CHAP. LXXVI.

How Florian and Albazar made defiance each to other, and appointed to end their strife in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin.



Etasse you shall understand more of Dramorant the Cruel, the Historie declareth, how Eutropa the aunt of the Giant Dramusiande, had a Brother, who was named Dramorant, one of the stoutest Giants that in his time liued. He being in his flourishing yeres, became amorous of a faire Damosell, the daughter of a wise and discrete Gentlewoman, who

would not giue her consent to the marriage, wherefore he took her away perforce, and had a Son by her, named Dramorant, whose haughty and valiant deeds in time obtained the name of Cruell. It chanced the mother died in her trauell, which stroke so deepe to the hart of the Giant, seeing her dead by whose loue his life was maintained, that he through extreme griefe dyed shortly after, wherefore the child was kept by his grandmother, untill such time as he grew in yeres and strength, more then in decent and vertuous manners: for his whole endeavour was, to kill the innocent, rauish and spoile fayre Ladies, with his continuall inclination to all desperate and cruell attempts, so that he was feared of the Countrey round about him, untill such time as Albayzar came, and preuailed against him as you haue heard before. Palmerin, Florian, and Pompides, keeping him

company

## of Palmerin of England.

165

company in the Castle, untill he had attained a better disposition: Florian desired him to report, how he had gotten the shield of Miragarda. For (quoth he) I know not wel what to thinke, because he that kept it, is well knowne to be one of the best knights that euer professed armes.

Sir said Albayzar, I haue won the shield by prowess and worthinesse, and haue vanquished him that undertooke to keepe it. Moreover, I haue vowed not onely to present it my Lady Targiana, whose knight and obedient seruant I am till death, but also to shew it in all Princes Courts in the world, to manifest to all knights, who dare auouch the contrary, that my Lady Targiana, is the most faire and noble Princesse liuing. And in this opinion, I will first goe to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, to make proofe of that which I haue here professed.

Florian hearing his speeches so proude and arrogant, greatly enuied therat, and returned this answer. I am of the opinion Sir, that this enterprize will returne you small aduantage: for you shall finde in his Court, Ladies, to whose beautie your Targiana will seeme altogether counterfeyte. But that which is more, you shall finde so many knights to enter this challenge, that I doubt you shall receiue more shame by this ridiculous intent, then either fame or praise can any way beare you company.

Albayzar in a great anger, staied Florian with these termes. Sir knight, you see wel in what estate I am at this present, but if you dare take the paines to come to the Emperours Court, whither I intend to goe so soone as I may possible: I will cause you to know, how farre the beautie of my Targiana doeth surmount any Lady that you can name, if so be you dare enter the Combate with me: and hereon I giue you my hand, that I will not faile to be there as soone as you, if so be I may possible, where our doxes shall witnesse the worthinesse of the cause that we maintaine.

The three Princes vpon this departed presently, leauing Albayzar, to whom we will returne when occasion shall serue: but they endeaoured themselves so well in trauaile, that they

arriue

arrived in the kingdom of Hungaria, being glad they had attained so nêre to Constantinople. But Palmerin remained in his former doubts, as concerning the commaund of his Lady and Distresse: but Siluan the onely Philition of these extreame Passions, governed his maisters cogitations exceeding well. Nevertheless, his two Brethren perceiued somewhat, yet they durst not intrude themselves in the matter, but rid on till they came to a place, where they would take shipping to passe into Greece. And while the Mariners were providing for their departure, the Princes delighted to walke along in a faire plaine, where they had not long staied, but they espied a Coach covered all with blacke, and three Esquires that droue it, making very dolefull and grievous lamentations. Upon this mournful spectacle, Florian approached the Coach, and lifting vp the cloath, he beheld a knight lying in greene armour, so imbrued with blood, that one could hardly iudge of what colour it was. This moued Florian to great heavines, and being desirous to know the cause of his misfortune, he came to one of the Esquires, willing him to report, by what mischance the knight was slaine. The Esquire hauing small leisure to stay, made him shortly answer in this sort.

If you desire to vnderstand this infortunate hap of this knight, follow me, and I shall bring you to the aduenture, where you may atchieue such rare renowne, that neither death, nor time is able to extinguish out of memorie. Surely (quoth Florian) I haue alwayes desired to imploy my selfe, where I supposed to be the greatest danger, yet could neither feare dismay me, nor any doubt hinder me. And thus concluding his speeches, he followed the Coach, desirous to see the ende of that the Esquire had told him. Palmerin and Pompides seeing him gone so soone, walked softly along the valley, when in a while a Damosell presented her selfe before them, mounted on a blacke palfrey, and saluted them in this manner. I desire you gentlemen, that one of you would so much fauour me, as to goe with me to the succour of a Lady, whom three knights endeavour to abuse, & to put herto death in most cruel maner. Pompides hearing the complaint of the Damosell, began as thus to the Prince Palmerin.

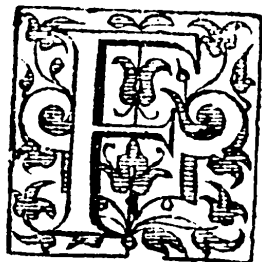
Seeing

Seeing this present enterprise, doth not require your force to be shewne therein, I pray you giue me leaue to accompany the Damosell, that I may try how Fortune will assist me in this cause.

Palmerin, who desired to be alone in the company of Siluan was very glad that Pompides should assist the Damosell: so taking leaue of each other, Pompides departed about his enterprise, and Palmerin to the accustomed remembrance of his Lady Polinarda, wherein he wasted so much time, that he could not repair to any place of lodging, but was glad for that night, to take his rest in a little thicket of trees. Where he had sooner laid him downe, but he heard one complaine in very doleful maner: when drawing neare, the better to heare him (the night being so darke as they could not descrie one another) he heard the heauy waight begin as thus. O fond Florendos, why dost thou thus complaine of thy griefe, seeing thy Lady Miragarda doeth take such delight therein, that she forceth not of his vtter ruine, who submitteth himselfe chiefly vnder her gracious regard? I knowe right well, that all trauaile may be ended, in the desire of one to doe you seruice: but what shall he doe, to whom you vse such entertainment, that you may not permit him leasure, that doeth you most honour, nor will suffer him to be forgotten and depriued of life, whereby hee might haue lesse occasion to complaine of your crueltie? So ending his mones with a grieuous sigh, he sate him down and fel asleep: then Palmerin perceiuing it was the prince Florendos, determined oftentimes to make himselfe knowne, but fearing to hinder him of his enterprise, changed his minde: bewailing as much the heavines of Florendos, as he did the extreame case of his owne misfortune. And when the day appeared, hee departed as secretly as he could thence away: desiring to attaine the Emperours court, where he might conclude the scruell motions of doubt and feare, which Loue presented to his oppressed minde.

CHAP. LXXVII.

How Florian, accompanying the Coach with the dead knight, met on the Seas with Arduramet, the bastard Brother of the valiant Albayzar, where they defied each other to the Combate. And what hapened to Pompides, following the Lady.



**F**lorian of the Desert, keeping company with with the Coach & the three Equires, being a great way out of sight from his brethren, one of them began thus to conferre with him. *Syr,* seeing you desire so much to knowe the knight who is slain, and that you haue affectionate to reuenge his wrong if neede were, giue care, and I wil discourse thereof to you at large. You shall vnderstand that this knight is named Sortibran, the eldest Sonner of the famous King Frisol, whose worthinesse hath alwaies bene such, that he neuer bare the name of the most renowned knight in all his kingdom.

So it is, that fortune very little acceptable to him, as yesterday conuoced an Equire to his Castle, who with weeping teares, desired Sortibran to assist him in a doubtful cause, where to he courteously gaue his consent, not thinking on the trecherous intent of the Equire, who brought him into a place where foure of his enemies alwaighted his coming, and setting himselfe against them all, in the end Sortibran was there cruelly slain. The being aduertised of this great mishappe, came to fetch him to his Castle, where he might see his wounded body honourably interred, meane while, one of his young Sonnes is gone to the Court, to seeke some knight that will reuenge his Fathers death. Therefore, if you desire to assist and succour him

him in this case, you shall not onely enlarge your eternall renowne, but also shall make such occasion, that none may or dare presume to commit any such Treason. Florian promising the Equires to accomplish their request, rid on with them, till they came to the Sea coast, where they entered a Calley, that attended their coming, and having there shewed the body of Sortibran, they sailed away with a pleasant gale of winde.

Not long had they been on the Seas, but they were discouered by foure Turkish Gallies, that came presently and besieged them, when being so much distressed, Arduramet, who was a Moore, and Captaine of the Gallies, came into their vessel, where beholding the many wounds of Florian, and iudging him to be a noble knight, he entertained him very courteously, commanding the Equires, to cast the dead body of their Lord into the Sea, and the next morning they heyled sailes, to goe on their iourney.

This Arduramet was the bastard brother to the Prince Albayzar, who was traauiling to seeke him, to giue him to vnderstand, that the Soldane of Babylon his Father was dead, after whom it was his right to succede his place. Arduramet in talking with Florian, demanded of him, if at any time he had heard of the Prince Albayzar, and reported such marks and tokens to him, that he knew well it was he, that had vanquished Dramorant the Cruell.

Then bethinking him of the Combat, assigned betwixt him and Albayzar, to be performed in the Emperours Court, and that his business had so chanced, as he could not make him there at the appointed time, he began to be greatly offended with himself, in so much, that Arduramet desired him to shew the cause of his heavinesse.

But when he had vnderstood each seuerall clause, in a great anger he began thus to rage: Thinkest thou there is any knight in the world, that may or dare attempt against my Lord and Brother Albayzar? certainly thou art much beholding to fortune, from deliuering thee from so great a danger.

Neuerthelesse, if thou hast so great a desire to shew thy prowess as here thou dost seeme to vse in protestation, let vs now goe to the Court of the great Turke, where I will make thee confesse before the Princesse Targiana, that Albayzar is the most honorable knight liuing on the earth, and she, the onely and perfect Goddess for beauty. Beside, if thou thinkest he hath offered thee any wrong, if thy stomache serue thee thereto, reuenge thy selfe on me, who will die in his cause, for proue wherof, receiue there my Gloue, if thou dare.

Florian, who desired to manifest his valour in strange countries, receiued very gladly the challenge of Arduramet, who thinking to honour his Brother with the Conquest of Florian, went to the Court of the great Turke, where to their determination, at this time we will leaue them.

Let vs now remember Pompides, who traualled with the Damoysel till they came to a thicket of Trees, where he heard one make a very great clamour, and looking aside, beheld a knight offering monstrous dishonour to a Lady, and two knights sitting by on Horsebacke, laughing at the simple shift she made, to defend her selfe from the villanous intent of the knight.

Pompides not able to suffer so great shame in his sight, couched his lance against him that abused the Lady, so that he ran him cleane thorow the head, and laid him dead on the ground before him: and dealing roughly a while with the other twaine, he serued them both of the same saue, as the iust desert of them that would abuse themselves in so vile a sort.

Then came the Lady, and submitted her selfe at the sight of Pompides, but the feare she sustained by their crueltie, would hardly suffer her to vse any speech: wherefore Pompides taking her in his armes, and seeing the heavy estate, and great perplexitie, he comforted her in this manner.

Faire Lady, let no feare as now seeme to dismay your mind, for here is no body, but such as will imploy themselves in your defence.

By Lord (quoth shee) these bloodie minded men haue brought me into such feare, that albeit I see them dead before  
n.2

my face, yet the remembrance of their crueltie doeth still make me afraide: wherefore I desire you to depart, and leaue me to mourne my great mishap, else shall I still be fearefull, as the Bird on the branch in danger of the Fowler.

Pompides began to smile, to see the little trust the Lady reposed in his company: neuerthelesse, minding to satisfie her desire, who was very beautifull, as also of a vertuous and honest disposition, he departed from her, accompanied with the Damoysel that had brought him thither. Who reported to him, how the knights that would haue rauished the Lady, met with her as she traualled toward the Court of king Frisol, who were newly come from the slaughter of Sortibran, and meeting with her, endeououred by their faire speech to allure her to their lust, but when they sawe she would not consent, they would vse her to it perforce. So Pompides departing from her, followed after Palmerin, because he desired to trauell still in his company.

CHAP. LXXVIII.

Of that which happned to Palmerin of England, after he was departed from the Prince Florendos, and how while hee was fighting with the Giant Bracandor, Albayzar arriued there and holpe him to ouercome his enemies.



After that Palmerin had left Florendos sleeping at the Tree, he came into a Forrest, halfe a mile from the Citie of Buda, where the King of Hungaria lay, and there he perceiued a company of knights and Ladies by a Fountaine, wherefore fearing least their company might bee some hinderance to his traualle, he turned his Horse to ride an other way, for it was all his intent to abandon places of resort, because hee  
p 3 might



might the better commune and dispute of his Loue. As he was ryding, he turned his head, and espied these pleasant company by the fountaine, to be very fiercely fighting together: wherfore he turned againe to goe thither, where he sawe this great conflict, but before he came, all was done and quiet, because the enemy had taken them that gladly stroue with resistance, who were the Dutches of Pontus and Duracā tra- uailing to the Court of their noble ffather, in the company of the prince Dirce, who in this vnfortunate skirmish was slaine. Which vnged Palmerin to great heauinesse when he saw him, as also the heauy cry the Ladies made, being in the hold of Bracandor, a mightie Giant, inhabiting there in a Roke, and had ten knights there daily waiting on him.

Palmerin pitying the Ladies mishap, couched his speare, and ran against the Giant with such force, that he laide him along on the earth, in manner as though he were sturke dead: which the ten knights standing by & seeing, came altogether running vpon him, but he defended himselfe so wel, that they had not the power to vnhorse him, for his hardy blowes made them quickly cole their courage. Bracandor being risen vp againe, commanded the knights to retire, because he would reuenge his injury himselfe: wherupon they gaue ouer, when the Giant and Palmerin fiercely dealing with one another, Bracandor in the ende began greatly to faint. The knights seeing the danger he was in, forced not of their Masters commaund, but came and beset the Prince Palmerin, who (albeit he receiued many dangerous hurts) paide them their due, but little to their profit.

The Ladies continued in prayers for his good assistance, esteeming him the best knight that euer they had saue: and Bracandor seeing the maruellous force of one onely knight, beganne to blasphemie his God, and ran in such violent manner against the Prince, that had not God indued him with great pollicie and force, the least of his blowes was sufficient to haue slaine him. Bracandor beholding six of his knights slaine, through his dangerous woundes, and dispaire of himselfe, fell to the ground: Palmerin being well pleased to be rid of such an enemy, in short time sent the other foure to beare their Master company, to whom

whom he came, offering to take off his helmet, that he might haue presently cut off his head.

But Astapardo came forth accompanied with ten knights, and charged him so sudainly, that he had not leisure to commend himselfe to his Distresse. Palmerin was reduced into very great perplexitie, yea, and his death appointed in this furious skirmish: had not the puissant Albayzar presently arriued there, who seeing the great injury was offered to one knight, and that it was he which gaue him his speare, when he fought against Dramorant the Cruell: he ran against Astapardo in such manner, that his speare went quite thorow his body and Armour, and the other behaued themselves so well, that the most part were slaine, the rest saued their liues by flight. Palmerin seeing himselfe deliuered from so great a perill, came & offered great thanks to the Prince Albayzar: but he not suffering him to vse any such courtesie, without making knowne what or who he was, set spurres to his Horse, and rid away in great haste.

Then Palmerin returned to Bracandor, and finding him to be as yet aliue, he commanded the Esquires to leade him after him, and so he rode to the City of Buda, accompanied with the Duchesses and the Ladies, who were very sozie for the death of Dirce and their other knights, but well pleased againe by the noble and haucie deeds of Palmerin.

CHAP. LXXIX.

Here shal be declared vnto you, what and who the Giant Bracandor was, & wherfore he came to remaine in that place.



Which report the Hystory deliuereth vnto vs, that in the Perilous Isle there remained a Giant named Bucarquant, who ruled the Isle in such cruel maner, that his subiects the did stand in more doubt of him the death. So that to put him beside the gouernement of the Isle, they concluded to conspire his death by poyson. As for his Sonne Bracandor, who was innocent of the wicked and diuillish deedes of his ffather, yet fearing that gouernement would prick him to the like cruelty, they chased him out of the Isle, giuing him no other company, then his Nephew Astapardo. These twaine went into the kingdome of Hungaria, where they purposed to people a little Mountaine, to which they had giuen the name of the Inhabited Rock, for in no other place might they be suffered to liue in quiet, because reuenge would be sought for the cruell deedes of Bucarquant. Where they had gotten a company of bloody minded and dishonest knights liuing by robbery, despoiling faire Virgins and Ladies, and all villainous deedes that might be deuised, till at last they heard of these Duchesses, who went to see King Frisol their ffather in law, accompanied with the Prince Dirree and other knights. Suddenly they came and set vpon them, so that the Prince and the knights were slaine, as also fue of them belonging to Bracandor, till to their rescue came the Prince Palmerin, who behaued himselfe as you haue heard before.

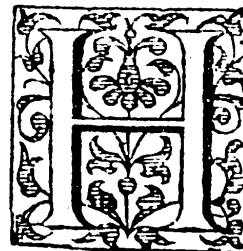
When they were come to the Citie of Buda, the King Frisol vnderstanding the death of his Sonne, tooke it so heauily, as such

such a great losse did so creable constrain him, yet he dissembled his griefe, and came with the Duchesse to the Prince Palmerin, giuing very great thanks for his courtesie, and commanded he should be died with maruellous good respect, till his wounds were healed, and his strength somewhat better increased. The Citizens tooke the giant Bracandor, & without the kings leave they put him to death, burning his bones, that nothing might be left to be seene of such a cruell villaine. Soone after, King Frisol, not able to withstand the extremitie of his griefe, manely yielded his daies to the stroke of death, which was no final griefe to his noble Linage, but as well to his totall & obedient subiects, who greatly lamented the losse of such a gracious Prince.

His Obsequies and Funerales most magnifically finished, Estrellant the Son of the Prince Dirree, receiued the name of their rightfull and renowned king, who committed the gouernment of the Scepter to one of the most noble Lords in all Hungaria, because his time of ease was not as yet come, but would follow the exercise of a valiant knight at Armes. And Palmerin staid a while in the Citie of Buda, till his strength would permit him to beare Armour, and then hee followed his intent, which was alwaies to see the places of greatest aduenture.

CHAP. LXXX.

How Don Florian being in the Court of the great Turke, entered the fight with the Bastard Arduramet, and vanquished him.



Here must we remember Arduramet and the Prince Florian, who being landed, came to the Turkes Court, where Arduramet receiued great thanks of the Turke himselfe, for the Prisoners he had taken in his fortunate voyage. When comming to the Princes Targana, whose gentle nature afforbed

afforded him a gracious welcome: Arduramet deliuered his speeches in this manner. By gracious Lady, since the time I departed from your excellencie, I haue endured along and tedious trauell, to recover my Lord and Brother Albayzar. And albeit it was not my fortune to meete with him, yet haue I heard such report of his deeds, as my heart is contented, and my labours finished, assuring you, that he hath weone such renown against the Christians, that they which haue no knowledge of him, doe daily desire both to see him, and to make prooffe of their puissant behaviour against him.

Beside, I haue heard, that he hath conquered the Shield of the faire Miragarda, wherewith he is gone to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, to maintaine against all knights that dare auouch the contrarie, your selfe, to be the onely Goddesse of beautie on the earth. And during the time I was in his search, it happened I took certaine prisoners: among whom I found this knight, who both told mee newes of my Lord Albayzar, and how hee had assigned to fight against him in the Emperours Court, wherupon such words arose betwixen vs, that we haue appointed a Combat to be tried and ended in this Court.

Florian seeing the great pride of Arduramet, was stricken with such collier, that hee began to utter his mind in these speeches. Arduramet, we are arrived in this place, where I must intend the meane to accomplish my promise. And albeit Albayzar is a valiant knight at Armes, as the effect of his deeds do manifest no lesse: yet will I maintaine and prooue against you, that he hath not won the Shield by any manner of Conquest. As for the Prince Targiana, her beautie I both esteeme and conuour, cannot chuse but spend happily in all his deeds. But if it shall please her to licence mee the field, I will defend against you, Albayzar, and all the knights of your law, that I rather deserue to be receiued in her seruice, then you all, or any that you can esteeme of.

Arduramet, who could not suffer these braue words, especially of

of one that was his prisoner, in a rage cast his Helmet on the ground, & began to raile in these tearmes that follow. Oh Mahomet, why dost thou suffer in my presence, a Christian to presume in so vile and presumptuous brags? By gracious Lady, I desire you to assure this misceant the field, for I will not to leaue him, til I haue reuenged this rare and monstrous injury.

Targiana commanded Florian to take of his helmet, to whose will in gentle manner he presently obeyed: but he was so offended with the words of Arduramet, that his beauty was farre otherwise, then it was alwayes accustomed, for which cause, the Princeesse commanded Arduramet to depart, and to make himselfe ready to enter the combat. As for the Prince Florian, her affection was so greatly placed on him, that she tooke him prisoner vnder her protection: and the better to assure him safe from danger, she commaunded fiftie knights should be presently armed, to see that none might come neare to hurt him, during the time he should combat with Arduramet.

Then Florian kissing her hand, departed to the place appointed for the fight, and she vp into the Chamber, to see how every thing happened, and then came the fiftie knights into the field by the aduice of Targiana, where Arduramet was prauncing like a noble champion, and the great Turke himselfe stood in the window by his Daughter, desirous to see the ende of this noble enterprise.

Arduramet beuoluing himselfe to the Princeesse Targiana, couched his Speare against the Prince Florian, with these words. Now, my Lady, I will cause this knight to knowe, that your seruants can, and will bring all other into their subiection: but Florian brake his Speare so valiantly vpon him, that hee sent him to the ground with marvellous violence, wherat the great Turke was somewhat displeased, but Targiana greatly triumphed.

Arduramet so sorrowfull for this mishap, came to the Prince with his Sword in his hand, as thus. Sir knight, my Sword shall make amends for this fault, which if thou offer not the sooner to resist, I will trench my Blade in the bellie of thy Horse. I perceiue well (said Florian) it is needlesse to vse any

aduantage

advantage to such a knight as you, and so descending from his horse, betwene them began a dangerous Combate. Wherein Florian so cruelly martyred the Armour of Arduramet, that the great Turke would gladly have had them parted, fearing the death of Arduramet, but Targiana desired him to let him trie it out, because her minde did assure the victoꝝ to the strange knight.

Arduramet seeing himselfe so ill intreated, thought many times to have yielded himselfe: but thinking on the shame he might get in so doing, concluded to fight till his latter gaspe, which in short time he did, and fell downe dead at the fete of Florian, who departed out of the field, and came to the princeesse Targiana, in whose presence he fell on his knee, uttering these speeches. Faire Lady, it is not unknowne to you, that through mischance and unhappie adventure, I have bene brought into this land, where I am strange to all, and not knowne of any: where, seeing your bountie hath allowed me the victoꝝ, I desire in recompence of the great honoꝝ you have done me, that I may henceforth imploy my selfe in your service, wherein I shall manifest, how greatly I am bound to your gentle and courteous nature. Targiana somewhat changing colour, looked earnestly on her father, and then came and receiued Florian very graciously, allowing him to be her onely knight: whereat the great Turke was very well pleased, and he staid there in the service of Targiana, who was no lesse affectionate towards him, then he was willing to doe that which pleased her.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXXI.

How Dramusiande and Florendos fought together, and hurt each other very dangerously, and how Palmerin arrived there, and wrought the meanes to relieue their feeble estates.



The Giant Dramusiande, of whom no mention hath been made since his departure from the Castle of Almarol, trauailed many Countries, to find the knight that had taken the Shield of Miragarda thence: in which trauaile, he proued both famous and fortunate, that at last he arrived at the Castle of Dramorant the Cruel, who was his kinsman, and there he understood, that he which had slaine Dramorant, was the knight that carried alway the shield of Miragarda, which made him the more affectionate and desirous to seeke him. And as he rode through the Dominions of Hungaria, he met a knight riding very sad and full of heavines, attired in blacke Armour: to whom he vied a courteous greeting, but the knight made him no answer at all, whereupon he took him by the hand, saying: Sir knight, why do you not make answer to those that offer you courtesie?

The knight being in a sad conceit, and at these words reuiling himselfe, cast his eyes on Dramusiande very grievously, with this answer. Trust me sir knight, this heart of mine is so afflicted, these eyes so overwatched, and these eares with silent opinions so much dulled, that I am ignorant whether you saluted me or no: but if you should thinke I heard you, and refused to answer you with the like, credit me, you should very much become your selfe. I perceiue well (quoth Dramusiande) you haue spoken the truth, wherewith I hold my selfe well contented: but could you report me, where I might finde a knight, who beareth a shield, wherein is pictured the fairest face that euer

ever nature framed, having on it the letters of her name, which are, the paterle and iniquall Miragarda.

At these words the knight gaue a grievous sigh, saying: Surely sir, I doe greatly desire to mate with him my selfe, because my trauels are to no other end, and I sake him, easily to combat with him, to bring backe the Shield, with his head to the Castell of Almaroll, from whence he was so held as to take it away. So that this enterprize toucheth me more then any one aliuie: wherefore, I desire you to give euer your trauell, and be in the danger of this aduenture, which maketh me the more desirous to follow it. Dramusiande (who was ignorant of this knight) seeing him to vse his intent in that order, endeouored to know him, but his labour was spent to no ende or profit. Therefore they were so incensed with such anger, that they gaue scope to their Stades, and met together so nobly, that they were both dismounted to the ground, and then they fell to it afresh with their swords, so that their Armour and expence of their blood, witnessed the dangerous estate of both their persons. For Dramusiande thought, no two knights in the world could handle him so, without it were the noble Palmerin, or Florian his brother, which made him a great while to think: this knight was one of them, till at last faintnesse one either side willed them to breath, when Dramusiande looking on his battered armour, began on this manner.

O wretched Fortune, am I brought into such debility, that I haue not the power to vanquish this one knight? Alas me dare I know this mishap chanceth, onely because you haue no mind to remember me. This fight haue I attempted vnder your gracious name, wherein suffer me not to be vanquished, but grant me so happy, that I may render your Shield againe into your custody: and after ward (in recompence of my dutifull and faithfull seruice) put me to death if it be your gracious pleasure.

The knight on the other side was as grievously passioned, thinking verily to finish his daies in this Combate: wherefore, he began in this order to vse his complaints. Madam, I should

be very happy (considering the desire I haue alwayes had) at this present houre to ende all my troubles, because your delight hath euer bene, to bring me to the last extremity of my vitall course. Yet am I highly one way contented, knowing that I die in the honourable seruice, wherewith I haue continually endeouored to gratifie your desire.

So breaking of his speeches, they fel very egerly to their combat, and at last was brought vnto such feblenesse, that they were both forced to fall to the ground: but Fortune, who preferred them to a greater conquest of honoz, caused at that very instant, the noble Palmerin of England to arrive in that place, who knowing Dramusiande, supposed verily that he was slain, wherefore he came to the other knight, and taking his Helmet off, and perceiuing that it was the noble Florendos, he became so ouercharged with grieve, that he could hardly sustaine himselfe from falling to the earth.

Then he commaunded Siluian to goe to the Citie, and presently to bring Chirurgions with him, because he thought verily they were almost past recovery: and Siluian knowing, that the death of these two knights, might be an occasion to put his Maisters life in danger, vsed such diligence, that in short time hee returned with two very expert Maisters in Chirurgerie. Palmerin desired them to manifest their knowledge at that present, in recovering the health of those dangerous wounded knights, and his recompence should erre in liberalitie: so when the Chirurgians had searched their wounds, they found them not so dangerous, as their weakenesse and wearinesse, wherefore they promised (by the grace of God) to bring them in to as good estate of health as euer they were. The Prince reioyced at their good answer, and caused Siluian to fetch a Coach from the Citie, wherein they were brought to the house of an ancient Gentleman, and there Palmerin bare them company, untill they were able to traualle againe.

## CHAP. LXX XII.

How Albayzar came to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, and of the conditions he made there, to begin his adventurous intent.



**V**ery well provided, and full of renowned knights, was the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, at such time as Albayzar (having left Palmerin of England, where he dwelleth Bracandor) arrived there: When alighting from his Horse, he came by into the great Hall, in very faire greene Armour, beset with golden Spencers, with two Esquires attending on him, where finding the Emperour sitting with the principall of his knights, he thronged thorow them, and reuerenced himselfe before the Emperour, with these speeches.

Most dread and puissant Emperour, I haue bene constrained to visit your Court, for two causes which I hold as especial: the one to see the noble mindes that are alwayes here abyding, the other to try my selfe against them all, on her behalfe that hath sent me hither. Giuing you to vnderstand, that for the loue of the fairest, and most noble Lady in the world, I haue bene at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where by force I haue obtained the Shield of the faire Miragarda, which by force I beare, onely to honour that Saint, to whom I homage my heart, and will enforce all knights to yeld as vassalles. So that if your Highnesse will licence me the field, I will compell all the knights of your Court, as also any other that dare auouch the contrary: My Lady and Mistresse Targiana, the onely Daughter to the great Turke, my Lord and Soueraigne, is she that shall beare the prize all for beautie.

And these conditions I doe require in mine attempt, that the Defendart, on his Shield shall bring the Knyly Portayt of his Lady,

## of Palmerin of England.

174

Lady, with her name to be verified at the scote thereof, because it shall be the onely recompence the Conquerour shall gaine. And there be any, who will manifest themselves to be but indifferently fauoured of their Ladies, they shall be swozne to giue in writing the name of their Mistresse.

As for him that hath the good hap to vanquish me, he shall not onely be Lord of the shield of my Lady Targiana, but shall haue likewise deliuered to him, all the shieldes which Fortune shall allow me by my prowess. And furthermore to be granted, that the knight dismounted in the Iust, shall not haue the licence to fight with his Sword, but as vanquished, deliuer his Shield, and so depart.

Now expect I your answer most redoubted Emperour, as concerning y request of him, that hath trauailed many a strange Countrey: and now cometh to make triall of the valure and puissance of your knights, if so be they can conceiue the courage to adventure the combat on the behalfe of their Ladies. When he hadde ended his speeches, a great tumult arose among the knights and Ladies of the court, who were very desirous to see Albayzar in the field: the Ladies, to know the valour of their amorous seruants, and the knights to manifest the cause to deserue their loue, euery one wishing to quallifie this presumptuous challenge.

The Emperour would make no answer to Albayzar, till such time as he had conferred with his Councell: when then he returned with this reply. You haue (sir knight) attempted such a haughty enterprise, as if wee should deny, we should not onely grant our cowardise, but also hinder you of many noble exploits, to the griefe of your selfe, as also of such knights, as haue a desire to shew themselves in the field. Therefore, the feld is licensed you at what time you please, and your conditions allowed, which were before specified: but I desire you first to resolve me of one thing, are you not allied to the Soldane Oloricque of Babilon, because it seemeth you resemble him somewhat in fauour? My lord (answered Albayzar) the curtesie you haue offered me, moueth me in humility to kisse your gracions hand, assuring you that I am the son of the Soldane Oloricque, and am



am called by the name of Albayzar.

The Emperour arose immediately and embraced him, saying: I would gladly see you in my Court, in another estate then you are at this present, but loue shall now excuse your enterprise. And then he commaunded, a Chamber should be provided for him, but he made refusal thereof, because he had sworn not to depart the field, till he saw the issue of his haughty desire.

The Emperesse and Gridonia sent vnto him, desiring that he would suffer them to view the Shields of Targiana and Miragarda: whereon they entred into iudgment, that although Targiana was very faire, yet was she nothing comparable to the Princesse Miragarda. With seuerall suppose they went from hand to hand, till at last they came to the Princesse Polinarda, who was somewhat offended, to see the princesse Miragarda so singular and faire: which made her now to wish, that the noble Palmerin of England would now arrive at the Court, for she perswaded her selfe, that his worthinesse would aduance her to the glory of the Shields. So that sometime she was minded to send for him, but then by and by she altered her thought: so that she ministred occasion, to some disdainfull minde of that noble Sex, how no stability or constancy, is to be found in a woman.

Then was the picture of Alcea brought, which for a precious Jewel, supplied a come in the Emperesse coffer: and comparing her with the faire Miragarda, she was found to differ very far in beautie. Albayzar receiuing his Shields, departed to the place appointed for the Tournament, where the Emperour had commaunded two Tents to be erected: and on a Pillar neere adioyning, was placed the faire Portrayt of the Princesse Targiana, and Miragarda was set at her fate, in signe of being banquished. And because it was as then somewhat late, the knights had not the oportunitie to trie themselves that night, wherefore they referred their determination till the next morning.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXXIII.

What happened to Albayzar, at his first running at the Tilt.



On the morrow, the knights preaced apace to the Toust, when struiuing who should bee first, caused a murmur to arise amongst them: wherefore the Emperour commaunded the Judges of the field, that no one should approach the Tilt, but first to be permitted by their appointment. Then was Crispian of Macedon allowed the first Toust, but Albayzar would not receiue him, because he brought not in his Shield the Portrayt of his Lady, according to the order appointed: in like case all the other knights had failed in that point, wherefore the Toust was fixed for foure daies, in which time, enery one had his Lady to be artificially figured.

On the fifth day, Emerald the Faire, who was reputed in the Court, for a good and hardie knight, presented the Regardants a Shield, wherein was pictured the faire Arcezaura, and hauing done his duty to the Courtly Attendants, hee ran against Albayzar, who met with such puissance, that he sent him headlong to the ground. Then Escarol entred the field, presenting his Shield, wherein was engrauced his Lady, and Artinella bianca written vnder her: whose ill fortune was such, that he was sent to keepe the Prince Emralde company, and their Shields placed vnder the faire Targiana.

The next were Alcaris and Rugeralde, both of them the seruants to Belliana, daughter to the Duke of Constance, each of them bearing her Picture in his Shield: whom Albayzar serued even as he had done the other. Wherefore the emperour commaunded the Toust to cease for that day: greatly esteeming y noble valour that he had seene accomplished by the Prince Albayzar.

The Emperour came to the Iusting place the second day, a great deale sooner, and the Ladies hied to the windows, to see which of their seruants should accomplish the best endeuour, but Albayzar was on horseback, attending him that shuld first come, who was Sir Badiart the knight to Lucenda, but the tendernes of her beauty, and simplenesse of her knight, made his Shielde be placed amongst the other. After him came Ricardoze, for his faire Adoretta, Argolant, friend to Poliphia, Archanero of Sclauonia, the knight of the faire Juliana, Leonardin & Baruolant, French knights, and both affectionat to the Princesse Arnalte, Alisban, the seruant of Armenia, and diuers others that I will not name, to auoide proliitie, but Albayzar still remained victor, to the little content of the Emperour, who saw his knights so foiled, as also the noble Primaleon, who determined if he remained stil conquerour, to enter the combat against him. Oftentimes would Albayzar frequent the Image of his Lady, with his Amorous discourses, being so blinded in Loue, that the picture of Miragarda, whom euery one commended, he supposed inequall to his Lady Targiana. The Retrait sounded, euery one retired, & the Emperour after supper, required the Prince Albayzar to the dancing, where the vanquished knights durst not shew themselves, because they were ashamed to come before their Ladies. The dancing done, euery one betooke themselves to their Chamber, & the Prince Albayzar departed to his Tent, enioying very litte rest, because of the desire he had to bee at his pastime. In the morning, Albayzar was very earely in the field, rehearsing diuers purposes before his Lady Targiana, no lesse proud and stately, then like the franticke fittes of a Lovers inuention. And while he stood musing to his Lady, the Judges of the field caused a Tree to be placed by the Pillar, to hang the Shielde vpon that Albayzar won, and on the toppe they set the Shields of the Princesse Miragada, in token that it had been attained in Combats, whereas the other was but the figure of his owne amorous loue. Then entered the field Bellizart, the Sonne of the Prince Belcar, very brauely Armed, before him was carried the Picture of his Lady, the faire Dionisia, Daughter to the king of Sparta, & in his owne Shielde he

he bare for his deuise, a Scithian Archer with his bow and quier of Arrows. But albeit he was a strong and hardy knight, at the second meeting he was dismounted, & Albayzar forced out of one of his Stirrops, which he recovered againe quickly.

After Bellizart, came Don Rosuel his brother, presenting his Shielde, bearing the Portraite of Dramaciana, the handmayde to the Princesse Polinarda, but he was likewise dismounted at the second Iust. Whereat the Emperour was greatly grieved, and soe that he had granted the field to the Prince Albayzar, for the knights of the Court were almost disheartened, because the two noble Brethren was overcome so soone, and their Shieldes placed among the vanquished knights.

CHAP. LXXXIII.

What happened on the sixt day of the Iust.



Albayzar stayed very long the first day, before any came to present themselves at the Tilt, wherefore the Emperour went to the chamber of the Princesse Gridonia, where he leaned in the window, beholding Albayzar to sit in the gate of his Tent, vsing many amorous cogitations to the Picture of Targiana, as concerning the trauailes he had attempted, onely for her loue and fauour. But while he was busying his eyes and mind on this beautiful prospect, a knight entered the fielde armed in blacke, whereon was dispeared little flames of fire, bearing in his Shielde the like shew, which hee presented to the Judges, and couched his Lance to doe his duty. But Albayzar seeing he wanted the Image of his Lady, refused to enter the Iust with him, which the knight seeing to be denied for so small a matter, came to Albayzar with these words.

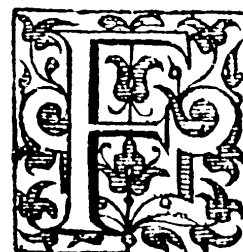
Sir knight, you aske much of him, who wanteth to answere that which you seeme to craue, for if the shield I haue presented lacke that you would haue, and I as much wissh, it is onely to continue it in resemblance to him, that hath borne it many a day with grief, but neuer a houre of ioy or gladnes. Yet haue I scene the time, I could haue presented you a picture which could haue enforced you to a great maruaile, & my selfe very litle to esteeme of your might, but so unhappily hath Fortune frowned, and my present hope sequestred from any good hap, that I can present you with nothing, but this dolefull apparance, which in midst of my misfortunes, I beare with an afflicted mind, the onely image of him, that sometime hath had, and yet in time may, a ioyful countenance of his Lady and Distresse, desiring you to excuse me, for this is the best auailles, that Fortune hath left me.

Sir knight (answered Albayzar) I willingly would, that the picture wherewith you threaten me, were at this present in your gouernment, for then would I make you knowe, that I beare another, whereto all Ladies liuing ought, and must giue place. Neuerthelesse, seeing the Emperour hath stayed so long in regarding your honest speeches, and the extremitie of griefe which you haue reported, constraineth me to breake my promise, I francke and freely permit you the Iust. When couching their Spears, they passed the first course very gallantly, but at the second, the knight was sent to the earth with his hailes upward, & Albayzar so greatly terrified with the stroke, that he lost both his Stirrups, and was constrained to hold by the mane of his Horse, or else himselfe had borne him company. But when he perceiued the knight ready to charge him with his sword, he leaped from his Horse, aduancing his shield to beare of the hardy blowes of the knight, so that betwene them beganne such a dangerous Combate, that the regardants hardly knewe, to whome to impute the most aduantage. But Albayzar, to whom Fortune had bene alwayes friendly, suffered him to charge the knight with such mightie blowes, that by litle and litle he perceiued him to faint, wherfore at last, frant able to hold out any longer, he retired himselfe, entering into this discourse.

I know right wel, that weapons were inuented to maintain honour, as also to discharge any perillous aduenture, wherfore, it had been much better for me, to haue past my life without frequenting them, then to abide the milchance wherin I remaine at this present. Alas poore wretch, I thinke to vanquish Fortune, but in the ende I finde my selfe vanquished, I know well enough, that he which keepeth himselfe from falling in her snares, hath little cause to doubt any puerse or stowarde chance, but fonde soles that I am to complaine in this manner, being the Authoꝝ of mine euill, and wilfully seeke mine owne damage. Whereupon he valiantly assaulted Albayzar againe, who in short time subdued him, and laid him at his foote: and being vnarmed, was found to be Floraman the Prince of Sardignia, which made the Emperour somewhat offended, fearing that Albayzar would vanquish all the knights of his Court. When was Floraman carried into the Pallace, the Ladies greatly lamenting for him, because of his inuiolate & faithfull constancy, but albeit Albayzar remained victor, he was verie sore hurt, and brought into great weakenesse and danger.

CHAP. LXXXV.

How after Albayzar was healed of his wounds, he returned to the field, and continuing the Ioust, vanquished diuers Knights.



Floraman remained sore hurt for the space of two monthes, onely through the griefe he sustained for his mishap, which was a cause, that the medicines presented to him were bestowed al in vaine: wherfore the Emperour accompanied him diuers times, because his behauiour was so vertuous and honest, it made euery one desirous to beare him company.

But all the honourable visitations, & friendly good well bestowed upon him, had no power to appease his extreame griefe, for that he rather desired the death then any other comfort, so that no solace was so sweete to him, as the remembrance and often desiring of death. When time had brought him to his former strong estate, the Emperour desired him not to leaue the Court, to whose will he would not shew himselfe disobedient, but staid there for Palmerin of England, and the renowned Florendos thinking Albayzar not able to resist against them.

But Albayzar in his pride thought the contrary, for not contenting himselfe with his victories past, he was no sooner in disposition to beate Armour, but he presented himselfe againe in the field, perswading himselfe to be Lord over all those, that durst conceiue the courage to deale with him. For such is the nature of a proud and arrogant minde, that spending a while well to his content, he thinking alway to remaine in that good fortune, but we hauing an ancient Proverbe. Desire hath no rest, till it lie in the dust. In this prodigall opinion, he put on a singular faire Armour, not regarding the mishap that might chaunce vnto him, because fortune as now, had placed him on the top of her wheele, whereon to wise man will repose a seat of assurance, for that her variable and mutable condition, doth alwaies bring her most fauoured to greatest misery. The first day after his health, in the morning he Iusted with Flauian, Rotandor, Ariagonel, Claribal of Hungaria, Araruando and Tragandor, who were all foiled, and the shields of their Ladies placed among the conquered. After dinner, he ran with Luyman of Burgondie, for his Lady Altuena: Dridan the secret friend of Princesse Polinarda, Dramian, for his faire Florian, Gracian, for his faire Claritia, Francian, for his Bernarda, Berolde, for his Oniualda, Blandidon, Pompides, and Platir, with diuers other, against whom he preuailed to his great honour and praise, and the aduancement of the faire Targiana, hauing all the honour given to her shield, which was so honourably placed in the midst of all the other, that the Grecian knights seeing the hauty valure of Albayzar, quite forgot all the courage they would vse in such an honourable attempt.

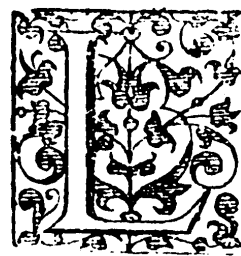
Primaleon

Primaleon armed himselfe diuers times, desirous to chastise the pride of the Prince Albayzar, but the Emperour would not suffer him to proceede, because he bare great affection to the Soldane Oloricque, which he would not seeme to change to his valiant Sonne.

Albayzar sojourned very long in Constantinople, without finding any to Iust withall, wherefore he perswaded himselfe, to attaine as great credit by not finding any to deale with him, as he did in vanquishing those that came to the Tournament. But Palmerin, Florendos, and the Giant Dramusian, would not haue staid so long from thence, if it had not been for diuers aduentures, which constrained their determination, so that their absence was the cause Albayzar was so much esteemed, and in euery Princes Court, nothing at this present was talked of, but the expert valiantnesse of this noble Moore Albayzar. Whom the history willeth vs to leaue a while, because we haue forgot the Prince Florian too long.

CHAP. LXXXVI.

What happened to Don Florian of the Desert, remaining in the Court of the great Turke.



Long time sojourned Don Florian in the great Turkes Court, highly esteemed among the hardy knights, and most honoured and beloued of the Princesse Targiana, whose amorous company made him forget his martiall enterprizes, in so much, as hee wholly shaped himselfe to please her fantasie. Their loue took such deepe perswasion on either part, & Florian burst his lance in y face of Venus, & Targiana yielded her chiefeest Jewell,

Is well, vnder the obeysance and conquest of Cupid, being both of such an indifferent opinion together, that Loue was the only Mistress of all their actions.

During the time that Florian remained in this state, and Targiana busied her mind on their wonted amorous deuises, reported the great victories of Albayzar in the Turks court, which newes were accounted of so great estimation, that the behaviour of the Prince Florian was almost forgotten, a thing which was very vnwelcome to him. Wherefore, one night talking with the Princesse Targiana, shee began to recount the dutie, wherein the daides of Albayzar had bound her by courtesie, and how she could hardly fulfill the promise, shee made him at his departure. On the other side, she thought that Fortune would allure Florian to some dangerous enterprize, and then should she abide in sorrow, thinking on the hard mishap, that might estrange the remainder of her daies.

Florian perceiuing the cause of her heavines, and yet dissembling as though he knew it not, thought now time to play his part, wherupon he began to her in this manner. My good Lady, if in your opinion, the daides of Albayzar are of such account, that in thinking on them, you forget mine, you offer me an vn- gentle reward of great discourtesie, seeing I receiue no other content, but onely in your company. And hee maintaining the honour of your beauty, against which I know none is able to contend, I know assuredly if the taske were mine, I should make both men and monsters offer you reuerence. As for the victories Albayzar hath attained, they ought of right to be giuen to you, seeing the noble are vanquished by your beautie, rather then by the courage and sword of Albayzar, to whom you attribute so large commendation. But would you grant me leaue to go & seeke him, and to fight vnder the soueraigne fauour of your name, you should then see to which of vs you are most bound, who should best deserue to be admitted in your seruice.

Targiana standing still a pretty while, at last shee tooke Florian by the hand, and began in this order. I desired (worthie sir) one thing long since, and now I am of the opinion, that my desire will enforce me to accomplish the same, wherein your request

request may be satisfied, and mine owne will sufficiently content- ed, and thus it is. I meane in the habite of a traouailing gentle- woman, accompanied with your selfe, two Damosels, & foure Esquires, to iourney from hence, to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin: and the better to winne my fathers consent in this case, I will desire of him, that I may visite mine Aunt the Quene of Assyria, which request I know he will not deny me, so that by this meane I shall haue opportunitie, to proceede in this, to content both your and mine owne desire. But first I meane to send a messenger to the Prince Albayzar, that he shal not depart from Constantinople, till such time as he haue further tidings from me, through which meane, we shall be in the more assurance to finde him, at such time as we arrive at Con- stantinople, assuring my selfe, that he which hath so great desire to please me, shall not refuse to grant so small a request.

Florian, who alwayes desired to escape the handes of these Infidels, and seeing the time to present him with a fit occasion, began greatly to commend the enterprize of Targiana, saying to her, that she ought presently to put her deuise in execution, else, her desire might happen to catch a suddaine death. Because it is the natural property of some women to thinke a thing speedily, and to forget it presently, yet often times they are hasty to such things, as in the end procure hurtfull to themselves: so example let suffice the Princesse Targiana.

Who on the next morning, came into the chamber of her father, and therewith teares (which is great pitie to see in a woman) shee began to rehearse, how shee had bene aduertised, that the Quene of Assyria, her Aunt, by misadventure was falln into a suddaine sicknesse, for which cause shee humbly desired him, that he would permit her the leaue to goe and visite her. The great Turke, who had not other ioy, then his faire Daughter Targiana, as loath to displease her, granted her request: but hee could perswade her to take no other company, then the two Damosels, the foure Esquires, and Florian, who was usually called in the Court, the Christian knight. They departed on their iourney, very brauely and gallantly appointed, arrived in short time within y<sup>e</sup> Dominion of Constantinople, where riding thoro-  
row

rosw a pleasant balley thicke beset with Trees, the Princesse desired to stay a while, till the heat of the day were somewhat passed. Not long had they rested them, but they espied foure knights coming riding towards them, who seeing the Princesse Targiana, and being lately come from Constantinople, wher they had bin vanquished by Albayzar, in whose Shield was her picture so naturally drawn, that the knights haue bin ouermuch blind if they had mistaken her: wherefore knowing, and perswading themselves it was she, one of them offered her these salutations. Faire Lady, we esteeme it as lawfull and honourable, that they to whom your beauty hath bene a cause of great losse and damage, should haue the aduantage in recompence of their mis-happe, to bring you to their Ladies, before whom your selfe may manifest, the great difference that is betwixen you in beauty.

Florian arose vp in an anger, and gaue them this answer: Gentlemen, if you be well, follow your way, if you haue receiued any mischance, impute it to your folly, and not any occasion proceeding by your Ladies: as for this Lady, she is not so fond as to goe with you, nor I so foolish as to accomplish your will in such a vaine request. You answered so brauely (sayde) one of the knights) that now we are fully determined she shall goe with vs: and if you seme, or dare offer to offend her, we shall quickly cole your courage, because you are disposed so suddenly to chafe.

When Florian mounted on horsebacke presently, and came vnto the with these speeches. Now am I determined, to try if your wordes will proue according to your words, you may come to me one after another, or all foure at once and if you please: for disloyalty can neuer shew it selfe, but where it is continually resident. Tuff (said one of the knights) do not hold such a proude opinion with your selfe, for one of vs alone will find you worke enough and that is my selfe, who will be so bold as to stay your hastinesse: as for my fellowes, I iudge they would thinke it dishonour to them, if they should deale with such a one as you. Florian not able to abide these words, ran with such courage against this creaking companion, y his speare passing cleane thorow him, he

he threw him dead to the ground: then the other coming violently vpon him, he serued them in such sort, that two more of them were slaine, the other was glad to saue his life by flight. Florian being discharged of these foure knights, alighted from his Horse, and came before his lady Targiana: who was so wel contented with the victorie of her knight, as she would haue been displeased, if Fortune had allotted him the contrary. And in this pleasure, seeing the night approach so fast vpon them, she commanded the Esquires, to plate their three Tentres in the bottom of the Walley, neere to a greene bancke, whereby there ran a pleasant little Brooke: thinking to finde more pleasure, then to remaine all night by the dead knights. In quiet rest they passed there the night, because the tediousnesse of their journey, did gladly with them to enioy some ease.

## CHAP. LXXXII.

Of that which happened to Don Florian, departing out of the Valley, where he vanquished the foure Knights.



When the cleare morning had awaked, the Princesse Targiana and her company, they packed vp their prouision, and departed on their iourney, greatly desiring to be in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin. In the afternoon they came into a goodly Forrest, where stood an excellent faire fountain very ingeniously framed, & it was reported, that the Emperour Marcellus (who in his time, was curious to cause rare edifices and braue inuentions to be framed) had erected this faire fountain in the Forrest. Which seemed to be true for two causes: the



the first, that this Emperour was very much affectioned to haue his dwelling in a solitary place, nere to some pleasant spring, or some such faire and costly fountaine: and the second, because the name of Marcellus was in many places about the fountaine, nere whereunto was two knights, who suffered their steds to receiue the water.

Targiana seeing such a singular prospect, in a place so conuenient for repose, desired the Prince Florian to pause there a while, whereto he presently agreed: when the Princesse taking off her Maske, the two knights, who very well regarded her, affirmed that it was shee, for whom Albayzar maintained his valiant Iouste. Wherefore, they consented betwene themselves, to take her with them to their Ladies, through whom their shame might be the better couered, which they had attained, by receiuing the infortunate soile in the Iust: so putting their Helmes on their heades, they approached nicker to the Princesse, when one of them began as thus. Madam, you ought not to wish ill to those, who receiuing a sharpe repulse by your beautie, conceiue the courage of minde to seeke a remedie: for you shall vnderstand, that a knight hath vanquished vs at Constantinople, who maintaining the excellent state of your beauty, hath wooon the shields whereon were figured our Ladies, and hath honoured you, with placing them at your feet. Wherefore to let our fault passe with the more make penance, it behoueth you to depart with vs: so shall our offence be the lesse esteemed of those, that both may and must command vs.

He thinketh sir (quoth Florian) that you should not blame the innocent, but the little defence in your selues to keepe your shields, without further presuming on fortune, who may happen to prouide you a farre worse inconuenience. I perceiue then (said the knight againe) that this Ladies beautie, causeth you to vse your tearmes so bluntly, which I doubt you are not able to maintaine, albeit you may make good account of your manhood.

What shall you trie sir (quoth Florian,) and so closing his helmet, he charged them in such order, as they were both ashamed (against the dutie of knightthoode) to assaile him, whose stoutnesse

stoutnesse still detained Targiana, with the death of one of the, which the other seeing, fell on his knees before the Princesse with these words. Madame I desire you to appease your anger with the death of my fellow, and the grievous woundes that I haue receiued, and let mercy pleade my cause, though I be unworthy, yet thinke I, that my life would but little pleasure you.

Targiana beholding his repentance, desired Florian that hee would forgiue him: who presently granted, commanding him that the dead body should be caried away, whereto the knight not daring to gainsay, willed his esquire, to lay him ouerthwart before him upon his horse, and so they departed together, the knight more grieued with himselfe, then he was before he had seene Targiana. Who walking on with Florian said, that shee thought there was no place of assurance in all the Countrey. Trust me, said Florian, I neuer before sawe it in this order, but yet it ought not to be maruailed at, for one the one side the shield of Albayzar, & the other side your beauty, causeth these aduentures to happen as they do. For those that haue bin vanquished, gaining the sight of your excellent feature, cannot chuse but threaten themselves with greater danger, for Nature framed you onely, to bring all those to extremity, that dare conceiue the hardinesse to behold you. Targiana seeing Florian so deepe in his praises of her, stayed him with a Conge ouer the lippes, and seeing a very faire Tree not farre from them, she tooke him by the hand, saying. Let vs goe walke a while vnder yonder faire Tree, for my minde assureth me, that things will happen more strange, then any we haue yet seene. Madam (quoth Florian) I would wish to come where is the greatest danger, that you might know he wille I esteeme my merit, being accompanied with her, who is the onely shield of my safety. And if Albayzar hauing but your picture, ouercometh the most puissant knights in the world, what might I do, hauing the seemely person which maketh me to desire, that fortune would send a hazard, aboue all other, then should you see the forceable magnanimity of your beauty engraned in this heart of mine, with such a haughty disposition, that death, no, no, a thousand deaths is able to withstand him.

him, who preferreth the title of your excellencie, as the chiefest honour vpon my knightly Sword.

These two Louers thus walking & talking, found the words of the Princesse Targiana to be true indeede, for at the fote of this Tree, they espied a goodly knight laid along, & no company with him, for his Esquire was accompanied to depart fro him, that his Maister might the better report the amorous complaints which were alwayes resident in his pensiuo minde, and this knight had one very faire blew Armour, his helmet seruing vnder his head the office of a Pillow, where he lay without receiving any rest, but gaue forth sighes & complaints in very dolefull manner. Which Targiana & Florian desirous to heare, and loath to disturbe him being so seriously busied, withdrew themselves a litle so closely as they could, when the knight, not thinking any to be so neare him, began to vnfold his griefe after this order.

My Lady, how haue I bene offensive to you, that you should offer me so great vngentlenesse: leauing me alieue to wish daily for death, and yet you are so obstinate, that you will not suffer me die, onely that I might passe my time, in vnestimable opinion of endles torments. And to my greater griefe, I often wish to prolong my life in doing you seruice, wherto you vse such vnfriendly meanes, that you will not permit me to be imployed therein, but as the onely Authour of mine euill, and daily occasion of my mercilesse Passions, forget the extremitie I abide for your loue, and in a neuer dying death, compell me to waite the course of my life. Which trust me serueth very strange, for that I neuer saw affliction in any man, but there was some meane whereby to tollerate it, as for mine, it keepeth at one certaine stay, and when it cometh to the best change, it falleth from an Ague Quartaine, to a Quotidian, as if all mishap were onely meant to me. Other men sustaine their griefe in hope of a short end, but my Fortune is such, that mine extreames will neuer take end, which vrgeth me to this beliefe, that you triumph to see me tormented, and iudge me vnto death to live in your seruice, in which vocation, I content my selfe so well as I may.

But

But me thinks you should remember, that rigour is not to be shewne to him, who hath not deserued it: which hauing considered as you ought, you shall find, that you haue giuen too rash a recompence to him that hath deserued a better reward, & that your vngentlenes hath bin more, then either custome can bold you, or curtesie beate you in. And thus he ended her complaint with such a grieuous sigh, as though hee had fetcht by slatter gaspe. Florian attached with griefe, to heare the heauy tale of this distressed knight, tooke his Lady Targiana by the hand to returne: but the knight hearing the noyse, which the Silke apparell of the Princesse made in the Bushes, started vp, and putting his Helmet on his head, came to the Prince Florian with these words.

Abide Sir Knight, and because against another time, you shall learne more manners and discretion, defend your selfe, for I trust you shall report my Promise, where you take occasion to rehearse my complaints. Seeing Sir (quoth Florian) you are so minded, it were folly for me to offer any excuse, and therefore proceede in your determination. So drawing their Swords, they beganne a very braue fight, charging one another in such dangerous manner, that Targiana commended this exployt above all that she had seene before. While they were thus animated against one another, a knight in greene and white Armour chanced to arriue there: in his Shield hee bare for his deuise a Speare, which was pierced in many places, with blowes that he had receiued he had two Esquires attending on him, and was desirous to knowe the cause, why these two knightes endured the Combate so cruelly. Wherefore, he came to the Princesse Targiana, to knowe of her: but when he had beheld her a while, he quite forgot what he should demand: and because he was one of the knights that Albazar had vanquished, he had knowledge of her presently, wherfore, he set her vp behind one of his Esquires, and riding away with her, gaue her these speeches. Faire Lady, seeing these knight are not able to beare you company, I know none so worthy as my selfe to keepe you, for through you. I shall recompence all the dishonour I haue gotten.

A a

Targiana

Targiana seeing, that neither her faire intreaty, nor resistance by her small strength could pacifie him, & that Florian maintained the Combate so fiercely, he could not heare her cry, beganne in this order to perswade him. I know not, Sir Knight, how you dare presume to make entrace vpon an others possession, seeing that although you haue the power to carrie me away with you, yet my good will and affection, shall alway be estranged to you. And seeing there is no remedie, I pray you suffer me to goe on foote to yonder fountaine, where abide mine attendance, who shall goe with me: assuring you, that they haue no weapons, wherewith to assist against you, or defend me. I am content (said the knight) to satisfie your desire, as he that most desireth to honoꝝ you in seruice: so they walked downe to the fountaine, where at this time we munde to leane them.

Don Florian and the knight were so earnest in their enterprize, that they neuer perceiued when Targiana was carried away: but if they had seene her they were brought to such weaknesse that they could not haue rescued her. In which dangerous estate, Fortune was so friendly vnto them, that Dramusiande (trauailing toward Constantinople, to recouer the shield of the faire Miragarda) arrived there: where seeing the extremitie that these two knights were in, and knowing by the Armes the Knight of the Dragon, as also beholding another knight to endure the Combate so well, he was greatly abashed, and fearing to lose the man he most loued, he gaue his horse the spurs, and ran betwene them with these words.

Gentlemen, I desire you at my request to end your debate, so: that your weaknesse rather requirereth rest, then to continue your discord in so extreame danger: at least, Sir Palmerin (speaking to the Knight of the Dragon) you should not refuse to grant my desire, so: in so doing, this other knight I hope shall haue occasion to thanke me. When Florian heard the name of Palmerin, he conceiued such griefe, that throwing his sword from him, he fell to the ground in manner as he had bene dead: wherfore Palmerin, seeing so great debilitie in him, that he had found so vertuous and valiant, commaunded Siluan to vntie his Helmet, that he might receiue the ayre. But when hee knew

knew that it was Florian of the Desert his brother, he was ready to fall to the ground himselfe, had not Dramusiande used diligence to stay him. Florian rising, and seeing his brother Palmerin so illintreated, began to him in these words. How might I recompence the great offence I haue committed, that so great a wrong should so much gouerne my senses, as not to know the hardy blowes of my noble Lord? My noble brother (answered Palmerin) see me not on your part to take any thing amisse that hath happened, but rather let vs bethinke with our selues, how to requite the courtesie we haue found in our deere friend Dramusiande.

Florian contented himselfe with his Brothers answer, but when his Esquire had giuen him to vnderstand, how a knight had carried away his Lady Targiana, he was ouercharged with grieue beyond all measure, and in this great heauinesse, he determined to make pursuite after him. But Palmerin would not agree thereto: and moreover Dramusiande shewed him the danger wherein he was at that present, making him faithfull promise, that so soone as his wounds were brought into better estate himselfe would undertake the trauaile, as earnestly as hee did the Shield of Miragarda. Yet for all this, the griefe of the Prince Florian was so great, that neither counsell nor friendly intreatie could perswade him. But Dramusiande hauing accomplished the means, to set both the Princes on Horsebacke, departed with them from out the Forrest, when Florian casting his eye towards the fountaine, and thinking on her he had lost by such misfortune, the teares standing in his eyes, he began as thus.

Thou Valley, whose entrance seemed so pleasant to mee, I know that the issue will valus my mishap too deare: so: neuer will I cease to trauaile, and yeld my life among all mischances, till I haue found the swete content I haue lost, which by no meane I know I can euer forget. When they departed the Forrest, they came to a Monastery, where their wounds were cured with great facilitie: and Dramusiande so soone as hee had brought them to the place, went backe to the Valley, purposing to fulfill that he had promised to Florian. And here the history leaueth

leaueth these thre knightes : returned to him that had carried Targiana away, perswading himself in her company, to attaine the title of immortal praise.

CHAP. LXXXVIII.

Here shal be rehearsed, who the knight was that carried Targiana away, and what happened to him in her company.



**R**emembrance is made in the History, how the King of Denmarke had thre Sonnes, all of them proued to bee noble and valiant knights, especially the eldest, who was called Albanis of Freze, so renowned thorow his fathers Kingdom, that there was no knight durst encounter with him. He being come to the age of fife and twenty yeeres, and hearing the braue report of the Princesse Miragarda, he became so affectionat to her, that leauing his Fathers Court, he traiailed to the Castle of Almarol, accomplishing many notable doeds by the way, and arriued there at such time, as Albayzar had carried the shield thence.

When he saw he could not attaine his will to enter the combat he staid till fortune would suffer him to see the princesse Miragarda, at whose view hee became so severely vanquished, that he vowed if it were possible to bring her sheeld againe, and if Fortune did stand his friends so much, he purposed to make her greatly beholding to him: but she was of such a strange condition, as I haue told you, that she reioyced to receiue euerie one, without making shew of their welcome. Albanis prauailing in diuers aduentures, came to the Cittie of Constantinople, where seeing the number of shields this valiant Moore had

had won, and the great renoune was held euery where of his valour, he purposed to manifest his courage against him. But albeit his worthinesse was very great, and that he brake thre speares on the valiant Albayzar, yet was Fortune so much against him, that he receiued the soyle, & his Shield was placed among the conquered knights. Being departed from thence, out of opinion euer after to serue Miragarda, hee arriued in the valley where Florian and Palmerin fought: where beholding Targiana, he esteemed her the fairest Creature that euer he had seene, and knew it was shee, on whose behalfe Albayzar sped so happily. Whereupon, he concluded to bring her with him to Constantinople, to trie if Fortune would fauour him better against Albayzar, hauing in his presence the faire Targiana, to whom he offered great honour and curtesie, which was not of power, to altar the faithful affection she bare to the Prince Florian.

Well, on they rid, and drawing nere to Constantinople, in an euening they met a knight in blacke Armour, riding very sad and heauily, to whom Albanis gaue speech of friendly salutation: but the Blacke Knight rid on without making any answer, whereat Albanis was somewhat displeased, and desirous to shew some courage before Targiana, he turned to the Blacke Knight in this manner. Sir, albeit my words are so little esteemed of you, that you haue made no shew of a courteous answer, yet doe I thinke it had bene your dutie, to offer some friendly motion to this Lady: whereto the Blacke Knight made this reply.

Good Sir, if I haue bene obliuious of my selfe towards this Lady, I am ready to recompence the same in what she shall commaund: but if you seeme so discourteous in speech, because I haue not saluted you, trust me you are very farre from reason, for my minde was so busied with other affaires, that I neither saw you before me, much lesse did I heare you. I would faine knowe, sayde Albanis, from whence ariseth the cause of your doubt, to see if it be sufficient, to excuse your vnciuill behaviour. Say (quoth the Blacke Knight) I would wish you to keepe on in your iourney, for to tel the cause of my griefe to you,

would gladly pleasure me, and but little profit you. Albanis being desirous to know what he had demanded. Was so importune on the Blacke Knight, that he took the field at his pleasure, and encountred Albanis with such force, that the horse fell doونه with his shoulder broken, and before Albanis could recover himselfe, the Blacke Knight alighted, and forced him to abide his mercy, which done, he was riding away, but Targiana came and stayed him thus.

Sir Knight, I desire you, euen as you make hazard of your person in many dangers and magnanimitie doeth accompany you against all aduersity, that you will not abandon those who lie in affliction, but beare the gentleness of mind to keepe them company. And if so be you traualle to the Emperours Court, suffer me to be a partner in your journey, for that my businesse lyeth in that place, to expect a knight, who conducted me in my traualles hither. Lady (answered the Blacke Knight) I thought this knight had undertook to conduct you, but now perceiving the contrary, and that you are minded to goe thither, where of force I must be: I will pleasure you in so small a request, albeit the extremitie of my life stand thereon.

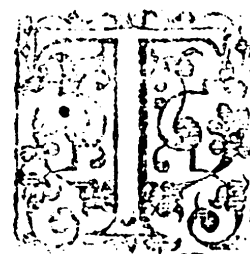
And thus they departed together, leaving Albanis more sorrowfull then euer he had bin. The Blacke Knight by the way, requested of her, wherefore the knight had enforced her to goe with him, to whom Targiana ript vp the whole matter, wherefore the Blacke knight gaue her greater honoꝝ, then he had done before, for he knew it was she, in whose cause Albayzar kept the Shield of Miragarda, which made him somewhat to excuse the doede of Albayzar, for that the beauty of Targiana, would haue braged any knight to aduenture the hardiest exploit.

They arrived at Constantinople, where Albayzar was appointed to depart from thence, and to carrie the Shields away with him, because none durst aduenture to recover them, which made the Emperour greatly agrieved, esteeming this y greatest shame that euer happened in any Princes Court. On the other side, Primaleon was so chafed, because his father would not grant him to Combate with Albayzar, that he was minded to stay his coming foure miles without the Citie, and to beare in his

his Shield the Image of Gridonia, which he had secretly caused to be made, to see if he might vanquish Albayzar, and bring backe the Shields to the ladies that had lost them. But fortune so hindered him, that his purpose took not effect: and also would not suffer Albayzar to depart thence with so great glorie.

CHAP. LXXXIX.

How the Blacke Knight entred the Combat with Albayzar.



The Blacke Knight lodged that night without the City, in the house of an ancient Gentleman, because he would not be knowne, and the next morning, Targiana attyred herselfe very sumptuously, in a Gowne of the Turkish fashion, of Crimson Sattin, adorned with braue ornaments of gold and precious stones, and mounted on a Palfrey as white as a Swan, her Damosels and Esquires likewise very braue in apparrell, and attending on her in seemely order, in this maner she came into the City, accompanied with the Black Knight, & arrived at the Justing place, where Albayzar had euen then conquered an English knight, and placed his shield among the other. The Emperour with all his Courtly company, beholding the braue gesture of the Blacke Knight, with the noble company he brought with him, had good opinion that he should end the Joust: which made the Ladies and the knights, to throng to the best places of sight, because now they looked for some notable exploit: but that which caused the greatest amazement, was the beauty of the Princesse Targiana, with the rich and sumptuous shew of her apparrell, which made the people run on heapes, with very great murmuring: whereat Albayzar somewhat abashed, cast his head aside,

and seeing his Lady Targiana, he could hardly sustaine himselfe from falling to the ground. The Blacke Knight staide a good while beholding the shields Albayzar had conquered: but when he saw the portraite of the faire Miragarda, the teares ran down his cheekes, and he began in this manner.

Madame, how is it possible, that the thing wherein Nature hath shewne all her skill to make it surpassing faire, should bee in the power of him, that might be glad to be vanquished by you: for my selfe, I would triumph to be found so fortunate at this present, because I desire to die to maintaine the truth, and I hope to discover the deceit of Albayzar, in such sort, that his recompence shall returne what he hath iustly deserved. Albayzar greatly reioyced to see his Lady Targiana, for whose loue she had attained such estimation of honour, whereby he had so farre over-shot himselfe in his prodigall pleasure, that he stood in a maze, whether it was she or no. The Black Knight hauing ended his complaint, and seeing Albayzar so farre distracted, put himselfe a little nether, and awaked him with these wordes. Albayzar, whereon doest thou vse thy mind so mutely: I aduertise thee, that the Princesse in my company is called Targiana, the daughter of the great Turke, who hath taken the pains to come hither to see thy valour, which is so much blazed & commended through the world. Albayzar at these wordes alighted from his horse, and hauing taken off his helmet, he came and kissed the hand of Targiana, with this manner of salutation. Madame, I know not how I may requite my selfe to you, hauing honored me so highly about my desert. Targiana receiued him very graciouly, giuing him hearty thanks for his noble seruice, whereof she made such estimation, that Florians deeds were presently forgotten, yea, and so farre banished out of memorie, as though she had neuer seene him in all her life, manifesting rightly the inconstancie of such as regard their seruants, according as they are raised in authoritie. Albayzar hauing done his duty to the Princesse Targiana, mounted on horsebacke, and began thus to the Blacke Knight. Sir Knight, I would faine know, what moued you to bring my Lady hither, as also if you haue desire to enter the List, for upon the presenting your shield, you shal be receiued.

Sir

Sir (quoth the Blacke Knight) after the strife is concluded betwene vs, she shall discourse the certaintie thereof her selfe. But as concerning the shield, which you say I must present, to be allowed the Iouste, I am at this time vnprovided thereof, because thou hast disloyally stolne it, which else I might haue woone here to honour my Lady. Wherefore I haue thus determined by my puissance, to cause thee confesse the same, before this honourable assembly: and if Fortune fauoureth thee so much, as to suffer me be vanquished at thy hands, faile not to reuenge thy selfe on me, as on the greatest enemy that euer thou haddest: but if I vanquish thee, I desire no greater victorie, in recompence of the trayterous wrong thou hast offered me, then to carry backe the shield of my Lady Miragarda, to the place where it hath alway been accustomed to remaine. I am content (answered Albayzar) that if Fortune permit thee conquerour ouer me, thou enioy all these shields she hath suffered mee to vanquish, and that thou bring me to the Castle of Miragarda where she shall ordaine for my life as pleaseth her: and the like shall my Lady Targiana deale with thee, if mine accustomed good happer returne me the victorie. Sir (quoth the Blacke Knight) my will is thereto as ready as thine: albeit thou shalt finde no more friendship at my hands, then I will offer to my greatest enemy.

The Emperour with all the company, were suddenly stricken into a great maruaile, when they had heard the wordes of the Blacke Knight, especially Primaleon, who desired greatly to haue knowledge of him, whereupon, the Judges commanded them the field, and Targiana entred with them, according as Albayzar requested.

The Trumpets sounded, and the knights mette so courageously with each other, that Albayzar was thrown to the ground his heeles upward, and the Black Knight was dismounted with the saddle betwene his legges, because the girtes of his horse were broken, or else he had kept on horseback still, which made the Emperour to iudge, that Albayzar should not depart with such honour as he thought for. When they had done their wordes, they laid at each other in such terrible manner, that



That Albayzar thought he had neuer met with a stronger knight and the Blacke Knight very well esteemed the strength of Albayzar: so that the generall verdict was, neuer had been scene a more haughty combat. For Albayzar was encouraged by his Lady Targiana, & the Blacke Knight so animated with the picture of Miragarda, that betwene them was declared the deedes of incredible prowesse.

At last, Albayzar seeing his Armour so bedewed with his blood, and himselfe brought into such extremitie, hee retyred to take breath, and began thus to complaine. What do the noble victories which I haue attained against many noble mindes, preuaile me now in any thing? seeing that at this instant, I must lose all the glorie I haue gotten. Oh my Lady Targiana, if I haue had the power to vanquish the best knights in all the world in your absence, why suffer you one knight to preuaile so much against me in your presence? to loose my former honoꝝ, is more deere to me then life, which falling out so contrary as it doth, maketh me to thinke, that you are more affectionate to some other then you are to me, which is the onely cause the victory will not fall on my side. But yet what Princess is there in all the world, more bountie, beyond you in beautie, or better deserueth the title above all titles then you? truly, I may lose the victory of this combat, through defect of my weaknesse, but not by any fault that is in your excellency, where to the fairest aliue may not seeme to aspie.

The Blacke Knight on the other side, seeing his dangerous estate, and that he could not assure himselfe any good successe, silently to the picture of Miragarda, he entred into these speeches. Madame, seeing it hath pleased you, to vie me in affaires that haue greatly touched me, I desire you not to forsake me in this enterprise, which is wholly yours, wherein, though Albayzar hath vanquished many knightes to his honour, and praise of Targiana, who excelleth all these figured Ladies in beauty, yet shew you your selfe excelling all other in that singulargift, to overcome him that hath conquered so many. For I perswade my selfe, you wil not fauor him that hath done you such wrong, as dishonourably to beare the shield from your Castle: but let me that

that am your true and faithfull seruant, giue you the honour of this haughty attempt, and afterward deale with this cursed carcase of mine, even as it shal stand with your gracious pleasure. After this they fell to the combate a fresh, when the Emperour seeing the small defence they had for themselves, supposed they could not long continue the fight, and Prima Leon through opinion which came by nature, in griefe of mind receiued perfectly the cruell wounds of the Blacke knight, as though he had felt them vpon his owne body, because he supposed him to be of his lineage. And by the cruell behaviour they vsed to ech other, the Emperour & Grondona departed, as not able to abide the grieuous sight of these two champions, who after they had griped one another by the closing their arms, Albayzar, as too weak to resist any longer, fell to the ground, whereat the Blacke knight reioyced and vnclosed his helmet to haue smitten off his head, but the Emperour called to him to vse more mercy, yet he making as though he heard not, lifted by his sword, when the Princess Targiana fell before him on her knees, with these speeches. My knight, first I desire you to strike off my head, and after ward proceed in what shal please you, for loth would I be to see him die that hath ventured his life in danger, to do me such honorable seruice. The Blacke Knight seeing the modestie of the Princess, was moued with pittie, wherewith he granted Albayzar his life, and then the iudges came into the field to haue the Blacke Knight honoured, according as became a victorious conquerour. But he would not depart out of the field before the Portraict of the faire Miragarda was placed in the midst, where, against all reason, the Princess Targiana supplied the roome, whom he led with him, to be honoured according as her hie estate did deserue. The Emperour commaunded Albayzar should be led into his Tent, meane whiles the Blacke knight kissing his highnesse hand, vpon his knee began in this manner. Most dread and mighty Emperour, I desire that this Princess may be regarded about all in your Court, for you ought to shew more honoꝝ to her, then to any other person that I know. The Emperour knew that the Blacke knight was his noble nephew Florendos, his heart was supprised with an unspeakable

loy: and chiefly his father the Prince Primaleon, who caused Albayzar to be brought into the Palace, & understanding that Targiana was the daughter of the great Turke, lodged her with the faire Princesse Polinarda his daughter, who greatly desired it at the hands of the Emperour, and there was he as honourably served, as had she bene in the Court of the great Turke her father the Prince Florendos and Albayzar, had great care used to their dangerous wounds: and the shield of the Princesse Miragarda, was now held in chiefest estimation.

CHAP. XC.

How a Damofell of Thrace brought a strange aduventure to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin.



While Florendos and Albayzar remained at the cure of their wounds, the Emperesse and Gridonia, as glad that the victory chanced to Florendos would often come and visit him, reporting their iudgements on the singular forme of Miragarda, which talke partly wrought as much for his health, as the medicines that were applied to his wounds. Likewise, the Emperour and Primaleon, would often visit Albayzar, using comfortable speeches, whereby he might forget the griefe he sustained, because he was vanquished: but Albayzar dissembled with a good countenance, deuised with himselfe how he might worke iniury to Florendos, which afterward he did, as you shall perceiue at large in the second volume of this Historie. In the meane while, the Court of the Emperour, was stozed with the most renowned knights, and Ladies of incomparable state of beautie in all the world: so that there wanted no other thing there, than the two renowned knights of England, whose presence in the Court, made the Emperour to thinke, y then no force might preuaile against him.

While

While they were in their triumphing, the Emperesse, Gridonia, Targiana and Polinarda, sitting vnder the Cipresse Trees nere a very faire fountaine, a Lady of a maruellous and mighty stature presented her selfe before them, whose seemly iestures and sumptuous shew in apparell, made them beleeue shee was of great authoritie. Her attyre was of Sattin, cut and laide out with cloath of siluer, a purple robe compassing her bodie, wheron was placed a number of rich and costly precious stones, her long sleeues hanging downe, were thicke beset with Birds, Harts, and other braue deuises of fowles and Beasts of gold: that the eye could neuer be wearied, beholding a thing of such inestimable value: there attended on her two knights, the one hauing in his armes a very faire coffer, which was closed with little Lockes of Gold, and brauely garnished with Pearles and precious stones of marvellous cost and reputation.

When the Emperour and all were placed, to regard the cause of her arrival, she receiued the Coffer of the knight, and with a little key of Gold that hung about her necke, she opened it: whereout she toke a curious and costly Cup, which was so artificialle composed, that beholding the outside, might easily be discerned what was within, which was nothing but water, so hard congealed and frozen, that it was impossible to moue any moite thereof. After she had held it a while in her hand, she deliuered the Coffer againe to the knight, wheron she set the Cup, and looking wisely vpon all the company, at last she began to utter these speeches.

Most noble Emperour, I haue been in so many Princes Courts, to make triall of the strange aduventure contained in this Cuppe, that, not finding any to ende the same, I am wearie to seeke any further, as also out of opinion of any good hap. Except that now in your Highnesse Court, which is most honoured and esteemed vpon the whole earth, I may find such expected fortune, as of long time I haue failed in, which doth encourage me somewhat, considering there is not the like. But first before the triall be attempted, I will discourse the cause of this rare aduventure, because each one of these noble gentlemen, may be the better affectioned to her, who holdeth his heart as chiefe

these Distresse of his thoughts. There was sometime ruling in Thrace, a king whose name was Sardamant, so excellent well skilful in the Art of Magique, that for the qualitie of that gift, he surpassed all other living in his time. His King had a daughter, of no lesse beauty then Curtly behaviour, who was greatly beloved of two knights, the one called Brandimar, the other Artibell, but they kept close their secret love from each other, till fortune, the enemy to their good hap, discovered their good liking to the displeasure of both. It chanced that this Princesse, being named Brandisia, esteemed chiefly the service of Artibell, which her father misdoubting, kept her close in a Tower: but she had won such a persecution betwixt them, that Artibell accomplished a devise without suspicion, as oftentimes to visite & solace with his faire Brandisia, for by a Ladder of Ropes, he climbed so often to the window of the Princesse, that time converted the issue of their delights, to *una bella figliola*. Brandimar passing oftentimes by the tower of Brandisia, desirous to see his delight, which these walles enclosed, one night by chance, saw when Artibell came downe by his accustomed Ladder of ropes, which made him so offended, that forgetting the league of amity betwixt them, he set upon him, where with their cloaks wrapped about their armes, and their rapiers drawn, after a few words, they fell to strokes, which by fortune the king heard, and coming thither with his gard, he found Brandimar almost slaine. Whereupon Artibell was committed to prison, and Brandimar having declared all to the king, shortly after received his life. The king knowing that his daughter was conceived with child, kept Artibell in prison till time of her deliverance, upon which day he caused him to be beheaded, and in this Cup, he sent her the hart of her beloved Artibell. The Princesse perceiving the cruell revenge of her father, and desirous to accompany her deere friend in death, took the Cup, and making a thousand complaints over the heart of Artibell, she continued mourning so long, till she had filled this Cup with her teares. Afterward thinking this not sufficient, to manifest the faithfull love she bare to the knight, she took the Cup and sent it to her father, uttering to the Messenger these speeches. Tell my father, that it may be, he hath sent mee this true

true and faithfull token, of my most affectionate & loyall friend, only that I should shew in the massuring of mine owne life, my hart to as jointly united, with this harmelesse heart of my deare Artibell, whom since I loved in life, I wil not forsake in death, neither for my fathers rigor to him, and cruelty to me, but will honour his death with losse of my life, my father being the Author of all this euill. So taking out the heart, and the messenger departed with the Cup, she tricked her selfe in her beauest apparel, & putting the heart of her friend Artibell betwixt her breasts, with these words. Oh Artibell, receive thine owne Brandisia, she cast her self headlong out of the chamber window, where death took his due of this faithfull and constant Princesse. The king sorrowfull for his Daughters death, solemnized her Funerals with great honour and dignity, and taking the Child, whom he hath named Leonarda, he put her in the self same tower, accompanied with Ladies & gentlewomen, where she was nourished for the space of foure yeeres. At the end wherof, he made an Enchantment halfe a mile from his place in a Valley, wherein he likewise Enchaunted the yong princesse Leonarda, which Enchantment he had used in such order, that none might see her, nor yet come neare unto her, for a far off might be discerned a goodly ffayrestie, but when any endeavored to come neare it, it vanished away, & nothing could be seen. When he had so done, he took this Cup, wherein he had congealed & frozen the teares, using his Art so upon them, that he hath brought them into this ugly blacknesse which you now behold. And at the houre of his death (seeing his kingdome should remaine destitute of an heire to succeed him) he commanded this Cup should be carried into all Princesse Courts in the world, to passe the hands of many noble knights, untill the teares came to the first estate and condition. So should the knight be found, that surpasseth all other in worthinesse and constancy of love, as also that is able to expell and end the enchantment of the princesse Leonarda, who by joining marriage with her, shall governe the scepter and Diademe of Thrace. But if so be, the knight, who hath the power to accomplish this adventure, shall have vowed his faith to some other, so that the princesse cannot marry with him, the commandment

gement of the king is such, that the Princesse Leonarda, shall toyne in Marriage with him, that this aforesayde knight shall command.

And one thing moze you shall vnderstand, that if any knight may equal himselfe in faith and loyalty, with him that hath the power to mollifie these teares, the aduenture is such, as they will turne to their former obscure estate againe, but if such a one come, as may not in that excellent gift be comparable to the knight, then is there nothing can cause them to change their colour. So that if any knight aduance himselfe to this cup, and is not a faithfull and constant Loeuer, the teares shall remaine as darke as you see them at this present. Likewise, after the Enchantment shall be fully finished, that the Lady and the knight, may beheld themselves in the teares, they shall see the perfect forme of those persons, who are their dearest friends, and their greatest enemies. And if any will knowe those that are least in fauour, vpon the taking of this Cup, they shall see a sauer so strong, that they shall hardly be able to endure it, and to the contrary, he that is moze beloued then his selfe, by higher degree in affection, shall cause a greater brightnesse to be in the Cuppe. Therefore most redoubted Emperour, I desire you that your knights may try this aduenture, and your selfe to giue the first attempt, because you may the better declare the loue you beare to your gracious Lady the Emperesse.

Lady (quoth the Emperour) you desire me to fall into trouble, some extreames, by desiring me to aduenture so great a matter. Neuertheles, I will once hazard vpon fortune, to please them that cannot finish this hard accident, albeit I thinke my selfe not able to do it. For the like matter haue I enterprised, trying my selfe with the Glasse of the king Tarnaes, being the like aduenture as this, and ended by the vertuous and noble Prince Don Edward, and as I thinke not to end this, so shall the Emperesse excuse me, considering my ancient time. Then arose a great noise among the knights, who desired to try the Cup, because their Ladies should see the better assured of their constant Loue.

Chap.

CHAP. XCI.

Of those that came to try the aduenture of the Cuppe, and of that which happened vnto them.



Great affection had the Emperour, to shewe somewhat his constant loyalty in the aduenture of his Cup: wherefore receiuing it at the hands of the Damosell, he turned him toward the Emperesse, and said. Trust mee Madame, if it be true, that faithful loue may conuert these teares, then I perswade my selfe to haue some title in it. So holding the Cuppe a great while, and perceiuing that it changed not the colour, he began to be somewhat offended with himselfe: wherefore the Damosell receiued it againe of him, and to moue him from sadness, gaue him these speeches. My gracious Lord, I see that age hath decayed the force of your affection: but had this aduenture bene deliuered you when time was, I know it could not haue remained thus at this present. Primaleon presently came and toke the Cuppe, but his fortune was no moze fauoured, then the Emperour his father: which vrged him to some cause of anger, fearing that Gridonia would haue giuen him but slender thanks. Then came the Prince Vernar, and in his hand the Cup receiued a little brightnesse: whereby the Ladies knewe, that the Damosell had reported nothing but the trueth. After Vernar, came the king Polendos, and in his hand the Cup became as blacke againe as euer it was: whereat the Ladies began to laugh, and the Damosell of Thrace spake to him in this order. My Polendos, if the loue you beare your Lady, be of no moze effect then it seemeth at this present, I iudge she hath cause to be but little beholding to you. Gentlewoman, answered Polendos, it is so long time since amorous thoughts haue let me, that it is no maruaile, if fortune seeme so aduerse to me now.

## The first part

Then arose the prince Gracian, thinking to end the adventure, by the faithfull loue he bare to his faire Claricia, and in his hand the Cup receiued more brightnes then it did when the Prince Vernar had it, whereat his heart was raiued with vnspokeable ioy, and giuing the Cup to his brother Guerin, it became as blacke againe as euer it was. The ladies greatly delighted to see the variable quality contained in the cup: so that they had an assured meane, to see which of their knights might excel in loyalty of loue. Berolde P. of Spaine, the onely beloued of the faire Onistalda, aduanced himselfe to take the cup, vsing this silent opinion to himselfe. *Godaue, I haue euer desired your helpe in all mine affaires, but at this present I craue no succour at your hands, for that the merit of my constancy, promisseth me a large title in this honourable adventure.* Then taking the cup, it seemed brighter then euer it had bene, and the frozen teares began somewhat to melt, which moued the Princesse Onestalda to so great pleasure, that she could not conceale it, but the Ladies sitting by did perceiue it. After him came the P. Platir, the knight of Fidelia, daughter to the king Tarnaes: but albeit he bare her great good will, the Cup was not so bright in the hands of Berolde, but while he held it, it became as black. Then came Bellizart, seruant to the faire Denisa, & Dramian the knight of Florian: but both of them sped alike in their enterprise. Francian, who loued the faire Bernarda, took his turne next to trie the Cup, but he sped so ill, that he witht himselfe out of the place: for in his hand the cup lost all the brightnes, that the other knights had brought it into, whereat he was greatly grieued, and the Emperour laughing a good at him, began merrily in these words. *Sir Francian, you may comend your fortune to be in such liberty, for the Ladies will not receiue any hastie occasion, whereby they may thinke good to fall in loue with you, and you may shape your selfe of like disposition, at no time to be hastie in trusting them.* After him came Frisol, Onestalde, Estrellant, Tenebrant Luyman of Burgondy, Pompides, Bla didon, Germaine of Orleance, Dridan, Polinarde, Tremoran, Baromont, & Albanis of Freeze: amongst which company, the best fauoured were Polinarde, Beromont, and Germaine of Orleance, yet none of them

## of Palmerin of England.

them might be compared to the Prince Berolde. The Damosel of Thrace was in great despaire, thinking the adventure would not be ended in the Emperours Court, when presently came the sorrowfull prince Floraman, & at the Emperours request he took the cap, saying: *My Lady, remember the danger wherein you see me, as also the grieue I sustaine for your sake: whereout you may deliuer me if you please, & set me once againe in my ioyfull state.* When he had ended his speeches, the Cup receiued such a maruellous brightnesse, & the congealed teares melted so suddenly, that the whole assembly, thought the adventure to be fully finished: but the Damosell knowing the contrary, went to the Emperour, who, in her presence, spake thus to the Prince of Sardignia. *I know well Sir Floraman, that this adventure was referred for you, because the firmenesse of your faith, gaue me a great deale more assurance, then the experience I haue to report this enterprise: and trust me I am very glad it is so fallen out, because now, all other will hold you in the estimation, that my selfe of long time reposed in you.* The ladies, who euer bare good affectio to Florama, were now a great deal more bged towards him: which y damosell perceiuing, & that euery one supposed the adventure to be ended, to the Emperour she began in this maner. *My gracious Lord, I desire you that all y knights may abide in this place, for albeit the cup is brought into this good effect, yet is not y brought to passe which must be finished.* I know said Floraman, that fortune is wont to cause me begin euery enterprise with ioy, but at the conclusion thereof, she threatneth my death. Then Don Rosuel & diuers knights assaied the Cup, some speaking well, & some ill, eue as their constancy did differ in quality. At last, whē the whole company were minded to retire for y time, they espied a knight in greene Armeur, to present himself before him, whose stoutnes of behauior caused al to feare that took occasion to behold him, there was none y knew him but Primaleon who presently said, that it was the giant Dramusand, wherfore he desired the Emperour to stay a while, when aduancing himself to meet him, Dramusand came & embraced him with very great reuerence. When he had opened his helmet, Primaleon brought him before the Emperour: where humbly vpon his knee, he began



## The first part

In this manner. I desire you my gracious Lord and Father, that you wil receiue this knight with your accustomed honoꝝ, for that his valiant and noble behauior, hath made him as much renowned as any on the earth. The Emperour knowing that it was Dramusiande, would not suffer him to kisse his hand, but embracing him in his armes, began as followeth. Albeit your friendly dealing, did long time detain me in an unexpected danger, yet the good report of your Prowesse, and noble behaviour since that time, hath byged mee to forget all, vowing my selfe your friend to command, and so I pray you for ever to vse me. Dramusiande very often thanked the Emperour, and Primaleon presented him to the Emperesse and Gridonia, who albeit they made a shew of a friendly welcome, yet could they not do it heartily, considering the griefe they sustained for the imprisonment of Primaleon. For they say, it is the nature of women, not to forget and forgiue their iniuries, but to seeke reuengement, when they are thought to be out of all remembrance. The Emperour tooke Dramusiande by the hand, and reported to him, how they were gathered together, to see who could finish the aduenture of the Cup, wherefore he desired him to make trial therof, to see if he were so happy as to end it. I shal (quoth Dramusiand) do what please your Grace to command mee, and if fortune stand so much my friend, that I may preuaile about al in this enterprise, I shall manifest the soueraigne duty, wherein lone hath bound me: but if I faile therein, I shall haue the lesse cause of maruell, because it is not the first time that fortune hath forgotten me. So receiuing the cup of the damosel, it became almost as cleere, as it did in the hand of the Prince Florian, whose hap was as yet supposed for the most perfect, and then the Emperour commended Dramusiande, to think that a person so strong and valiant, should haue such faithfull countenance and honour in loue. The day was so far spent, that they all returned to the Pallace, the Emperour desiring the damosel not to depart as yet, because he would haue Albayzar and Florendos, should make their trial likewise, for he verily thought, that one of them should haue the power to ende it. The Damosell promised to accomplish his pleasure, wherefore she walked with them, and made her abiding in the Emperours Pallace.

Chap.

## Of Palmerin of England.

192

### CHAP. XCII.

How Florendos and Albayzar proued the Aduenture of the Cup, and how Palmerin and Florian arriued at the Court.



Dramusiande (as the History reporteth) hauing left Palmerin and Florian, to followe the Princesse Targiana, was aduertised, that the knight that carried her away, had bene conquered by one, who conducted her with him to Constantinople, and that it was the Prince Florendos, who likewise had conquered the valiant Albayzar: whereat hee was somewhat displeased, because he thought none so worthy to restore her shield, as himselfe, seeing it was taken thence, at the time when he kept it. Yet seeing that Florendos had gotten the aduantage hee dissembled his griefe in the best manner he could: and tooke leaue of the Damosell (who reported al this vnto him and stayed not till he came to Constantinople, as I haue declared already: where, a while I will craue pardon to leaue him. Palmerin of England, and the Prince Florian of the Desert his Brother, stayed twenty two dayes in the Monastery, where the Giant Dramusiande left them: and when they were very well healed, and appointed with new Armour, which Siluian had caused to make for them, they departed thence, greatly thanking the Religious, for the good diligence they had vsed to them, in their weakenesse. When they were neare to Constantinople, because they supposed it was not time as yet to enter the Citie, they alighted from their horses, to contemplate of diuers accidents that happened in their minds. Florian, in whose passions of Loue could take no certaine place, but dissembling euery thing to content his fancy, layde him downe vnder a Tree, to muse on the aduentures, which Fortune should permit him to enterprise: and Palmerin with many a long looke towards

15 b 3

towards



towards the Citie, recounted the great fauour he found in the Emperors Court, as also his gentle departure from the Princesse Polinarda: so that he was determined not to enter the Citie at all, had not Siluan vsed his perswasions to the contrary.

When they had vsed their conceits about such matters as liked them best, they mounted on horsebacke, & rode toward the Court: where they arrived, at such time as the Emperour was risen from dinner, and the Emperesse with her Ladies came in to the great Hall, to see a farther triall of the Cup, by the Prince Florendos and Albayzar, who though they were not perfectly healed, came forth of their Chambers, to manifest the constant loue that they alwayes conceiued in their loyall hearts.

Palmerin & Florian went by into the great Hall, leauing Siluan at the Court gate, least perhaps they should be knowne: and when they were come before the Emperour, Albayzar, who lay vpon a cloth of blacke velvet, beholding the beautie of the Princesse Targiana, arose, & tooke the Cup in his hand, when it became as cleare as when the prince Floraman held it, whereat Targiana receiued gread pleasure, but Albayzar was not satisfied, because he saw the aduenture was not concluded.

Palmerin (who because he would not be knowne, bare a Dragon for his deuise in his Shield) and his Brother Florian standing with him, seeing the Cup that was so blacke, changed into such brightnesse in the hand of Albayzar, began to conceiue a great occasion of maruaile, desirous to knowe how the chance had happened.

The Emperour very often beholding them, and iudging that they were persons of some great authority, commanded that they should be placed by him, where he began to discourse at large of the cup, desirous to know likewise of whence they were, but they excused themselves so honourably, that the Emperour held himselfe contented. While these two English princes held talke with the Emperour, the Prince Florendos, who was leaning on the lap of his sister the Princesse Polinarda, arose, & musing on the beauty of Miragarda, he began in his mind to vse these speeches madame, now would I, that you might see the triall of my troth, which might moue you hereafter to vse me, according as you

proue me loyall in truth. So taking the Cup of the Damofell, it receiued a farre more brightnesse then euer it had before, and the teares were brought into such estate, as though they had not been frozen at all: whereat the Emperour and Primalcon were very ioyfull to see such a perfect prooue of Amitie in the Prince Florendos, which made them to request of the Damofell, if the aduenture were as yet ended.

Most noble Emperour (quoth she) the Cup & teares are transformed to the greatest perfection that any yet could bring them: but command them to come nere, who haue not as yet made any prooue at all, and then if the Cup receiue no change, esteeme this knight the most constant & faithfullest Louer in the world. But if so be the Cup do alter againe, beleue assuredly, that that knight shall excède him, either in knightly deeds of Armes, or else in the Amorous constancy of a Louer.

The Emperour seeing that al his knights had assaied the cup, he desired the Knight of the Dragon & his felloio to make triall also: but Palmerin was so busie in beholding his faire Polinarda, that he heard not the Emperours words, wherefore Florian, who was free from a Louers passions, albeit he could dissemble with Ladies indifferently, aduanced himselfe with these wordes to his Lady Targiana. My Lady, I desire your assistance in passing this danger, and to forsake me in all other, onely let me enjoy this in recompence of my desert: and as for the thing you hold of greater estimation, reserve that for him, to whom you are in greater affection. Now as these wordes were farre distant from the loyalty of a loue, so did his holding the Cup manifest the same: for while he held it, there is nothing in the world can be iudged more blacke or grieufully, then the Cup seemed at that instant. Targiana, who knew him, yet would not be knowne thereof, so the grieve she conceiued at this accident, retired into her Chamber, repenting that euer shee had bestowed her loue on him, who was esteemed of so small fidelity. The Damofell of Thrace, receiuing the Cup againe of Florian, said. Sir knight, if Fortune speed you no better in deeds of Armes, then your actions manifest your faithfulness in loue, I would counsell you, neuer hereafter to pursue aduentures.

Faire Lady (answered Florian) if you recompence your seruants according to desert, it would greatly grieue me to fall into so hard destiny, but your farre distance from reason, maketh me to esteeme it the lesse, for if I should passe on farther, and suffer my selfe to be inueigled in your snares, I were the lesse to be pittied, when I come to bewaile the languishing of my life.

This answer of Florian, albeit it seemed acceptable to many of the knights, yet the Ladies receiued it in great contempt: because their naturall quality is such, to yeelde according to the wishes of those, who submit themselves to abide their pleasure: and contrariwise, their naturall inclination is, to vse such recompence, as their seruice they haue receiued neuer deserued.

The Damosel of Thrace came to the Knight of the Dragon, desiring him to try the Cup, according as diuers other had done before him, perswading him, that of a person so knightly as he seemed, there was to be expected a very good issue. Palmerin seeing the matter brought to this extremity, cast his eye on the Damosell, and his heart on her, whose obstinacy caused him to die with griefe, entring into these speeches. If this aduenture be of a truth, then I pray you my Lady, henceforth to excuse the fearfulness of him, who dares not presume to think what is in your mind. So receiuing the Cup, it contained the same quality, as it did in the hand of the Prince Florendos, because it could not erre farther.

The Emperour being very glad, tooke the Cup to proue the rest of the Damosels words, and in the bottome of the teares, he beheld the Emperesse as pleasant as euer he had scene her, which made him to thinke the aduenture was ended, but doubting the contrary, he requested of the Damosell, if the Cup should alway remaine in that state, whereto the Damosell answered thus. It must now be tried, if it wil turne againe to the former blacknes, but I desire you that this Knight (meaning the prince Florian) make triall thereof no more, for he hath so little desire, to keepe his loue faithfull to any Lady, that the Cup in his hand will stand in great danger, at which pretty triumph, the Ladies conceiued good occasion of laughter.

Then

When the Emperour commanded, that all the knights should take the Cup againe, but their labour was in vaine, for it neuer seemed to alter the colour, wherefore the Emperesse tooke it, and beheld the Emperour so perfectly in it, as if she had verily scene his face. After the Emperesse, came Gridonia and Bazilie, wherein they saw them that they chiefly esteemed, but when the Princesse Polinarda took it, she perceiued the noble Palmerin of England in such heauines, that (not able to endure his extreame grievous countenance) she deliuered the Cup from her, fearing to let it fall, her hand shaked so maruelously. But none knew what was the cause thereof, except the Emperour, whose amorous youthfull time gaue him occasion to thinke, that shee had scene some one in the Cup, who greatly desired to doe her seruice which made him to round her in the eare, saying: Faire Daughter, you make mee iudge that you want a seruant. At which words she began so sweetely to blush, that with her rare beauty it gaue her an excellent colour, whereat the Knight of the Dragon became more and more afflicted.

The cup passed from hand to hand, till it came againe to the Prince Palmerin, who beholding in it the sweet face of his faire Polinarda, tooke occasion to speake in this maner to himselfe. O gracious Lady, I very well perceiue by your countenance, that you haue not forgotten him, who was only bozne to do you seruice, yet doth the miserie of his time, constrain him to liue without hope, desiring nothing else but to accomplish your pleasure. Then he deliuered the Cup to his Brother Florian, who beheld in the bottome of the teares, the Princes Araalte of Nauarre, and the faire Targiana, as also many other Ladies, who were as greatly offended with him, as were these twain whom he had deceiued, wherefore the Damosell taking the Cup from him, said. Doe you now (Sir Knight) behold the issue of your vnfaithfull Loue (whereto he presently shaped this answer. It seemeth that your ser. cannot hartily fauour the knights that oweth them most affection, which maketh many not force of their constancy to you, but yet thus much I dare assure you, that Ladies, both haue and shall be a great deale better secured of me, then of diuers that haue tried the aduenture of this Cup, and

and to whom it hath sholone moze saueur then to me.

The damosell making him no answere, turned to the Emperour, saying: I desire your highnesse, that now the pcesse may be made, of those that are most and chiefeest beloued: wherein (credit me) you will receiue great pleasure. Agrado (quoth the Emperour) and I intend my selfe to make triall first, so that I perceiue, that being but slenderly saueured of the Emperesse, I haue lost the power to end the aduenture. So holding the Cup, it remained in the same order still, without any change or apparance of heate: wherefore the Damosell said. My Lord, you must confesse your selfe, that your time is past, and therefore deliuer the Cup to the Emperesse, who hath so truly and faithfully loued you.

In the Emperesse hand it continued so still, wherefore Prima-leon and the King Polendos, who being faithfully beloued of their Ladies, made the cup still to containe the chiefe brightnes. After these two Princes, Don Rosuell aduanced himselfe to make triall at his Loue, which was so little, that the heate the Cup contained, bged him to deliuer it to the Prince Plair, who found it not altogether so hot, as when Don Rosuell had it. It passed the hands of them all, some with good hap, & some with ill, till it came againe to the Prince Florian, but he passed it as lightly as the other, because his heart was exempted free from any Louers griefe. From him Albayzar tooke it, whom Loue saueured so much, that he held it a great while. Then came the turne of the Knight of the Dragon, whose hap proued worse then all the rest: for the Cup was so enflamed round about him, that it seethed euen as water doth vpon the fire, which caused great feare to all that beheld it, but moze griefe to him that hee had the patience to abide it. For now he verily thought to consumate his daies, and that the veration of his life, should end by this supportable meane, which made him that he would not let go the Cup, but kept it so constantly, that euery one thought there was no remedy but death.

Trust me (said the Damosell) the unfained loue of so true a knight, deserueth not to be rewarded with so sharp a recompence: and with these words she offered to take the Cup from him, but he

he gaue backe, answering her thus. Faire Ladie, I desire you to suffer me abide the doine, which my mishap hath alway ordeined for me, and wherein I may end the troubles that are incident to a mourning and continual despairing life. The Emperour not able to abide so great crueltie executed in his presence, arose & caught the cup from him, to which was immediatly quenched, as though it had neuer bin so violent, whereat he receiued no small cause of amazement. Then the prince Florendos, albeit he was weake, yet desirous to be partner in constancy with the Knight of the Dragon, receiued the Cuppe from the hand of the Emperour, when presently the rigour that the Princes Miragarda vsed towards him, caused him to suffer the selfe same torment, as did the noble Prince Palmerin. For the flame which arose out of the cup, had so inuitoned the body of the prince, that he was seene sighing and lamenting in the midst thereof, which moued all the Ladies to shed abundance of teares, and to vse many extreame words against the cruelty of Miragarda, which Florendos (though he were in the midst of the flame) could hardly suffer to hear her blamed, for whose sake he was ready to make a sacrifice of himselfe. The Emperour seeing many meanes applied to quench the flame, yet none of them all had the power to preuaile, put himselfe in the midst thereof, and toke the Cup from Florendos, thinking that then it would presently be quenched: but all their labor was to no effect, for the flame continued about him as it did before. The Emperesse Gridonia, with all the ladies and knights, fell into such rufull complaints, that it was maruailous to heare the noyse that was made: at which grievous spectacle, Polendos the king of Theflarie, came to the Damosell of Thrace with these words. I desire you, faire Lady, seeing you haue found the thing you sought for, that you would boughsafe the courtesie, to succour the dangerous case of the Prince Florendos, I am so agrieued (quoth the damosell) at this great tumult which is made, wherein they wil not boughsafe to heare me, that I know not what to say: but doe you giue order to appease this murmuring, & I wil work the meane to deliuer the Prince from danger. By the Emperours commaundement the disturbance was quisted: when the Damosell presented her selfe

selfe before the Emperour, saying. I aduertise you most dread and gracious Emperour, that the aduerture of the Cup is already past and finished: but the flame which doth compasse the prince Florendos, can no way be extinguished, but only by the vertue that consisteth in the teares, which by the hand of the Knight, who hath ended the Enchantment of the Cup, must be sprinkled on the flame wherein he is enclosed, and then I dare assure you the prince shall be brought into his former estate. For the fire being ingendred, by such a cruell woman as he loueth, cannot be any way quenched, but onely by the teares of such a pitifull Lady, as was this constant and faithfull Brandisa. When she deliuered the Cup to the Knight of the Dragon, who put his fingers therein, and sprinkled a few of the teares vpon Florendos: when presently the fire vanished away, leauing Florendos (whom all men thought verily to be dead) aliue and in good estate, to the great content of the Emperour and all the company.

CHAP. XCIII.

Of another aduerture that happened in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, and of that which after followed.



Lorendos, being thus happily deliuered (to the great ioy of the Courtly company,) wished that she, who intreated his faithfull Loue with so great cruelty, had bene in place, when she might haue scene the triall of his inuolate faith. The Emperour being desirous to know the Knight, whose spotlesse loyaltie had ended this Enchantment (but misdoubting that it was y noble Palmerin of England) desired very earnestly, that he would make himselfe knowne vnto him: when Palmerin putting his hand to his Helmet, to discouer himselfe, he was hindered by the aduerture which hereafter followeth.

On

On a sudden there entred the Hall a Lady, accompanied with three mighty and huge Giants, whose Armour was of one colour and fashion, their Helmes being carried after them by three men, so that their swart and euill fauoured faces, caused the Ladies to tremble, as also many of the Knightes to change their colour. These proud and stately Giants thronged through the midst of the Knightes, aduancing themselves before the Emperour, without shewing any courtesie or reuerence, where they stayed, for that the Damofell had in charge to declare: who seeing so great Mobilitie about the Emperour, was somewhat offended, yet notwithstanding, she leashed her fury, and began in this order.

I perceiue right noble Emperour, that the renowne which is blazed all the world ouer, of your Princely Court, is too little, respecting the honourable company I sit at this present, which vngeth me to enter into due land therof, as it hath rightly & iustly deserueth: so that I am of the opinion, you might subdue & gouern the whole world, if you would distribute your force, which as I iudge, is no way able to be matched. But yet fortune who in all your affaires hath hitherto prospered you, may now vngently (as enuious at your long quiet & peaceable felicity) turne her backe towards you, & so suddenly in her fury ouerturne your good Fortune, that the glozy you haue gained in the prime of your yeres, may now be defaced, when your aged estate forbiddeth you to follow the trauaile of Armes, and your long hapinesse, vnwilling to enter the warres, wherewith I come to summon you, from the Soldane of Persia, principal Captaine of the Law of Mahomer, as also from the great Turk, and y noble Gouernours of the Countrey belonging to the Soldane of Babylon, named Albayzar, who in strange aduentures, hath put himselfe to make triall of his valour, vpon hope of long expected good Fortune. From all these before named, I am to let you vnderstand, that when time was, there were certaine Heathen Princes, here slaine before the walls of Constantinople, whose death hath vnged them to great impatience, and to seeke reuenge for the great wrong you haue offered them. But the Gods, the protectors and defendors of your welfare, fauouring you beyond their

their expectation, haue heretofore hindred the determination of these Princes: for when they were prepared to the ruine of your kingdomes, and vtterly to race out your name & memorie, there hath such quarrels and seditions sprung vp amongst them, that they haue murdered one another, which happening many and sundrie times, hath not suffered them to put their pretence in execution. Wherefore, to auoid any more such mischance, as also to fauour you in the euil which may happen: they haue sent vs to your Highnesse with certaine conditions, the performing whereof, shall end all hatred, and ioyntly ioyne them as your continuall friends.

The first is, that you shall send Polinarda, Daughter to the Prince Primaleon your sonne, to the Soldane of Persia, aged about xxx. yeres: a Prince as much renowned, as he is puissant and incomparable in riches, to whom shee shall bee espoused as becometh such a noble Prince. The second, that Florandos his Sonne, shall promise to marry with Armenia, Daughter to the Soldane befozenamed, who is a Princesse of such singular beauty, that shee is thought to excell all Ladies liuing on the earth. To her Dowrie, the Soldane will giue all the title hee hath in these parts about your Empire, without desiring any other recompence, on the behalfe of the faire Polinarda: but onely that it might stand with your pleasure, to send to the great Turk a Christian Knight, who as I remember is named Florian of the Desart, for that by his deceit, he hath brought his Daughter Tragiana from thence into your Court: whose mariage he hath already prouided, to the Prince Albayzar, now Soldan of Babylon, because the Soldane his father is lately deceased. Thus haue I reported the whole summe of my Ambassage, attending he to your Highnesse shall answere the same: and if you wil not agree with the Heathen princes, these Giant haue in charge to tell you that, which perhappes may enforce you to a greater maruell.

The Emperour hauing noted the words of the Damosell, smiling thereat, began to say. Truly Lady, I desire to heare what the Giants must report, because perhappes I shall haue a better opinion of their words, then of those which here you haue spoken.

spoken. As concerning the amitie which your Prince doth request with me, the conditions are linked to so many contraries, that I rather chuse perpetuall warre, wherein my selfe, my friendes and subiects will more willingly die, then to hold league with them in any such order. And for the knight whom you request to haue, I am altogether ignorant where he abideth: but if hee were here present in my Court, I would not suffer him to receiue any iniury, and I perswade my selfe, as the Princesse Targiana, is rather come hither with her will, then by any compulsion that hath bene vsed to her. No other answere haue I determined to giue you: wherefore, let your knights declare what they haue in commission.

With that, one of the Giants aduanced himselfe befoze the Emperour, and very vnruciently entred into these speeches. The Heathen Princes, whose iust & lawfull request you thinke scozne to grant: by me doe send defiance to thee, and to all that dare vndertake, by any meane or motion to offer thee succour.

Yea, I pronounce open warre against thee, and on their behalfe call my gods for my record: that we not onely intend thy death, but all thoe who dare presume to beare Armour against vs. The places of most renowne in thine Empire, shall be changed to a wast and desolate wilderness, as thou shalt well perceiue, when thou seest thy men to be murdered, thy women cruelly spoyled, thy Virgines violated, thy Children martyred: yea, and the Infant torne from the mothers bzeast, and gozed on the tops of our Lances, in witnesse of our great, grievous, and vnspeakeable fury.

The Channels of thy streets, shall polze forth the blood of thy murdered subiects, the Citie which now standeth abounding in wealth, excessive in pride, and surpassing in prodigality, shall with fire be vtterly consumed, the whole kingdomes and signozies rased and ruinated: so that they which shall escape this bloody tyranny, may sit downe, and sighing say; Here sometime stood the citie of Constantinople, there, and in those places were sometime faire cities, braue buildings, and incomparable habitations for riches and prospect: now are they equalled with the ground, not one stone left on another, in witnes of any ancient Monument,



Monument, but burned, consumed, and all in generall defaced and spoiled, thy selfe being the onely cause of this cruell and horrible iudgement, wherein they will be sufficiently satisfied, of their iniury receiued before this thy citie. Thus haue I manifested the charge, which I receiued from the Soldane of Persia, and in refusing his proffer, I say thou shewest not the duty of a Prince: and if thy knights dare presume to maintaine the contrarie, my Companions and I will undertake, to enter the Combate with seven of the stoutest of them, and will bidge them to confesse the fault thou hast made, or seale the pledge of our endeuour, with deliuering thee their heades, in recompence of the follie thou hast shoven, in refusing to enter league with the Soldane of Persia. The Giant here breaking off his speech, one of the other Giants named Berocant, deliuered the serole of the defiance to the hand of the Emperour: who seeing the fcarne countenances they made, began to smile, and answered them thus.

I see (Gentlemen) such a cholericke humour arise in you, that I stand in doubt to grant what you demand. Beside, I iudge if I should grant to come in league with the Soldane of Persia, that my Prince Polinarda would not consent to goe with you: but as concerning the Combate you haue enterprised against my knights, I would wish you to vse your selues with more discretion, and not to shame your selues utterly with them, who thinke it shame to enter the fight with you. While the Emperour continued these speeches, the Knight of the Dragon was so incensed with anger, that hee could not content himselfe to rest in any place: wherefore, diuers knights arose, being fully resolved to accept the challenge, but the Giant Dramusiande hindered them all, turning to the Emperour in this wise.

Most high and mightie Emperour, the great benignity and courtesie of Princes, is often an occasion to encourage a wilful offender: euen so, the lenity of your noble heart, with the gracious patience that governeth all your actions, hath caused these presumptuous Pagans to conceiue such boldnesse, that they neither respect the place nor the person, the rigour of a Prince, nor the folly of their owne ridiculous vsage.

Which

Which to punish according to desert, I, as one at your gracious command, will enter the field with one of them, where I shall giue Berocant to vnderstand, that pride must haue punishment in place of Justice. And if none of these other knights, will enter the fight with the other, my selfe will defie them all, coming one by one: thus desiring your highnesse not to thinke amisse of me, my hand is ready to performe, which my heart hath suffered me to pronounce.

The knight of the Dragon, & Florian of the Desert, approached presently to Dramusiande, desiring him that he would suffer them to assist him, as descending the challenge of the other two giants. Dramusiande seeing them so well provided, would not refuse their knightly offer: whereat Gracian, Berolde, Pompides, and Floraman were somewhat offended, because ther was none of them al, but would gladly haue taken part with the Giant Dramusiande. The Giants, named Arbusar, Albaroco, and Berocant, refused the offer which was made them: answering, that if there were no Giants for them to deale withal, they disdained to take armes against men of no more might.

Elorian hearing them speake so arrogantly, in a chafe tooke Arbusar by the arme, saying. Thou counterfeit Monster, I am not to excuse thy selfe so fondly from entering the Combate: for in recompence of thy desert, I will present the Emperour with thy head from thy shoulders. And to giue thee the better occasion to fight, thou shalt vnderstand, that I am the knight, who brought the princeesse Targiana into this Country: and for this knight thou shalt with me, I knowe his hardnesse will suffer him to deale with Albaroco, ne w refuse the combat if you dare. The Giants hearing him to confesse, that he had brought the Princeesse Targiana from her country, became so full of choler, that they desired the place might be assigned, where they presently determined to hazard the fight.

The Emperour commanded the place should be shewen them, whereabout he caused such good regard to be placed, as in such dangerous affaires he was wont to doe: but it was somewhat displeasing to him, that Florian should venture in such eugly fellows, & iudging the other knight to be Palmerin of England

C c

he.



he was in great feare, least now he should chance to lose them both. At such time the knights were entring the field, the Damosel of Thrace taking Florian aside, secretly vsed these words vnto him. Sir knight, if Fortune bend her selfe against you, that in this dangerous attempt your strength doe faile you, commend your selfe to the clemency of some lady, and doubt you not but to escape the hazard luckily. God forbid, said Florian, that I should trust in them, who haue not the power to helpe themselves, much lesse can they any way send me succour: or that I should prostrate my selfe to desire their fauour, whose greatest libertie, is continuall thraldome to an aduenturous minde. With these words, they all mounted on horsebacke, and rode into the field, the Emperour with all the Ladies and knights, bided themselves to the windowes to see this haucie exploit: and Albayzar likewise desirous to see it, came to one of the windowes, desiring that the victory might fall to the Giants, as he had good hope, beholding their valiant and noble courage.

CHAP. XCIIII.

What happened in the fight against the Giants.



After that the Judges were placed to discern the fight, the Trumpets sounded, and they encountred one another very courageously: every one dealing so roughly with his enemy, that this was supposed the most dangerous Combate that euer was seene. The Emperour was still affectionate to behold the maruailous courage of the Knights of the Dragon, as for Dramusiande and Florian, they behaued themselves with such deliuer behaviour, that Primalcon, Florendos, and all the knights, gaue great praise to the haucie valour of them all.

The

The Emperesse Gridonia departed from the window, greatly pittying the danger on either part: but the Princesse Polinarda staid to see the end, accompanied with Targiana, who was as much graued to see the boldnes of Florian, as she was pleased in beholding the courage of the giants: by whose helpe she thought to haue reuenged the great inconstancy shee found in the prince Florian. And then he gaue the damosel of Thrace to vnderstand, that it was not for want of strength he preuailed no better in the triall of the cup: for albeit the giant Arbusar, descended himself well, he could not resist against Florian, who saluted him with many mighty and cruel strokes, driuing him into such wearinesse, that he could hardly indure to stand on his feet. At last faintnesse and wearinesse constrained them to retire: when Berocant seeing his fellows so dangerously wounded, began to rage with himselfe in this manner. O gods, is it possible, that the force of Berocant, Arbusar, and Albaroco, so highly esteemed throughout the whole world, should be brought into subiection by one only giant and two knights? Why grant you not vs our accustomed strength, but in our greatest need leaue vs destitute of all succour? O how happy might I esteeme my selfe, if I might vanquish him, who sometime conquered Dramusiand, and deliuered the number of knights he kept as prisoners: If you will not suffer me to haue aduantage ouer him, then would I, that here were with him foure of the best knights on the earth, so losing my life on them, I might the better broke this my hard fortune. The Knight of the Dragon, had no other recourse for his amorous thoughts, but only to the beautiful face of his Lady & Mistresse, whose vngentle words at his departure from Constantinople, armed him with greater patience to abide the death if his froward hap should now prouide it for him. As for the prince he had no body to apply his thoughts vnto, but only committed himselfe to the government of Fortune, when he only kept for his Lady and Mistresse. Every one vsing such pretty fancy to himselfe, during the time they remained breathing, assaulted one another again very valiantly. When the knight of the Dragon hauing brought Albaroco to his fate, to honour his mistresse with his conquest: he cyenced his helmet, and before her

C 2

parted

part his head from his shoulders, as glad of the victory, as before he stood in doubt how to obtaine it. Then he aduanced himself to assist Dramusiand against Berocant, at whom he fiercely let fly a stroke, but their often trauesing the ground, caused the blow vnforsunately to fall on Dramusiande, giuing him a greater wound on the shoulder, then any he had receiued at the hands of Berocant: wherfore Dramusiand turned to him with these words. *Wilt thou see knight, I esteeme the succour you giue me, to be oppression and no friendship, wherfore I pray you suffer me to end this cause my selfe: and if perhaps you see me vanquished, then put your valour in triall, to kill him who shall remaine victorious ouer me: for the death I rather chuse, then the shame which may fall to me, by this vngentle manner of ayde.* The knight of the Dragon hauing thus against his will iniured his friend Dramusiande, retired greatly displeased with himselfe, and Arbusar was reduced into such weakenesse that Florian quickly gaue him his payment, so sore wounded himselfe that the Iudges would haue had him carried out of the field: but he would not consent thereto, before he had seene the issue of the fight, which was so displeasing to Albayzar and Targiana, because the giants were so cruelly vfed, that they went from thence, as not able to suffer such a greivous sight.

The Emperour, Primaleon, and the king Polendos, seeing the knight of the Dragon had wounded Dramusiand so sore, greatly doubted lest Berocant should now overcome him, but suddenly Dramusiand caused them to change their opinion, for he followed his enemy with so great courage, that he forced him to fall downe dead at his feet. Then came the Iudges, and with great honor conducted the three Conquerors forth of the field, where the Emperour with his royall traine met them: when Palmerin and Florian hauing opened their helmets, came to the Emperour, and with very great reuerence kissed his hand, who receiued them with inuicible princely courtesie. The Empreesse, Gridbana, Bazilia, and Polinarda, attended the coming of the Emperours, because they vnderstood that he brought with him the two English knights: who when they came before them, were receiued according to their knightly bounty.

When

When Palmerin came to humble himselfe before the princeesse Polinarda, such a sudden feare did ouercharge him, that he could not withhold himselfe from falling to the ground: and the Emperour supposing, that it was caused through losse of his blood, commanded Primaleon, Polendos, Vernar and Berolde, to carry him presently into a Chamber, where he was respected with great diligence for his health. Dramusiande and Florian, were likewise honoured with very princely vsage: the Emperour remaining as ioyfull for this good hap, as Albayzar was sorrowfull, to see the three Giants sped so ill.

CHAP. XC.

What happened in the Court of the Emperour, after the combat of the Giants.



Certaine dayes after this cruel Combat, the prince Florendos seeing Dramusiande and the English Princes out of any danger, determined to restore the Shield of Miragarda, in the place from whence the Prince Albayzar took it, and to present him to her, where he should abide the doome of her iudgement. When he had well provided himselfe of Armour and other necessities, he aduanced himselfe before the Emperour and his Father, to desire their sufferance in this attempt: but they were very loath he should goe, least any danger should happen to him by the way, through some treacherous meane deuised by Albayzar, wherfore they gained of him, to stay yet for eight dayes longer. In the meane time, the Emperour had concluded, through aduise of his Councill, to send the princeesse Targiana home againe to her Father, accompanied with the king Polendes, and diuers other Princes and knights: but first he would content the desire of her loue,

wherefore with great royalty, he married her to the Prince Albayzar, and to honour them the more, he held open Court, and caused many Triumphs and braue deuises to be accomplished, to gratifie these honourable personages.

The Emperour ledde Targiana into the Chappell, where he gaue her to the Prince Albayzar, whose heart greatly reioyced, to receiue the swete content he had so long desired: but the chiefest grief that eclipsed his ioy, was because the Prince Florendo should present him to the faire Miragarda, which thought, made him not so pleasant with his beloued, as other wise hee would haue bene.

When time came for their departure, Targiana humbly submitted himselfe to the princeesse Gridonia, and all the ladies, but especially to the princeesse Polinarda, who had vsed her very graciously, during the time of her abiding there. The Emperour with all his knights, rode with her two miles from the Citie, committing her to the charge of Polendos, and the other Princes, who could not perswade Florendos, but he would needs present Albayzar at the castle of Almarol, to witnes his vnfaigned faith to his Ladye Distresse Miragarda. The Emperour taking leaue of Targiana, returned with his traine to the Citie, endeavouring himselfe to change the mind of Florendos, but all was in vaine, for two dayes after he departed from Constantinople, accompanied with Albayzar, whom he would not suffer to weare Armour, but permitted him one of the Esquires belonging to Targiana, and himselfe took twaine, one to carry the Shielde of Miragarda, which was couered, and the other to carry his owne, thus in their iourney we intend to leaue them.

The Damosel of Thrace, seeing the Prince Palmerin in good disposition of health, in the presence of the Emperour, she spake to him thus. *Mozthy Sir,* I thinke you are sufficiently certified, that I cannot depart from hence without your company, seeing you haue finished that, which of many yeares hane bene thought impossible: wherefore, most humbly I beseech you, that you would imploy your selfe, to ende likewise the miserable estate, of the distressed and most infortunate princeesse of Thrace whose

whose enchantment can no way be expelled, but only by you whose renown shall be more then I can speake of, for you that shalioyne in marriage with her, and so make your selfe king ouer all Thrace. But if perchance, the desire you haue to follow aduentures, wil not suffer you to ioyne with her in this honourable estate, then shall she stand at your appointment to marry with such a one as you shall thinke meetest for her, wherefore I desire you to set a part all excuses, and to enter vpon this iourney, so soone as possible you may.

*Faire Lady* (answered Palmerin) I am so much vsed to trauaile, that I know the better how to continue it, and neuer did I refuse to aide any person, whose intent might be no preiudice to her, whom I am alwayes bound to obey: and therefore assure your selfe, that so soone as I shall be prouided of Armour, (because Albaroco hath so disappointed me) I will not stay to accomplish your desire. The Damosell was very well pleased with this answer of Palmerin, but the Emperour (who wished more good to him, then any other of his Nephewes) conceived great græfe to leaue his company so soone. Wherefore, he went to the chamber of the Emperesse, who also was very sorry when she heard these newes.

Likewise the Prince Polinarda hearing that Palmerin should so soone leaue the Court, went to her chamber animated with great grieffe, and many passions of the minde: which Dramaciana perceiuing, & knowing well the cause of her heauines, came to perswade her in this manner. *Faire mistresse* I neuer thought that any misfortune could depriue you of discretion, which you haue alwaies vsed: but if your græfe be grounded on the departure of Palmerin, why do you not consider y<sup>e</sup> his desire is, euer to be where he may behold you (though in truth) he deserveth to enioy the most excellent princes on y<sup>e</sup> earth, yet dare I assure you, that your beauty is sufficient, to yeeld the heart of him vnder your obeyesance, who onely desireth to be your sweet friend in loue. And without god hope in this desire, I know he could not long enioy his life, but that he perswadeth himself to enioy that gladfom and long expected felicity: wherefore, I desire you, to vse such courteous fauour towards him, as may vnye him

him the sooner to returne to the Court.

Polinarda hauing receiued some content by the words of Dramaciana, made her answer in this manner. How can I well bryoke the sudden voyage of Palmerin, whom aboue all I loue, and in heart giue most honour: yet will I not make him so priuy to my thoughts, albeit I sustained the hazard of death, because, perhaps the beauty of Leonarda Princesse of Thrace, may alter the affection he hath bowed to me.

I beleue (quoth Dramaciana) that inconstancy cannot harbour in the heart of him, who proued himselfe so loyal in the aduenture of the cup: but to preuent the worst, if you will vouchsafe me the leaue, I will in priuate talke vse such meanes with him, as I shall quickly sound the depth of his intent. Polinarda esteeming this deuise, returned presently this aunswere. I thinke so well Dramaciana of this pretty inuention, that I am very well content that you proceed therein: but of all Loues I pray you, vse the circumstance of your matter in such sort, that he perceiue nothing therein to be done with my will.

Polinarda thus concluding her speeches, went and sat down by the Princesse Gridonia her mother: mean while, the English Prince rememb'ring his hasty iourney, as also the small kindness he perceiued in his Lady, passed all the day in many silent thoughts. But when the evening came, he went to the Emperes Chamber, where the knights and ladies danced: and doing his duty to them all, he came and sat down by Dramaciana, with whom being very familiar, he entred into these speeches. Sweet friend, if I either might, or could vtter my complaints to any, by whom I had opinion to receiue redresse, with verie glad consent I would: but seeing my sorowes grow to a greater extreame, and to none but you I dare bewray them, I will request so much courtesie at your hands, as to resolu me in one or two questions: and thus they are. What is the cause my Lady Polinarda dealeth so hardly with me, as to driue me to the utter despaire and contempt of my life: if she thinke me to deserue no greater fauour, trust me, I may iudge her ouermuch unkind, so that all my care is, by what means or motion, to lay my heart at her foote in loyal seruice.

But

But she seeth full well my grieue, and couereth her selfe with such a close conceit, that she will not seeme to know it: onely because she is either daintie of her courtesie, or else thinketh some to recompence my trauell. I desire you to beare witnesse with my faith, which neither forceth paine, toment, or any misery, so that she would not forget the knight who saffreth al for her sake, and cannot expresse what he would suffer, so that it might but please her to esteeme thereof. And trust me, sweet friend, I neuer in all my life entered so farre in speech hereof to any person, nor would I haue gone so farre at this present, but that the promise of your fidelitie, hath constrained me to speake what you haue heard, knowing very well, that with a trustie friend, a secret is buried in the bottome of the sea.

Sir Palmerin (answerd Dramaciana) the long time you haue absented your selfe from hence, hath moued me to thinke, that your mind was addited to some other purpose: so that I iudge, you rather complaine for custome then cause, as you are al wont to do, when you hold the fish with the baite, which you greatly care not for, whether you were best to take it, or let it goe. And now I am aduertised, that you go to end the Enchantment of Leonarda, the heire and princes of Thrace, whose loue (I feare me) will cause you forget your old friends, wherefore you may with greater ease beare so small a burthen.

Trust me, answerd Palmerin, the beautie of Leonarda, nor all the rich proffers of preferment in the world, shal haue power to alter any qualitie in me, by which I might be iudged, either inconstant of faith, or negligent in promise: for which cause I haue the greater desire to speake with the princesse Polinarda, that she may be assured of the loyalty, which this poore heart of mine shall continue to her to the death.

Tell, quoth she, if your constancie be such as you report, I thinke in so small a matter, it will not be changed. But as for speaking with my Lady, I know at this time it is impossible: wherefore, for a further triall of your truth, prepare your selfe to depart with the Damosell of Thrace, and in your absence I will so manifest your constancie, that at your return you shall speake with her at your pleasure. So that in y mean time you wil promise

mise me, that no occasion be moved to offend so good a Princes. To these words Palmerin thought to haue made answer, but the Darning being done, he was hindered of his purpose, so that Dramaciana and he were constrained to part company, he being very glad that he had disclosed part of his griefe, to her that would sollicite his sute in ample manner, and this night he took ebetter rest, then he had done since his departure out of England.

The next morning he rose very early, when a faire new armour was presented him, and in his shield he bare a mantorne in peeces by a Tiger. When went he with the Damosel to take leaue of the Emperour, who brought him to the Emperesse chamber, to whom he humbly did his duty, as also to Gridonia, Bazilia, and all the Ladies, but such was his heauy farewell, to the Princesse Polinarda, as all the Ladies present could not restrain from tears. Thus left he the Emperour in great sorrow, Primaleon, Dramusiande and his brother Florian, were very sorry to leaue them whom he most loued, but notwithstanding all intreaty, he departed with the Damosell and Siluian towards the kingdome of Thrace.

¶ Some after, two Allemaigne Ambassadors arrived at the Court, yielding the seate and government, of the ancient Emperour Trineus deceased, to the Prince Vernar his sonne, these newes were great griefe to the Emperour, as also the Prince Vernar who left the Court, accompanied with his Lady Bazilia, being great with child, and some after deliuered of a goodly young Prince named Trineus after his Grandfather.

To accompany these princes, there went Florian of the desert Floraman, Dramusiand, Albanis of Freece, Gracian, Pōpides and many other, and when they came to the Citie of Cullen, there was the prince Vernar chosen Emperour, with such magnificent Triumphs as neuer were seene the like in the dayes of his Predecessours. Then sent he for his Brother Polinard, to enjoy such titles as were fallen vnto him, and Florian, with the other Princes and knights, stayed a while in the Court of the Emperour Vernar, when some after they departed to take aduen-

adventures, as you shall at large perceiue in the second Volume of this History.

## CHAP. XCVI.

Of the daungers which the King Polendos and the Princes passed, conueying the Princesse Targiana by Sea: And what happened to the Prince Florendos, in the Fort of Astribor.



The King Polendos, & the hundred knights that bare him company, to conduct the princesse Targiana home againe, sayling at their pleasure, Fortune was so aduerse to them, that they took the Coast of Africa, where they were assaulted by ten Galleges, belonging to the King of Mamerkos, chiefe Souerain of Cenia, who as then had all the Countrey vnder his subiection.

The King Polendos, seeing himselfe on the point of so extreame danger, dealt with them in such braue and forceable manner, that he suncke them all, and tooke their Captaine, who was the Cousin to the Knight of Tunis, not losing one of his knights in this noble skirmish. With the glory of this Conquest, he came to the Princesse Targiana, who was glad to see her selfe deliuered from so great danger, and honoured in such worthy wise by the King Polendos, who with this noble Prisoner set forward their voyage to Turkie, the winde seruing them so well, that in short time they arrived at the citie, where the great Turke was resident. When to witnesse the honourable company there vnder wayle, they discharge their Ordnance in such a braue peale, that the people, not accustomed to so suddaine a greeting, came running on heapes to the Water, to knowe the cause of such a braue warning.

The

The great Turke him: selfe, desirous likewise to vnderstand these newes, came ryding with his courtly attendants toward the Haucn, whom Polendos espying, took the faire Targiana by the hand, & accompanied with his noble train of princes and knights, armed in very rich & sumptuous order, presented her before her ffather, when falling on her knees and besetwing her face with a few teares, she humbled her selfe to kisse his fete. The great Turke moued with naturall remorse & pitie, embraced her very louingly in his armes, and came to the king Polendos & his company, vsing them with marueilous princely and gracious fauour, lodging them in his own pallace, and feasting them in such noble wise, that the Emperors court, they thought themselves at no time better bled. Thus continued they in all possible pleasure, till the day came of their departure, when the Turke bled such intreaty to the, that he perswaded them to stay one day longer. And then he prepared such a princely feast, as in all the time of their being there, they neuer had the like, passing their dinner time, in talke of the Emperors Palmerin, as also the honorable vsage of his daughter at Constantinople. The tables were no soner withdrawne, but there entred fiftie armed and well appointed knights, each one hauing his sword drawn in his hand, comanding not one should offer resistance, except he would presently lose his life. The great Turke entred at a false or secret doore, giuing to the these speeches. Welld Polendos, and grant thy selfe and thy company to be my prisoners, otherwise, you shall all presently lose your heades. Polendos with all his knights, took one corner of the Wall, keeping their swords in their hands, and then him selfe spake to the Turke in this order. I would gladly knowe, for what cause you offer vs this great discourtesie, considering how well your Daughter hath bene used at Constantinople, as also the honour we haue done you, to conduct her safely to your Court. Polendos (answered the Turke) to the Emperors thy lord, thy selfe and these thy friends, I meane no harme, but I am so offended with the knight, who took my Daughter hence with him into Greece, that I promise, you shall not depart from hence, till the Emperour deliuer that knight into my hands.

Trust

Trust me (quoth Polendos) our hope would stand in hard suspence, if we should stay here on this condition, wherefore we esteeme it more honour, to end our liues in the face of our enemies, then to be the vassalles here in continuall Prison. And hereupon assure thy selfe, that the Emperour would more gladly leaue all the knights in his Court, then to satisfie thy desire with him, who is one of the most hardy and noblest knights on the earth, to whom likewise I wish as much good, as to mine owne soule. Well, sayd the Turke, then must you resolute your selues, either presently to abide the death, or submit your selues to remaine my Prisoners.

At these words, the Princesse Targiana cast her selfe on her knees before her ffather, desiring him not to vse such cruelty to them, who had done her so much honor in the Emperors court, as also deliuered her in the peril of her life, being dangerously assaulted as they came in the voyage. The Turke seeing how importunate his Daughter was on him, in a great anger conuayed himselfe forth againe, because he would not see the slaughter of so many good knights. When Targiana seeing her ffather gone, intreated the king Polendos and his company, that they would suffer themselves to remaine as Prisoners, and not to abide the danger, if they should offer resistance, being naked, and hauing nothing to defend them withal. And during the time they were in prison, she would either demse or accomplish such meanes, as she had no doubt but to purchase their liberty. Upon this good persuasion they yielded themselves, when they were presently carryed into a deepe dungeon in a strong tower, and there were laded with as many irons as they could possible beare, whereat Targiana receiued great griefe, cloathing her selfe in mourning apparell, and would neuer shew any merry countenance, during the time the knights were in Prison, where they remained a long time, as you shall read in the second part of this Booke.

The Turke comanded the Christian Galleys to be kept in safe and sure protection, and presently sent word to the Soldane of Persia with all the other Princes, how he had diuers of the Emperors knights prisoners, on whom he determined sharp reuenge:



reuerge, for the great injury which Florian of the Desert had done him. These newes they esteemed very strange, neuertheless, being very fearefull any way to displease him, they made resemblance of a good opinion in this matter, giuing him counsell to kepe them, untill the Prince Albayzar were returned, whom else the Emperour might cause to be slaine.

The great Turke trusted very much on their deuise, suffering the captiue Princes, that they might send their Esquires to the Emperour Palmerin, to aduertise him of the miserie wherein they remained, but the Esquires by no meanes would forsake their Maisters, desiring, as they had accompanied them in prosperity, so not to leaue them now in this great mischance.

Which when Belcar perceiued, he commanded his Esquire, to go and certifie the Emperour, what great mishap had befallen vnto them. When the Esquire was come to Constantinople, these newes were nothing welcome to the Emperour, neither to Primaleon, who before him entred into these words. My gracious Lord and father, this mischance is onely procured by your means, for that you dealt so courteously with them, who had neither quality nor any motion of desert in them. But now I would gladly see, what thing you can accomplish any way to pleasure them, for I iudge, that all your power is not sufficient to deliuer them from the bondage wherein they are. Wherefore I thinke it best, that you send with all speed to seek the prince Albayzar, through whom you may recouer the king Polendos and your knights, other way I cannot perceiue, that may pleasure them or profite you.

My Sonne (answered the Emperour) if the imprisonment of Polendos and my knights were perpetuall, I would not seek to set them at liberty by this meane, for I had rather they should enioy the death, then to accomplish that which might be my continuall reproach, for this difference I alway craue, betwene me and all the world that the good may be perfectly discerned from the euill. Albayzar is not guilty in the injury which the Turke doeth same to offer my knights: there

therefore it were against honour, that he should suffer for anothers offence, but this is it whereat I am most amazed, that Targiana will suffer this great discourtesie, considering the honour she receiued in our Court.

My deare Soueraigne (quoth the Esquire) there is no cause to complaine of her, for her intreaty could no way preuaile with her Father, whereupon hee rehearsed the whole discourse and manner of their imprisonment, which the Emperour having heard, departed with the Emperesse into his Chamber very grie, where we must forsake him, and returne to the Prince Florendos.

He trauailed so long, accompanied with the noble Albayzar, that being in the Dominions of Spaine, they came to a faire Castell, which Albayzar knowing very well, began thus to open his intent. Sir Florendos, I haue heretofore passed this place, in the greatest danger that euer I was in, for through giuing aide to a Damosell, whom bloody minded wretches sought to dishonest, I slew them with ten more, as also their Lord named Dramorant the Cruell, who kept this Castell, at which employte, the noble Palmerin of England, Florian and Pompides his Brother, were present, and can testifie what I haue spoken. Wherefore I pray you let vs goe to the Castell, for that I assure my selfe, the Lady to whom I gaue it, at such time as I deliuered her out of danger, will receiue vs with a courteous and friendly welcome. I am content (quoth Florendos) seeing we haue no other place to lodge in this night, that I can see nere here about.

Thus breaking off their talke, they had not rid two stones cast, but they beheld foure armed knights come towards them, and an Esquire who came before them, offering these words to the Prince Florendos. Sir knight, the great Astribor sendeth strait commandement, that you and your companions, do presently yeld your Armour vnder his obedience, the deniall wherof shall cause him vse more cruelty toward you, then he would willingly offer to any good knight.

No other thing doth he request of you, except you can report to him

him tydings, of a knight who hath slaine Dramorant his Brother, sometime Lord and rightfull possessor of this castle, which was given by that knight to a Damocell, whom he kept in prison, till Fortune send the knight hither, to sacrifice them both to his Gods, for reuenge of his brothers death.

Albayzar aduanced himselfe to make answer, but because he was vnarmed, Florendos thus replied to the Esquire. Telle my Lord Astribor, that I am not the knight he would so gladly finde, but I am well acquainted with him, and am sure that he hath slaine his knightes deservingly, as for mine Armour, because I cannot very well spare it, I am content he shall get without it at this time, except I had more knowledge of him, he wold haue it when I shall returne. Well, said the Esquire, since you will not yelde it by gentle means, you must prepare your selfe against these knights, who are here appointed by sufficient authoritie, to take their Armour away perforce, who refused to yelde it according to custome.

Florendos seeing the knights provided to Fight, he encountered with them, and sent two courageously to measure their length on the ground, the one being slaine outright, the other so sore wounded, that he was not able to recover himselfe.

Then came forth Astribor himselfe, very brauely mounted, and seeing Florendos destitute of a Lance, he gaue his Horse the spurs, and ran against him with such force, that Florendos was constrained to fall to the ground, but recovering himselfe, he dealt with Astribor in such couragious manner, that bringing him vnder his obeysance, he cut off his head in recompence of his disloyall actes.

Certaine knights that were in the Castell, and had seen their Lord and Master so conquered, lett their Armour, coming toward the Prince Florendos, to whom in reuerent manner they yelded themselves.

But he would not enter the Castell, before the Lady might come forth of Prison, whereupon Albayzar entred, and found her in a Dungeon, very cruelly bled, so that a great while she could not remember him, but at last she fell on her knees,

knée, and to reward his gentlenesse, submitted her selfe to kisse his hand, who would not suffer her, but sustained her courteously in his armes: willing her to thanke the Prince Florendos and not him, because he was not suffered to beare Armour.

The Lady at these words fell into a great rage, and as though she were distraight of her wits, began thus to say. Cursed be he that hath so dishonoured you, for credit me, knightly Armes were better bestowed on you, then on him, or any of his kinage: wherefore, I am thus perswaded, that Ladies shall haue losse of so good a knight as you, whose heart and hand was ever ready to aide them.

Albayzar not suffering her to runne so farre in his praise, framed his talke to another purpose: desirous to knowe, in what maner Astribor had happened thither. Saying (quoth she) you shall vnderstand, that this Astribor was brother to Dramorant the Cruell, a man of more malicious nature, then ever was the Giant his brother: he was no sooner aduertised of his death, but with ten knights he came vnto this Fortresse, where finding small force to resist him, he entred, causing all he found here to be put to the sword, reseruing me in prison, till he might chance to haue knowledge of you, when then he intended to burne vs both together: and till he might come by you, he ordained this custome, which is so woorthily finished.

Albayzar being certified of euery thing at his pleasure, caused the Prince Florendos to be vnarmed: and his woundes were very carefully respected by the Lady, who had good knowledge in the Art of Chirurgery. There they stayed longer, then the Prince Florendos willingly would: for no place were it neuer so pleasant, could satisfie his fancy, but onely the place where remained his best beloued.

D d

CHAP.

## CHAP. XCVII.

Of that which happened to Palmerin of England, in the company of the Damosell of Thrace.



Which spæde the noble Palmerin of England made, in the company of the Damosell, with whom he traualled, that without any aduenture to hinder them, they quietly entred the kingdome of Thrace: wherent the Damosell was very ioyfull, seeing euery thing fell so fit as she desired, and the labour she had spent so many yeres, began as now so happily to prosper. This Damosell being very well knowne, and highly honoured through all the kingdome, great resort of people came from many Cities and Townes, to receiue her ioyfully, who had bene so long tyme absent.

The people beholding the prince Palmerin, gaue forth these speeches to one another. Behold our gracious Lord and Soueraigne, happy shall his subiects be, to be vnder the gouernment of such a noble Prince, in whom remaineth both courage and clemency: who shall finish the enchanted estate of our Princesse, enioy her as his onely Quene and Lady, and gouerne the Scepter ouer vs, according as our deceased Prince did appoint it.

But Palmerin applied his whole cogitations, how he might manifest his loyalty to the Princesse Polinarda, more then he respected the honour which was done vnto him: and though he had good hope to ende his enterpryse, his intent was presently to returne to his Lady and mistresse. In this opinion they rode on together, til they came to the city of Limoriana, where the principall lords and rulers, came to receiue him with all triumphes possible: conducting him to the royall Pallace, and in all respects

using him as their king and Emperour. Then came he to the chamber of the Quene Carmelia, who was Aunt to the princesse Leonarda, where doing his duty vnto her, she receiued him as noble, as had he bene her owne sonne, because she verily thought he should marry with the Princesse.

But she was farre from the intent of the English Prince, who seeing them so verily to belæue, that he should be their Gouernour of Thrace, was somewhat offended, remembring his promise to his Lady Polinarda. Wherefore he tooke leaue of them, courteously bowing himselfe to the Quene Carmelia, & went to his chamber, where he was vnarmed by Siluan, and the Damosell that came all the way in his company.

At supper he was accompanied with the Quene Carmelia, many Lords and noble Gentlemen of that country, who shewed great courtesie to the English Prince, till the houre of rest came, when euery one departed to their chambers, and Palmerin to his lodging, where he could take no rest, because he desired so much the deliuey of the princesse Leonarda. In the morning Siluan waked him very early, so that when the Lords came to his chamber, they found him ready to depart thence: wherfore they accompanied him to the Chappel, where seruice was solemnized very royally by the Archbishop of the cittie, and then they rode with him, neare the place where the Princesse was Enchanted, reporting to him the dangers and feare, that in this aduenture should chance vnto him.

## CHAP. XCVIII.

How Palmerin tooke his way to the Enchaunted Princeſſe,  
and of that which happened to him.



**P** Short time, the Lords had brought the prince to the place where Leonarda remained enchanted, where he beheld in a pleasant valley, a company of brave and brave Towers among the green trees: the buildings seeming so excellent to the eye, that nature could not have invented them more gallant: so that he thought them to be framed by the Celestiall powers, rather then by any earthly creatures.

Palmerin was glad to see a thing so pleasant, though he were sorrowfull to be absent from his Lady Polinarda: and comparing the great felicitie of him, who should enjoy the Princeſſe Leonarda, with the mournfull thoughts that frequented his mind, he could make choise of nothing, but onely the hope he had to be favoured of his lady: whose remembrance, caused this adventure to promise him more pleasure, then the hazard of such a doubt could move him to feare. A thing, which truly is a great grace in a discrete man, because that divers times we see, the doubtfull things to have the pleasantest issue: and that which seemeth most pleasant at the beginning, doth prove to be the sharpest danger in the ending. Even so this noble Prince Palmerin contained such a courage and magnanimity of mind, that no feare or dismayng had power to supplant his thoughts, because good fortune suffered him, to returne from every attempt with honour.

On

One of the chiefe knights that kept him company, presented himselfe to him in this manner. Most worthy Sir, to what Fortune hath alway borne so great a Friend, that no danger or distresse could offer to dismay you, same not now to discourage your selfe in this adventure, for your accustomed prosperity, can not forsake you at this present. Yet sometime a raw proceeding returneth an unexpected and undeserved punishment: but as this case standeth, your noble selfe accompanied with so great advised care, cannot move a foote further then vertue shall warrant your safety. Pardon me good Sir, if I have bene over rash in my speech, which I intended to no other issue, but chiefly to advertise you, that this adventure is perillous, and theretoze craueth the more heed, and that a friendly admonishment, is better then too late repentance?

Sir, answered Palmerin, your counsaile, shewing so great gravity and foresight, I esteeme a great deale more then at this time I will utter: for if Fortune spare me in this enterprise, I will not be unkindfull of your friendly good will. This promise presented with so great humanitie, enflamed a suddaine enuy in the hearts of some there present, who for the hope they had to see him king, began to enter into more dissembling paynes, then any true or faithfull subiect would seeme to offer. For they began to perswade him, that no adventure, how dangerous soever it proved, might attaine the power to astonish his person: but he declining from such vainglorious paynes, as was the daily gifts and workes of flatterers, courteously took his leave of them all, and set spurs to his Horse, riding towards his determination.

An example surely worthy of great praise to all Princes and rulers living on the earth, that they should not incline and leane to such, who onely fludy with sweete words, flattering tales, and false reports, to rest and bring them asleepe in so vile an exercise. Which painted faces if they would suppress, their Subjects, Friends, and Servants, should be equally regarded, their renowne plentifully increased, and accordingly honoured, yea, the vertues should be richly rewarded,

D D 3

ded,

ded, and the vicious rightfully for ever reproched, then would not the plaine dealer, be gouerned by such as haue bene noted, but the good should be openly discerned from the euill, and all enjoy one hope for a continuall quiet: but to our matter, Palmerin being come somewhat neare the place, the light beganne to darken, the Ayre to be maruellously troubled, and mistie, so that the Lords of Thrace were overcome with such feare, that some fell beside their Horses, some hurt themselves very sore, and they all made hast to the Citie as fast as they could, where the darkenesse likewise was very terrible.

Siluan, whom Palmerin had willed to stay behind him, seeing this suddaine feare, took such courage that he would follow his Maister, but the Enchantment would not suffer any to enter there, saue onely the Knight, who had the power to eue it: that Siluan was forced to returne to the Citie, where hee found the people in a great astonishment, at that which happened since the departure of Palmerin. Who remembryng the wordes of the ancient Knight, beganne to dislike the entrance of sharpe an euill, for he thought easily to finde the way of this aduenture, but he was greatly deceiued, when hee felt such paine, as he supposed would haue rent him asunder. Likewise he thought not to finde any in this place, who had the power to torment him, beyond the loue he bare to his lady: but he found his expectation altered, when an inuisible motion dismounted him from his Horse, whereupon in an anger hee drew his Sword, thinking to preuaile against him that overthrew him, but seeing his blowes to be smitten against the winde, he thought to mount on Horsebacke againe, and then to ride forward.

But all his labour was in vaine, it was not possible for him to finde his Horse, but that which was more to his disadvantage, not onely his Sword was taken from him, but likewise all his Armour was caught away on a suddaine, and the darkenesse was so violent, that hee had not the commodity to goe forward, nor yet to goe backe againe, to the place where he commaunded Siluan to carrie.

CHAP. XCIX.

¶ What happened to the Prince *Palmerin*, in this daungerous aduenture.



Palmerin hauing lost his Horse and Armour, as you haue heard already, became full of heauinesse, because he was in respect naked, and so hard an aduenture required better prouision: his strength on a suddaine beganne to faile him, his armes and legges denied their wonted nimblenesse, and on a suddaine he heard a mighty and terrible thundering, that still he expected when the earth would haue opened vnder him.

¶ Upon this he heard a fearefull hollowe voyce, but looking about him, he could perceiue nobody, and then was he snatcht by such a mighty height, that he still looked when he should be violently throwen downe againe. This feare had not the power to hurt him, but to his greater comfort, the light excluded the darkenesse away, when he found himselfe to be in the midst of a little Island enclosed rounde about with a Lake so blacke and oughe, that he thought it to be one of the floods of Hell.

¶ Nere to him he espied an olde withered Tree, and vnderneath it stode a Knight armed with the Armour of Palmerin, with his Sword likewise in his hand, whereupon he began to the Prince in this order. I desire (Syr Knight) to see at this present, by what means thou canst defend thy selfe

## The first part

from me, who with this Sworde will mangle thy flesh and bones, whereon the wilde Beastes of the Countrey shall feed: so that thy renowne famed ouer all the whole earth, shall here take full end, where none can approach to beare witness of thy death.

The Prince, who was neuer accustomed to any feate, was nowe surprised in maruailous manner, whereat no man could euer haue thought, in that he was destitute of any thing for his defence, and to strue by the armes with such an enemy, he founde it altogether insufficient: yet notwithstanding, the extremitie which Fortune had allotted him, he approached to the knights, offering to aduenture so vpon him.

But as they thought to close together, a darke Cloude suddenly ouershadowed them, so that Palmerin could no way discern the knight, but thinking as it were to gripe him, his Sword was suddainly put into his hand, and his Armour he perceyued vnder the Tree, but the knight was gone he knew not which way.

Palmerin hereat was somewhat abashed, but seeing this aduenture so replenished with fearefull assaults, and that the end of all would be changed into rigour, he armed himselfe againe with such a courage, that not only his strength was encreased, but also his minde nobly addited, to accomplishe that which he so much desired.

The light beganne to be cherefull againe, when Palmerin discerned the faire Castell, whereto he could not attaine, without crossing that ugly Lake, which to passe he could deuise no meanes, but it would stand on the hazarde of his life.

Beside, the Banke on the other side, was so steepe approaching downe to the water, that he could not iudge with himselfe howe to get vp, because no weight of his Armour, would be a great hinderance to him, to lande on the side where he would be: yet more to hinder his determination, he espied there a compaignie of monstrous and misshapen Beasts, who on a suddaine

## Of Palmerin of England.

210

a suddaine fought so furiously together, that in the end they had utterly spoyle and killed one another.

Their furious fight being thus ended, he went about the Island, to see where he might haue passage to the other side, at last he espied a Boate, having foure Dees in it, which were handled and gouerned by foure Apes, the one tied with a mighty Chayne, and at the one ende of the Boate sat a mighty Lyon, all embred in blood, as though he were Master and conductor of the Passage, who fed himselfe with nothing else, but the flesh of his Passengers.

While Palmerin took occasion to beholde this sight, he espied a man on the farder side, crying to the Boatmen to carry him ouer with them, to which he became very much amazed, and thought it no man to be so willy, as to hazard himselfe vnder such a Pilote.

The man was no sooner entred the Boate, but the Lyon straight way rent him in peeces, giuing part of him to his companions, to sustaine their life.

The Prince who stood and beheld all this, knew not how to determine with himselfe, for he sawe no way to passe, but the terror of death was both before and behind him, wherefore seeing there was no remedy, he concluded to put himselfe to the rigour of the Beasts, and to shift with them by strength of his armes, for he sawe himselfe wholly destitute of any other hope.

Whereupon he looked how he might discorde doinge, for the Roche was so slippery and steepe, that he thought there was no other way, but to breake his necke, in this extremitie he committed himselfe to God, and afterward to his Mistresse he beganne in this manner. Madam, it is not the losse of life which appaleth me, but the hope of your fauour that sustaineth me in doubt, but if I well consider with my selfe, the ending of my life in this aduenture, will be the greatest good that euer may happen to me, because then my insupportable paines shall attaine a perfect and full conclusion. Yet knowing the griefe which molesteth me, proceedeth from none but onely



pen, I fire my ioy and comfort to this ende, that your helpe in this and all other extreames, is the onely aduancement of my good fortune.

Here taking occasion to stay, he suffered himselfe to slide softly downe the Rocks, and attained the Riuer side without any harme: whereupon, the Lyon and his fellows came to receiue him into the Boate, but he perceiving all this was Enchantment, drew his sword and offered resistance, when presently the beasts vanished, he knew not which way.

Then Palmerin leaped into the Boate, and with all diligence rowed himselfe to y farther side, but when he was landed there, he had more cause of maruaile, because now he sawe no way how to get vp vpon that Rocks.

Walking a litle aside, he beheld a Rope that reached to the ground from the top, which was so slender and rotten, that he thought it not able to abide the waight of his Armour, wherefore, to make himselfe the lighter, he determined to leaue his Armour, yet not knowing what occasion he should haue to vse it, when he should come to the top of the Rocks, he bound himselfe about the middle with the Rope, when presently he was pulde vp with maruailous speede, and when he was at the toppe, he could not perceiue them that had drawne him vp. When he knew he was in the field where the beasts were slaine, and that every thing the Enchantment presented to him, was for no other cause but to abate his courage: wherefore, he addicted himselfe so aduenturous, that all the feare in the world, had not the power to dismay him.

C H A P. .

C H A P. C.

How Palmerin ended the Enchantment, of the Princesse Leonarda.



On all that night, Palmerin rested himselfe vnder a Tree, and in the morning he beheld the Towers very brauely: wherefore he walked on, and at last espied his Horse tyed to a Tree, in no worse case then when he left him. So mounting vpon him, he rode a litle further, where hee met with two knights, who without any words, couched their speares against him: the first he receiued vpon his shield, and the knights presently vanished away: the second burst his lance vpon him, whereupon Palmerin followed him, to requite him with a blow of his sword, but he lost the sight of him, in like maner as he did of the other knight.

Then Palmerin looking about, espied a man ready to draw a Bridge, which was the passage ouer a water, which made him to gallop thither apace, so that he entred the gate before he had the power to locke it. When he sawe himselfe in so faire a Castle, he aduanced himselfe to see the brauerie of the Chambers: but two Giants came and laid at him with their spades, so that he was enforced to fall on the ground, but reconering himselfe, thinking to fasten halfe a score good blowes on them, they were gone, nothing remaining before him but a great smoke.

This caused him, to make the lesse estimation of any thing that

that chaunced, and whatſoeuer reſiſted him, hee would but little force of, ſo coming into the Court of the Caſtell, he perceiued a little gate on high in the wall, whereto he muſt aſcend by a paire of ſtaires, ſo narrow and dangerous, that a man would haue hardly truſted himſelfe on them.

Palmerin, deſirous to ſee the ende of his labours, aduentured to goe by vpon them; and when he was on the middle ſteppe, all the walles about him beganne to ſhake very vehemently, ſo that Palmerin doubted the whole Caſtell would fall vpon him, and till he came to the top of the ſtaires the Enchantment laſted, where he was no ſooner come, but a general terror did ſhew the Enchantment to be fully ended.

Palmerin entring through that little doore, came into a darke enſie, where there was a great gate, made faſt with great Lockes and boltes of Iron, and hard by the gate lay a mighty Serpent, whoſe horrible bignesse and ugly ſeeme, made the Prince to be greatly amazed, about whoſe necke vpon a Chaine, was hanged the Keyes that ſhould open the gate.

The Prince knewe not how to paſſe this gate, except he might winne the Keyes from ſo terrible a Porter, whom hee charged with many noble ſtrokes, and the Serpent breathed ſuch horrible venome and ſmoke, hauing the Princes Sword in one of his noſtrilles: that with a terrible rore hee ſawe through one of the windowes. The people ſeing it ſawe euer the Cittie, which made them iudge, that Palmerin as then was in ſome painefull trauaile, ſoꝝ whoſe good ſucceſſe they prayed very often.

When he ſaw the Serpent was gone, he found the Keyes on the ground, wherewith he vnlacked and opened the gate, entring into ſo faire a Hall, that the Perilous Ile, where Eutropa caſt her ſelfe into the Lake, noꝝ the ſumptuous Caſtle of the Sage Aliant Obſcure Valley, might compare with this rare and excellent Enchantment, which was ſo ingeniouſly deuised by the King of Thrace.

He walked all about, and found all things new to be

in perfect eſtate, ſoꝝ that the Enchantment was fully finiſhed, but at laſt he came to a Chamber, where he perceiued certaine Damoſels talking, and by them ſtood an armed man, who like wiſe tooke pleaſure to conferre with the Damoſels.

The Prince loth to trouble them, entred into a verie faire Garden, where on a græne banke, by a faire fountaine, he beheld diuers Ladies of excellent beautie, but eſpecially, the faire young Princeſſe Leonarda, who had no ſooner eſpied him but ſhe came to him very courteouſly in this manner. Credo me Sir Knight, I finde my ſelfe ſo largely beholding to you, that I cannot recompence you ſo nobly as you haue deſerued, but in time I ſhall endeour my ſelfe to requite the honourable bounty receiued at your hands, meane while, I ſhall requeſt you, to accept my good will in ſatiſfaction of your noble doeds, which are imprinted ſo deepe in my heart, that I ſhall not faile to accompliſh, what your Promiſſe hath bound me in.

My gracious Lady (answered Palmerin) the beauty which Nature hath abundantly adorned you withall, is ſufficient to content the greateſt trauailes, attempted by the hardyeſt Knight in the world: if ſo be Fortune had allowed him the liberty to receiue ſo great a benefite of ſuch a gracious Lady. But ſeing the aduventure here ſo wonderfull, that theſe preſent, put them paſt into darke obliuion, I ſhall intreate you to tell me, if I haue any greater danger to paſſe, then this which it pleaſeth you to preſent before me, ſoꝝ truſt me I ſhall diſpaire to accompliſh them, knowing right well, that the hope of ſo rich a Treafure, as is your beautie, ought to be reſerued for the Knight, who is indebted with greater Promiſſe then my ſelfe.

Theſe words procured a ſwete bluſhing in the Princeſſe face, where ſhe to be reſolved, ſhe replied thus. I know not, Sir Knight, what danger you ſuſtaine at this preſent, becauſe all the dangers and hazards of the Caſtle, tooke end at ſuch time as you came into this Garden. But then to breake off their talke, there came in the Lords and Gouverneurs of the Cittie,

Citty, who seeing the Serpent fly ouer the Citty, which they know very well to be the end of the Enchantment, they came with great Majesty riding to the Castle, where coming into the Garden, they humbled themselves on their knees before the Princeesse Leonarda, offering likewise to kisse the hand of the noble Palmerin, which he would not suffer: but receiued them courteously as his friends and companions. The Quene Carmelia sent a Coach to the Castle, wherein the Princeesse Leonarda was brought to the Pallace of her Uncle, who receiued her as became her high estate and dignity: and the Prince Palmerin likewise they vied great honour and Princely obedience, but when he came to the Chamber, he found there Siluian who was not a little glad to see his Lord so sauely returned.

CHAP. CI.

Of that which Palmerin did, while he remained in the Court of Thrace.



Now at the request of the Quene Carmelia, Palmerin granted to stay in the court of Thrace for eight dayes, in which time, the Lords to fulfill the commandement of their deceased King, went to the Chamber of the Quene Carmelia, in whose presence they charged the Duke Rialdo, to giue the English Prince to vnderstand what their King Sardamant had commanded to be fulfilled.

On this they all came to the Princes Chamber, where they found him talking with Siluian, as concerning his speedy departure

from thence: which they knewe he had appointed as the next day following, but they making themselves ignorant thereof, at last the Duke Rialdo entred into these speeches.

My Lord, as I thinke you haue not forgotten, what commandement our deceased King Sardamant, left to be performed in the marriage of the Princeesse Leonarda his Daughter.

So it is, that willing to accomplish his straight and heauie charge, as also not to suffer such a noble Prince, who hath merited so graciously, to be ingratelly recompenced, likewise on our parts, that we cannot esteeme for our selues a more happy felicity, then such a King to rule vs, whose deeds rightly deserue to be Monarch of the whole world: these causes considered and nominated, we humbly desire you, to accept your sone by right, and our dutie to see faithfully accomplished, which is, to be our gracious King and Soueraigne, so shal our happy and tranquill estate, remaine feared of the stranger, and beloued of our friends and neighbours. Except the increase of wealth, doe alter the noble mind, which had alwaies hitherto continued upright, as to some it happeneth: but falling into so great mishap, your estimation would be the lesse accounted of, so that the honorable pains you haue bestowed, to restore vs the princeesse Leonarda our Quene, should be blotted with such obliuous reports, as though they had bene neuer scene or done.

I assure you Sir, answered Palmerin, the refuse which I make, to accept a reward so happy and fortunate, is onely because I verily iudge, the Princeesse Leonarda ought to be kept for such a one, as may better my estate in wealth and worthinesse.

The Damosel of Thrace, who had brought him thither, standing by and hearing the answere he made, came vnto him in this manner.

Sir Palmerin, I know right well, that loue hindzeth you to enioy what your deeds hath deserued, and causeth you to muse on such a one, as peraduenture thinketh not so well of you, which is the onely cause, that you refuse the recompence of your honorable and famous labours.

The words of the Damosell, seemed very reason able to the Duke and his company, but seeing they could obtaine no other answer of Palmerin, they returned againe to the Quene Carmelia, concluding, that he should giue a noble Lord to enioy the Princesse Leonarda; according as the King Sardamant had so ordained: whereto Palmerin gladly agræd, saying.

I account this honour (wo;thy Gentlemen) the greatest that euer fortune could send me, in suffering your Princesse to ioyne in Marriage according to my miude: and therefore thus assure yourselves, that I shall bestow such a Prince vpon her, as both she and you shall be contented to receiue.

The Lords of Thrace gaue him very hartly thanks, reporting his answer to the Quene Carmelia, who made such acceptation thereof, as it wo;thily deserved: but Leonarda was somewhat offended, and would haue fallen into anger, had not the Damosell of Thrace vsed these words vnto her,

Faire Princesse, me thinks you should not thinke so ill, of the constant faith and loyaltie of the Prince Palmerin, who will hope his vow he hath made to her, which perhaps is nothing inferior to you in beauty and wealth: and this I can assure you, that Palmerin hath a brother, a Prince so faire and vertuous in all his dooers, as if he ioyne you in marriage with him, I know you will gladly helpe your selfe content.

The Damosell vsed her perswasions so well, that the Princesse Leonarda was very well pleased: of whom Palmerin tooke his leaue that night, because he would be gone somewhat early in the morning, which the Quene Carmelia seeing, she tooke him aside, and thus charged him.

I pray you Sir to remember my Cousin Leonarda, and to send her such a Lord, as her birth and worthinesse hath continually deserved.

And if you thinke it good, that I might cause her to be brought to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, I should esteeme it the greatest honour, that in all my life time might happen vnto me. For that I perswade me, he would so wel entertaine her, as the faire Polinarda, who is his Præce, with whom she would likewise greatly delight her selfe.

Furthermoze,

Furthermoze, because all the chiefe knights of the world, be at the Court of Constantinople, I would gladly this kingdome should be ruled by such a Prince, as hath bin trained by by that famous Emperour.

Madame saide Palmerin, I assure you, the Emperour will esteeme this honour highly, and entertaine her according as she doeth deserue: therefore I wish you to send her so soone as may be, because the sooner she cometh, the better shall she be welcome.

I pray you (quoth the Quene) how esteeme you of the Damosell, that brought the Cup thither?

Truely answered Palmerin, I know no one so conuenient, by reason of the good spirit and wit she hath, which doeth greatly grace her in reporting her message.

Presently the Quene called for the Damosell, giuing her to vnderstand what was determined. Whereupon there were letters of credit made for her: which done, Palmerin tooke leaue of the Quene and the Princesse Leonarda, being accompanied with most of the nobles south of the Citie, where after many circumstances of friendly departing, they left him, and returned againe to the Citie.

Palmerin being very well armed, still vsing his Shield, to be called the Knight of the Tiger, trauailed on in his iourney accompanied with Siluian, yeelding his body to trauaile, and his heart to his Lady and Distresse, as in the second part you shall see very gallantly discouered.

FINIS.

Be

Thus



Hus Gentlemen, you haue heard the first part of our English Princes labors, wherein, if you find the Translation altered, or the true sence in some place of a matter impaired, let this excuse answer his default in that case. A worke so large, is sufficient to tire so simple a workeman as himsele: and beside, the Printer may in some place let an error escape. So betweene these two reasons, let the Author passe vncontrowled, which will hasten him the sooner to send you the second part: wherein he dares promise you, such plentifull varietie of choice conceits, as cannot be so long expected, as they will bee thought worthy of a welcome. Meane while, he reposeth himsele on your wonted courtesies: desiring to heare nothing, that may disharten him from his intent, or hinder you from the end of so braue a Historie.

FINIS.

*Anthony Munday.*

Patere aut abstinere.

214

214

223

223

282

282

---

12218

---

1240

---

34.



# THE SECOND PART OF

THE NO LESSE RARE, THEN  
excellent and stately Historie, of the famous and  
fortunate Prince *Palmerin* of *England*,  
and *Florian du Desert* his brother.

CONTAINING THEIR KNIGHTLY  
deeds of Chivalry, successe in their loues pursuite,  
and other admirable fortunes.

Wherein Gentlemen may finde choise of sweete inventions,  
and Gentlewomen be satisfied in Courtly  
expectations.

Translated out of French, by *A. M.* one of the  
Messengers of her Maiesties Chamber.

*Pateat aut abstine.*



LONDON

Printed by *Thomas Crecde*, and *Bernard Alsop*

1616.

THE  
CONDRAIR

THE  
CONDRAIR

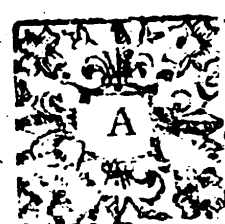
THE  
CONDRAIR

THE  
CONDRAIR



TO THE WOR-  
SHIPFULL MAISTER FRAN-  
CIS YOUNG OF BRENT PEL-

ham, in the Countie of Hertford Esquire, and to  
Mistresse Susan Young, his Wife, and my  
kinde Mistresse, he Ich, and hap-  
pinssse intirely wished.



ALPHONSIUS king of Naples, (Right  
Worshipfull) a King renowned in sun-  
drie volumes of Antiquitie, for his wise-  
dome, Bountie, and Affabilitie of Na-  
ture, lying very sore sicke in the Citie of  
Capua, having tryed the very vtermost  
cunning his Physitions could vie on him, yet all would  
not helpe to recouer his health, determined with him-  
selfe to take no more Medicines : but for his recreati-  
on caused the Storie of *Quintus Curtius* (concerning the  
deedes of *Alexander* the Great) to be read before him,  
at the hearing whereof hee conceyued such woonderfull  
pleasure, as Nature gathered strength by it, and chased  
away the frowardnes of his dileate.

Wherevpon in some sorte, hauing soone recone-  
red his health, hee discharged his Physitians, with  
these wordes : *Feast mee no more with Galene, and Hyp-  
pocrates, sith all their skill would not serue to assuage my  
sicke-*

*The Epistle Dedicatorie.*

*sicknesse: but well fare Quintius Curtius that holpe mee so soone to my health.*

By this example may be gathered (right worshipfull) how necessary it is (oftentimes) to reade Histories, which in the iudgement of the wise are esteemed as healthfull to the mind, as Phisick is accounted holesome for the body: yea, oftentimes more, for that the sodaine inward conceit of delight (wherewith Histories are plentifully enriched) may sooner breake and qualifie the extremity of a painfull disease, then the long and labour-some applying of Physicall receipts. Yet, not to condemne the one, nor extoll the other more then it deserueth, I allow of both very well: but I must needs thus confesse with *Aristotle*, that History is the Schoolemistresse of Princes, and the onely Trumpet that soundeth in the eares of all noble personages, the famous deeds of their worthy progenitors.

*Plato* likewise affirmeth, that the name of History was giuen to this end, that by recording matters of antiquity, our fleeting memories might be stayed, which otherwise would soone be lost and retaine little.

Seeing then (right worshipfull) that Histories carry such credite among the learned sort, and haue not bene a little esteemed of both Emperours, kings, and famous Potentates? as a testimony of my vnfeined affection and dutie to your worshippe: I offer you the second part of this excellent and famous Historie, which how bad the rude translation thereof may seeme to the daintie eares, I know: but how singular it is of it selfe, no better description then the reading ouer can be made.

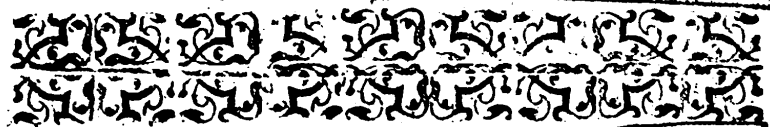
I presume therefore, maister *Young*, as the Romanes did, who were wont to place the pictures of their most

*The Epistle Dedicatorie.*

most especial friends, at the very entrance into their stately Pallaces, therby to declare their zealous and vnspotted affection to them. In like maner haue I stampt your worshipps name in the face of this historie, as well to countenance the Book with such a worshipfull personage, as to credit my selfe with your woonted and fauourable good liking: for I account my selfe, and my labours free from the reproach of wounding tongues, being allowed but the least moitie of your gentle iudgement. It shall bee needlesse for me to wade into tedious circumstances, when to the wise and learned a word is sufficient: wherefore *Falmerin* reposeth himselfe on your kinde conceite, and wisheth such happy continuance to you, your wife my gentle Mistresse, and whole issue, as the world being partaker of your vertues, my selfe acquainted with your fauourable opinion, and my Booke defended by your worthy selfe, you may remaine, as in yeeres, so in happinesse: and the longer your course, the larger your comfort.

*Your worships at command,*

A. Mundy.



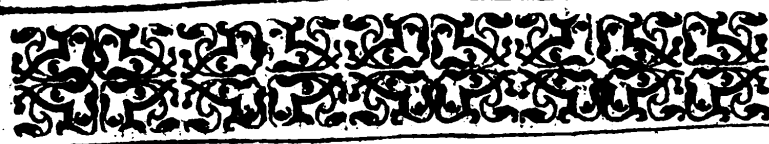
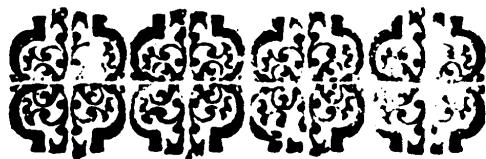
To the Reader.



According to my promise, I haue finished the second part of Palmerins famous historie: how plentifully it is enriched with singular conceits, sweete inuention, and commendable purposes, leaue to thy iudgement, not doubting but that thou wilt censure thereof vnpartially. And least thou shouldest pledge, that this second part brookes off abruptly, not shewing what becometh of the Princes, after they were conuayed by the Sage Aliar to the Perilous Isle: vnderstand, that the third part shall acquaint thee therewith, as also the full conclusion of euery matter herein handled, which if thou be desirous to haue, giue these two former Bookes the friendlier welcome, and it will hasten the translation of the other with the greater speede.

Thy vnfaigned friend to his power.

A. Munday.



THE SECOND PART OF  
the famous Historie, of the noble  
and valiant Prince *Palmerin* of England,  
containing other most singular and  
knightly deedes by him achieved,  
and worthily finished.

CHAP. I.

Of that which happened to the Prince *Florendos*, after that he had left the Castle of *Dramorant* the Cruell, where hee vanquished *Astribor*.



I haue made rehearfall vnto you in the first part of this Historie, how the valiant Prince *Palmerin* of England, who caused himselfe to be called the Knight of the Tiger happily brought to the end the cruell enchantment, wherein the faire *Leonarda* Princesse of *Thrace*, was long time detained, and hauing staied long in that realme, he concluded to take his leaue of the Quene *Carmelia*, and the young Lady, desiring them humbly, that they would not seeme to hinder him from his voyage to *Constantinople*, within whose walles was inclosed the inestimable treasure of his knightly and loyall minde, which indeede was the faire *Princess* *Polinarda*, the soueraigntie of whose beautie was of such power, as made him refuse the Crowne of *Thrace*, which was presented vnto him, (according as the Sage *Aliar* made rehearfall before these famous aduentures) by the principall noble Gentlemen throughout the realme of *Thrace*,  
who

## The second part

who hartily desired if it might be possible, that the noble Palmerin of England, (whose honestie, valour and knightly courtesie was agreeable together) should fulfill the commandement of their King Sardament, which they would haue bene very loth to contrary, had he thereto consented. But Palmerin made knowne his minde and secret intent, as well vnto them as also to the Princesse, both what he intended, and what he would see especially perfozmed, wherewith his honoz should stand for a warrant, which they in the end gratefully accepting, humbled themselves, to take their farewell of him, and he framing the like to ward the Quene, the Princesse, and them all, departed with a princely conge, and rode on in a thousand thoughts toward Constantinople, bearing his afozenamed deuise of the Tiger in his shield, where, to his prosperous iourney we will leaue him a while, and returne to the Prince Florendos, son to the noble Primalcon, who hauing slaine Astribor, and giuen liberty to the Lady that was prisoner in his Castell, departed on his iourney with Albayzar, in whose company he passed the Realme of France, without any desire to approach the Court, because he doubted if the King and the Quene Melicia, knewe of his being there, they would stay him longer then he willingly would.

Therefore continuing on his way, he entred the kingdome of Nauarre, wherein to jeyn these two worthy knights had trauailed two dayes, at length they entred into a faire and goodly Valley, thzough the middle of whereof there ran a pleasant Riuer, which had diuerse sorts of trees planted about it, very pleasant to the beholders. The sight hereof greaily reuiued the pen-siue minde of the Prince Florendos, who could not brydle his thoughts from the remembrance of the Castell of the Giant Almaroll, wherein the Jewel of his happynesse remained, and befoze whose walles he had spent some part of his youtiful time in knightly tryall.

They had nat long trauailed in this pleasant Valley, but within a while (to their greater delight) they espied by the way-side, a strong and well fortifised Castell, whereto as they were about to aduance themselves, they beheld a Damosell

(account

## of Palmerin of England.

(accompanied with two Esquiers who were on foot) preparing herselfe towards them, to meete them: which Florendos perceiuing, and knowing himselfe to be armed if the worst should happen, he gaue forth himselfe nobly to meet them, to whom the Damosell spake after this sort.

Sir knight, the faire Arnalte, Princesse of Nauarre my Ladye and Distresse, commaundeth you, in respect of the danger that may happen vnto you by this aduenture, that you faile not to accomplish one of these thre conditions wherewith I shall present you. The first is, that you must returne vnto the place from whence you now came, where you shal sweare, that she is the onely Princesse of beautie in the whole world. Secondly, that you must enter Combat all the way as you ryde, with any that dare maintaine the contrarie. Or if you will not accept of these two conditions, you shall then make promise, that you will neuer beare Armes in any cause, wherein knighthood may be witnessed, or you merite renowne by any such enterpryse, neither on the behalfe of any distressed Lady, or in triall of your knightly loyaltie.

Thus Gentlemen, if you cannot put on the minds to satisfie my Ladies will, you must hazard your selues to endure the manifold perils contained within this Valley: wherein, if either your cunning faile you, or the sufficiencie of her noble demaund foile you, you must content your selues to abide perpetuall imprisonment, wherein nothing will be so bitter vnto you as life, and nothing better vnto you then present death: this is here provided for those, who dare endue themselves with the hardynesse, to refuse to obey the conditions I haue tolde you. Wherefore Gentlemen, if you will follow my aduise, I would counsel you to take your oath in maintenance of her beauty, which can no way impeach you of dishonour, or diminish any iote of your knightly valour, considering you shall iustifie nothing but a truth, wherein you can neuer faile, and rid your selues of a great deale of trouble, which surely to knights is an infamous blot: for I assure you, such as fall into the danger thzough their owne folly, may well sit and repent their extreme mishaps, yet gaine no power to remedy their great misfortunes.

**Faire Damofell** (answered Florendos) I take in verie great disdain what your Mistrisse commaundeth me, in respect of her vaine glorious request, and for that my knighthood standeth vpon better regarde: and this I assure you, that I take lesse pleasure in your counsell, then I dread the perill in confronting your Ladies claime: this alwaies considered, that her conditions are such, as she may neither demande, nor I defend. Yet to aduantage me the more, I would request, if you would doe me so much fauour as to declare, to what ende this stately enterprise of your Lady tendeth: for it seemeth immodest in her to will so much, and I should shew my selfe very vnmannertly to thrust my selfe into such vnreuerent seruice.

I promise you sir knight (answered the Damofell) the enterprise is so full of doubt vnto the hardiest knightes, as it is conuenient that first we should receiue their oathes, before we discover to them the will of the Princesse Ainalte, whereof if they should be acquainted before hand, they would not aduance themselves to promise any thing. And if it chance that my Lady compell them to yeelde by more constraint, they shall beare but bad estates when they depart out of her hands, because she was so gentle to request, and they so daintie in making promise.

**Damofell** (quoth Florendos) I very well perceiue the scope of your meaning, how with threating words of ensuing danger, you would bring me like a yong spowice to that, which your Lady would haue me so gladly performe: but surely I am not so childish as to satisfie her minde, by promising any one of the conditions you haue rehearsed, for I rather desire to be acquainted with y<sup>e</sup> most difficult dangers, wherewith you seem so much to menace me, and whereto I very willingly giue my consent, rather then I will be so base minded as to accomplish her commaundement, and so you may depart and tell her. The Damofell with this answer returned to the Castell of her Ladye, from whence in short space after, came forth six knights very gallantly mounted and armed, and bearing their Lances down ward, approached to y<sup>e</sup> prince Florendos, to whom they deliuered forth these speeches. Sir knight, it is thought good by our lady and mistres, y<sup>e</sup> you should vnderstand at this present, the danger which

the ancient custome vsed in this place, doth bring all knights into, that dare seeme to denie it, and for that our Lady hath been so courteous as to demand, and thou so impudent as thou wilt needs deny, thou shalt well know that we may, can, and will compell thee. Few words and sweet (answered Florendos) your Lady may do much, but not command: you as much, but not compell, and for my selfe, I will neither command nor compell, but bid you hartily welcome to what you dare doe. At these wordes they gaue the spurres to their Horses, and all fire fetched their carrie against the good and hardy knight Florendos, who likewise prepared himselfe to receiue them courageously, which in sooth he did with such knightly prowesse, as at the first he depeiued one of them of his life, and in short space the other were left destitute of their Lances. Then he began to take hart aitch, and settled himselfe manfully toward the other fiue, to endure the sharpe charges wherewith they assaulted him. The fight hereof moued **Albayzar** to immeasurable griefe, who wished that he were then so happie as to maintaine the cause of that good knight, for that he would reuenge the iniury which the other vncourteously offered him, and which he perceiued to be so great, as he wished rather to be presently void of life, then to want his Armour in such an extremity.

Florendos enuironed on euery side with his enemies, knew not well which way to shun the perill, but the most unhappiest thing of all, one of the Horses of one of the knights, gaue him such a cruell stroke, as he was constrained to fall to the earth. But it was not long before he recovered his feete againe, when presently he took himselfe to a Tree, to rescue himselfe a little from their mallice, which when the knights perceiued, they deliuered vnto him these speeches. Say knight, this Tree neither can nor shall defend you from our power, and therefore it is very slender helpe for you to trust vnto, wherefore we iudge it far better to render your selfe to the prison of our Lady and Mistrisse, then to suffer so great danger, as we see you in by the great effuse of your blood. I had much rather (answered Florendos) endure the death, making an ample prooue of a noble minde, then to render my selfe into the hands of such cruell



and discourteous persons as you are. Wherefore if you be Gentlemen, or dare conceive so good an opinion of hardines in your selves, do me the knightly fauour, as to let me deale with you one after another, which is honestly in me to request, and honoꝛ in you to grant. Otherwise, if you be so faint hearted of your selves, as you dare not fight but altogether, then dismount from your horses, and I will shew you how much the vertue and honoꝛ of a good knight is esteemed, aboue the beautifull manners of the cowardly mind: whereunto one of the knights presently thus replied.

I see no reason sir, why you should so much presume on your selfe, in that there is no one of vs, but thinketh himselfe able enough, to compell you to submit your selfe. But so little account do we make of the vanquishing you, as we deale with you altogether, rather to please the humoꝛ of the Princesse Arnalte, the for any disability in our selves to quite you man for man. Nevertheless, seeing you haue such a desire as we should come to you on foot, we are content to giue ouer our horses. Whereupon they presently alighted and came together to assaile Florendos, who receiued them very gladly, and behaued himselfe toward them so brauely, as in short time they reputed that they left their horses. For Florendos had not long fought with the, but he discharged one of them of his life quickly, and continued his deuoir so gallantly with his sword toward the other foure, as one after another, he sent three more to keepe the other company. At length when Florendos had brought the last of them into subiection, and was about to part his head from his shoulders, the Princesse Arnalte suddenly came, accompanied with her damoyselles, desirous to see the life of the knight, whereupon she spake to Florendos after this manner.

Sir knight to the end that this great victory which you haue achieved, may not call your name into dishonour, by murdering him who hath no power to defend himselfe, I beseech you that you would giue me the life of this knight. And for the discourtesie you haue suffered by him and his fellows, amends may be made in other maner, for I will put my selfe by way of duty, to accomplish any thing that it shall like you to ordaine, provided

alwaies,

alwaies, that my honour and authority be no way impeached thereby. Hadam (answered Florendos) why should life be granted, when a finger is not to be giuen to such persons, as so much forget their owne honour, to imploy themselves in such vnnatural attempts: neuertheless, your vertuous and honest iesture hath gained so much power ouer me, that I will not refuse to graunt you any thing, conditionally, that you will do me so much honour, as to tel me the reason why you cause to be maintained this so bad custome.

Sir knight, answered the Princesse Arnalte, fearing that by long staying in this place, your wounds may turne you to greater danger then you expect, I pray you do me so much fauour as to go with me into my Castle, where, hauing provided to redresse your wounds, as also those which my knight hath receiued, I will not faile to answer in what you please. Florendos hauing need to succour himself, by reason of his dangerous fight, would not refuse to agree to the will of the Princesse Arnalte, who caused one of her damoyselles to see the curing of his wounds, which in sooth were in no greater danger, then that he might easily trauell the day following. After that the Princesse had caused those to be buried that were slain, she tooke Florendos by the hand, and walked with him very cheerefully and pleasantly disposed, which courtesie he held in great reputation, hauing made his promise so nobly knowne against her knights. But then as she walked, she began to contemplate the beautie of the Prince Florendos, with very great admiration, whereupon presently came to her remembrance the Prince Florian of the Forrest, which caused a crimson colour to a mount into her cheekes, so that all her face deliuered an amiable blush, which Florendos well noted at the beginning, whereupon hee was conducted by the Princesse to the side of a window, the prospect whereof was ouer a faire running river, when she receiued the hardinesse to spake to him in this manner.

I know wel, sir knight, that the custome of my Castle seemeth vnto you, to be ordained against all reasonable regard: but hauing vnderstood for what occasion I maintaine it in this order, you will not be any wayes offended thereat. It is so Sir, that

## 7 he second part

my Lord my Father leauing me in the custody of sundry noble Gentlemen of this Realme of Nanarre, he desired them at the very houre of his death, that they would see I should be married to mine owne pleasure & contentment. Attending which time, I withdrew my selfe (to auoyd popular frequentation) into this my Castle, where hauing by fortune sojourned a while there chanced to arrive here a comely knight, a most braue, gallant and an honest Gentleman, and and so worthily accompanied with vertue and prouesse, that my good liking coupled with equall loue, I desired aboue all other to match with him, holding opinion also, in him I should iustly satisfie my Lord and Fathers commandement, ioyning hereunto that I should greatly grace my selfe, and such in sooth was this braue knight. But he being come from the Castle of the Giant Almorall, was so altered in nature, that he neuer made account of my friendship, refusing altogether mine honest offer, & casting the remembrance of my great good will, into contemptuous and unkind forgetfulness. Whereupon I caused him to be taken and layd in prison, which I did with very kind and tender regard, because I saw he was unarmed, which could promise no security to himselfe, if I should haue shewne my extreamest rigor.

For fortune was so happy a friend to him, as she sent an other knight vnto this place called Florian of the Forrest, whom you do very much resemble, whose behaviour gained such power ouer me, as not onely made me set at liberty this first knight, but that which græued me far more, he made me so forgetfull of my selfe, as I suffered him to gather the fruit of my garden, which my honour comranded me to keepe with better regard. Furthermore, beside all this, he so farre delighted me with his flattery of purpose, as I permitted him to depart, for that he made me a faithfull promise to returne so speedily as it was possible, and then he would not saye to come and marry me. But after that I had attended him a very long time, and saw him not retorne according to promise, I concluded my selfe to come into this pleasant valley to make

those

## of Palmerin of England.

those sweare which possessed arms, that they should not break speare, nor put armor on their backs against any other knight, then this onely one, who hath offered me this great despight. And I held this opinion, that any valiant knight happening into this place, whom I could get to maintain, that the beauty of Miragarda, in no respect might be equalled with mine, would cause Florian (who is curious in searching such haughty adventures) to take the hardines, to come proue against the knight, the contrary, by the aide of whom, I might chance to recouer my long desired Florian of the Forrest. And if that easily my knights might conquer any other knights, they should make them also sweare to maintaine the conditions, which my damosell declared vnto you at your first comming.

Many knights fearing the perill, wherein they might fall by comming this way, and not daring to take so hardy an oth vpon them, haue bene glad to returne and not stay here, when as my knights haue come forth, and presented themselves to defend my beauty.

Madame (answered Florendos) I know verie well the knight of whom you speak, and assure your self that very hardly shall you bring him into this place, without he list himselfe, in that he is so noble and valiant a knight of Armes, as you can hardly ioyne him with any equall: therefore I pray you, do not grieve your selfe, although, he be forgetfull in satisfying his promise, for I can assure you, that it is not his custome to affect greatly the seruice of Ladies, especially in any amorous opinion, or quaint conceit of loue. As for your knights, I cannot but yeeld their honest attempt very great commendation, and esteeme likewise very much of them, who advanced themselves to maintaine your beauty, which in sooth is sufficient to binde in seruiceable duty, all those that haue desired to render you semblable good will and liking. Nevertheless, I would perswade you, that hereafter you would not maintaine this custome, and likewise I would desire you, that you would bestow on me such knights as you with hold by imprisonment, who shalbe able to honor you more by their knightly seruice, geing at liberty, then you shal aduantage your selfe by keeping

## The second Part

keeping them in such seruitude. Sir answered Arnalte, the great honesty wherewith you are accompanied, hath gained such power ouer me, that I cannot see how I shold refuse, but that I must needs grant what you desire. But I find my self brought into sundry maruailous extream passions; for that by your words, you make me altogether out of hope, that I shal recover againe my knight: for whose sake I will that the imprisoned knights be deliuered you, and for that you shal be the more certain of my words, I deliuer into your own hands the keys of the prison, which I would not giue into any knights hands in the whole world, but only to you. The prince Florendos had no sooner receiued the keyes, but he deliuered them to y<sup>e</sup> Prince Albayzar who was very desirous to see the prisoners, wherfore he staid not long, but tooke his way downe into the Castle, with a lighted torch in his hand, for that the dungeon was very deepe, and opening a little Tower, there he found many prisoners, whereof he knew diuers incontinent, whom he failed not to salute, for that he knew them among the knights at Constantinople, when he fought the combat there, in mainteuance of the beauty of the faire Princesse Targiana, by means wherof, they seeing themselves deliuered by him, they knew not wel what to thinke. But when they were come vp into the Castle, and that they perceiued they enioyed their libertie by the means of the Prince Florendos, they failed not to come & humble themselves at the feete of the young Prince, who knew them all incontinent: to wit, Blandidon, Floraman, Reccamon, & Tenebrant, the presence of who did so greatly reioyce him, as he held it for especiall good fortune, that he came so luckily vnto the castle of the Princes Arnalte, who seeing that the day gaue place vnto the night, and that it was time to haue some refection, commanded her Attendants to couer for supper, for Florendos and the knights who were come forth of prison, to whom the Princesse vsed very stately entertainment, in respect of the honest behauiour of the Princes Florendos, which was very deeply imprinted in her heart, considered also, that his great courtesie had bound her to vse such liberality.

Chap.

## CHAP. II.

Of that which happened to the Prince Florendos, after that he departed from the Castle of the Princesse Arnalte.



**N**ow Florendos staid all this night in the Castle of the Princesse Arnalte, more at her importunate sute, then vpon his owne voluntary pleasure, for that he well knew, the little coales of enuy kindled on her stomacke, which she couered with shamefastnesse and modestie, was farre disagreeable to his courteous nature, by reason whereof, he no sooner discovered the cleare and bright day, but he arose and put on his Armour which was much defaced, by reason of his sore fight, & after he was ready to trauel and follow his enterprize, he staid not, but came to take his farewell of the Princesse Arnalte, as also of Blandidon, Tenebrant, and Reccamon, but in no case would he leaue the company of Floraman the prince of Sardignia, because they two liued maruellous affectionate the one of y<sup>e</sup> other, since the time that Armello, the Esquier of Florendos, came & found their solitary kinde of life, so nigh vnto the Castle of the Giant Almaroll. The Princesse Arnalte remained so greatly passionated, for the sudden departure of the Prince Florendos, that she could not admit any thing into minde, but still she receiued thereat very much displeasure: without vñing any remembrance at all of the Prince Florian of the Desert, whom shee had not altogether thrust into forgetfulness, and was so sore troubled for want of the presence of the Prince Florendos, as she tooke her farewell of the restored prisoners, to whom (for griefe, she could not vse such gracious behauiour, as she had done the day before. Florendos did certaine dayes in the company of Albayzar and Floraman, when he concluded to trauell to the Castle

Castle of Almaroll, to see what entertainment the faire Miragard would make to the Prince Albayzar, and whether she could now finde (contrary to her former custome) his noble employed seruice agreeable to her curious nature. These three knights following their enterprise, they perceiued (after they were entred some what within the Realme of Spaine, at the foot of a mountaine, a knight, standing very sadly between two great Dakes, he was armed in blacke Armour, and bare in his Shield a white Bull, in a field of Sable, and mounted on a very gallant Courser, so that these three knights conceived very good opinion of him, and to him they would haue approached, but that suddenly an Esquier stept before them, who hauing saluted them very courteously, deliuered his minde after this order.

Gentlemen, the knight (which standeth by these Dakes) giueth you to vnderstand, that he hath enterprised to guarde this passage, in that he hath kept it a long time against many knights: not for that he hath desire to offer any knight discourtesie, but onely to satisfie the will of a Lady, to whom he remaineth affectionate, loyal, and obedient. Therefore if it may stand with your liking, to grant such things as he will demand, the passage shall be at libertie for you: but if you enterprise to doe the contrary, he will put in triall to make you confesse perforce, that which you cannot reasonably deny or refuse to grant.

Declare vnto vs (quoth the Prince Florendos,) first the will of thy Master, and some after we will make thee answer: because very hardly can we determine of the matter whereof we are ignorant, by reason that thou concealest it so closely.

Hee will cause you to confesse (answered the Esquier) that Arnalte the Princesse of Nauarre, is the fayrest creature vnder heauen, and most worthy of knightly seruice. It seemes to me sayd Albayzar, that we shall find this same knight, who (to shunne the Combate at her Castle) hath accorded and promised to fulfill her imperious conditions. Therefore I iudge it in mine opinion, & for good cause I know it assuredly, that his enterprise is very dangerous, and ought no longer to be maintained. Let it happen what pleaseth fortune (sayd Florendos)

dos) and after ward turning to the Esquire, he answered him in this order. My friend, you may goe & assure your maister of the Iouste. While the Esquire was busie in speech to the Prince Florendos, Floraman, no sooner perceiued him to returne to his maister, but he desired Florendos, that he would graunt him the Combate, against the knight that kept the passage, which request he would not denie him: whereupon Floraman gaue the spurres to his horse, and ran couragiously against the knight of the princesse Arnalte, they both encountering together with such great force, that they were both dismounted to the earth, with their hailes vprward, but they recouered themselves promptly, and like good knights set their hands to their swords, wherewith they began to strike one another very dangerously, vsing such knightly dexteritie, as Florendos and Albayzar greatly delighted to behold them.

And for that Floraman was reputed for a good knight, they were abashed greatly, that any aduantage should happen to the knight of the Princesse Arnalte, for the loue of whom hee fought very brauely. But that which was most displeasing to Floraman, (who did his dutie like a good and vertuous knight) was, least the Princesse Florendos and Albayzar, should take any euill opinion of him. On the other side, the knight of the passage thought on the bonde, wherein the loue of the Princesse Arnalte, had tyed him, which did the more harden and encourage him.

These two knights continued Combate so long, that being overcome with extreame trauaile, they were constrained to retire to take breath, the straunge knight reioycing thereat, began to vse this language to wardes Floraman. I know Sir knight, that you might better breake your will and saue your life, then be depriued of them both: for when you shall come to confesse, that the Princesse Arnalte, is the fayrest Lady aliuie, you shall not be any iote spared by fauour, alwayes considered, that you shall but confesse the truth. If I did consent to thy will (answered Floraman) I should maintaine a thing farre beyond any dutie: for in how much Arnalte is faire and worthy to be serued, by so much the rather thou makest me to thinke, tha

## The second part

that the world enioyeth some such, to whom she is not in any thing to be compared, for that diuine beautie hath made them so singular faire, as the Princesse of Nauarre may in no wise be equalled with them. And on the other side, I haue in time past loued a Lady my selfe, in respect of whom, (the whole world being filled with the report of her prayse) I will rather die, then accord to the presumption thou wouldest haue me confesse.

Floraman had no sooner concluded his speech, but they returned a fresh to y<sup>e</sup> Combat, charging one another more furiously then they had done before, so that it could not be iudged, whether the one had any aduantage of the other, or who was likelyest to win the victory, they maintained the fight so brauely. But in the end, the knight that kept the passage, beganne by a little and a little to faile that febleness somewhat assailed him, and that stroke by stroke his sword turned in his hand, and his Armour was broken in many places, and likewise the Armour of Floraman was in no better case then his enemies, but he followed his strokes more wisely, and dealt so gallantly at this second charge, that once againe they were constrained to retire.

Floraman, who was accompanied with such gracious gifts, as imbraceth the heart of a vertuous Prince, would proue if he might possible chaunge the knight from his sonde opinion: Whereupon he spake to the knight in this maner.

Sir knight, you see very well that your enterprise is not truth, according as you haue iudged it in conceit, wherefore I pray you to confesse, that there are many Ladies in the world, whose beautie the Princesse Arnalte may no way paragon. I know well Sir, (sayd the knight of the passage) that the weakenesse where into you see me brought, giueth you the hardinesse to vse me with such perswasions of reproue: but so it is, that I am so greatly affectionate towards the Princesse Arnalte, as I haue deliberated with my selfe to sustaine y<sup>e</sup> death, before I will graunt to that which you say. When he had declared the end of his purpose, he charged Floraman afresh, who in short time laide him along on the ground, whereat Florendos and Albayzar was somewhat afraid, to see him brought in to

## of Palmerin of England.

to such daunger, wherefore quickly they opened his Helmet, but when they had beheld him a while, they knewe him to be Syr Albanis of Frise, the Prince of Denmarcke, the sight of whom made Floraman very penſiue, for that he bare him maruellous good will.

Florendos and Albayzar conducted these two Combattants, into the house of a knight, whose abode was neare to the mountaine, and as they walked together, they demanded of Albanis of Frise, vpon what occasion he enterprised to gard the passage. worthy Gentlemen (answered Albanis) I will not defer to tell you the sum of your desire, aduertising you, that Fortune guided me one day into the Valley, where the Princesse Arnalte maketh her present abode, & I was so raiſhed in beholding her beautie, that I remained her vowed seruant in good will, wherebpon she put to me three conditions, how I should approue against all wandering knights, and maintaine it by my prouesse, that she was the fairest Princesse in the world, assuring you that I came into this place, rather for the desire I had to doe seruice to the princesse of Nauarre, then for any feare I had of her six knights.

But now my destiny is so farre vnfortunate, that I am fallen into the hands of Sir Floraman, which hath made me lose the hope, that till this houre I entertained. They which make profession of Armes (saide Florendos) ought not to be abashed when any misfortune befallles them, and I assure you that Arnalte is a Princesse which meriteth very much, yet not so much as many others haue deserved, who are farre aduantaged about her, therefore I wish you Sir Albanis, to thanke God, who caused you to fall into the hands of your friends, perswading your selfe, that we would be loath to see you any way injured.

Continuing this talke, they arriued at the house of the knight, who receiued them very gladly, for that he was accustomed to lodge all wandering knightes, and such diligent attendance was vsed, that in short time the woundes of Albanis were meetyly healed, and certaine daies he was accompanied by the Prince Florendos, who was attached with vnmeasurable

## The second Part

able griefe, for the desire he had to finde the Castle of Almarol. Yet he dissembled his griefe as much as he could possible, and forced himselfe to mirth to gratifie his friends, as it is a wise mans part, to forget his sad and melancholike affections, to content those persons with whom he is ioyned in friendship.

### CHAP. III.

How the Damosell of the Princesse of Thrace, arriued at the Court of the Emperour Palmerin. And of that which happened to the Knight of the Tiger.



His Historie maketh mention, how the Emperour was in the Emperesse chamber, accompanied with the worthiest lords of his Empire, when as the Damosell of Thrace chanced to enter the Court, which seemed to her much changed, because she saw not the knights which were accustomed to be about the Emperour, at whose sight she failed not to humble herselfe incontinent, but he caused her to be taken up presently, and to be entertained with very gracious behaviour, then he desired to vnderstand how all things happened to his Nephew Palmerin of England, in the aduenture he vndertooke for Leonarda the Princesse of Thrace, the naming of whom, caused the Princesse Polinarda to giue a most sweet and delicate blush in her face, in whose presence the Damosell of Thrace began to vse her language after this manner.

If I should rehearse to your Maiestie; the most knightly prowesse of your noble Nephew, I should find my selfe overwhelmed in a great perplexity, for that I know his worthy deedes are referred to be deliuered, by one of more prompt and discreete memorie then my selfe.ouerthelesse, to discharge the great

## Of Palmerin of England.

great bond of Friendship, wherein his Princely courtisie hath so straitly bound mee, I will report what I haue seene, during the time he was in my companie, which when hee tooke occasion to leaue, he went to the place where the Princesse Leonarda was Enchaunted: and where hee witnessed such knightly valour, as will render to his Name perpetuall honour, having finished an aduenture so straunge and admirable. The whole discourse whereof, the Damosell deliuered in circumstance to the Emperour, giuing him to vnderstand, the hard causes of distresse, estones offered to the knight of the Tiger. But when he came to report the manner of his passing the Lake, where with the Isle was compassed about, the danger of the Boate, and the fashion how it was drawn with the Cord, the Ladies that were present, remained so mightily overcome with griefe, as the sweet and delicate colour, where with their diuine faces were most plentifully endued, began very sadly to alter, thinking on the great perills which the Noble Palmerin of England had passed, putting his life to such extreme points of hazard, for the deliuerie of the Princesse Leonarda.

I haue heard reported (said the Emperour) many strange Aduentures, and haue knowne some worthily atchieued in my time, but I neuer heard in all my life of any so perillous as this: for I know well that the imagination of the King Sardamant, was very farre different to any other Kings. But well I perceiue, that the Prowesse of Palmerin, excelleth very farre the valour of all other knights: for I assure you, that as yet I neuer saw the knight that might be equalled with him, without great impeachment, or that could finde the meane to discharge so great dangers.

After that the Damsell had sufficiently set to sale, the praise of the thisc noble Palmerin, in the eares of so many gracious personages, she changed her talks after this manner. To him that hath thus worthily deserued, I did bestowe my uttermost endeavour, to bring him within the compasse of affection to the Princesse Leonarda, whose good minde was altogether placed on the entertainment into her Princely fauour, the knight of such a hautie disposition. But as it seemeth to me, he is either alto-



## The second part

gether blinded in his owne conceite, or else his heart of affectionately placed on some other person: for I assure you, he made no account of the Crowne of Thrace, but did flatly refuse it, as also to espouse the Princesse Leonarda, who was brought into his presence, by the principall noble Gentlemen of the Court, according as it was ordained by the Testament of King Sardamant her Grandfather. By reason whereof, the Lords requested the Quene Carmelia, that shee would send to your highnesse their Princesse, to remaine in the company of the Princesse Polinarda, (your Daughter, and the Daughter of the prince Primaleon) as also of other noble ladies, wherewith your renowned Court is plentifully enriched, whose gracious conuersation may not onely entertaine the heart of Leonarda, with the precious dignitie of vnspotted vertue, but also by imitating their honourable examples, she may the more highly be esteemed in the acceptable fauour of such noble personages, as preferre the renowne of Ladies, with the felicitie of their owne life.

The Prince Palmerin very well liked of the intent of the Quene Carmelia, by meanes whereof she doth humbly desire, that it might so stand with your highnesse pleasure, as not to make deniall of this request to her, seeing you haue not hitherto refused the entertainment of any, in the fulfilling whereof, she shall esteeme her selfe and her whole Kingdome, perpetually bound to your excellency. And because your highnes may esteeme of the greater truth, what I haue made report of, she commanded me to present your Maiesty with this her letter of credite, wherein full well you shall perceiue the residue of her pleasure: may it like your highnesse to pardon this blunt discourse of an vneloquent maiden.

The Emperour very graciously receiued the letter, which when he had perused, he thus framed his answer to the Damosell. Vertuous and sage Lady, I not onely pittie the great paine you haue suffered in travelling thus farre, but also giue you thanks for such a good endeuour, not forgetting to honour you with bountifull courtesie, for the good newes you haue brought me of my Nephew Palmerin, in regard of whom,

both

## Of Palmerin of England.

both his Princely deserts, and my vttermost requitall, which is but his duty, I desire of God my power may stretch so farre, to requite you according as you haue worthily merited.

And for the Lady, the regard of whom caused my nephew, to hold so small estimation of the Princesse Leonarda, I know her care is beyond iudgement, in deuising by what meanes she might gaine the power, to requite a cause of so great honour. And where you desire I would yeld my consent, that the Princesse Leonarda, might come to remaine in my Court, assure your selfe, that I am well contented, and thinke my selfe highly honoured by such a request. And the better to declare how gratefull I accept her comming hither, and how thankfull I would be for your great trauaile, I giue to you the countie of Salin, which by reason of the death of the countie Arlae, remaineth vacant, he not hauing left any heirs to repossesse the same. The Damosell presently threw her selfe at the Emperours feet, offering to kisse his hand, in signe of her thankfull mind, but he sustained her in his armes very graciously, which he was not accustomed to do to any stranger, yet such was the estimation he had of her.

The damosell behaued her selfe in the same manner of duty to the Emperesse, as also toward the Prince Primaleon, and Gridonia, but they (to witnesse their beneuolent mindes, and the honour wherewith they would entertaine such a friendly guest) by their great intreaty and courtesie made stay of her humble offer, wherupon she returned to the Emperour, and deliuered her mind these words.

I can hardly withhold my selfe at this instant (my gracious Lord) being so desirous as I am, to vnderstand of the courageous mind of the Prince Palmerin, both in dealing, and escaping from a Tiger so hideous and fearefull, as also being so happy to end such an aduventure: but your gracious fauour is so agreeable to my desirous thoughts, and so plentiful in measure beyond my poore demerits, that I shall leaue the report thereof in your highnesse memory, till such time as I returne with the Princesse Leonarda: for I assure your Maiesty, that my heart is vnspokeably satisfied with pleasure, in that I shall

speake

## The second part

spéede so well, as to be resolved by your excellencie, in the thing I haue so long time wished for. Wherefore most humbly I desire you that I may depart, for the desire I haue, to enforme the Princesse Leonarda, of your gracious fauour, causeth me to iudge every day a yeare, till I haue in this cause fulfilled my dutie.

Faire Damosell (answered the Emperour) it should like me very well, if you made your abode here still with me in my Court: but for that I perceiue your great desire, to returne with answer of your thankfull message, I wish to you: as to my selfe, in the whole course of your iourney. The Damosell humbly tooke her leaue of the Emperour, and all his company, and came to the Chamber of the Princesse Polinarda, who had secretly withdraiue her selfe, to reueale to Dramaciana her waiting Gentlewoman, the good opinion her hart had suddenly conceived of those ioyfull tidings: so then with her a while the damosell kept company, when presently she beganne to coniecture, that it was the beautie of this Princesse which had caused the Prince Palmerin, to refuse the gouernement of Thrace.

The Princesse Polinarda, very modestly began to question with the Damosell of every particular chance that had happened to the knight of the Tiger, for whose sake she honoured the Damosell with very Princely courtesie, and she desired her, that shee would bee the Messenger of her vnfayned good will to the Princesse Leonarda, whome shee would not willingly should stay, but come vnto the Court presently. The Damosell made promise to performe every thing to the vttermost, so, departing from the Princesse, she went through the palace to her lodging, where she locked vp the honourable Presents, which the Emperesse and Gridonia had (since her comming) sent vnto her: so hauing all things in readinesse, shee departed, farre more Rich and more ioyfull then she was before.

The Damosell woe intend to leaue in her iourney, because we will returne to the Noble and renowned Knight of the Tiger, who after hee departed from the kingdome of Thrace, took the straightest way that hee could possibly chuse, to bring him vnto

## of Palmerin of England.

vnto Constantinople, wherto when he drew somewhat neare, by chance one day hee arriued in a very great Forrest, which was farre from any houses or resort of people, and likewise the Trees much defaced and spoyled, so that it seemed a wast and desolate wildernesse. As going along very sad and pensiue in minde, he heard the trampling of a great many horses, and casting his eye that way where he heard the noyse, he espied ten or twelue knights very well armed, crossing ouertly waight the Forrest. Whereupon, he gaue his horse the spurres (being desirous to doe them seruice, if so be they had neede to vse his aide), and followed them that way they rode, when in short time he ouertooke one of their company, who could not so speedily iourney as the other did, by reason that his horse had receiued an ataint in one of his legges, with this knight, Palmerin desired friendly to conferre, which made him vse his speeches in this maner.

I desire you Sir, if I may demand so bold a request of you, as to report vnto me the cause, why these knights iourney so speedily, and whither they goe through this vnfrequented Forrest. I know well Sir (answered the strange knight) that their enterprize doeth not concerne you in any thing, therefore is it as needlesse to tell you, as you haue small occasion to demand of their purpose, but for that I see your acquaintance with the cause, can neither impeach them with your mallice, nor pleasure them with your aide, I am content to resolve you in what you request.

You shall vnderstand Sir, that thre leagues distance from this place, there is a Lady, a very courteous creature, remaining in a strong and well fortified Castle, who hath a daughter of most exquisite perfection in beautie, with whom a knight of this Countrey, named Felistor, is very desirous to marrie, but her Lady mother will not suffer to be so bestowd, hauing already giuen her to be espoused, to another rich Gentleman of this Countrey, named Radi nar, wherefore the Lady and her daughter haue consented with this Gentleman, to goe vnto a Castle of his owne, where they will secretly knit vp their determinate purpose, and deceiue the long and laboursome ex-

pectation of Felistor. But being aduertised of their close intent, hath determined to hazard his Fortune in the extreamest danger, either to hinder them, & helpe himselfe, or to leaue the conquest in a doubtfull estate. And he that may the better preuaile, if fortune darken not the Sun-shine of his good hap, he hath placed a secret ambushment in a little wood, by which, the Lady and her daughter must of necessitie passe, & hauing giuen strait charge to them in ambush, that the life of Radimar be put to the sword, as soone as they may lay hands on him, for that the countenance of him is a blemish to his earnest intent, he will then marry the Damosell, in despight of any dare say the contrary. And because this marriage may be the better accomplished, I am to assist him with my company, onely for the good wil which I vnfaignedly beare him, but Fortune is very contrary in fauour to me, for that my horse hath taken suddainly an affaint, whereby I shall hazard the breach of my promise, which would no more dislike my friend, then it will be grievous to me, if so it would happen.

To preuent the worst therefore, I pray you Sir to thinke so well of me, as to lend me your horse, and to content your selfe in meane time, with that whereon your Esquire rideth, and he I iudge will take mine in good part, which courtesie will cause me (in place where I haue power answerable to my will) not to forget such a fauourable pleasure.

Truely Sir (answered Palmerin) I see well if I should doe you so great a pleasure, you are bent to vse my gift in a dase of greater dishonour, for that it better standeth with your credite, to defend the cause of a distressed Lady, then to be an instrument whereby her honour may receiue such disgrace, and therefore as I found you, I leaue you, being so desirous to be with your companions, as I cannot at this time stay to make you any other answer, and so he passed to euertake Felistor, which the strange Knight perceiuing, presently entred into these speeches.

Alas fond soles, thou makest ouer much hast to entertaine thine owne misfortune, in that the simplest of them before thee, is able sufficient to teach thee and thy fellows your duties, but

but I wish that so soone as my companions, haue giuen due chastisement to the pride wherewith thou art fondly accompanied, thy horse may fall to my share, as well to teach thee what thou oughtest haue done at my courteous request, as also that I may discharge my promise made to my friend.

The knight of the Tiger had attained such length of ground, that he understood, not the presumptuous language of the strange knight, but yet he onceloked back, whereby he gaue him to know, that y haughty disposition of an aduenturous mind, is not to be moued at the fearefull foreshele of supposed danger, where contrariwise, the cowardly wretch esteemeth euery flaw a tempest, and a little motion of mischance, the vtter overthrow of all his soueraigntie.

The noble Palmerin of England pursued these Knights so long, that he was ouercharged with the glomy fogge of night, so that he could not perceiue how to follow them any further by the trackes of their horses, by reason whereof he was constrained to alight, when he gaue his horse to his Esquire, intending to repose himselfe so well as he could in this desolate place, untill Aurora saluted him with her beautifull countenance. But in vaine did he bestow his labour, to take his rest in the destined houres of sleepe, for the earnest desire he had to defend the cause of the iniured Lady, would not suffer him so much as to close his eyes.

Wherefore the day began no sooner to peepe, but he caused Siluian to bridle the horses, when presently he took the way which Felistor and his company had passed before but when he could set no eye on them, he beganne to be very grieuously moued, imitating them, which can enioy no quietnesse of mind till they haue deliuered the innocent from their cruell oppressors, which among all the deeds of knighthood, beareth the largest title of honour.

CHAP. IIII.

Of that which happened to the knight of the Tiger, against those that were in ambush to take the Damofell.



The valiant knight of the Tiger so long pursued the search of the knights, that he had almost spent one halfe of the day, in the meane while Felistor had knowledge giuen him by his secret spies, that the Lady and her daughter were set forth on their way, & in their company foure good knights with whom when Felistor met, so cruell was the conflict betwene them, as in short time the foure knights were all slaine, and he hauing taken the Lady and her daughter, returned that way from whence they came, and Palmerin seeing he could not haue a sight of them, turned againe, & met with the knight whom he had talked with all before, who to the Prince delivered these words.

I see wel sir knight, that either you haue great desire to meet with my companions, or else such suddaine kindnesse is come vpon you, that you returne to lend me your horse, which I will not now receiue, because I will not be so much beholding to you. Whereto the knight of the Tiger answered.

Trust me sir you do much mistake me, and ouer fondly desire your selfe, I intend you not so much fauour, nor shall you be indebted to me for so much frendship, but if you had a horse better then mine, I would do my good will to borrow him of you whether you would or no, because I would follow the intent I haue enterprised, to giue aide to those, whose necessity requires my helpe. I cannot chuse but laugh (said the strange knight) in that I perceiue you haue sayled of your way,

way, and spent the whole night to no purpose, onely for the desire you haue to meet with Felistor, whom now I perceiue comming hitherward, hauing with him the Lady whom he intended to espouse: now sir shall you haue leysure enough at this present time to fulfill your wish, if your stomacke so serue you.

Palmerin perceiuing the knight told the truth, he caused Siluan to gird his horse well, clasped fast his helmet, and not fearing what danger might happen to him, prepared himselfe to salute the troupe as they came, the first whereof was Felistor, who hauing the Damofell by the arme, made great protestation of his amorous good will, but she rid weeping very bitterly, and so did the good Lady her mother. Sixe knights were in company with Felistor, and foure more he had caused to stay in the Ladies Castle: so when Palmerin had sufficiently viewed them all, he came to comfort the Ladies in this manner.

Faire Ladies, your teares are so gracious for me to behold, and your present danger hath conquered me with such surpassing pittie, as I must aduenture my life for your deliuey, where I will either purchase your former quietnesse, or leaue my life to content your enemies: yet haue I often heard, that small force will serue to chastise those persons, that haue no regard to their owne honour, because being confounded in their enuious stomacke, by their owne disloyall actions, they containe so little manhood, as the report of knightly dignitie, being but laide before them, no brauer conquest, then their owne manifest disgrace.

Felistor hearing the knight of the Tiger, to vse such braue language, became so offended with himselfe, as he had not the power to make any answere, but in the midst of his choller, without rememb'ring to arme his head, he began fiercely to assault the knight of the Tiger, who saluted Felistor with such a friendly blowe on the head, as he clea'd it downe to his shoulders, and valiantly addresting himselfe to the other knights, he behaued himselfe with most maruellous prowesse. The Damofell seeing the Prince in so great danger, and fearing her

would hardly escape their hands, gaue her Palfrey the bridle, and so rode solitarily musing along the Forrest, which the knight of the Tiger perceiuing, began very much to graue at: neuertheless, so valiantly he dealt with the other knights, as when he had slaine three of them, the rest take themselves presently to flight, whereupon the knight (whose horse was affainted with trauell, and who had so pleasantly iyled with the Prince) came and humbly yielded himselfe, desiring that he would not remember what discourteous words had passed from him, whereupon the knight of the Tiger (according to his courteous nature) did very gently entertaine him.

The Lady seeing her enemies so happily vanquished, received in her heart unspeakable ioy, but when she looked about, and could not see her daughter, her ioy was presently amated with sorrow: wherefore that she might the better recover her againe, she came and fell downe before the knight of the Tiger, giuing him most humble thanks for his so noble succour, and desiring if it might so please him, as to lend her his assistance, till she had found her daughter, for whose absence she remained more oppressed with griefe, then she was before, being in the danger of her cruell enemies.

Madame (quoth the knight of the Tiger) you should attribute the honour of this victory, to the misfortune of your vnkinde aduersaries, in that such as they do alwaies receive recompence, according as the wickednesse of their liues deserveth, for diuine iustice will not suffer them to escape unpunished, who are careless in committing such heinous offences. As for your daughter I iudge her to be within this Forrest, therefore it is good that we trifle no time in vaine, but hastily bestirre our selues in the present search of her: for I promise you I will not leaue you, till I haue safely deliuered her into your owne security, whereto the Lady replied.

I see well Sir knight, that both vertue and magnanimitie shineth brauely in your noble heart, and I would that my powe power were of sufficiencie, to requite your princely bounty: neuertheless, I trust that God will repay your gooddeeds, which I am farre vnable to do at this present, yet will

I remaine all my life time dutifull in good will, to shewe what acceptable thankses I can, at your noble commaundement.

Thus the Lady concluding her speeches, the Knight of the Tiger, Siluian, and the Lady, rode on which way they iudged the Damosell had taken, but they iourneyed all that day, and most part of the night, yet were they neuer the nearer their purpose: and it is not to be maruailed why she should stray so far, for that the feare she had, least her honour should be impeached, caused her to take those occasions vpon her, which in her iudgement might best preserve it.

They hauing thus trauailed very late, they were constrained to alight to safe their horses, which Siluian did presently vnbidle, that they might refresh themselves in the Pasture: then gaue he to his Lord and the sorrowfull Lady, such provision for their sustenance as he carried with him, wherewith they sufficed themselves so well as they could, for that they kneue in such a desolate place, it were very strange to looke for courtly dainties.

Faire Auba had no sooner deliuered the faire morning in sight, but they presently mounted on horsebacke, and rode about the whole Forrest, yet not finding her they so gladly looked for, which made the Lady conceiue so great griefe, as the Knight of the Tiger by no perswasion could appease: wherefore he desired her to goe to her Castle, in that it was vnfit for her to take such vnaccustomed paines, wherewith (with much adoe) at last she consented: then they rode to her Castle, where they arrived about the Euening, but the entrance thereof was guarded with the four knights, which Felistor had giuen charge to remaine there. This began a fesh to bere the Lady, first to see her daughter so unhappily lost, and then to be forbidden the entrance into her own house, these two extreames mouing many other passions, caused her to repute her selfe, as the unhappiest vnder the Sunne.

The Knight of the Tiger, seeing the Lady in so great affliction, beganne to flatter the eyes of the Knightes, with shewes of most gracious behauiour, as it is the customs among

aduenturous mindes, to dissemble their intents with deuises, of amiable conceit, which sometime preuaileth more in pollicie, then deedes that manifest knightly power. And so it fortuneth, that the knights of Felistor came to receiue them, for they being so many, made them so venturous: but their chiefeest intent was to haue murdered the knight of the Tiger, and then to carry backe the Lady with them.

But herein they found themselves greatly deceiued, for the knight of the Tiger, perceiued no sooner the bride to bee let downe, but he entred thereon, and beganne very valiantly to charge these foure knights, who settled themselves altogether against him, and one of them began to vse these words. I perceiue well Sir knight, that your great folly will be an occasion of the present ending of your life, which seeing you are wilfully come to seeke, we will deliuer you answerable payment to your bold enterprise. These words the knight of the Tiger, nothing at all regarded, but dealt so roughly with them, as two of them were quickly dispatched of their liues, and their fellows fearing least they should be brought into like estate, cast downe their weapons, and yielded themselves.

The Lady seeing this happy successe, alighted and entred into her Castle, greatly abashed at the noble bountie of the knight of the Tiger, and sorrowfull beside, because she knewe not how to recompence so great courtesie. And as she stood considering the no small danger he sustained, to deliuer her out of the hands of Felistor, and his company, she beheld her daughter coming, conducted by five knights, who were in a certaine Tent, wherto in her straying she happened to come. When the Damosell was gone into the Castle to her mother, and that these knights beheld the blood of those faire knightes before their faces, they were attached with such a sudden feare, as they would very gladly haue bene further thence.

But the Lady (who perceiued the cause of their dismay) went to them incontinent, and hauing embraced them, desired that they would not suffer any cause of doubt to arise, but that they would shewe their thankfull mindes to the knight of the Tiger, who had deliuered her out of so great danger. Hereupon

upon they humbly went and saluted the prince, who kept them company there the space of eight daies, at the end whereof he departed thence, taking his iourney toward the place, where his heart desired to be.

CHAP. V.

Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, after he departed from the Court of the Emperour Vernar.



Because it is a long time since our History hath made any mentiō, of the noble knight Florian of the Desert, we will now leaue the Tiger, in his way to Constantinople, and returne to the Prince Florian, who being departed from the Court of the Emperour Vernar, in grane guilt Armour, and bearing in his shield a Sauage man, leading two Lions in a silver field, euen according as he did, before he was knowne to be sonne of the Prince Don Edward, pursued the intent of his haughty desire, for during the time he carried this strange deuise, he atchieued as honourable exploits, as euer did any, euen as the first part of this History hath largely made mention.

This braue knight, seeing the places of most famous aduentures. Fortune conducted him into the realme of Ireland, euen to the place where he nobly won the Castles of the three Sisters, who were the daughters of the Marquesse Belamor, but these Castles were now in the custody of others, who were utterly vnknowne to the knight of the Sauage man, by reason whereof, he was constrained to lodge in the Cell of an ancient Hermit, who discoursed vnto him, how the two brothers

of



of the Giant Calturnien, were within those Castles, one of them being named Brocalon, the other Baleato, that had long time bene nourished in the Profound Isle, with their mother Collambra, and by whom they were giuen to vnderstand, what great misfortune had happened to the giants Calturnien and Camboldam of Murcela, their brethren, for the losse of whom (contrary to their will and mother) they armed themselves like good and hardy knights, vowing to take vengeance on them, who had so much defaced their noble stocke,

And that they might the sooner execute their bloody enterprize they imbarqued themselves in a Galley, hauing in their company other knights of their linage, and at length landed on this coast of Ireland, where (long before it was known to any) they were Lords of the Castles of the three Sisters, as also of that which belonged to their brother the Giant, putting all to the Sword that they found within those Castles, and fortified themselves with very great strength, lest they should chance by any meanes to be assailed.

The knight of the Sauage nan, could suffer the Hermit proceed no further in his tale, but he must needs demand this question of him. I pray you good Father do so much as resolve me in one thing, do not these Giants vse to come forth of their Castles, to walke for their delight along this Forrest? Certainly Sir (answered the Hermit) I would be loth to resolve you in this demand, for such a question seemeth to me, to manifest an earnest desire in you, to offer the combat to these Giants, which I would be sorry you should do, in that the meanest of them is of abilitie to resist three of the best knights in this realme. Therefore I desire you, if your affection be bent that way, that at my request you would bide it within limits of regard, and to remember, that it is dishonour to a noble mind, to adventure his life more wilfully then wisely, and yet to couer my intent vnder the title of seeking renowne, and I must iudge him altogether boyde of knightly regard, which sees the danger to be beyond his compasse, and yet will desperately throw himselfe into the hazard: trust me, no pitie, if such a one be well corrected. Therefore good Sir, to auoyde

auoide the worst that may happen to you, I desire you to let no such minde remaine in you, but that you would witnesse your valour in those occasions, which may represent more hope of victory, and some of better equalitie with your knightly force, for in doing otherwise, you shal cause any good minde to thinke, that desperate hope hath rather conducted you hither, then any carefull aduise, which way to returne victor from these Giants. And it is their wont to walke abroade in the mornings, when, here they murder one, there, they villainously mangle another, hauing sworn to continue this crueltie, vntill they can meete with the two Sonnes of the Prince Don Edward, on whom their intents is to be famously reuenged, for that their brethren were slaine by their hands.

I perceiue Father (said the knight of the Sauage man) that you make no conscience in condemning those, who adventure their liues to redeme the wretched estate, of poore Soules oppressed by such cruell tyranny, for if you remember your selfe, Armour ought not to be borne by any, but onely such as imploy their pains to succor those, who are no way able to shield themselves, and the order of knightthod is giuen vs to this end, not that we should faint at a shadow, or be conquered by wordes, before we see the daides, wherefore father, perswade your selfe, that fortune shal no sooner present me with the occasion, but I will put my hap in adventure.

At these words the aged Hermit began to shed teares, to see that he could not remove him from his determination, neuertheless, he laboured still in perswasion, but his paines was beflowen to small purpose, for he was not so full of intreatie, as the other was resolutely bent, so, they passed away the night in friendly communication. In the morning Florian was preparing himselfe to depart, at what time he heard a great noyse without the Cell, when going to the doore, he espied a Damosel came hastily riding, and she seeing the knight of the Sauage man, came vnto him for succour, in that she was eagerly pursued by the Giant Brocalon, who was in same white Armour, and well mounted on a lustie Courser, from which he alighted, speaking thus to the Damosell.

I see well Damofell, that you haue taken a place of small assistance to your selfe, so that your knight will deliuer you into my hands, which if he should not doe, he should presently perceiue the estate of my displeasure, whereto the knight of the Savage man thus answered. Trust me Sir, you are deceived as farre as I can perceiue, for here is none that oweth you dutie, much lesse any that will stand in feare of you: and I doubt not, but the disloyall tyrannie which thou blest, shall well enough be tempered, ere thou and I part. These wordes caused a sore Combate betwene them, the brauery whereof much delighted the aged Hermit, who still prayed for good successe to happen to the knight of the Savage man, but so gallantly did hee continue the fight, that the Giant was enforced to take a breathing, which was very acceptable to the Prince, in that his shield was greatly defaced, and himselfe surcharged with very much traualle, but yet he was in farre better state then the Giant, who seeing his blood trickle downe his Armour so fast, began to vse these speeches,

How comes it to passe, that one knight hath the power to preuaile so much against me? Certainly I feare me, that the hope I haue alwayes had, to vanquish those knights that slew my Brethren, by this one knight will be brought into some doubt, yet if I must needs end my life, I had rather it might be at one of their handes, for that their valour carrieth so large commendation, then by this knight, who is utterly unknown to me.

Thus concluding, he began to charge the knight of the Savage man, with very rough and forcible strokes, who notwithstanding, so duly awaited his oportunitie, as at length he brought his enemy vnder his subiection, when taking off his Helmet, he presently parted his head from his shoulders, the sight hereof was no small ioy to the aged Hermit, as also to the Damofell, who came and humbled her selfe to the Prince in this manner.

It is vnpossible for me Sir knight, to render you thanks according to your worthy deserts, neuerthelesse, I will report such laudable language of your knightly deedes, in the Court

of Verner the Emperour of Allameigne (whither at this present I direct my course) as your name shall remaine in continuall memory. And very gladly would I bee acquainted with your name, which I the more earnestly desire for two causes, the one, that I might the more exactly discourse your noble valour, to the amazement of all other that cannot deserue so well, the other, that I might know the noble Gentleman, whose gracious bountie I might repay with my continuall prayers.

Faire Damofell (quoth the Prince) if you desire to knowe my name, that I may doe you seruice to the uttermost of my power, I will declare it vnto you, rather for that cause then any other, but I assure you, my deedes are of so small estimation, as credite me, you may more worthily cast into discountenance, then giue them any such praise as it hath pleased you to utter. And let it not seeme in your eares, as an vnadvised speech, which at this present of necessitie I must disclose, because mine eye and my heart haue tasted both on fierie Planet, but rather let it obtaine such an acceptable opinion of beliefe in your modest thoughts, as, I remaining captiue, and at your mercy, may finde you as ready to pittie me, as your beauty was to wound me, vpon these speeches the Hermit tooke occasion to begin thus.

Sir knight, it is a deepe point of wisdom to see the subtil temptation of beautie, which is not so glorious in the eye, as it is grievous in the heart, nor so sweete in conceite, as it is sorrowfull in triall, the reason is, for that iealousie, frenzie, beggerie, murder, with many other mischiefs, are alwayes waiting on her as yokefellowes. You haue already escaped one extreame danger, and now are like to fall into a more greater, for the one could haue bene but hurtfull to the body, the other hangeth more waity on the soule, remember this my son, for thy fall will be as grievous to me, as to thy selfe.

Father (said the Prince) Beautie is so familiarly welcome into the eyes of all men, as you see they haue no power to escape from her, and her delights so agreeable in their hearts like wise, as were they of flint, she would moue affection, even

so, if you did but contemplate the heavenly grace of this beautiful Damosell, you could not otherwise chuse, but offer your selfe as her humble seruant, which if you did refuse to doe, I should perswade my selfe, that good nature had altogether forsaken you, as also I might iudge him very colde in kindnesse, that could not be moued by such a forcible motion.

I see well (quoth the Hermit) that the pleasure of the flesh, makes thee forgetfull of the health of thy soule, wherefore, I will pray that thou maiest be conuerted in time, least thou feele the punishment of thy follie, when it will be too late for thee to helpe thy selfe: whereto the Prince answered thus.

I pray you ffather tell me, can you conquere these earthly delights, when you sit wrestling many matters in your Study? Or wilt thou looing on your booke, abate the secret inflammations of your heart? I haue heard of many of your calling and profession, that haue laboured to kill that in other, which (for all their learning) hath quickned in themselves, and by seeking to draw a thorne out of anothers heele, haue prickt themselves therewith to the very heart: tush father, be religious in reason, I haue seen an olde Billet burne fresher, then a young Baucn, and you (for all your holinesse) if I should inuicigh against the secret delight of Loue, would take me for an heretique: but it is good that I argue, to shew my folly, and that you allow not, to declare your wisdom. Well (quoth the Hermit) I will betake my selfe to my Oratone, and you to your youthfull and worldly pleasure, the defect whercof will (no doubt) in the end reward you. And so he went into his Cell, making such speed, til he had thnt the dore after him, as if the Giant Brocalon had bene alieue againe, and had followed him: wherat the knight of the Sauageman laughed heartily, then coming vnto the Damosell, he began to salute her in these tearmes.

I could wish (faire Lady) to be seruant to so kinde a Mistress, if it might as shall like you to allow me your service: in both I iudge you would like of my behauiour, if you see not, I will be content to auide, when it is your pleasure. Well (quoth she) (answered the Damosell) I cannot be so much ingratefull for your great good will, in defending me, when I was

in greatest distresse, but that (to my power) I must witnesse some shew of a thankfull minde: in mean time, I desire to haue your company for these two or three dayes, till I be out of these places of so great danger, and then shall I account my selfe the more highly beholding to you.

Lady (quoth he) I receiue so great pleasure in your courteous answer, as I thinke my selfe the happiest man alieue to attaine such beantie: wherewith he presently took his horse, causing his Esquire to mount the Damosell, who by the way recounted to the Prince Florian, how by a tempest of the Sea, she was cast on the coast of Ireland, coming from Denmarke and carrying Letters of credite to Basilia the Emperesse of Allemagne. And when I perceiued (quoth she) that I was in this countrey, where my Cousins (the Daughters of the Marquesse Baltamor) remained, I intended to bestow a little labour in seeing them, but my fortune was so hard, as I met with the Giant Brocalon, who not contented with the murdering my two Esquires, that bare me company, pursued me to haue fulfilled his villanous wil on me, so it was your good hap to be my rescuer, for which I thinke my selfe more beholding to you, then I can expresse: the Prince taking her by the hand, returned this answer.

I promise you faire Lady, I reioyce that it was my fortune to do you such service, and doubt not but you shall finde me so gentle a companion, as will guard your person from any danger that may happen to you: but I would either I were so happie, or you so courteous, as to giue liberty to the prisoner, whom your singular beantie hath secretly fettered. They continuing these pleasant purposes of speech, at last they came to a goodly Riuer, the pleasant sight whercof, invited them to alight from their horses, to ease themselves a little, where sitting louingly together, the Prince began amercusly to dispose himselfe, toward the seuer and chaste Damosell: in the meane while, his Esquire went to a Castle nere at hand, to prouide some viands for his Maister, who had fasted since he came to Hermits Cell, which he refused, to haue the Damosells sweet company.

## The second part

Many affable speeches the Prince spent, that the Damosell might the better entertaine him into his fauour, at length he was so bold as to giue her a Greene gowne, when I feare me the loss the flower of her chastity, but whether it were so or no, I know not, but mine Authour saith, that the Esquire at his departing left her a Maiden, and at his coming againe, he found her a woman.

### CHAP. VI.

What happened to the knight of the Sauage man, before he had taken his farewell of the Damosell.



Such and so great was the pleasure, which the knight of the Sauage man conceiued by the presence of the Damosell, as all that night they passed the time away, by the riuers side, till at length the Prince began to waxe heauy a sleepe, like vnto those that entertaine Loue, but for the present time, rather to suffice their appetite, then any thing else, for he made so small account of a Louers passions, as his humour once satisfied, he had presently forgotten it. The Damosell seeing the Prince to vse no more regard vnto her, fell into extreame conceite of grieffe, in that she had so lightly bestowed her honourable chastitie on the knight, who (she feared) would commit her courtshie to vtter obliuion, which if it shuld happen so unkindly (quoth she) I (being vnworthy to shew my face among persons of credite) wish, that the present losse of my life, might salue by the staine and blemish of my former riches. A heauy and pittifull discourse she continued, during the time, the knight of the Sauage man slept soundly, at last she looked about, and espied two Esquires, attending on a knight of such huge stature,

ture, as he seemed to her to exceede the Giant Brocalon. And as he walked, many times would he stand still and muse with himselfe, then pull and rent his haire, as one would haue iudged him deprived of his wits: at last in his extreame passions) he called his Esquires, and commanded them to wait ther neare vnto him, for that he would repose himselfe vnder the Trees.

Whereat the Damosell was greatly abashed, so that (standing in some feare) she awakend the knight of the Sauage man, with these wordes: Good knight forsake this drowsines, for danger is nearer then thou art beware of, here is another Brocalon, come to iniure vs, and therefore helpe now or neuer to defend vs.

At these wordes the Prince suddenly started vp, and when he had put himselfe in good regard for hisemie, hee aduanced himselfe nicker vnto him, and seeing his Esquires walking their horses, and their Maister lying vnder a Tree in great grieffe of minde, he stayed himselfe in secret a while, when he heard him breake forth into these speeches.

I see it is great folly for me to repose any credite in the Gods, who either want power, or else are wilfully bent, to euerthrow him that hath most trusted them, and good cause haue I to thinke so, for that my Brethren being vanquished by one onely knight, they make so small estimation of me in their fauour, as they will not suffer me to meeete with him, that I might either beare my Brethren company, or take that reuenge, which both my grieffe, and nature compelleth me. For how can I chuse but blaspheme your names, and deny to giue you the honour I haue done, in that you suffer the knight so much to dishonour vs? If you haue altogether cast me into obliuion, I will benoz your Altars with no more testimonies of my affection, but that trust I had in you, I will repose in my selfe, and so for euer henceforth I despise you.

These heauy complaints caused the Prince to iudge, that he was Bealeato, The Brother to the Giant Brocalon, who hauing intelligence of his Brothers death, sought to finde him that had done the dedde, this too hap was very acceptable to the Prince, in that he found him without any of his knights

to aid him, so walking aside, Balcato at the last had espied him, who made him to arise with these speeches. What is he that dare imagine himselfe so hardy, as to trouble me in my silent purposes? I assure thee, that thou art but little beholding to fortune, who is thy vtter enemy in conducting thee hither, especially in the time of my fury, which thou wilt find more grauous then thou art able to endure. And for the Damosell that keeps thee company, as I haue good occasion (receiuing part of my gtaefe by meanes of such a one as she) I will appeare the anger of my Gods, in offering her as a Sacrifice to them: and so will I deale with all of that Sexe that I can meete, for that Brocalon (the best knight in the world) was slaine in following such another as she is.

Balcato (answered the Prince) reserue these threatnings for those that are affraide of thee, and prepare thy selfe to deale with him, whom neither the words nor weapon can terrifie, as for the Damosell, assure thy selfe, that I will not onely defend her, but I will also humble that proud minde, which makes thee thinke none so good as thy selfe, so shalt thou learne how to vse thy betters, and deale more courteously with the people of this countrey. And because I will moue the mallice the greater against me, thou shalt vnderstand that I am he, that hath slaine Dalsurnien and Brocalon thy brethren, and haue good hope to send thee after them: wherefore put thy selfe in a readinesse to entertaine me, for I as much disdain to haue any aduantage of thee, as thou proudly thinkest me vnable to deale with thee.

The Giant (extreamely moued to heare the braue language of the Prince, began to rage after this manner. Thou cruel destroyer of my blood, thou maist assure thy selfe to haue in thy presence, the greatest enemy vnto thee in the world: and therefore shew the vttermoost of thy manhood, for I carry that hope with me to bathe these hands of mine in thy blood, and beside, to rent thy cursed heart in peeces, and throw it for fode to the fowles of the aire.

When they began a fierce and cruell Combat, wherein the Prince so nobly behaued himselfe, that the forrible stroakes of the

the Giant were deliuered to small purpose: but at length he perceiving what subtilty the Prince vsed, beganne to strike verry roughly at him, so that his sword was broken in thre peeces, and his body wounded in diuerse places, whereat the Damosell was very much displeased, doubting least she should now see the ende of him, who had all this while so valiantly defended her.

The Prince seeing himselfe in danger, cast his Shield before him, to receiue a mightie stroke which the giant gaue, but the blowe lighting on the Shield, entred so farre in, as he could not pull it out againe, which the Prince perceiving, closed with him, and drining him still backward till he came to the Riuer side, he strooke his legs from him, so that he fell ouer the bancke into the water, where, with the waightinesse of his fall, and his head going forward, he brake his necke, to the no small ioy of the Damosell, as also of the Prince, who reioyced he was rid of such an enemy.

When mounting on horsebacke, they rid againe to the Cell of the olde Hermit, for that the Princes woundes were somewhat dangerous: in the meane while, the Esquires of Balcato returned to the knights which were in the Castles, to giue them vnderstanding of their Masters death, how that hee which had slaine his brother Brocalon, had now likewise dispatched him.

When they were come to the Cell, the good olde Hermit (albeit he was somewhat offended with the Prince) yet he receiued him very louingly, and on such a poore bed as he had, he caused him to lie down, vsing such good regard vnto him, as within fewe dayes his dangerous estate was well recovered. Then did he desire the Prince, that he would suffer the Damosell to depart on her iourney, giuing her to vnderstand, how she might now trauaile without danger, for that she knew her selfe the Giants were both slaine, and also he said, it stood not with her honest report, that she should so keepe company with a knight at Armes, whose affaires lay in so many sunny places, as it was not decent for her, nor honour to him, to be seene after such effeminate order.

The Prince was very well content that she should depart, albeit the Damofell found her selfe greatly agræued, that he did vse no moze estimation of her, hauing scaled the ffort of her maidenly honour, which none had the power to obtain before, neuerthelesse, when she saw no remedy, but that she was forced to make a vertue of necessity, with teares she tooke her leaue of the Prince, who feigned himselfe in amorous speeches, very sad and sorrowfull for her departure.

CHAP. VII.

How the knights, which belonged to the Giants Brocalon and Baleato, surrendred vp the Castles, vnto the noble knight of the Sauage man: And of that which happened to the Prince Florendos, after he arrived at the Castle of the Giant Almarol, where remained the faire Princessse Miragarda.



**P** the next day following, the knights, (which belonged to the Giants) had now intelligence of the death of their Lords, whereupon, they presently determined with themselves, to go for if the knight of the Sauage man, would entertaine them into his fauour, for since they had no refuge or defence left them, wherein they might repose any hope of assurance, they concluded to surrender by the castles into his hands knowing themselves farre vnable to withhold them from him. In this determination they came to the Hermits Cell where they found the knight of y<sup>e</sup> Sauage man lying on his bed, for that he was not very well disposed, they comparing his yong yeres with the noblenesse of his late exploits, receiued great cause of admiration, at last, he that iudged himselfe, to be the hardiest of

of courage amongst them, suddenly entred into these speeches.

If I should deny, sir knight, that fortune hath entertained you into especiall regard, I should seeme very much forgetfull of my selfe, in that the puissance of Brocalon and Baleato, two Giants, reputed of no small courage, as (by your noble hardinesse) brought to utter confusion: therefore this remaineth as a chosen argument, that she, not onely hath called you into the dignity of her fauour, but also, that she maintaineth her affection towards you with inestimable bountie, let not any then seeme so hardie, as to offer a checke or reproofe to your valour, for that their best fortune is vnlike to be equall with yours, but let them rather imagine themselves happy, if they may deserue the good countenance of so worthy a Champion.

The due consideration hereof, hath constrained vs to enter into such hardinesse, as to come and present our selues to your noble mercy, this good opinion guided vs, that he which hath so worthily overcome, and remaineth in the honour of a famous conquerour, will not staine that laudable title, by offering discourtesie to those, who humble themselves as obedient seruants, in signe whereof, receiue at our hands the keyes of the Castles, which our Lords sometime enioyed, and withall, receiue the hearty good will and affection of them, who remaine onely at your noble commandement: to which courteous words the Prince returned this answer.

Your speeches are so honest, and so well replete with civill courtesie, as I am sorry that my present case, will not suffer me to let you vnderstand, how thankfully I accept your great gentlenesse: but you shall beare me company to the Court of England, where I will cause the king my Grandfather to satisfie that, which my disability will not suffer me. Then tooke he the keyes of the Castles, wherewith he was very much contented, fixing the issue so fortunate, where the beginning seemed so doubtfull.

The knights still kept the Prince company, in respect of the honorable promise he had made them, whereof they were not a little



little glad, in that they hoped to gaine good faueur in the Court of England, where, the report of this noble Conquest in short time was so blazed, as it moued a generall consent of gladnes, not so much for the reconery of the Castles, as that they were wonn by the prowesse of the Prince Florian.

The good King Fredericke, for ioy of this good happe, sent Sir Pridos, the Duke of Galles, in all the speede that might be, to see if he could meete with his noble Nephew: who taking a Galley presently, in short time arriued in the Coast of Ireland, not very farre from the Hermits Cell. Whers finding the Prince, and declaring the sum of his message, the Prince concluded to depart thence, notwithstanding his wounds were not thoroughly healed: so taking leaue of the gentle Hermit, and desiring the other Knights to accompany him, they committed themselves to the Seas, whereon they had not long sayled, but they arriued at the Cittie of London, thorow which they were honourably conducted to the Kings Pallace. When tydings being come to the King, that they were arriued in the Court, accompanied with his Sonne Don Edward, he came to meete them, when casting his armes about the necke of the Prince Florian, the teares ran downe his white beard, for the inward ioy he conceiued in his presence: as for his Father Don Edward, he would not hide his earnest affection, but welcommed his sonne with very great kindnesse, and his mother the Princess Florida, pittying his hurts, but glad of his company, shewed her selfe a louing mother vnto him, and would not depart day nor night from him, till she perceiued him to be thoroughly recovered.

The King of England did very honourably entertaine the Knights which came with his Nephew, and for that he would shew he made estimation of them, he accepted them into offices (according to their degrees) in his Court, for which great bountie, they witnessed themselves not vnthankfull, but so behaued themselves, as they did great credit to the King in his Court.

The Prince Florian being in good estate of health, newes came vnto the English Court, of the imprisonment of the King Polendos and his companie, in the Court of the great Turke, which

which vnhappy tidings moued the king and his whole Court to great græfe, considering withall the state of sorrow, wherein the Emperour of Constantinople remained: and the more extreame did they take the cause, in respect of the small hope was to be had of their liberty againe, in that the great Turke had sworne to put them all to death, except the Emperour would send him the knight, who so boldly carryed away his daughter the Princess Targiana. These newes comming to the eares of the Prince Florian, he began to fall into these speeches. Far better it is for me to go render my selfe, and suffer the extraine rigour of that cruell Infidell, then that (for me) so many good knights should lye in danger: for seeing by my occasion the cause did first arise, no better meane to salue it by againe then my selfe.

I cannot beleue (sayd the Prince Don Edward) that the Turke is so forgetfull of himselfe, as to seek the death of so many for so small a matter, by reason Albayzar, (one of his owne kindred) should then stand in hazard of his life: but if it be as the report goeth, the Emperour ought to be carefull in the keeping of Albayzar to the end, that the safeguard of his life might redæme the other their wonted liberty: whereto the Prince Florian thus replied. I am perswaded good Father, that the Turke will hardly be remoued from his determination, which maketh me the greater to misdoubt the safety of those knights, the absence of whom (I am assure) so græuously offendeth the good Emperour, that I am perfectly resolved to goe and comfort him: considering it is a part of dutie on my behalfe, not to be so farre from him at this time, seeing he is deprived of them that should defend him. The aged King Fredericke, his Father Don Edward, nor his mother the Princess Florida, could dissuade him from his determination, but contrary to their wills he departed from the Court, taking his iourney toward Constantinople, being armed after his accustomed manner, and bearing in his Shield his vsuall deuise. Thus the happy successe which may fall vnto him, at this time we intend to leaue him, because we will returne to the Prince Florendos, who by his time is wel nere the castle of the giant Almarol, hauing in his iourney

iourney done many noble deeds deserving commendation, but for that they are rehearsed in the English Chronicles, it would seeme impertinent to this place to rehearse them: neuertheless, I must needs tell you, that Floraman the Prince of Sardignia, in this iourney atchieued very great renowne, and so continued, till their arrivall at the City of Rioclaro, which at this present is called Tamar.

Florendos seeing himselfe so neare the place, where he had spent a great time in languishing afflictions, entred into a thousand imaginations with himselfe, first considering the beginning of his loue, and then the happy continuance thereof, enforced him to a number of sad coniectures, wherein he passed that night as quietly as he could.

In the morning they rid on toward the Castle of Almaroll, when Albayzar beganne to vse some doubt of his entertainment, for that he iudged women were but slenderly acquainted with pittie, especially hee looked for small fauour of the Princesse Miragarda, who contrariwise was not so cruell to wardes strangers, as shee was toward her dearest and best beloved friends. Florendos had no sooner discovered the Trees, which were planted about the Riuer Thesin, and with all, the walles of the Castle of Almaroll, but his heart was immeasurably touched with suddaine feare, remembering how many torments he had endured, and the perilles whereto he must now render himselfe againe afresh, a spectacle certainly of wonderfull griefe, wherein he somewhat bare the Prince Albayzar company, who remembering that he was vanquished, knew no other remedie for himselfe, but to abide the mercy of Miragarda.

When they were come to the Castle, they found all the gates fast locked, whereupon they went to the Tree where the Shildes were hanging, where, well beholding them all, Florendos at last espied his owne, at the sight whereof he secretly sighed, and imagined how he might be thankfull sufficient to his Esquire Armello, who had (since his departure) so well guarded it: but in sooth he was not so much beholding to his Esquire, as he did estimate himselfe, because Armello was fallen

amorous

amorous of Lardemia, the Damosell attendant on the faire Princesse Miragarda, and stayed in that place to contemplate the beauty of his beloved Mistresse, rather then for any care he had of his Masters shield and Armo, for he was gone so farre ouer shoes in loue, as he had no other pleasure then the remembrance of the Damosell, who tooke great delight to see him so grauously attached for loue.

Armello has so set on fire in affection, as he could not know his Lord and Master, and some other cause there was to hinder him, for that he was so disguised in blacke Armour, but when he perceiued the Prince Floraman, and had likewise espied the shield of the Princesse Miragarda, he presently did coniecture, that the blacke knight, was his Lord the Prince Florendos, to whom he reuerently drew nere, vsing these speeches.

I hope (my good Lord) you haue no occasion to hide your self from him, who hath such earnest affection to do you seruice, and specially hauing recovered so rare a Jewel, as is the Shield of the faire Miragarda, at whose commandement, you made your departure from this place, and well worthy is she to be impeached of high ingratitude, if she should not now fauourably entertaine you, who hath so nobly and worthily deserved.

Florendos being not able to conceale himselfe any longer, opened his helmet, and then embraced his Esquire Armello, to whom he deliuered the Shield of Miragarda, willing him to set it in the place where it was wont to stand, before that the Prince Albayzar so discourteously took it away, and bad him also take the Shield of the Princesse Targiana, and to set it at the foete of the portraiture of Miragarda, which did not a little offend the Prince Albayzar to behold.

At length came forth of the Castle the Giant Amarol, very well Armed, and gallantly mounted on a white Courser, for he supposed that these three Princes came to demand the Boult, but when he beheld the Shield of Miragarda, in the place where it was wont to be, being suddenly abashed, he knew not well what to say. At last he knew the Prince Florendos, by reason that he had lifted up the Veuer of his

Vel.

Helmet, whereupon he cast his Lance to the ground, and with stretched out armes came and embraced the Prince Florendos entertaining him with these words.

I did alwaies perswade my selfe (worthy and renowned Prince Florendos) that you would bring to end that heinous exploit, which I now perceiue you haue happily atchieued, a desert so laudable and knightly, as the Princesse Miragarda cannot otherwise chuse, but requite you with better entertainment, then she had done heretofore. And if she continue her former obstinacy, & use not that gracious acceptation towards you, which your noblenesse doth worthily merite, and her due tie commandeth she should fauour you with all, I will so shake the honour of her name with speeches of importance, that the world shall be acquainted with her monstrous unkindnesse, who I hope will beare me company in iustly condemning her, that can afford such great disloyaltie to so good a knight.

Thus breaking of his speeches, & without staying to heare the answer of the Prince, he presently ran into the Castle, where he declared to the Princesse Miragarda, the noble and knightly returne of her loyall & seruant Florendos, which newes enflamed her heart with vnspokeable ioy, neuertheless she dissembled the matter in such sort, as though she had made no account thereof, which the Giant perceiuing, both how slender estimation she seemed to haue of Florendos, as also of the way bringing backe againe her Shield, being not able to withhold his choller any longer, he began to censure her very highly with the Princely seruice of Florendos, how to her vniuersall praise and his owne renowne, he had witnessed the true testimony of an inuincible minde, which she countenancing with so small regard, did notoriously impeach her selfe of ingratitude, and too iniuriously requite him that had deserved so well.

All these words did seeme nothing to moue her resolute will, but with a hardy countenance she gaue shew to the Giant, that she was the Lady and Mistresse of a selfe-willed conceit, albeit within her selfe, she remainned greatly affectionate of the Princes returne, but because her modest shamefastnesse should

should not be discouraged to the giant, she made the matter to him of no regard at all.

The Giant being not a little vexed, in a great fury stoung forth of her presence, very much accusing her obstinate minde, and coming to the Prince Florendos, they could not hide the great discourtesie of Miragarda, which the Prince contented himselfe withall, because he was wont to haue no other entertainment, but for that he would dispatch the cause of Albayzar he desired Almaroll to goe againe to his Lady, and to know her pleasure, as concerning him that caried away her Shield, and whom he had brought backe againe.

The Giant presently returned to the princesse, giving her to vnderstand, that the knight which had caried away the Shield, was brought thither backe againe by the noble Prince Florendos, who desired to knowe her will, what should be done with him: Miragarda taking a little pause, at last commanded that Albayzar should be brought into her presence, and that Florendos should abide without.

When Albayzar was come before her, she straitely charged him to goe vnto himselfe prisoner, vnto the king Recinde her especiall good Lord, and that he should not faile to goe thither, because he should remaine there as prisoner, untill the great Turke had set at liberty the king Polendos with all his knights. She receiuing his oath, that he would not faile to doe as she had commanded him, willed him to depart, where he (giving her humble thanks for fauouring him so much, considering his offence deserved greater punishment) offered gently to kisse her hand, but she would not suffer him, and so he departed from her.

When he was come forth againe from the Castle, to take his leaue of the Prince Florendos, he cast his eyes on the portraiture of the princesse Targiana, not without many a bleeding sigh from his heart, and such countenance in iesture, as bewrayed the extremitie of his louing passions.

A great while he stood rehearsing to himselfe, these amorous conceits wherewith he was maruailously charged, at last he desired

desired Almaroll to doe him so much fauour, as to goe & intreate the Princesse Miragarda, that it might stand with her pleasure, not to suffer the shield of his best beloued Targiana, to hang in the rancke among those that were conquered, in respect she had deserued no such dignitie. But in no case would shee agree to this request, so highly did she esteeme her selfe in superiortie, aboue all other Ladies, whereof Albayzar being certified, he departed in choller and extreame melancholly, & the thirtieth day after her departure from the Castle of Almaroll, he arrived in the Court of Recinde King of Spaine, who receiued him with very Princely Courtesie.

And after he vnderstood who had sent him, and for what cause, he was not a little pleased thereat, because by him, the King Polendos might haue libertie againe, as also his Sonne, who was prisoner amongst the other knights: of these newes he presently caused the Emperour of Constantinople to be aduertised, that he should now set his former grieue apart and reioyce, in that he had in his custody such a one, as should bring home againe all the knights that were prisoners to the Turke. The Emperour greatly commended the policie of the Princesse Miragarda, and wished if it might be possible, to haue her company in his court, as well to regard her with honour equall to her worthy deserts, as also to mitigate the afflictions of his Nephew the Prince Florendos, who desired alwayes to fulfill those occasions, that might witnes to her his faithfull seruice. But when he perceiued that his Lady made no account of his trauailes, neither regarded the torments he endured for her sake, he determined to guard her Shield againe, untill some other knight did purchase his office, by triall of his valour, and if his misfortune happened to be so great, as he should receiue the blowe in this new attempt, he vowed neuer more to beare Armes against any, but euen to commit his whole course to the cruelty of Fortune, seeing that all this while, she would not allow him ene fauourable looke.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Combats that the Prince Florendos fought, the second day after he had enterprised to garde the Shield of the Princesse Miragarda.



When the Prince Florendos had passed one day before the Castle of Almaroll, without any friendly countenance of his Lady, or once comming into her presence, he began to commune with himselfe of his hard fortune, and what little hope he had to gaine his desired ioy, because her forwardnes cast into contempt his faithfull seruice. On the second day, to expell the heauie thoughts, wherewith he was so grievously charged, he came to the place before the Shield of his faire Mistress, which when he had aduersely beheld, he vttered his complaints after this manner.

I knowe certainly (swete Lady) that he which bestoweth his time in your seruice, receiuethe a very great recompence, by hauing the meanes to behold your faire Image in this portraiture, which is of power sufficient to bring into his subiection, the heart as hard as Adamant, if the Goddesse would afford those fauourable words vnto it, which sometime she did to the image made by Pigmaleon, how highly (in so doing) might she manifest her courtesie, and what a precious Iuell were he enriched withall, that gained so great an honour.

But I see well, that you haue preuented such a happy cause, in that this remaineth as a Net, to entangle the mindes of them, which line feed from such thraldome, in which extremitie, the party so much desires, as well to be comforted by your gracious speech, as to be so grievously tormented by your silent

C

silent

silent counterfeite, for that it deprieth him of his former felicity. As for me, seeing there is no other remedie, I must fixe mine eyes with this enticing shadowe, and satisfie my fancy in midst of my shadow, in that I behold the thing with mine eye, which as a dagger stabbelh me to the heart, and leaueth him depriued of any mean, which might adde some ease to my misfortune. But albeit your portraite is dumbe and sencelesse, and cannot (as I would it could) perceiue my heauy afflictions, yet so fond is my conceit, that it maketh me weary of my wretched life, hauing played the Mistresse thereof so deuently in my thoughts, as in stead of the person, I reuerence her picture, thinke then how dutifull I would be to your selfe, that am so forward in esteeming your shadow.

And this foresaid content should be very welcome to me, if I were perswaded that you took delight therein, which hardly I can beleue, in that my long absence in your seruice, and my presence now to offer you my dutie, is not worthy to be once looked on, this maketh me thinke, that you haue committed me to forgetfulness: therefore I account it as vaine to mourne any longer, seeing the affection I haue alwayes so faithfully borne you, is rewarded with such an unkinde recompence. While the Prince Florendos continued this sad discourse, the Princess Miragarda secretly behelde him at a chinke in the window, for it was her wont to arise very early in the mornings, to heare the pleasant noates of the pretty chirping birds, that would come and sing in the Trees planted by the Riuers side.

And when shee perceined that his grievous lamentations proceeded from the depth of his heart, she was somewhat abashed thereat, but yet in such sort, as she did neuer the more pittie his dolorous estate: for such a proud opinion she held of her selfe, that the greatest desertes in the world were not sufficient to answere her beautie, neither that Florendos could endure too much griefe for her, such was her mercilesse iudgement of the passions of loue. The carefull Prince abiding in his wonted moones, on a sudden heard a great noyse (not farre from him) among the Trees, which caused him to breake off his amorous lamen-

lamentations, and as he aduanced himself to see what the matter was, he espied three knights come riding, attired in very rich and costly Armour. The first of them was in greene Armour, shadowed with siluer very beautifully, and in his Shield he bare for his deuise, this word writen in Grecke letters, Normandie.

The Armour of the second, was white and Azure, mingled together artificially, with streames of greene enterchangeably figured thereon, and in his shield in a field of Sinople, he had liuely pictured the God Apollo in his ancient habit. The Armour of the third was Carnation colour, all beset with Circlets of gold very gallantly, and in his Shield in a field Gules he bare for his deuise, Orpheus wrapped about with the flames of hell, which was so ingeniously made, as there wanted nothing but life to grace the picture.

The two foremost knights came singing very pleasantly, that the Prince Florendos took great delight to heare them, and they accorded in such good musick together, as the Prince Floraman (who was very well sene in that Art) commended it about all that euer he heard in his life, so sweetly did their voyces consent together, beside the echo of the Riuier, the trees and the mountaines did answer their notes so familiarly, that it was almost as commendable as an instrument, which the Princess Miragarda (standing in her window) took great pleasure to heare, and it did very much comfort the sad mind of the Prince Florendos.

But the Prince of Sardignia, being somewhat acquainted with the Song, took a knife and engraved the same on the bark of a Tree, that for the worthinesse thereof, it might there remaine till time had consumed the Tree, and as the Tree grew in bignesse, so the letters might be sene in more leageable manner, which when he had finished, as well for his owne content, as to marke the perfectnesse of the Song, he rehearsed to himselfe in some following.

## The second Part

The Song which the two knights did sing, as  
they came riding to the Castle of the Giant *Almarol*,  
and which was engrauen on a Tree, by *Floramán*  
the Prince of Sardignia.

**F**Aire Madame, if you can vouchsafe to see,  
the liuely picture of a carefull minde:  
Forlorne with griefe, do you but looke on me,  
and iudge if Fortune be not most unkinde,  
That he which sues and serueth faithfully:  
Should be repaide with extreme cruelty.

What greater torments to a gentle minde,  
then to be scorned where he liketh most?  
What state of refuse can he hope to finde,  
where each thing doth at his misfortune boast?  
Condemnd, confounded with, rebuke and blame:  
Yet ignorant from whence the causes came.

So heauy is the waighty yoke of Loue,  
when queintest lookes affoord discourtesie:  
That wise is he that doth the passions proue,  
and yet can keepe himselfe at libertie.  
But he whose wits is rauished by stealth:  
Had need of Physick in his greatest healeth

Some men in loue commend their happinesse,  
their quiet, sweete, and delicate delight:  
And I can boast of Fortunes forwardnesse,  
Her extreme rigour and seuerer despiht.  
But for the sweetnesse other men haue felt:  
I came too late, my part was else where dealt.

## Of Palmerin of England.

Yet can I say, no man hath beene more iust:  
nor seru'd his Lady with more due regard:  
But she being gouerned by her owne mistrust,  
denies her seruant his desired reward.  
This my misfortune waxeth more and more:  
Yet will I suffer, though I die therefore.

FINIS.

**T**he three knights had no sooner espied the Prince Floren-  
dos, walking before the Castle of Almaroll, but they pre-  
sently left their singing, and pulled downe the Beuers of  
their helmets, because they doubted that they should be known:  
and when they came before the Tree where the shields hanged,  
they began greatly to commend his valour, whose noblenesse  
had gained such braue prizes, at length the knight in the greene  
Armour, steadfastly beholding the portrait of the faire Miragar-  
da, began very brauely to vse his language, as thus.

The beautie of that heavenly face which this Picture repre-  
sents, is of authoritie sufficient to bring to her obeyesance, the  
heart that neuer thought to loue, yea, of the worthiest knight in  
the whole world, albeit my minde was farre otherwise, before  
I saue that with mine eye, which hath bene daily commended so  
much in mine eare: Neuertheles, if any of those knights which  
hath enterprised to defend so rich a treasure, dare be so hardy as  
to breake a couple of Lances with me, I will doe my endeavour  
as becometh a good knight, on condition he prouoke me not, to  
doe him more iniury then willingly I would: because I feare  
that the Lady which oweth this faire Picture, would very se-  
uerely punish me, for offering offence to any of her knights, as  
contrariwise shee will entertaine them with especiall fauour,  
that take vpon them to enter the Combat for her: to whom the  
Prince Florendos thus replied.

It were pittie Sir, to put you forth of so good a minde, seeing  
your stomacke serueth you so well for the purpose, and because I  
am



am ready prouided for the Joust, I force not greatly to bestow the breaking of a Lance or two on you: and therefore take the field at your pleasure, for I will satisfie you in this request.

With these words they parted to fetch their course, and met together with such force, that their Launces cleve vp into the ayre in peces, and so passed on brauely, not being any thing shaken at this first encounter. The Giant Almaroll, seeing them destitute of Launces, caused some to be brought forth of the Castle, and being deliuered to their Esquiers, they went and seruied their Lordes withall, who valiantly met againe to breake their Launces the second time: but their encounter was so forcible, that the Prince Florendos lost one of his stirrappes, on which side he was in some danger, to haue fallen besides his horse: neuerthelesse, the knight in the greene Armour measured his length on the ground, but he recovered himselfe againe quickly, and being out of measure displeased at his fall, drew his sword with these words.

My knight, for that I made the meanes to summon you to the Joust, albeit the foyle hath happened to me, yet am I not offended thereat, so that you will not so much honour me, as to let vs trie one another a while with our swords: and if in the ende it be your good hap to vanquish me, your valour shall haue the larger estimation. I knowe not (answered the Prince Florendos) how these Gentlemen in your company esteeme of your request, because I see them preparing themselves to offer me the Joust: therefore let my intreatie at this time perswade you from this desire, in that we shall haue time enough to trie our manhood together, when you shall not thinke your selfe greatly aduantaged, nor I finde my selfe ouermuch injured.

Thus concluding, he gaue his horse the spurres, and ranne courageously against the knight in the white Armour mingled with Azure, who in sooth receiued him very brauely, breaking their Launces with so great force, as the Prince Florendos lost both his stirraps, but yet recovered himselfe well enough from the fall: as for the other knight, the stroke of the Prince was so roughly giuen him, that his horse and he fell soone together,

gether, and his horse tumbling vpon him did somewhat hurt one of his legs.

When Florendos had prouided himselfe of another Lance, he gaue a signe to y<sup>e</sup> third knight to encounter with him, which the knight perceiuing, and being somewhat moued at the misfortune of his companions, failed not to put himselfe vpon the aduenture, but such was the courteous regard he had of his fellows, as at the first offer they missed in their meeting, whereupon they toke the second carere so worthily against each other as they brake their Lances brauely, and passed on for the third encounter. The Prince Floraman and Almaroll, made great estimation of the noble behaviour these three knights vsed, and likewise the Princesse Miragarda did very much commend the noble exploits, which Florendos and the other knights shewed before her presence, but then the knight being desirous to try the end of his fortune, began to aduance himselfe forward and the like did the Prince Florendos, when they met together so couragiously, that the knight was dismounted to the earth, the Prince Florendos being in litte better case, for had he not caught hold on the mane of his horse, he had bene forced to beare the knight company, but he escaped the fall very well, and being well insured againe, the knight with whom he had first Jousted, came vnto him with these words.

Such is my earnest desire (sir knight) to try my fortune once more against you, as I finde my selfe very much aggrieved, till I haue felt as much by your sword, as I haue done by your lance, therefore as you are a Gentleman, and one that hath worthily deserued your knighthood, let me gaine so much fauour at your hands, as now presently you would satisfie my request: the Prince Florendos shapd him this answer.

Your language is accompanied with such great honesty and courteue, and beside, I do esteeme thereof so well, as it would be a great lemmeth to mine honour, if I should deny your knightly desire, and so alighting from his horse, he drew his sword to enter the Combate, but the knight which bare in his shield the deuice of Apollo, stepped betweene them after this sort.

goe to the 28 page our noble

## The second part

These three knights continued still in talke, at last they were told of the entertainment which the Princesse Miragarda afforded to the Prince Albayzar, which did the better content them then any thing else, for that they greatly desired their liberty, whom the great Turke did hold as prisoners, and whose cruelty they knew would be severe, if it were not mitigated by this means.

When they had spent all the day in hope to see the Princesse and could not any way accomplish their desire, knowing besides, that the Princes Florendos, and Floraman, determined to stay there still at the Castle, they friendly took their leave of them, taking their journey toward the Cittie of Constantinople, which was the cause why they left the King of Spaines Court. Thus the Prince Florendos accompanied with his beloved friend Floraman, concluded still to guard the Shield of his faire Distresse Miragarda, against all those that durst come to use any controuersie therewith: and still he bemoaned his hard fortune, that his true and faithfull seruice could be no better esteemed.

## CHAP. IX.

Of a strange aduenture which chanced before the Castle of the Giant Almarol, and what happened to the Prince Florendos.



IN our history reports, the three knights which iousted against the Prince Florendos, did not linger or loyter in any place, till they came into Greece, and not very farre from the cittie of Constantinople, where by chance as they trauailed, they met with Leonarda the Princesse of Thraee, being

go. When this mark is over the last page

## of Palmerin of England.

Noble Florendos, you haue good occasion to content your selfe with this victory, in so much as you haue wonne it of those who are your especiall friends, and we would haue you know, that we are not offended at our mischance, being vanquished by a Prince of so great and singular prowesse. And for that you may be the better perswaded of my words, you shall vnderstand that he which is so earnest in prouoking you to the Combat, is your deere friend the Prince Berold, the other is your own brother the Prince Platir, who to their great paines (I thanke them) haue honoured me in trauaile with their worthy company, as for my selfe, I am your humble Seruant the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley who had knowledge of you, so soone as I did see you, yet would not I make any thew thereof (being desirous my selfe to be unknowne) to the end that the faire Princesse Miragarda, might yet once more behold your knightly valour, and then to esteeme of you according to your noble deserts.

The Prince Florendos took of his Helmet, and comming to the Sage Aliart, did embrace him very courtuously, giuing them to vnderstand how he was heartily soyy that he had iousted against his Brother, and his other two deare friends, whom he spared not to entertaine very gratically, and the like did the Prince Floraman, for that they had witnessed their friendship to him in diuers places, so they sitting downe all together, passed away the greatest part of the day, in rehearsing their manifold and knightly aduentures, which they lengthened with large discourse, because they would gladly get a sight of the Princesse Miragarda, who was so dainty in shewing her selfe, as very seldome would she come to the open window, but looke forth at some priue or secret place, for that her greatest felicitie was, when she might see the field died with the blood of those, who came to contend for the singularity of beauty, in triall whereof, she was not a little proud that the victory returned alwaies to her, which made her take the greater deilght, when she perceived the liues of them that tried the Combats, to stand in danger, which she did oftentimes behold in the surdy Combats fought before the Castle.

90 back to y<sup>e</sup> ap where  
these  
that mark is

toothily guided by many noble Gentlemen, some that imployed themselves in knightly seruice, to gaue the good opinion of Princesse, and others that uttered many amorous conceits, to inueigle her fancy towards them in marriage, and so they passed away the time till they arrived at Constantinople, where the Princesse was entertained with maruailous great honour: but becauie the History doth make mention hereafter of her royall receiuing into the Citty, I will now speake no more thereof, but returne againe to the Prince Florendos, who walking along the Riuer side to take the fresh aire (the next day after the three knights departed from him) he espied two Boats well furnished with Dares, in the foremost whereof sate foure Damosels, attired in very sumptuous apparell, and sitting about the poope end of the Boate, sounding and tuning their Lutes, whereto their voyces deliuered such pleasant ditties, as they might well haue bene compared with the three knights that had taken their way to Constantinople, if so be they had stayed still at the Castle of Almaroll, to haue made triall.

When they drew neare to the Castle, the men bestirred their Dares merily, and the Ladies continued their pleasant song, very often making signes of courtesie towards the other Boate, which was couered with a Vilt of surpassing riches, and there (vnder a pavilion of inestimable value) sate a Lady on pillows and Cushions of Velvet imbroidered with Gold, whose countenance (which in sooth was maruellous beautiful) she was her to be the Gouvernesse over all the other, for she had on a light robe of Carnation Taffata, cut and layd out with very beautiful silks, that it seemed of great costlines and value to the beholders, by reason that there wanted not gold, Pearle, and precious Stones, to set it forth to the uttermost, and for that she might be the better discerned, the heate of the day being past, & the Sunne declining to the neather Regions, she gave commandement, that the Gantles of the Pavilion should be lifted vp, when the Princes Florendos, and Floraman, might at first behold the exquisite perfection of her beautie, and at her sight they might see sitting on a cloath of blacke Velvet, two

aged

aged Gentlewoman, betwene whom sat a very faire Damosell: and by her side lay a seemely knight in greene armour, bearing in his shield for his deuice, in a field of Sinople, Cupid fast linked in chaines of gold, his bowe and arrowes lying before him broken in pieces, and the knight himselfe seemed, as a man altogether vanquished and overcome, for that the Damosell advanced her selfe above him.

The Parriners were brauely decked with the colours of their Ladie, whereof (I may say to you) they were not a little proude, for that in behauiour they seemed so pleasant, as no accident what soeuer could haue power to change them: and in these great shewes of delight, they brought their Boates to the side of the Castle, continuing these sweete harmonie, which by the Echo of the water, gaue an acceptable noyse to their eares, who at the windowes of the Castle stood to behold them.

When the Princes, Florendos and Floraman, thought the time to long, till they might haue further knowledge of these Ladies but especially the Prince Florendos, who being earnest in desire to knowe the knight in the Boate, casting his armes together, thus communed with himselfe. I am of the mind that the very extreamest rigour of misfortune is reserved for me, and that it is adioyned me to lament, when others reioyce, in that I am daily and hauesely tossed in the surges of vncertaine chances, when each one else can haue harbour in the haven of happinesse: and if I speake amisse, let the world enter into iudgement on me: first, the whole course of my life in knightly seruice, and the reuerent dutie I haue alwayes bozne to my Distresse, yet what I haue gained in the one, I haue lost in the other. Which is a speciall argument, that I am altogether vnforsunate. Hee would haue proceeded further in secret complaint, but Floraman stayed him with his friendly imbracing, and so walking together, they behelde to come from the Boate, where the Lady sate, a very modest and ciuill Damosell, and out of the other Boate came two Esquires, who after they had bailed their bonnets to their Lady and Distresse, went orderly together before the Damosell.

When

When they came before the two Princes, the Esquires very reverently did their dutie to them, and the Damofell gave them a very gracious salutation as she passed by them: at last, they came before the Tree where the Shildes were placed, when the Damofell (beholding the portraite of the faire Miragarda) turned to the Esquires with these words.

This diuine motion of vnequall beautie, causeth me to enter into a hard opinion, which is that our Lady and Mistresse will returne as greatly displeased, as she is arrived here with suppose of pleasure, for that the base Stone of Saint Vincents Roocke, may not presume to paragon it selfe with a pure and perfect Diamond. So, she proceeded on towards the Castle, where, in the windowe (by reason of this supaine aduventure) the Princesse Miragarda was very stately placed, before whom she should haue deliuered her message, but that she was maruailously damped by the glimpse of her singular beutie, which was an occasion of her pausing a while: a thing not strange in women, who are quickly abashed at a simple cause, and therefore the more worthy of a fanourable conceite, but after the Damofel had attained more hardinesse (yet not without very maidenly and ciuil bashfulnesse) she saluted the Princesse Miragarda with these speeches.

Let it not seeme (faire Princesse) offensive in your gracious eye, that I thrust my selfe into your presence after such bold manner, for that countrey Maidens are sildome acquainted with courtly qualities, and beside, a messenger is pardonable, because some audacitie must be vsed in declaring a message, and therefore presuming on your noble fanour, I omit needlesse and prolixious phrases, because they are not incident to the matter I haue to disclose, neither is it necessarie to offend your cares with long and tedious protestations.

You shall therefore vnderstand (most gracious Princesse) that Arnalte the Princesse of Nauarre, my especiall good Lady and Mistresse, by me kisseth the hand of your excellencie, who for the desire she hath to doe you seruice, and to spend some time in your so farre famed and commended company, hath bene so bold to trauaile thus farre, and here she is arrived with such a

small

small traine as attendeth on her, not daring to enter on land or presume to your Castle, before she be first resolved, if it stand with your good liking to afford her entertainment, otherwise being very loth to offend you, she will returne from whence she came: to which words the Princesse thus replied.

Faire Damofell, your request is honest and commendable, and for my part I esteeme very well thereof, but yet lyeth not in me to grant your Ladies request, which is no small grieue unto me: and I assure you, that the coming of the Princesse of Nauarre is as acceptable to me, as the greatest good fortune in the world beside, that might happen to me: but as concerning her friendly desire, trust me, the custome of this Castle is flatly against it, in that the entrance is as well defended against women (whose company is very strange here) as against men, that daily imploy themselves in doods of honour. And if I (for the good affection I bare to your Lady and Mistresse) should presume on my selfe to breake the custome, the Giant Almaroll, whose authoritie here stretcheth further then mine) I am sure would in no wise agree thereto, and therefore I desire you not to imagine any ill, in that I do not grant to your Ladies request, for there is great trust committed to those knights without, that (on their perill) none must enter into this Castle. And so I pray you to returne my acceptable, thanks to your Lady, excusing me by my allowable answer and this you may assure her, that my grieue is greater then she can iudge, or you imagine, in that I am destitute of the power to accomplish her courteous will.

Madame (answered the Damofell) I shall not faile to declare at large to the Princesse Arnalte, your gracious pleasure, so that I doubt not, but she will very well accept of your friendly answer: and the rather, because her danger will be the greater, if she presume vniadvisedly on her owne perill, so that she is highly bound to your courteous nature, in sending her such a forewarning.

And so she humbly tooke her leaue of the Princesse Miragarda, whose answer she thorowly deliuered to her Lady and Mistresse,

Mistresse, whereat she receiued so great unkindnesse, as she would hardly suffer the Damosell to report the allowable and sufficient excuse of the Princeesse, and she grew into so great melancholly, as neither one nor other might speake vnto her, which when the knight in the greene Armour perceiued he arose, and began thus to pacifie her.

Madame, you ought not to take in euill part, that the princeesse Miragarda maketh refusal of your entry into her Castle, for that perchance she is a straide, least your beauty should staine or blemish hers, and then you know (when such a doubt standeth in the way) she should seme very vnwise, in committing her case to so great hazard: wherefore I pray you, let this perswasion (which I imagine to be the cause of your deniall) so quietly content you, as no further choller remaine vpon your stomacke.

These words which the knight used, were of such force in the eares of the Princeesse Arnalte, as she contented her selfe with the answer the Damosell brought her: and because she would not presently depart thence, without seeing some further occasions, she commanded the knight to go to the place where the Shields hanged, and from thence to bring her the Shield, wherein the Princeesse Miragarda was pictured, because she would carry it away with her.

The knight esteemed this commandement very highly, in that the Princeesse would imploy him in any cause of seruice, wherefore, without further delay he went on land accompanied with the Damosell that carried the message to the Princeesse, to whom when she had made knowne his intent, she presently went to the two Princes, Florendos and Floraman, whom she summoned with these words.

Gentlemen, the knight which you see, is come in the company of my Lady and Mistresse, desireth you to send him the Princeesse Miragardas Shield, for that his Lady would vse it in those occasions, which in her iudgement she esteemeth to be well thought on: and if you should seme so bold as to denie his demand, and carry such an opinion of your selues, as he may not speed of his purpose by faire meanes, know you then, that

that he shall be constrained to fetch it away against your wills, yea, in despite of any thing you dare doe to the contrary, which trust me he would be loth to doe, such and so great is his gentle nature, as he would not willingly offer inuury to any knight of this Countrey: vpon these wordes the Prince Florendos thus answered.

Gentle Damosell, the knight (as it seemeth to me) is ignorant of the daungers which this Shield doeth promise to him, who cannot content himselfe to se his eyes, with the beholding and contemplating a thing of so rare beautie and excellency, but he must needs enter into so proude an imagination, as for his owne pleasure or his Ladies, he must carry the Shield alway with him, and that there belongeth no more to the matter but so: trust me (faire Damosell) the Lord hath made of him, and he himselfe hath no made of the Shield, if he haue, hee may chance goe without it at this time, vnlesse he bring a larger Commission, or get my good will to deliuer it him, and commonly I am not accustomed to send a Shield by a woman, because it is a thing she knoweth not how to vse, therefore, she will haue it, bid him be so good as to fetch it himselfe.

And because you shall carry a sound message vnto him, I pray you doe mee so much fauour as to let him vnderstand, that I will at this time, take the matter so hardly vpon mee, as to defende the Shield against the vttermost hee can doe, when, if his fortune serue him so well, as to conquere me, the Shield shall without further trouble, be deliuered him: and if he proue so happie, as to carry away the Shield by his Drowesse, I shall esteeme my selfe the most fortunate man aliue, for that when I lose it, I shall lose my life, and then will my wonderfull vnfortunate race haue a final ende.

Nevertheless, you must let him vnderstand, that seeing he doth esteeme so well of his Lady, as (for her sake) he will intrude himself into desperate aduentures, it is necessary he bring some witnesse or testimony of her gracious fauour, which may be placed

placed at the fete of this faire portraite, least perchance for want thereof, when the victorie should chance to him, fortune doe turne her backe, and so his expectation may be utterly deceived: now you knowe my minde, you may depart and tell him.

The Damosell returned to the place where the knight attended, to whom when she had told the answere of the Prince, Florendos, he tooke his leaue of his Lady, and accompanied with two Esquires, came brauely marching toward the prince, to whom when he drew somewhat neare, he began very proudly to vtter these speeches.

I see well Sir knight, that good counsell is not to be fled towards them, who are of so small discretion, as they cannot take it when it is offered: it is more therefore, that they be taught by discipline the principles of their duty, when friendly perswasion is ykelesome to their cares. I willed you by a friendly message, that you should send me the Shield wherein is the Image of Miragarda, because I would be loth by constraint to come and fetch it from you: but I perceiue you had rather lose it to your great detriment and shame, then to giue it me friendly, whereby you might haue gained commendation. And for my Ladies fauour which you demand, where with you would honour the fete of this picture, I promise you here vpon my knighthood, that if it be my ill hap to be conquered, you shall then be made acquainted with the pledge of my Ladies fauour: therefore doe your vttermoost endeuour to bring me vnder your subiection, for you shall see that I will giue you such a lecture, which I feare me you will very hardly construe.

Trust me Sir (quoth Florendos) your language is very braue and bountifull, replenished with large circumstance of words, if your manhood prove answereable thereto in deedes: whereof I knowe not how a man might be better resolved, then to draw his sword (as I doe now) and commit the cause to present triall. Wherevpon these two knights prepared themselves to the Combate, but as they were offering the one towards the other, they heard the Casement of a winde within the

the Castle suddenly to open: which caused the Prince Florendos to looke vp, when he espied the princeesse Miragarda, whom he had not scene before since his coming to the Castle, by reason whereof, he remained so inwardly rauished in delight, with gazing on this delicate spectacle, as the Combate was quite and cleane out of his minde, which the strange knight perceiuing, he tooke him by the arme, and thus awaked him.

Sir knight, he that presumeth to enter Combate with me, ought not to be so forgetfull of himselfe, as it seemes you are: therefore either prouide to defend me, or I promise you I will goe away with your Ladies Shield. The Prince Florendos seeing that the strange knight had him by the arme, he remembered himselfe presently what he had to doe: wherevpon he withdrew his eyes from the place where they were so greatly affected, and hauing his heart abundantly charged with griefe, he began thus to frame his answere. It doeth greatly displease mee sir, to enter the Combat with you, for that you take mee in such a time, which I esteeme more, then the conquering you can returne me any advantage.

Sir, (answered the strange knight) to the end you may perceiue, what small succour your present imagination doth promise you, defend your selfe so well as you can, and ere long you shall be perswaded of your owne folly.

With these words, he strake Florendos such a terrible blow on the Crest of his Helmet, as the waightines thereof, constrained him to bow down his head, but he was not slacke in the requitall thereof, which was so worthily handled, as the knights shield was broken in two pieces: whereat the knight was offended without measure, for when he beheld the Image of his Distresse so cruelly martyred, he became so extreame to rage with himselfe, that he fought like a man that was vnder of all reason or iudgement, which when the Prince perceiued, he neuer left following his knightly intent, til he had brought the knight almost out of breath, yet did hee not overcharge himselfe with any extreame labour, but even at his owne will and pleasure so continued the fight, that he was as fresh at the ending as at the



## The second Part.

the beginning, and so worthily did behaue himselfe, that the knight (who had more desire to rest himself, because he was out of breath, then to endure so hot a combat) was brought into such feeble estate, that he was constrained to fall to the Earth, verie greatly trauelled, and soze wounded. The Princesse Arnalte (whose inconstancy you haue sufficiently heard heretofore) was so soze displeased when shee saw her knight conquered, as shee commaunded her seruants presently to rowe away, forsaking her knight, and making no more account or estimation of him, then as if she had neuer knowne or seene him before.

The Prince Florendos, hauing thus brought his enemy vnder his obeyfance, opened his Helmet to see if hee knewe him, then the knight did humbly yelde himselfe, desiring (when hee had taken what sharpe reuengement on him hee pleased) so to deale with him (if his minde were bent to such rigour) as at his hands hee might take his latest breathing, for that hee hadde so fondly thrust himselfe into the place, where he had committed so great dishonour: the Prince returned this answer. (It suffiseth me Sir knight) that I haue conquest of thee, wherefore I will that thou goe and present thy selfe to the Princesse Miragarda, and to suffer the Iudgement that it shall please her to assigne thee, speake to the Giant Almaroll, and hee will cause thee to know the Princesse minde.

The Giant (by the intreatie of the knight) went to knowe the pleasure of the Princesse, who returned with this answer, that the Princesse sent commandment vnto Florendos, to take the Oath of the banquished knight, that hee should neuer serue any other Lady then the Princesse Arnalte, and that hee should beare the Deuise in his shield after an other manner, in respect she did thinke it farre vnrasonable, that Loue should be helde captiue vnder the power of Chastitie: wherefore hee should cause Cupid to be painted in his shield, holding a knight bathed in blood downe to his seefe.

Albeit this iudgement of the Princesse Miragarda was somewhat sharp and rigorous, yet the knight would not gainsay her determination: so causing some regard to be vsed in his wounds on

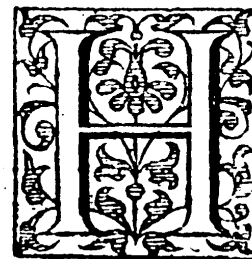
## of Palmerin of England.

on the next day he departed thence very sadde and sorowfull to thinke in what displeasure the Princesse Arnalte so suddainly, went away.

The Prince Florendos remained a while at the Curing of wounds, and in the meane time the Prince Floraman maintained the custome, accomplishing many haughty and noble deedes only to moue the affection of the Princesse Miragarda, in more amiable and gentle maner to the good and hardy knight Florendos: but she (for all this) would vse no estimation of the great paines which the Prince did daylie suffer for her sake.

## CHAP. X.

¶ Here shalbe declared, what, and who the Knight was, that came in the company of the Princesse Arnalte, & for what cause hee and she trauelled to the Castle of *Almarol*, and of the great entertainment which was made in the Court of the Emperor *Palmerin*, at the arriual of *Leonarda*, the Princesse of *Thrace*.



ere it shall not be much amisse to let you vnderstand, who the knight was, that came in the company of Arnalte the Princesse of Nauarre, for that (if occasion so serue) you may haue the better knowledge of him hereafter.

It is reported before in the first part of this Historie, that Darpos the Duke of Normandie, the sonne of Frisoll, king of Hungaria, had to issue two sonnes, whereof one was named Frisoll after his Grandfather, of whom mention is made many times in the Historie, and the other was called Dragolant, who (for that it is long time since he was reported a knight at Armes) is now the farther out of remembrance. This Dragolant being a gallant young Gentleman,

fleman, and meetly endued with strength to beare Armour, beside, the great fame of the noble exploiters of his father and Grandfather, did so embolden him in couragious desire, as he loathed to spend his life in ease or slothfull idlenesse, whereupon he left the place where he had bene nourished and brought up, adding his mind to the search of knightly adventures, forgetting the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, where first the renowne of his deeds, might haue giuen the greater grace to his person.

In this his harty desire, accompanied with one Esquire to beare his Shield and helmet, he toke his voyage towards the Realme of Spaine, being very earnest in affection to see the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, that he might approue his valour against the knight that kept the Princesse Miragardas Shield, but as he iourned thitherward, he was constrained to passe through the Realme of Nauarre, where by chaunce he happened to the passage, which was guarded by the Princesse Arnaltes knight, whereof two were vanquished by his noble valour.

Princesse Arnalte well noting his worthy behaviour, as also that he was a braue and lustie young Gallant, she used such friendly perswasion to him, that he went with her into the Castle, where she entertained him with such honour, as she was accustomed to vse towards them, who resembled Dragonalt in hountie and promise.

This young Prince beholding Arnalte intiched with so great beauty, and vnderstanding that her dowry was to be Quene of Nauarre, began to waie maruailous amorous of her, being sore inuicigled with her loue, as he iudged in his owne opinion that in her consisted the detriment of his life, and dignity of his honour.

At length it so fel out, that the Lady and Mistresse of his dutifull thoughts, was maruailous desirous to go see the faire Princesse Miragarda, which being a meane for him to vtter his earnest affection, he made a reuerent offer to beare her company in her iourney, so that he well knew, the more he did entertaine himselfe into her company, he might in the more familiar

miliar manner proceed in his loue. The Princesse Arnalte was not curious in accepting his gentlenesse, in that his presence did rather adde an estimation of honour of her, then impeach her of any vndercent cause, wherefore all things being in a readinesse, with as much conuenient speede as might be, she set forward towards the Castle of Almaroll, accompanied with the Ladies and Damosels, and six Esquiers, as you haue heard before, as also with this noble and aduenturous prince Dargonalte, who to witnesse the intire loue he bare to the princesse, many times by the way assayed very knightly occasions, wherein fortune did still affoord him the victory.

The Princesse receiued no small pleasure at his happy chances, in that she esteemed so well thereof, as she thought him worthy to possesse her loue, which Dragonalt aduisedly pondering, frequented the Princesse with very amiable conditions, so that in short time they came to a Citie, standing on the bankes of the Riuer Thesin, which made two leagues from the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, where they stayed till they had provided two Boates to passe along the Riuer, wherein they came to the Castle of Almaroll, and Dragonalt had the entertainment as you haue heard before, by the noble and valiant Prince Florendos, whose valour did moue such a hatred in the Prince Arnalte, towards her affectionate & loyall friend Dragonalt, that she angerly departed from the Castle of Almaroll, towards her owne place of abode in Nauarre, entending neuer to see him againe.

But it is not to be doubted, but that this suddaine choller would take as suddaine a cooling in that, as she could be easily intreated to anger, against them who had but little offended her, euen so could she be as easily won, to forget her desire of weakefull vengeance, her vntaynednesse was such, and her good will to loue so great. In this manner it chaunced Dragonalt, who continuing his affection to the Princesse Arnalte, in the ende was so fortunate, as he obtained her good will in marriage, she making him Lord of her selfe, and King of Nauarre: wherefore we ought not to dispaire of that, which is in the hand of fortune to giue vs, as you may perceiue in the course

of this History, which here leaueth Dragonalc & his Quene together, returning to Leonarda the pryncesse of Thrace, who being ready to depart the Realm of Thrace, for the desire she had to be in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, the Quene Carmelia her Grandmother, sent her away worthily accompanied with Ladies and Gentlewomen, for the better gouernement of her in her iourney: beside she gaue charge to the Lords and Gentlemen that went with her, in no case they should depart from her, vntill they had presented her to the Emperour.

In this order she set forward towards Constantinople, being met diuerse times on the way by many braue Gallants, who vnderstanding her setting forth, did honour her with their dutifull attendance, vntill shee came to the Emperours Court, where was assembled together so many braue knights, so richly Armed, and carrying such fine deuises, as one would haue iudged, that they did rather prepare to incampe themselves for warre, then to shew knightly disports to delight the Emperour. Many came thither to behold the brauery others to doe the pryncesse Leonarda service, and some beside, who had good hope to winne her in marriage, ech one did strue who should behaue himselfe most gallant, and who might witnesse the greatest title of knighthood, as wel to please the eye of the yong Pryncesse, as to deserue the estimation of the whole Court, their honourable estates seruing them very well so to doe.

The prince Gracian, Berolde, the Sage Aliart, Platir, and diuerse other knights of the Emperours Court, going in the company of the aged Emperour himselfe, went to meet the Pryncesse two leagues from the Citie, who being aduertised of their coming (by reason that the Prince Primaleon with other Princes, rid somewhat before the rest) did presently leaue her Coach, and mounted on a goodly white Palfrey, whose harnesse was very rich and costly to behold: the Pryncesse her selfe, was brauely attired after the Greekish fashion, that she might the better delight the eyes of them which did behold her, her Robe was of Carnation Weluet, very faircly imbodered with pascement Lace of Gold, her Cloake was of Scarlet, closed before with

with sumptuous Diamonds, which were placed very thicke in manner of buttons, and all the compasse of the Cloke was likewise garnished with Diamonds, hauing betwene euery Diamond, a ranke of very glorious Orient Pearle, which shined in the Sunne so gallantly, as they did maruailously decke and set forth her costly Vesture, and beside, the glimpse of them so sweetly dazeled in her face, as the youthfull knights, whose thoughts were free before from the assaults of loue, were now suddenly entrapped with her singular beautie.

The Emperour, albeit he was farr in yeeres, yet he did attire himselfe very youthfully, to giue the greater grace to the yong Princes that bare him company, so conuincing to the Pryncesse Leonarda, he entertained her with very stately and accustomed honour, after ward he gaue place to the Prince Primaleon his Sonne, who kissed her hand in very gentle manner, and so did all the other Princes that came with the Emperour, whose presence witnessing so great estate, did much content the mind of the yong Pryncesse, who was no small deale abashed at the great honour, which the Emperour did so nobly ascribe her, as to grant her licence to remaine in his Court, in remembrance of which courtesie, she would haue stooped downe to kisse the Emperours hand, but he remembring how his court was graciously honored by her presence, would not suffer her to humble her selfe so much, giuing her to vnderstand in very friendly speech, that in her coming to abide in his court, he did accept it as a thing of no small contentation to him. Then setting forward on their way, that they might the sooner enter the Cittie, the Emperour on a sudden espied an occasion, which withdrew his mind from thinking on the beautie of the Pryncesse Leonarda, for he saw a prettie space from the cittie of Constantinople, vnder an oake standing nere to the Hermitage of S. Lois, which was a little out of the common way, a knight armed in Carnation coloured Armour, so thicke beset with little Orbes of Gold, as the whole Armour was gallantly set forth therewith, his Helm likewise was after the same maner, and in his Shield he bare for his deuise in a field of Azure, a Cypresse tree, very thicke hung with puts of Gold.

This knight was mounted on a lustie bay Courser, hauing attending on him two Esquiers, one of them carrying a shield couered ouer with cloath, so that the deuice thereof could not be discerned, the knight hauing espied the Emperour, sent presently one of his Esquiers vnto him, who being come befoze the Emperour, rained his Palfrey, and began to salute him in this order.

My gracious Lord, the knight whom you behold vnder yonder Dake, is supprised with a maruellous earnest desire, to trie against these knightes of your Court, the renowned valour, which hath bene so much reported of them thzough the whole world, and he willed me to certifie you, that it is a long time since he bare Armour, or followed any knightly aduventure, therefore he would now gladly make proue of the good opinion he holdeth of himselfe, and because he might the better spæde in his purpose, and not be denied in his honest request, he is determined this day to guard this passage, not doubting but he shall defend himselfe sufficiently, against any that dare iudge so great hardinesse in themselves, as to passe by without asking him licence. Wherefoze he humbly desireth your Maestie, that you would command your knights to ioust with him, for he hath promised to refuse none of them, except the Prince Primaleon your Sonne, against whom he will neuer consent to beare Armes.

The Emperour was so ioyfull at these tydings as might be, and therather he would consent to the knights request, for that it was a meane, whereby the Princesse Leonarda might receiue some pleasure: considered also, that it did very well like him, because she should perceiue the noble valour and prowesse of the knights that remained with him in his Court, and hauing opinion, that the knight which had enterprised to guard the passage, was one well sene in hautie exercises, he returned the Esquier this answer.

My friend, say vnto the knight thy Maister from me, that I freely giue him leauē to proceede in his honest request, and I am partly soze, that my aged yeeres will not suffer me to be one in the number of those, who (I am sure) will hazard their honour,

to get libertie of thy Maister for the Princesse Leonardaes passage, and in her company I promise thee will I abide, till either they haue wonne it valiantly, or lost it vnfortunatly. Then came he againe to the Princesse Leonarda (the Esquire being departed with this answer to his Maister) and to her he began with these speeches.

Madame, do you thinke it reasonable, that any one should denie me the way within mine owne dominions and especially at such time as I am in your company? Certainly, the knight that hath enterprised thus to hinder vs, ought to be one of no small courage: except he doth imbolden himselfe by means of your beauty, and hoping to moue you towards him, he doth offer his person to endure a doubtfull

stantly had the Emperour concluded his intent, when Reccamon, who in his Court was esteemed for a good and hardy knight, gaue the spurres to his Courser against the strange knight: but his fortune was so farre contrary, as he was presently diuimounted from his horse, hauing nothing at all moued the knight that kept the passage: whereupon Frisoll caught his Lance against the strange knight, who caused him to beare Reccamon company. Then galloped he his horse to fetch his other Lance, for that he had broken his other vppon Frisoll. Grecian being somewhat offended, aduanced himselfe against the knight, who meeting him in the midst of the way, gaue him such a forcible stroke, as he was constrained to fall to the earth: by means wherof Berolde put forth himselfe, whom the knight caused to spæde as Gracian had done. The Emperour hereat was greatly abashed, beholding the shame which his knight receiued, whereupon Dramian went to trie his fortune, which in sooth was to aduerse to him, as his horse & he fell downe both together, which he perceiuing, said, that his enemy ought not refuse to ioust with him once moze: the strange knight hearing his words, gaue a signe to Dramian that he should giue ouer and run no moze, but he would not be warned by his friendly motion, when putting himselfe vpon the second triall, he was againe thzowne to the earth, be-

he sore and dangerously wounded. This moued the Emperour to be much agræued, doubting lest the issue of this enterprise, would returne to the dishonour of the knights of his Court, then Don Rosuell, seeking to reuenge the iniurie his companions had receiued, gaue himselfe forth bravely to meete the strange knight, but his entertainment was such, as his fellowes had receiued before him. When the hardy Prince Platin saw the ill hap of the Princes, he ranne courageously against the strange knight, and after they had broken their lances, they met together verie sorely with their bodies, and their horses fought together likewise so cruelly, as in the ende, Platin and his horse was compelled to fall downe to the ground, but the strange knight sat still very gallant was not any thing hurt by the rough encounter.

The Emperour was overcome with extreme griefe, his knights beaten downe so fast by the valour of one knight, so that he knew not well what to say, and the Prince Primaleon was as greatly moued as the Emperour his father, because he suspected that the knight unknowne, was the noble and valiant prince Palmerin of England, whose prowess was worthily esteemed in all Princes Courts in Christendome: but he neuer remembred or iudged this strange knight to be the redoubted prince Florian of the Forrest, because such were giuen abroad, that he remained in the king of England Court.

In briebe, the famous behaviour of this unknowne knight made them stand in their dumps, so that they knew not well what to thinke, neuertheless the knights continued on the Ioust, to wit, Estrellant, Bellizart, & Francian, who were one after another placed among the vanquished, so there remained no more knights to Ioust: but on a sudden, enen as Francian was cast forth of his saddle, Pompides and Blandidon happened to arrive there, which the Emperour seeing, and knowing them to be such as merited his fauour, he afforded them a gracious welcome, desiring them, that they would do their endeavour to make free the passage, to the end that the Princesse Leonarda might enter into Constantinople.

¶

We are contented (mightie Emperour) answered Pompides, to make a proofe of our good fortune before you, as well to witnesse the regard we haue of your excellency, as to trie if we may attaine to purchase that, which so many good knights, haue failed in. Sooner had Pompides thus vttered his minde, but he gaue the spurs to his horse against the strange knight, who in sooth compelled both him and Blandidon, to speare as the other knights had done before.

When when he saw, that all the knights of the Emperours Court were vanquished, he lifted vp his helmet, and came vnto the Emperour, before whom he fell on his knees to kisse his Maiesties hand: but when the Emperour perceiued, that the knight who had so hardly kept the passage, was his Nephew the Prince Florian of the Forrest, he was then as ioyfull of his happy victory, as before he was agræued to see his knights so vanquished: yea, themselves did thinke it no dishonour to them, to be overcome by the noble Prince Florian, who hauing kissed the hands of the Emperour and Primaleon, offered to doe the like to the Princesse Leonarda, but shee seeing a Prince of such young yeares, to be accompanied with such singular prowess, could not so much account thereof, as in her eye she did imagine it worthy her great good will, which suddenly (at this instant) she gaue in secrete to the hardy Prince Florian, for that his vertuous deservings (in her conceit) did well besee me her fauourable acceptation. And for the Prince Florian, whereas (vntill this present) his heart could neuer faithfully make any certaine estimation of loue, but euen for the present humour (as you haue heard before) now, the singular courtesie of the Princesse Leonarda, as also the sufficiency of her equiualent beautie, caused such a hot skirmish betwene loue and liberty, as he must needs yeeld himselfe subiect to affection, being conquered and brought vnder by his extreme charges, so that nothing agreed so well with his labouring thoughtes, as when he supposed the Princesse to commaund him service, and he (in good will) applied his dutifull attendance.

The Emperour Palmerin, seeing such libertie of the passage granted,

## The second part

Graunted by him who had now more minde to gaze on the faire Princeesse, then to remember the happines of his obtained victory, came in this maner to the Princeesse of Thrace. Madame, the knight, who all this while employed himselfe to hinder our passage, is now not onely contented to grant vs libertie, but also will friendly beare vs company: wherefore I am perswaded, that we shall not againe be hindred in our iourney, by any knight that dare attempt as much as he hath done, for hauing my noble Nephew Florian in our company, I imagine it a very hard aduenture, which should in his presence seeme to unpeach vs.

### CHAP. XI.

How the Emperour with his noble company, entered the Citie of Constantinople, and of the gracious entertainment, which was made to Leonarda Princeesse of Thrace, at her arriual there.



After the Iousts were ended, which the noble and valiant Prince Florian had entered in guarding the passage, the Emperour desirous to make knowne to the princeesse Leonarda, the magnificent entertainment he could afford her in his Court, set forthwards on his way towards Constantinople, the Princes, Primaleon and Florian of the Forrest, leading the way very brauely, as hardy Champions to resist any dangerous aduenture, that should forbid them the entrance into the Citie.

When they were come into the Citie, they were receiued by the people maruellous triumphantly, who had prepared Scaffolles, and Theaters, where was presented many  
strange

## The second part

strange Histories and rare inuentions, for the entertainment of the young Princeesse of Thrace, as also to delight the aged Emperour, which albeit he was indifferently contented with all, yet there remained an especiall cause of griefe on his stomacke, to wit, the imprisonment of the King Polendos, and the noble Princes in his company. Belcar, and diuerse other approued knightes at Armes, rid on hastily before the Pallace, to aduertise the Emperesse, and the Princeesses, Gridonia, and Polinarda, of the coming of Leonarda the Princeesse of Thrace, who came on faste a prettie way from the Pallace, where they met the Princeesse, whom they failed not to entertaine with very gracious courtesie, whereat the Princeesse receiued great contentation, thinking that they which receiued her with such great estimation at her first arriual, would continue her in fauourable iudgement while she stayed there.

After that the Emperesse and Gridonia, had ended their louing salutations, the Princeesse Polinarda, did next aduance her selfe, shewing very Princely and amiable gestures of courtesie towards the Princeesse Leonarda, whose beauty she iudged worthy of great commendation: for I assure you, that whosoever did indifferently beholde these two Ladies together, could hardly iudge which of them surmounted the other in beautie.

The Princeesse Polinarda, aduisedly marking the diuine face of the faire Leonarda, beganne to growe in great opinion of fauour towards the prince Palmerin, commending maruellously his chastelie and iustnesse in fidelitie, in that he would not forget his loyalty to her, hauing offered him such an especiall treasure as was the Princeesse Leonarda, and for whom he had suffered so great paine and trauaile, yet could not be perswaded to accept her in choyce.

These two faire and beautifull Ladies, holding one another familiarly by the hand, followed the Emperesse into her Chamber, where her selfe, Gridonia, and all the other Ladies, sate downe to contemplate the sweet and delicate faces of these two Princeesses. Florian was no sooner entred into the Chamber,  
but



## The second Part

but hee humbled himselfe to kisse the Emperesse hand, who embraced him very lovingly a great many times, for that shee had bene alwayes more affectionate to his Mother, the Princesse Florida, then to all the rest of her Children, in respect of whom, shee receyued marvellous contentment, to beheld her Sonne the Prince Florian, of the Forrest, who (having done his dutie to the Emperesse) came and saluted the Princesse Gridonia, offering the same manner of honour, as before he had done unto the Emperesse, but she would not suffer him to regard her so much: wherefore she cast her armes about his neck, giving him such worthy entertainment, as so Noble a Prince deserved to have. From her he went to the place where the Princesse Polynarda sat, before whom he kneeled upon one of his knees offering her the same manner of courtesie, as he had before used to the Emperesse and the Princesse Gridonia, but she very maidenly and modestly did interrupt him, and taking him by the hand, began thus to parley with him.

I see now (Syr Florian) that at this present you come to make satisfaction, for the offence which you have this day given to the Princesse Leonarda, by hindring her of the libertie of the way, wherefore I my selfe would adiudge you first to be punished, for offering such discourtesie, if I did not perswade my selfe, that you are able to make her recompence diuerse wayes, by your knightly service, for the unsufferable faulte which you have this day committed: To which words, the Prince thus replied.

I would that fortune would make so good account of mee, as that the Princesse of Thrace would abase her selfe so much, to take in good parte my simple service, if I might attaine to so great happinesse, that any deede it me, might deserue the good liking of such a gracious Princesse, I should thinke my selfe the most fortunate brued Heauen, and that no hazard could be so dangerous, as I should not for her sake easily overcome.

Wherefore (saye Madame,) I heartily desire you, that you would perswade the Princesse Leonarda, to accept me as her knightly seruant, which honour if she doe afford me, the estimation I should account of my selfe would be such, as (my heart being

## of Palmerin of England.

being encouraged by such a laudable cause) I should worthily finish my aduenture, which might like her to imploy mee in: the Princesse Polynarda, returned him this answer.

Worthy Syr, the Princesse Leonarda shall purchase to her selfe so great honour (by your Noble knightly behaviour, in entertaining you for her beloued Seruant and Champyon, and I perswade my selfe, that long circumstance neede not to be vled, shee will so gladly accept your honest offer: Wherefore if you doubt that shee will not so much abate her selfe, to receyue your friendly motion, I dare take the hazard here vpon my selfe, so that I imagine, she will not cause me to be deceyued. Wherefore in signe of your permanent loyaltie, which shall bee to her, and none else but her, thinke not scoone to goe kisse her Princely hands, which shall bee as the scale of a perpetuall bond, that you shall bestow your knightly service on her, and she likewise shall admit you her continuall fauour.

The Princesse Leonarda sweetly blushing, to heare Polynarda, so pleasaunt in discourse, turned to her with this affable aunswere. Madame, you cannot wish or commaund mee the thing, that I would be so forgetfull of my selfe, as to make refusal thereof, and I esteeme my selfe greatly honoured, to receyue the Prince Florian, for my knight and Champyon, in that I vnderstand, he is brother to the noble Palmerin of England, towards whom I am so highly bound and indebted, as comparing my regard of him, with the good opinion I conceiue, (knowing Florian to be your beloued kinsman) I will not report the summe of my thought, but desire I may be able to requite your kindness.

Polynarda contented herselfe very well, with the gentle aunswere of the saye Princesse Leonarda, as well to be resolved of the speciall entertainment, which shee gaue to her Noble Cousin Florian, as also to remoue the suspicion shee had of her singular Beautie, fearing least her most fauoured friende the Prince Palmerin of England, should fall into any liking to matche with her, because shee reserved him altogether for her selfe.

The Prince Florian was not a little proud of his good fortune,

tune, and the Emperour would haue called him to him, but that he saw how familiar the two princesses were in talk with him, whereupon he determined (if god hap would so permit) to make a marriage betwene him and the Princess of Thrace, whom he gaue as bedfellow to his Piere Polinarda, assuring you, that these two vertuous Ladies liued and loued so intirely together, as the one could neuer be without the others company, and what occasions of secreete sorrow so euer hapned, the one would not make intie of the other, in reuealing their close conceits, for they were of this minde, that it could not be called firme and faithful friendship, when all kind of such causes should not passe common betwene them.

At length the Emperour (accompanied with the Prince Florian) withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, where he quitted with him about the prosperous estates, of the King of England his Grandfather, and his father the Prince Don Edward, not forgetting his deare daughter, the faire Princess Florida, whom he desired (if it might be possible) to see before he dyed: and after he had communed with him about many matters, he caused the Prince to be brought into his Chamber, where the good knight could not see the night so quietly as he was accustomed, the beauteous princess Leonarda was so earnest in his thoughts, as he was troubled and tumbled, but could not enjoy any wished rest.

On the next day in the morning, when the Emperour had bene at the Chappell to heare diuine Service, the Table was couered in the Princess Floridas Chamber, where he dined in the company of the Emperesse, Gridonia, Polinarda, and the faire Princess of Thrace: but after that the Tables were withdrawn, and they had sitten a prettie while talking together, there entered a Damosell attired all in blacke, with two seemely Esquiers attending on her, she humbled her selfe before the Emperour, with kissing his hand, and did the like to the Emperesse, Gridonia and Polinarda, who very gently embraced the Damosell, for that she knewe her to be one of the waiting Gentlewomen vpon the Princess Targiana, at such time as she was there abiding in the Emperours Court, and before

before the Emperesse she stayed still, when the Emperour having knowledge of her, came and remarked other, as concerning the welfare of her Lady and Mistress: to which wordes she answered in this manner. Good Prince, and my most gracious Lord, I desire you that you will not receiue any displeasure, for that you see me rather inclined to the Emperesse then to your excellencie, because the Princess Targiana commended me to addresse my selfe vnto her highnesse, as to one whom she vnfaignedly regardeth: but for your grace desireth to vnderstand, how the Princess my good Lady laich, it is so, that she neuer came forth of her Chamber, since the day that the Prince Polendos your Sonne, and the other Princes and Knights were committed to prison, during all which time, she hath not ceased most graciously to weepe and lament, in so much as her faire beautie is maruellously altered and chaunged, yet hath the Turke her father laboured as much as may be, to diswaide her from this mournfull kinde of life, but all in vaine he wasteth his endeuor, for she took her oath in his presence, that she would neuer giue euer bringing her selfe with continuall waiting, vntill your knights enjoyed as free libertie, as they had when they came with her from Constantinople.

The Turke her father fearing lest her extreame griefe, would be a cause of shortning her youthfull time, hath promised to restore them for the libertie of the Prince Albayzar, whom they of Babilon haue request of him, that they may enioy him among them againe: for this cause the great Turke hath sent hither an Ambassadour, who will be here either this day, or to morrow morning, when your Highnesse shall vnderstand the summe of the matter.

And for that the Princess Targiana feareth least you should denie to graunt what he requireth, which may moue such an inconuenience, as your Maiestie would repent the great honour you bestowed on her in your Court, she put me faithfully in trust, to bring these tydings vnto the Emperesse, in whose presence I haue made you acquainted with that I had in charge, because it toucheth you more then it doeth any other person. Whereouer, she carefully pondering euer came with

## The second part

with her selfe, and doubting least the mallice which her father beareth to the Princesse of your Court, will seek a secrete reuenge some way, as treason intended betwene him and his Ambassadour, towards your Highnesse, to prevent the worst that may happen, she desireth you to returne her Father good words, but not forgoe the Prince Albayzar (whom you know her lawfull husband) before first your knights be worth of her fathers power, and that they haue attained such a place of assurance, as (al deuiſes notwithstanding) no harme may come vnto them, but if after their libertie, such misfortune happen them (as she would be very loath) your Princes may (as you see cause) finde your selfe agriued with the offenders.

Faire Damosell (answered the Emperour) I accept very gratefully the good aduice of the Princesse Targiana, and I see very well, that the honour she receiued in my Court (albeit it was but small) is now double and double rewarded: and perswade your selfe, that I am determined to follow her counsell. The Emperour concluding his minde, the Damosell came againe to the Princesse Polinarda, to present her with the gracious commendations of the faire Targiana: but when she behelde the rare and singular beautie of the Princesse of Thrace, which set by her, the damosell tooke the hardnesse to demaund and if that Lady were not the Princesse Miragarda, for whom and by whom, the Prince Albayzar was vanquished.

In sooth faire Damosell (answered Polinarda) this is not the Princesse Miragarda, but this is Leonarda, the Princesse of Thrace, whom the noble Palmerin of England deliuered out of the enchantment, wherein she remained a long and tedious time: at these wordes the Damosell tooke occasion to beginne thus.

By your fauour, Madame, I knowe now who this Lady is, because I haue not forgotten the straunge aduenture of the Cuppe, which was brought by a Damosell into his Court: and I assure you that Palmerin of England was of a very strange nature, that he could both make so small account of such a faire Princesse, as also in refusing the stately government of the Kingdome of Thrace. Polinarda, desirous to moue the Damosell

## of Palmerin of England.

41  
mosell from talking in that matter, willed that she would report to her the welfare of the Princesse Targiana, that had so friendly giuen them to vnderstand before, of the tidings which were brought thither by the Ambassadour: who being arrived at Constantinople, the Emperour sent the chiefeſt Princes and knights of his Court, to receiue him with very friendly and courteous entertainment: but when the Damosell heard that the Ambassadour was come, she presently departed thence towards Spaine, to go find out the Prince Albayzar, promising the Princesse Polinarda to returne by Constantinople, before she made her returne into Turkie.

The Emperour desired the Damosell, to present the message of his good will to the king Recinde, as also to the Prince Albayzar, and after that he had bestowed diuers rich and costly gifts on her, she betooke her selfe to trauaile, being verie glad, that she was espyed by none of them which came with the Ambassadour, who (as I haue already declared) was receiued in very Princely order, not as he were an encmie, but as became best the estate of him, to whom he was sent, who in sooth was of such a noble and vertuous minde, as when he should deale roughly and extreameſy with his enemies, he would entertainethem as his beloued and professed friends, and such was his courtesie to this Ambassadour.

To the Emperours pallace he was conducted very worthily, riding among the chiefeſt Princes and knights of the Court, and the Emperour himselfe (to doe him the greater honour) came and receiued him at the gate of his Pallace: but the proud Turke would not one vouchsafe to baile his bonnet, or offer any honourable signe to the Emperour, such was his malitious signe: as he towards him, who had in no case offended the Turke his Lord.

The Emperour perceiued well the small regard he had of him, by the wordes which the Princesse Targiana had sent him by her Damosell, but yet he suffered him to do what he thought best, being still so great courtesie vnto him, as at last he was constrained to shew more decent iſſure, when he presented the Emperour with a letter from his Lord the Turke, the

## The second part

scale thereof was of pure Gold, and fastened about with a sumptuous Chaine. The Emperour receiued it at his hands very graciously, and hauing viewed the tenour thereof, he desired the Turke to go take his rest in his Chamber, and the next day he would satisfie him in the occasion of his Ambassage.

I desire your grace (answered the Turke) that it may so stand with your pleasure, as to make me presently answer, without deferring any furdur time, which when I haue receiued, I will goe rest my selfe in mine owne Tents, which I haue commanded to be prouided for me without the walles of your citie, for if I should do otherwise, the great Turke (my gracious Lord) would find himselfe much offended with me: the Emperour replied in this fashion.

You shall doe what you imagine conuenient in your owne conceit, neuerthelesse, I should not be any whit agréued, if my Ambassadour did lodge in the Pallace of the great Turke, that he might the better fullfill his dutie in the charge committed to him. I beseech your grace (said the Turke) to let these needlesse speeches goe, and remember your selfe of the hundred Knights of your Court, which are held as prisoners by my Lord the Turke, and see that you make some prouision for them, for my Lord hauing them in his power (to reuenge diuers iniuries, which he hath receiued by some of your Subiects) he determined to put them to death: but to witnesse his gracious and noble nature, he is content (at the earnest intreatie of his daughter, the faire Princesse Targiana) to giue them their liues, and to restore them in change for the Prince Albayzar, who is kept prisoner in the Court of the King of Spaine, by the commandement of the Princesse Miragarda.

But trust me, you are to thinke your selfe in no smal fauour with the Princesse Targiana, whose teares were of such power, as to save the liues of your knights, whom my Lord the Turke had determined you should neuer see againe, untill your Highnesse had sent him the knight of the Sauage man, that he might reuenge the iniurie which he (too forgetfull of himselfe committed, in carrying away by Sea his daughter Targiana, a deed truly worthy of sharpe punishment: the Turke there

## of Palmerin of England.

there pausing, the Emperour tooke occasion to beginne thus.

Certainly, I confesse my selfe greatly bound to the Princesse Targiana, but farre more to the faire Princesse Miragarda, in that (had not her wise foresight beene the greater) my Knights had suffered the extreame rigour of death: but this I assure you, (that since cruell fortune had so throwne the Dyce on mee, I rather would haue losse twice so many more as they are, then to send your Lord the Turke my knight of the Sauage man, in the presence of whome, here I faithfully promise to deliuer the Prince Albayzar, prouided alwayes, that you make me sufficient assurance of them, whome the Turke holdeth in vnkinde seruitude, whercof (how I may be certainly perswaded) I pray you bouchsafe me the knowledge, how and in what manner the case must be ordered.

The course which you must take in this matter, (answered the Turke) is thus, your Maiestie must send vnto my Soueraigne and Lorde, the Prince Albayzar, vpon his inuolable Oath, which (by mee) he voweth to you, and which you may account of so great and sufficient truth, and he will not faile (by so great a bond) to send you the prince Polendos your sonne, with che other Princes and knightes that are in his companie, and this you may be bolde of, that my Lorde more willingly would lose his life, then falsifie his faith towards your Excellencie.

The Emperour leaning vpon his arme, and noting well the words of the Ambassador, paused a good space, without making any answer, which the Prince Florian perceiuing, being better acquainted with the infidelitie of the Turkes, then the Emperour was: and fearing least hee would haue giuen credite to this subtil assurance, presently started vp, and began as thus. Most worthy Emperour, if you but consider the cause why the great Turke detayneth your knights in Prison, you shall well perceiue the smal trust you ought to repose in him, in that the occasion was so little, and the assurance of his troth is much lesse.

Again, if you suffer the Prince Albayzar to escape vpon his worde, you may channce (sooner then you would) to repent your selfe: For if you remember his unfaithfull dealing to the Giant Dramusiande, in the time hee kept the Shield of the Prin-

esse Miragarda, how (contrary to his bowd promise) he brought it from the Castle of Almaroll in the night, and coming with it into the Court, did brauely giue it forth in speeches, that he had won it by his knightly endeuour, which dishonourable dealing he found in the end to costly.

Wherefore it is very necessarie, that the King Recinde regard him more carefully then hitherto he hath done, in that the libertie of his person, will be the cause of sending home againe your knights. And if this Ambassador will take vpon him to maintaine, that this message which he presenteth you from the Turke his soueraigne, is onely with regard of royall clemency, I will defend the contrary against him, yea, and I will enforce him to confesse, that this proceedeth on the earnest instance made by the subiects of the Prince Albeyzar, who are importune in sute, to haue their Lord and gouernour at libertie: for if it so fall out, that the Turke doe not satisfie this their continuall request, he shall be constrained to guard himselfe from them, who were wont to defend him with their especiall aide. Knight (answered the Ambassadour) thou shalt assuredly vnderstand, and I promise thee by the authoritie of my ambassage, which alloweth me to enter in armes against thee, that I will not faile to make thee know, with what reuerence thou oughtest to entertaine, the vnreproueable word of my Lord and Soueraigne, and I doubt not beside, but to giue due recompence to thy disloyall and vnseemely dealing: where to the Prince Florian thus replied.

It is the most acceptable thing I make account of, for thee to enter the Combatte with me, in respect of good encouragement I haue thereto, and of the small honoz that will fall to thy share. The Emperour perceiuing his Nephew in so great choller, touched him with the Scepter which he held in his hand, to the ende he should proceed no further, and he was somewhat inwardly offended, that he did giue so hard and rough speeches: but neuerthelesse, hee esteemed well of his good Counsell, which to maintaine, hee came to the Ambassadour in this manner. You ought not to be offended, when my knights assist me with their good and carefull aduise, and especially for the Prince Florian

my Nephew, who is not ignorant long since of the custome & manners vsed in the Turkes court. And for the great Turke himselfe, I haue that opinion of his faith and promise, as he hath himselfe, belouing well, that he would not for all the honour he professeth, violate or break his word in any thing: but yet I dare not build or assure my selfe thereon, lest they (who now are prisoners) take occasion to complaine of my fond dealing, remembering the hard vantage they haue all this while suffered. Moreover, if I should presume to adventure for a while, the King Recinde (I know) would not so willingly consent with me, whose sonne is amongst the Princes as a prisoner, & till he haue him in his owne assurance, he will not grant libertie to the Prince Albayzar: wherefore you may thus giue your Lord to vnderstand, that if he will send me home my prisoned knights, I will not faile to send him the Prince Albayzar: this request is but lawfull, and I promise on my honoz to performe it. But if it so chance, that he doubt of any faithfull dealing herein, I will giue him a pledge of assurance, his owne daughter the Princesse Targiana, who I am sure will make answer for me, as well for the perfect knowledge she hath of my fidelitie, as also for the desire she hath to recover home her husband: the Ambassadour standing a while musing, at last replied thus to the Emperour.

I see well, that by the knowledge of ill doing, men attaine to follow that which is good and lawfull, and so I take my leaue of your excellency, assuring you, that the Princesse Targiana will aduenture her life, onely vpon your word and promise: in that you withhold him who is her onely felicitie, and who hath done such noble seruice to my Lord her father. In so doing (said the Emperour) she shall very highly please me, and for the good will I beare her, I pray you (on my behalfe, and with my heartie commendations) to kisse her Princely hand: for such is the estimation I haue to her, as she hath power to dispose of me, in any thing she taketh pleasure to imploy me.

The Ambassadour made promise to fulfill his commandement, when (with a courteous obeysance) he tooke his leaue, and departed from the Emperour, who (after his departure) late and

## The second part

conferred with his Knights, commending greatly the wisdom of the Princesse Miragarda, in sending the Prince Albazar to the King Recinde, for whome (it would so come to passe) that he should yet againe recover his Sonne Polendos, and the other Knights.

### CHAP. XII.

¶ Of an Aduenture which happened in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, and of that which followed afterward.



The next Day after the Embassadour from the great Turke was departed the Emperours Court, the same day in the afternoon, as the Emperour late accompanied with diuerse and sundrie of his Princes, Lords, and Knights, he perceiued to enter the great Hall, a bigge and goodly Aged man, so much weakened and over-spent with yeres, as it seemed hee was ready to fall to the Earth. The Emperour iudged him a person of some Authozitie, by reason of his goodly gray-locks, and his faire long-milk-white beard, for he thought that such a seemely and Fatherlike man, would not deceiue the World with falshood and dissembling.

The Princes and others that kept the Emperour company, desired very earnestly to vnderstand what he would say, oftentimes beholding him very aduisedly, who when he was come before the Emperour, offered to stoupe downe to kisse his Highnesse hand, but he taking pittie on him, would not suffer him so to do: then did he make such humble Salutations as he could, when the Emperour demanded of him, for what occasion he was come.

By gracious Lord (said this Aged man, with a voyce so fainte and lowe, as very hardly he could be vnderstood:) for that your Court

## of Palmerin of England.

Court is alwayes so fortunate, as to entertaine Noble and aduenturous Knights, who are euer ready to succour them that be destitute of their aide and assistance, I had good hope that they would not refuse to afforde mee theyr fauourable refuge, in deliuering me out of the great daunger, whereinto by misfortune I am suddenly brought. These heauy and sadde speeches, he accompanied with such aboundance of teares, as hee moued the heart of the Emperour to great compassion: then pausing a prettie space, with a deepe and dolourous sigh, hee began thus againe. I most humbly beseeche your Maiestie, that you would at this time comfort me with your gracious aide, to reuenge the iniurie that is extreemly offered mee, which in sooth is so great and grieuous, and commenced by such personages, as I cannot repute the summe thereof without exceeding sorrowe, which might much offend your Highnesse. Wherefore, I pray you to bestow on mee such a Knight, on whose good Fortune I may liue in some hope of ease, and I will bring him into the place where hee may atchieue such rare knowne, as in all his life time he can neuer attaine the like: to which wordes the Emperour replied thus.

Albeit in such perillous affaires, it is not necessarie to sende a Knight, without I were first acquainted with the cause, yet such is the great and exceeding pittie, which I take, to see your grieuous sighes and manifold teares, as I must needs consent to your request: but it were a great discredite to you, that in a man of such an Ancient and goodly time (as you are) there should be found forgerie or deceiptfull dealing, which my good opinion will not suffer mee to iudge so of you. And this Knight which you see standing by me, is called the Prince Florian, of the Forrest: albeit some name him the hardie Knight of the Sauadgeman, he is my Nephew, and one in whome I put the greatest trust, to giue ayde and succour in a matter of such importance, and I see hee prepareth himselfe to forsake the Court, and to assist you with his Noble and approued valour, in any cause that you shall haue neede to vse him.

The Aged man, seeing the marvellous courtesie of the Emperour, fel down before him on his knees, and after he had kissed his



his hand, spake as followeth. It is not in vaine I see well (most famous Emperour) that both young and olde so thunder your surpassing Bountie, for the occasion which my selfe receyvet at this time, giueth me good cause to thinke, that the vttermost I haue hearde in your noble Commendation, hath rather beene sparing speech, then sufficient to comprehend your Heroicall desertes, and I shall thinke my selfe the most happiest alieue, hauing seene that with mine Eye, which hath bene so often brused in mine Care. The Knight of the Sauadage-man advanced himselfe to kisse the Emperours hand, in satisfaction of the honourable speche he vsed of him to the Aged man, who was still so earnest in his suite, as the Prince Florian was constrained to arme himselfe presently, and departed from the Court in such great haste, as hee had not the leisure to take leaue of the Emperesse, and his other friends.

The Emperour fell into questioning with the Knights of his Court, if any of them did knowe that Auncient man, in whose company his Nephew Florian was so suddenly gon, but not one of them all could report of whence, or what he was. Primaleon was very much offended, that the Emperour his Father would command his Nephew Florian, to depart so soone with the aged man, not knowing first into what place, or to what aduenture he would conduct him: whereupon the very same day, Berolde the Prince of Spaine, Platin, Blandidon, Pompides, Gratian, Polinard, Reccamon, Albanis, Don Resuel, & all the other most renowned Knights of the Emperours Court, departed to follow the Prince Florian, for that they feared least any euill should happen to him, vnder the guilefull dealings of this Aged man.

When the Emperour saw his Court left desolate (in a manner) of the noble Knights that was wont to keep his company, he found himselfe very grieuously perturbed in minde, fearing least some sinister chaunce should happen to his Nephew Florian, who rode on still in the company of his Aged Guide, without resting in any place, til the next day in the morning, when of necessity they must stay to giue refreshing to their Horses, and when they had suffered them to feede indifferently, they mounted againe on Horsebacke, and rested not all that day likewise,

till

till they were come within the sight of a fayre Castle, which stood on the top of a fayre Roocke, a Fortresse very delectable in the eyes of them that did behold it, at the foote whereof a goodly Riuer had his course, so deepe and dangerous, as they that went vnto the Castle, were constrained to passe ouer in a very small Boate, wherein two men could hardly passe at one time. The Aged man being very wearie with ryding, and desirous to haue a little ease, alighted from his Horse, vsing his language in this manner to the Prince Florian.

This is the danger (Sir Knight) wherein we must hazard our liues, if we be so bold as to venture our selues both together in this little Boate: therefore I pray you that you will alight, and you (for the more securitie) shall passe ouer alone, then your Esquire and I will come one after another, because we will bring ouer with vs the Horses. You reason wel (answers the Prince Florian) in respect of your Aged and vnwieldy paces, as also in wishing me for my best auail, therfore I intend to follow your counsell, for that I see necessitie compelleth vs to doe as you say. At these words he dismounted from his Horse, and entred into the little Boate, commanding him that had the charge thereof, to passe him ouer, but scantely had he attained the middle of the water, when suddenly such a blacke and ougly clowde ouershadowed him, as the Aged man and the Esquire (being on land) had lost the sight of him, which when the Esquire perceiued, hee was about to leape into the water to followe his Lord, but as he was in this desperate intent, he espyed a great Hill suddenly before him, which would not suffer him to passe any further.

Vpon this, he turned to goe to the place where he left the aged man, but he was so quickly rapt away and gone, as the Esquire could not possibly imagine which way he had taken, then the Esquire began to iudge, that the teares which the Aged man shed in the presence of the Emperour, was to no other end, but only shadow the treason which he wretchedly wet about, so there he stood musing a great while, and after he had canualed out a thousand imaginations, he concluded to search his Maister about all those parts, and if it were not his fortune to find him, he would then return to the Emperours court, to make known the vnfortunate

nate

## The second part

nate losse of his Lorde and Maister, to the ende that the Princes (who were his friends) might take vpon them to enquire after him, for such was the opinion of this loyall Esquire, that the diligent search of a great many knightes, might happily recover his Lorde againe.

The Noble Prince Florian of the Forrest, had no sooner gotten the further side of the River, but the Clouds conveyed away the Boate (wherein he passed) in such sort, as hee could by no meanes haue a sight of it, whereupon, hee began to aduance himselfe towarde the Castle that stood vpon the Rocks, not fearing any daungers that might happen to him: but because the Rocks was high and troublesome to climbe, and the Armour hee had on very weightie withall, hee was constrained to rest himselfe three or foure times by the way, so that the Night had chased away the gladsome Day, before hee could arrive at the Castle.

When hee came vnto the Castle Gate, there came foure very gallant Damozells to receiue him, and after they had caused many Lorches to be alighted, they shewed themselves very dutifull to entertaine him into the Castle: which courteous offer the Prince would not seeme to denye, for that the Beautie of them did so much blinde him, as he had no minde on the Daungers that might suddenly happen, but hee fedde his Eyes with beholding them altogether, as one that had his will free and out of Bonds, because hee would neuer greatly hurt himselfe with affecting Ladies. With these Damozells the Prince entered into the Castle, the Court whereof was paved with sayre and goodly Marble Stones, and when they had passed through this Courte, they came into a very great Hall, which was builded with marvellous Artificiall Antique worke, at the Entrance wherof, the Prince was receiued by a Damosell, who had three more attending on her, but she was of so great and huge stature as a Giant, albeit shee was indeede a Woman, and not past sixtene yeeres of Age, a very gentle and milde natured person, who took the Prince Florian by the hand, and lead him with her into an other sayre Hall, which was hangd with Tapistrie of inestimable value.

The

## of Palmerin of England.

46,

The Prince being come into the place where it pleased the Damosell to bring him, he then tooke off his helmet, when his beautie seemed so acceptable in the eyes of the Damosell, as at that very instant shee gave her whole affection vnto him, yet was she somewhat abashed, that she should esteeme so well of him, whose dealings was not unknowne to her, neither of whence or what he was: the consideration whereof, turned her suddaine good liking into as suddaine hatred and disdaine, which she would gladly haue dissembled, and therefore thus beganne to parly with him.

Sir knight, my heart is at this time greatly surprised with sorrow, for a grieuous injury which is offered me, wherof I haue good hope to be reuenged, in y so courteously you vouchsafed to come into my Castle to succour me, wherfore I pray you that you will goe rest your selfe for this night, because your trouble doth require some ease, and to morrow morning I will rectifie the cause, wherein you may doe me very much pleasure.

Madame (answered the Knight of the Sauage man) I imagine with my selfe, how deeply I am indebted for this exceeding fauour, and how much I am bound to him that conducted me to this place, where I reioyce that it is my good fortune to doe you any seruice, which I account of so great honour, as were my life of greater value then it is, I would hazard it in any extreame perill, which your excellency did thinke well off to commaund me.

The Damosell (who was not accustomed to be entertained with such Courtly language) presently returned him this reply. I thanke you Sir for your friendly offer, & I pray you that you would make a good Supper to night, that you may in the better quietnesse of minde take your rest, and to morrow morning we will discourse of that, which I haue occasion to vse your aide in, and so for this time I bid you hartly good night, then shee took her leaue in such sweete and gracious manner, as her secreete intent of treason could be no way discerned.

The knight the Sauage man remained greatly contented, hoping to speede so well in the fauour of the Damosell, as further causes of friendship should arise betwene them, it may be, he

he thought to spend so well with her, as he did of the Damofell which the Hermit rebuked him for, but what haue I to doe with his secret intent. The Prince is in his chamber, set down to supper, and there is very worthily serued by the Damofels, who gaue him entertainment at the gate of the castle, among them all, he thought best of her which waited of the Cup, for that in sooth she was very well adorned with perfect beautie, which made him forget his former affection to the Lady of the Castle, such (you may perceiue) was his constancie in loue. Well (in brieft) he began very quaintly to deuise with this Damofell, and she like wise moued conceit with her companions, the Prince glanced at her in amorous toying, and she iyled with him in double constringing, but Supper being ended, he was brought by these Damofels into his bed Chamber, where (after he was in bed) she (who had bene so familiar with him all his Supper time) came to him with these amiable speeches. Sir knight, if the time and place were so commodious vnto me, as it is not, you should well perceiue the good account I make of you, but seeing fortune is so aduerser to my determination, and the burning Lamps of affection, must be quenched with a deepe and sorrowfull sigh, I pray you accept of this Ring, whereof I make no small estimation, as an earnest penny of further good will.

So concluding, she left the Ring in his hand, and not attending the Princes answer, she departed after the other Damofells, and he remained as well pleased as could be, by the friendly language the Damofell had giuen him, for the loue of whom, he put the Ring on one of his fingers on his left hand, but incontinent the Prince was so depriued of his power, and brought so farre out of course with himselfe, as he could not moue or stirre any part of him, for there was a Stone in the Ring of such vertue, as he had no sooner put it on his finger, but presently all naturall feeling was taken from him. The Damofelles were no sooner returned vnto their Lady, who was named Arlencea, but presently (bringing them in her company) she came into the chamber where the Prince Florian lay, who was so maruailously enchanted, as he had no power at all to

discerne

discerne them, then spake she vnto her Damofels in this manner. I see now my friends, that our iourney is not imployed altogether in vaine, and I iudge that my mother Colambria will now liue in great contentment, hauing power to reuenge the death of her sons, Brocalon, Balcato, Calturnien, and Camboldam, all my Brethren, but as she pronounced these wordes, she cast her eyes vpon the Prince, and seeing how young and sweet his countenance was, she entred into these termes. I am greatly abashed, in thinking how so noble and valiant force should consist in a knight of so young yeares, and if all they had not the power to ouercome this one man, surely I must needs thinke good fortune was on his side, this matter doth moue me to a doubtfull opinion, and as it seemeth to me, his visage is somewhat comfortable vnto fortunes fauourites, which makes me repute him, as neare allied to her by supernaturall affinitie, and I assure you, I could very willingly remit the offences he hath done, if the death of my brethren did not prouoke me to seek sharpe reuengement on him, who was the death of so many good and hardy knights. Thus, regard of her enuie, and his amiable personage, did moue a secret contention within her, willingly she would haue saued him for his knightly proportion, but the losse of her brethren was so grievous vnto her, as all fauourable pittie did quite and cleane forsake her, so that she was presently minded to cutte off his head, but as she was at the very instant to doe the dede, the aged man (who was sent to seek Florian, and had brought him thither) arrived there before her, who knowing how to fit her fancie, preuailed so much with her, as he changed her angry mood, whereupon he began as thus.

You haue no occasion (Madame) to feare that the knight will escape from you, hauing brought him into such an extreame alteration, wherefore, I pray you to change this sharpe and seuerer humour, and reserue his life till you haue brought him vnto your Mother, who will take pleasure in seeing him die, that hath cut off the flowers of her honourable linage, and that we may deliuer him the sooner, I thinke it best that wee doe imbarque our selues, to goe seek the Island where she remaineth.

Albert

Albeit my minde was otherwise bent (answered Arlencea) yet will I not refuse to followe your counsell, wherefore I desire you to goe to morrowe morning very early to the Port, and there see provided for me a proper Ship, for I cannot enjoy any quietnesse, in that I feare to lose this knight againe, So, breaking off her minde, Arlencea and the Damosels left the Prince Florian in the Chamber, brought into such unhappy subiection, as to suffer and endure the sharpe sentence of his enemies.

CHAP. XIII.

Here shall be discovered what and who the Damosell was, that thus had gotten the Prince Florian, and of that which happened to him during the time of his voyage.



**R**emembrance is made in this history, that Collambra had no sooner intelligence of the death of the Giants Brocolon, and Baleardo her Sonnes, whom the Prince Florian of the Forrest had slaine, but she concluded to comfort her grieve, & practise all the meanes she could devise, or that fortune would present unto her, whereby she might be revenged on him that had done these murders, for such is the earnestnesse of her damnable and wicked minde, as she compassed a thousand horrible inventions, but the immeasurable rage wherein she was continually, would not suffer her to determine certainly of any thing.

Whereupon she came into an Island somewhat nearer, where she had good hope to finde succour and aide in her present purpose, by the meanes of an auncient knight named Alfarnao, who had bene nourished long time by her husband, and made his

his abode within that Island, having very great knowledge in the arte of Pigromancy, and a man altogether brought up in subtil and craftie deuises: he hearing the continuall complaints that Collambra made, was moued to take compassion on her, so that he promised to helpe her in any thing he could possibly, to take reuengement on the knight of the Sauage man, whome he knewe by his arte to be in the Court of Constantinople, whereupon he came to Collambra, vnto her these speeches.

Madame, if so be it shall like you to follow my counsell, I doe promise to make you forgoe this extreame grieve wherewith you are accompanied; whereto Collambra thus replied. I would not haue come to you from so farre off, if I had not perswaded my selfe on your assured friendship: for the good opinion I conceiued of you, did cause me to adreffe my voyage hither, being altogether minded to follow your friendly counsell. Since I perceiue good Madam (said Alfarnao) that you repose so great assurance on my fidelity, you shall perceiue what a platforme I haue laid for you. It is so, that the knight of the Sauage man is at this present, in the Court of the Emperour of Greece his grandfather, where he is growne so amorous in loue, that he intendeth not to depart of a long time from Constantinople: and he hath made himselfe so aduenturous in promise, (onely for the loue of his sweete Saint) as he will not forsake the greatest danger, wherein any one shall haue occasion to vse him.

Upon this, I am determined to goe to the Court where he now remaineth, and there prostrating my selfe before the emperour in speeches very sad and pittifully couched, beside, no teares shall want to grace the matter. I will earnestly request of his Maiesty, that it may be his pleasure to succour me in affaires of great importance, wherout it is impossibly for me to escape, or also helpe my selfe, whereout the aide of one of his best knights, euen he that is esteemed the hardiest amongst them all, I wil desire that I may haue no other but onely him. This request I know he will not denie me, shadowing my intent with such behaviour of vertue, as I can well enough, so

## The Second Part

that he will present mee his Nephew Florian, in that he is esteemed the most Noble and valiant amongst you all: and hauing once gotten him, I will conduct him to a Castle, which is vpon the frontiers of Greece and Hungarie, it here abydeth the Ladie Arlencea, your onely Daughter: vnto whom I will make knowne the horrible shame which this Knight hath done her, and that shee ought to take sharpe vengeance on him, who hath offered her so great and famous iniurie, for without her aide, I shall not so easily execute the summe of my enterprise.

But you must not forget to deliuer mee your Ring, which hath the power to depriue the senses of any man, if once he put the same vpon his finger, and this Ring will I cause one of the Damofels attendant on your daughter, to put into the hands of this Knight, which he will presently put on his finger: and then will not I faile to bring him to you, to receiue such due reward as you shall thinke your selfe sufficiently contented withall: Collambra ioyfully returned this answer.

My deare friend Alfernao, I know well that the remedy of my passed trauels, and the vengeance for my children, lyeth altogether in you: which if you accomplish (as I know you can) I shall thinke my selfe for euer beholding to you: and well you may perswade your selfe, that you doe bestow your paines for her, who will not shew her selfe ingratfull towards you, but as I intend to follow your aduise, so will I compasse some meane or other, that may declare my thankfulness.

Then Collambra did presently prepare a Ship, wherein her Daughter was imbarqued, accompanied with foure Damofells and as many Knightes, the Winde and Sea seruing them so well, as in fewe daies they tooke Landing on a plaine, not farre from the Castle, which the ancient Knight Alfernao had named to the Damofell Arlencea, wherein hee left her with her companie, and tooke his way to the Court of the Emperour of Greece, from whence (by the subtil meanes you haue heard before) hee brought the Prince Florian of the Forrest, whome hee deliuered into the Castle, where this Arlencea the Damofell Giant made her abode, and how hee was vsed there, you haue heard declared already. Nowe come wee to the place where

## of Palmerin of England.

where we left, giuing to vnderstand, that the Ancient Knight on the next morning had provided a Coatch, wherein (with as much speed as could be) they coasted to a Port of the Sea, fearing least by the way, the Knight of the Sauadge-man should be knowne of some: but after Arlencea was imbarqued with this good Knight, the Barryners hoysed theyr Sayles, and hauing a pleasant gale of winde, they committed themselves to the mercie of the Seas: whereon we intend a while to leaue them, and returne to the Esquire of the Knight of the Sauadge-man, who fearing least the Ancient Knight would offer some iniurie to his Lord and Maister, failed not to take which way hee iudged would bring him to Constantinople. Hee trauelled all the first day, and fortune was so vngentle to him, as hee could not meete any person to demand his way, but on the next day as he passed ouerthwart a Forrest, he perceiued vnder a tree a Knight very richly Armed, hauing in his Shielde (which was borne by his Esquire) a golden Tyger in a field of sinople: wherevpon hee presently rode to the Esquire, whome when he behelde, he knew that it was Syluan, and the Knight before him, to be the Noble Palmerin of England: whose presence gaue the Esquire more assurance then he had before; neuertheles, with the teares trickling downe his cheekes, hee beganne to the Prince after this manner.

My Lord, albeit the newes I haue to declare vnto you, of my Brother and my Maister the Prince Florian, bee not so agreeable to you as I would they were, yet can I not but I must needs report the same, being perswaded, that it is in you to remedy this misfortune which is chaunced to him. When discoursed he the whole circumstance of the matter to the Prince Palmerin, who commaunded the Esquire, to bring him presently to the place where his Lord departed the River, to goe to the Castle, which stood on the high Rocks: hee being very grieuously passionate, as well for the misfortune which had happened to his Brother, as also breaking his voyage to Constantinople, to which place his earnest affection called him.

Then hee complained greatly on fortune, who did applye her selfe (as hee thought) to no other ends, but onely to breake



## The second Part

his determined purposes, in dayly presenting him with con-  
nuall perils, where with he could by no meanes escape without  
great losse of his blood and danger of his life : in these greivous  
agonies he followed the Esquire, vsing as speedy diligence as  
might be, least some should offer his brother discourtesie and  
they arriued at the Castle on the next day about the enening  
tide, when the Esquire shewed the Prince the Riuer which he  
could not passe, speaking to him in this sort.

You may now (my Lord) behold the dangerous passage,  
where I lost the knight of the Sauage man my noble Maister:  
to which words the Prince made this answer. Curled may  
they be, that were the first inuenters of these cruell enchaunt-  
ments, the extremities whersof, hath bene the ouerthrow of  
many a good and hardy knight, and hath made wretches and  
solwards to triumph in their misfortune.

When came they downe to the river, where the Prince Pal-  
merin and the Esquire could not finde any Weate for passage,  
nor yet the man that had conueyed the Prince ouer, by reason  
whereof, they went along by the Riuers side, till they came  
to a place where the water parted in twaine, and an entrance  
there was into a little Ile, whereto the Prince prepared  
himselfe to goe, as he sounded the depth of the Ford: but a  
Knight (who had couered his armour with the skinne of a  
wilde Beast, which he had slaine) cryed aloud to the Prince in  
this manner.

O Noble Palmerin, be not so hardy I desire you as to passe ouer  
for the water is farre more deepe then it seemeth, and you may  
suddenly fall into unrecoverable danger: which to preuent, I  
counsell you to goe downe a little further along by the Riuer  
side, and I will not faile to shew you the place, where you may  
goouer in most securitie.

Palmerin well noting the words of the knight that spake  
to him, presently stayed his horse, and maruailing who this  
knight should be, at last he knew him to be his brother the  
Sage Aliart, whereupon he came to his brother Florians Es-  
quire, and commanded him to goe to Constantinople, and stay  
there, for that his presence did hinder him, when he was dis-  
posed

## Of Palmerin of England.

posed to conferre with Siluian about the faire Polinarda, and  
he tolde him, that he should sooner heare tydings of his Maister  
at the Court, then in any other place.

The Esquire would haue gladly kept the Prince Palmerin  
company, but he would in no wise suffer him, but commaun-  
ded him to goe to those places, where he might sooner haue vnder-  
standing of his Lord, and so the Prince departed from him,  
when, in small time he came to a place of the river, which was  
more broade and lesse deepe, then the knight cried againe vnto  
him, that he might there venture hardly, because it was the sur-  
rest place of passage.

The Prince staied not, but on the assurance he had in the  
knight's word, he entred the Riuer, which was not so deepe,  
but they passed ouer very easily, the rigor of the water hauing  
not the power to hurt the Prince, so they recovered the other  
side safe and soundly, which the knight perceiuing, he came  
and offered himselfe to take the Princesse horse, but he would  
not suffer him, then he alighting, came & embraced the knight  
with these words.

What should I thinke my Lord and Brother, that you so  
friendly come to succour me in my greatest neede: certainly I  
may assure my selfe, that Florian my Brother, shall be deliue-  
red from his present danger, by your meanes, which is of so  
great authoritie, and furnished with so high & singular know-  
ledge. By gracious Lord (answered the Sage Aliart) is it  
your custome, not to make any account of any mischance that  
may happen, because you imagine that your knightly prowesse  
is able to aduantage you in euery attempt, but I pray you  
at this time to forsake such opinion of your selfe, and be per-  
swaded, that Florian your brother is in great danger of losing  
his life, for which I am very hartily sorry, in that Fortune  
would not suffer me to finde him in this place. But so it is (as  
I haue gained the knowledge by perusing my Bookes) that a  
knight did cause him to forsake the Emperors Court, to bring  
him hither to this Castle, rendering him into the handes of a  
Damsell Giant, the Daughter of Collambra, who is mother  
to the Giants, Calurnien, Camboldam, Brocalon, & Baleato,



whom you and your brother Florian haue slaine.

It seemes to me (said the Prince Palmerin) that we should forsake this Castle, and prepare our selues towards the Profound Isle, to embarque our selues, to trie if Fortune will so much fauour vs, as to permit vs his recovery: but I feare me some misfortune is come to him already, the feare whereof confoundeth me in extreame griefe: whereto the Sage Aliart thus replied.

My Lord, it is not necessary that we should goe trifle the time in the Profound Isle, for if Florian be lost, this will be the greatest hazard that can come vnto vs, wherefore I thinke it most conuenient, that you doe your endeouour to seeke him forth, not sparing day and night to trauaile: and I will take my course another way, wherein I will vse such diligence, as I will aduenture my life for him.

I beleue wel (answered the Prince) that you will not spare any aduice, which may in any thing profite my Brother, and therefore I am determined to folloiw your counsell: whereupon they rid away very speedily, vntill they came where two sun-

dry wayes caused them to part from one another,

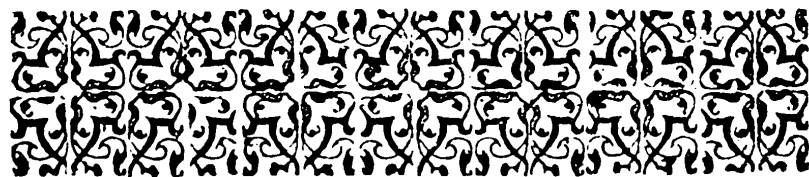
when they ceased not to trauiell earnestly,

for that the losse of the

Prince Florian was so

griuous to

them.



CHAP. XIII.

Of that which happened to the knight of the Tiger, following the search of the Prince Florian of the Forrest his brother.



Almerin and the Sage Aliart, hauing taken their farewell one of another, rode on which way Fortune conducted them, the Prince himselte trauailed all that night, for the desire he had to helpe his brother would not suffer him to take any rest, but his horse began to wart very strackt and feeble, by reason of his exceeding great labour, so that the Prince was constrained to vse this speech to Siluian.

Thou seest well (my trusty friend and seruant) that Fortune hath set her selfe directly against me, yet if I should giue ouer my present enterprise, I should blemish my credite with perpetuall infamie: therefore I intend to take the horse whereon thou ridest, and send thee away with mine (for that he is not able to hold out long,) vnto the nearest Port of the Sea thou canst finde, where thou maist take shipping to the Profound Isle, which in times past belonged to the giant Brauorant, who was the father to the Giant Calurnien, and there will I not faile to send and aduertise thee, of the whole estate of my iourney, if the time do not affoord me contrary successe. But if my trauaile fall out so vnforsunate, as my newes shall some grieuous and irksome to thee, then I desire thee to goe to Constantinople, and giue my Lady and Mistresse Polinarda to vnderstand, that I cannot make any account of my selfe, losing the lampe and loadstone of my life, for, in that I am depriued of the same, I must needs knit vp and conclude my trauailes.

Moreover, thou shalt assure her, that the sum of my felicitie, consisteth in no other thing, then in the remembrance of

## The second part

her gracious selfe, and contentment I did alwaies receiue, in thinking how long I haue liued in languishing for her loue, which is so deeply imprinted in my soule, as I was able to put to flight all those feares, which the earnestnes of my desire, with the compasse of the time did present vnto me.

But now that death hath deprived me of the meane, whereby my life was alwayes sustained, I haue no other remedie, whereby to comfort my afflicted heart, but onely the contentment I receiue in my passions, hauing in remembrance that I liue for her, for whose sake I liue to suffer. And if it come so to passe, as the hurtfull Planets be displaced, and I remembered in the acceptable opinion of my Lady, I shall commit to forgetfulness all the angry stormes, which hitherto hath (euen) to rather beaten my fainting spirit, and giuen course to a thousand calamities to fall vpon me: for I assure thee, that no accident whatsoeuer can haue power to endamage me, so long as my very soule is set at worke, to contemplate the rare singularities wherewith her diuine spirit is associated.

When if these spirits are reiectued to ioyne together in familiarity, mine shall not a little triumph, being thought worthy to offer seruice to her, whom, who so taketh occasion to behold, shall finde his wits superficially metamorphised. But it is so, that attending this long expected honour of felicitie, I know not how it can be possible for me to liue, being absent from her heavenly presence. For when I remember how in times past, I haue often vsed to behold her delicate face, now (being so farre from that happy meane) my griefe encreaseth so abundantly, as methinks Death did me a good pleasure, if he would bring me forth of the labyrinth of my restless desires. Therefore I desire thee Siluian, to present her my spotted faith, and assure her of my firme and steadfast loyaltie, which considered in truth, will moue her to pittie my ceaselesse trauailes, which for none aloue (but onely her) I endure: yea, and endure it with such extremitie, as is beyond the iudgement of any to perceiue. And because the danger is so doubtful which I now haue enterprised, as neither haue I any assurance to trust vnto, or hope to returne from such a trouble-

some

## of Palmerin of England.

some aduenture, I desire thee to be as faithfull a seruant to my Lady, as thou hast bene to him that loued her so dearly, for in so doing, thou mayst happen vpon a more honourable recompence, then either I, or my vttermost power can giue thee: which (comming so to passe,) will not a little content me, in that he which hath proued so loyall and iust of faith, ought not to be respected with such an vncertaine reward, as to be left the inheritor of my teares and torments, in satisfaction of so honest and trustie seruice. And I cannot thinke, but when my Lady Polinarda shall consider the honorable obeyesance, wherewith I haue dayly and hourly regarded her, and thy vnfaired seruice to him, who hath thought so well on her, she will shew her selfe gracious and respectiue to thee, as well to witness her owne princely nature, as also in remembering thy vertuous and loyall deserts. But if thy angry Starres do so much repine at thy happy welfare, as she seemeth daintie in the knowledge of thee: good Siluian let it not seeme strange to thee, in that thou bearest a part with the Gaiiter in misfortune, for she neuer fauouring me, must of necessitie scrowne on thee, and this vnkind dealing may moue thee thus to iudge, that she is wedded in affection to some other, who must ioyne that happy content, which I deserued to haue by my unhappy trauailes.

Thus breaking off his dolorous complaints, he remained so grievously afflicted in his spirit, as the teares which abundantly trickled downe his cheekes, rendered a certaine testimony of his troubled heart, which he being willing to dissemble (lest Siluian should perceiue it) he gaue his horse the spurs, and without any more words departed thence, leaving Siluian so mightily overcome with heauinesse, as he was constrained to the earth: but when he had somewhat pacified himselfe, he mounted on his Gaiiters horse, which he doubted would not bring him to the profound Ale, because he had bene so sore trauailed already by his Lord and Gaiiter.

This good Esquire riding on very sad and pensiuely, at last spied two knights, whom he knew by their devices in their shields and their Armour, to be the Princes, Berold, and Platir

to

## The second part

to them he called, and desired that it might please them to stay a little: whereupon, the knight (who knew him presently) staid, being abashed to see him so badly hoised, but when they perceiued the tears run downe his cheekes, then they began to doubt some further harme, which made them demand of him for his maister, as also what happened to him, to be in that case.

My Lords (answered Siluian) I know well how to resolute you to your demand, though the report be not so agreeable to you as I could wish: then he discovered to them the misfortune of the Prince Florian, and how his Lord was ridden after him, to giue him succour. But the aduventure is so dangerous (said Siluian) wherein my Lord must assist his brother, as his life will stand to extreame hazard, before he can helpe him according as he would: and beside, it is doubtfull he shall come too late, because his horse will hardly hold out: to which words Placir thus replied.

Siluian your Lord is so fortunate, and hath finished such rare and incredible aduventures, as I will not be perswaded, but that he will deliuer out of danger his brother, the hardy Florian of the Forrest: and therefore content thy selfe, for he which had the power to end such noble exploits as he hath done, I am sure cannot faile this present occasion. But for the departure of the Prince Florian, trust me, it did not a little offend me, and being now by you aduertised, that (without present aide) he is in danger to be lost, both I and my companion will not faile to follow him, because it were against reason to lose so good a knight: and go you to the place (which you tell vs) the Prince Palmerin hath commanded you, and there shall you likewise heare tidings of vs, so soon as we shall possibly haue the commoditie to send to you.

The Prince Placir upon these words took his leaue of Siluian, when he and his companion rid away very hastily, where (to the successe of their iourney) we will leaue them, remembering we forget the knight of the Tiger, who (after he departed from Siluian) made such dispatch of way, as at length he came to a little Village by the Sea coast, where he entred a Venetian Gally, to passe by Sea to the Island of Collambra, which

which was very much famed abroad, by reason of the Giant which possessed the same: assuring you, that no vessel whatsoeuer might take landing there, during the time these Giants liued, because their crueltie was so insupportable, to them which durst arrive in that Isle. When this Galley came neere vnto the Island, they were constrained to rowe close to the shoare, because the winde was so sore vpon them, as for two dayes they were greatly hindered, and on the third day likewise the wind arose so extreame and violent, as the Mariners iudged, in the midst of winter it could not be more rigorous: so that they were driuen into a certaine place, where diuerse other Ships (being glad to auoide that troublesome tempest) had taken Anker, in one of these Ships was the Sage Aliart, being very sore passionate, least some misfortune should happen to Florian of the Forrest his Brother. Neuerthelesse he receiued some comfort in beholding the other vessels, hoping that fortune might be so fauourable to them, albeit the winds were so contrarie to their nauigation, they might yet happen vpon some coast or other, as might happily bring them together to the Island of Collambra.

The knight of the Tiger vnderstanding that the Sage Aliart was there, and also being acquainted with his aduise, receiued great contentation in his minde, and because the tempest endured all that day, he left the Galley, contenting the Maister thereof for his paines, and came into one of those Ships which were in the Hauen: but he would not goe into that vessel where the Sage Aliart was, for that he doubted least their being together, would be a hinderance to their seuerall determinations, which while hee was considering how farre different they were, the Princes, Berolde and Placir, likewise arrived there, intending to beare Palmerin and the Sage Aliart company in their voyage. But when they vnderstood, how the Prince Palmerin desired to trauaile without their company, they embarked themselves with the Sage Aliart, and setting forth of the hauen together, they kept company with the sight of one another, vntill the darke night did separate them asunder: for the winde rising againe, kept them (in short time) so farre

also

alose the one from the other, as they had cleane lost the sight of any land, yet they sailed on couragiously, not dreadding the furie of any winde nor rough billowes of the water, to the mercy whercof we intend to commit them.

The course of our History willetb vs now to returne to the redoubted Knight of the Sauage man, who was conducted to Collambra, in the order as I haue told you before, by the commaundement of Arlencea, the Damocrell Giant, who sayled with such a speedy pace on the Sea, as her pleasure was greater then I can speake of, for that shee had in her custodie the Knight of the Sauage man, with whome shee (and those that bare her company) in foure dayes, and foure nights (being so fauoured of the winde and weather) came within the sight of the Island, where the proude Gientesse Colambra made her residence: into whose handes, Fortune would not suffer to fall the Knight of the Sauage man, but raised suddenly such a mightie tempest, as they were all in doubt to be cast away, and in little more then an houre, they were cast so farre from the Island, as the Pilot could not iudge into what countrey the winde had driuen them, by reason whereof, both he and the Mariners remained so far out of quietnesse, as they could not tell to what Saint they should commend themselves for present succour.

When Arlencea perceiued this sudden alteration, shee was likewise so inwardly bereb, as she wished that she had neuer seene the Prince Florian, for she had none in her company that could promise her any ayde, except it were Alfernao, and hee was so woone with age, as he could lesse helpe then any of the other: then she beganne to encourage the Pilot to defend her in causing the mariners to make expedition, but al was in vaine, for their hearts did so faint, and their stomaches so failed them (seeing so great danger and trouble towards them) as the ayde which they should haue given to remedy this doubtfull trouble, was not of any account at all, and their vnderstanding did forsake them so amazedly, as they knew no way to helpe the perils extant before their eyes.

Alfernao seeing the Mariners so out of heart, came to Arlencea

cea with these words. Madame, I desire you not to abash your selfe, for in the assurance of your excellency consisteth all our liues: and for this misfortune which hath come vpon vs, it hapneth to them customably which frequent the seas, and though now you see the waters so rough and impatient, in a moment you shall see them calme enough againe. Wherefore, I pray you come forth of your Chamber, to the end the Pilot and the Mariners may behold you, for I am perswaded that in seeing you, they will receiue a fresh encouragement.

In this order as I tell ye, Alfernao did endeavour himselfe by friendly counsell (as much as in him lay) to cause her forget this fearefull motion, and Arlencea (at the request of Alfernao) came presently out of her Chamber: but when she beheld y furiousnesse of the water, sometime lifting the Ship vp, as it were to heauen, and then throwing it downe againe to the depth of hell, the water likewise beating in abundantly, her heart would not serue her, to keepe the Mariners any longer company, but she went in againe to her Chamber, so full of dispaire and fearefull frightings, as (being not able to sustaine her selfe) she laid her downe vpon a pillow betwene two of her Damselfs, when, weeping very bitterly, she entred into these speeches.

I see well Alfernao, the small recompence they shall receiue, which enterprise such doods as are dishonourable and far from dutie, and I beleue certainly, that the Diuine powers are determined to punish vs, for the great injury and disloyaltie we offer, in seeking the death of this good and hardy knight, who slue my brethren one after another in plaine fight, not offering or taking any aduantage of them: which hautie docts, albeit I cannot let them passe without great maruell, yet do they make me verily thinke, that he sought in a good and a lawfull cause, in that he despised the exceeding crueltie and tyranny, wherein my proud and presumptuous brethren liued, which disorder of life, being rightly chastised by the prowess of this Knight, we set our selues against all reasonable regard (in my iudgement) to practise his death for well doing. And we being forgetfull to sift the iustnesse of the cause, goe about

about to dye this good knight of his life, in the reuenge of whose innocencie, the wrathfull anger of the Heauens is fallen vpon vs: wherefore, to auoyde and flie the extremitie betime, leaſt wee fall into a worſe inconuenience, I am reſolued to chaunge my angrie mode, thinking it better to take the King from him, which cauſed him to ſleepe ſo ſoundly, then thus to abide the ſharpe countenance of the weakfull powers, whome (whether I will or no) I muſt obey.

Arlencea hauing ſpoken what pleaſed her, commanded the Chamberdore to be opened, where the knight of the Sauadgeman lay, and when ſhe had taken the King from him, ſhee was in as good eſtate as ſhee was before, yet not without great maruell in himſelfe, when he perceiued he was in a ſhip on the Sea, and was compaſſed about with faire Damoſells, who wept verie grievouſly, to ſee themſelues in ſo great danger. The Prince in this amazement, came forth of his Chamber, when he ſaw how the furious waues of the Water did toſſe and turniole their Bark, and how the Pilot, the Marriners, and every one in the Ship, their hearts were dead, becauſe they knew no way how to helpe themſelues: Whereupon he beganne with noble words to chaire and encourage them, but the extreame feare they had generally conceiued, cauſed them to make ſmall eſtimation of his words.

Then was he more and more abaſhed, but eſpecially to ſee himſelfe in ſuch a place, where it was the leaſt parte of his thought to haue come, and how he came ſo imbarqued from the Caſtle, where the Damoſells came and entertained him ſo exceeding friendly at the Gate thereof. This ſtrange aduenture made him oftentimes deſirous to demaund how and after what ſort he chanced thither, but the danger which he ſaw imminent before his eyes, would not afford him ſo much leiſure, but compelled him to ſettle his thoughtes on that which was more neceſſarie. The Marriners by the often intreaty, and friendly behaviour of the Prince, began ſomewhat to comfort themſelues, which when as he beheld, he went into the Chamber to Arlencea, where ſitting downe by her, he beganne his ſpeeches after this order.

Madame,

Madame, I would I might intreate you to forſake thoſe fearfull paſſions, and to regarde him who eſteemeth maruellous well of your diuine Beautie, the tempeſt beginneth by little and little to loſe his force, and therefore let my perſwaſion ſomewhat appeaſe you, for theſe teares wherewith you offend your gracious countenance, is as grieuous for me to behold, as it is bootleſſe for you ſo much to hurt your ſelfe.

Arlencea hearing the courteous language of the Prince, and noting withall his ſcemely countenance, reioyced that ſhee had ſo ſpared his life at the intreatie of Alfernao, and the malicious reuenge which ſhe ſought before, was now changed againe into good opinion of Loue, whereat the knight of the Sauadgeman was very well pleaſed, but Alfernao remained moſt grievouſly paſſionate, knowing well that his enterpriſe could come to no good ende.

The Night being ſpent, at the breake of day the tempeſt calmed, when the Pilote gaue them to vnderſtand, that they were arrived on the Coaſt of Spaine, which words diſpleaſed Alfernao in the hearing, and while he ſate uttering ſilent complaints to himſelfe, the Pilote diſcouered the Cittie of Malaga, which then was helde and kept by the Turkes: then the Prince tooke Arlencea by the hand, and led her forth on the hatches to ſhew her the land, when cauſing her to ſit downe, he deſired her that ſhe would report vnto him, after what manner he was brought into the Shippe, wherein he had ſlept ſo long, without knowledge of himſelfe.

Wherupon ſhe (anſwered Arlencea) ſo that it ſhall pleaſe you to let all former angrie occasions paſſe, and pardon what I ſay in your knightly courteſie, you ſhall be reſolued in your earneſt deſire, and therewith aſſuring you, that Loue hath brought mee into ſuch eſtate, and hath moued ſuch a forcible affection in mee towards you, ſo as I will not conceale any iote of the trueth from you. Then ſhe recounted at large the whole enterpriſe of Collambra, and the aged knight Alfernao, whose treason did ſo aſtoniſh the Prince, as hee brake forth into theſe ſpeeches.

Ma.

Madame, the desire wherewith I came to doe you seruice, did not deserue the unkinde dealing wherewith you haue vſed me, but ſince it is ſo, that my trauaile hath bene imployed in vaine, I deſire you to afford me ſo much fauour, as to report the guile whereby Alfernao brought me hither, who I knowe was perſwaded to commit me to the cruelty of your Mother, which ſhould be ſo great towardeſ me, as nothing would content her but my death. And let it not offend you, that I goe into my chamber to arme my ſelfe, becauſe I will compell all theſe in your company vnder my obeſſance: and this you may perſwade your ſelfe, that I will not forget your gentleneſſe in any trauaile whatſoeuer, but will maintaine your excellency, being ſo bound by your good deſertes, whereto Arlencea thus replied.

My Lord, I deſire you to conſider, that your ſingular courteſie ioyned with the vnfained good will I beare you, cauſed mee to diſcouer this damnable treaſon intended againſt you, which I thought too unkind for him, to whom I could find in my hart to ſubmit my ſelfe: in recompence whereof, I deſire you would remember, that I ſhall not onely loſe the preſence of Collambra my Mother, and likewiſe my patrimony, but alſo I ſhall receiue ſuch a common bruiſe of ill report, as euery one will wound me with malicious ſpeech, in yielding my ſelfe into your hands, who haue ſo cruelly ſtaine my Wethzen.

Madame (answered Florian) I pray you forget the remembrance of loſing your Mothers fauour, or any other ſuch opinion, in regard of the good may happen to you, for if Fortune fauour me no worſe then ſhe hath done, I wil not faile to make a double requitall of your kindneſſe: and that you may reſpoſe the better aſſurance on my words, I here proteſt my ſelfe at your commandement.

In the meane time, while Florian ſpent the time in this talke, he vnderſtood how they in the Shippe went about ſome enterpriſe againſt him, by meanes whereof he left Arlencea, but ſhe followed him into his Chamber to helpe to arme him, and ere he had girded himſelfe in his Mayle coate, Alfernao, with ſoure other in his company, came to the Chamber dore to

to lay hands on him, but they miſſed of their purpoſe, ſo Florian coming to them, by maine ſtrength thruſt them ſorth of the Chamber, with theſe wordes. The time is now come Alfernao, wherein thy traiterous dealings ſhall be worthily recompenced.

Then liſting vp his ſword to haue ſmiſſen him, the other ſue ſtepped befoze and defended him, wherewith the Prince was ſo much moued, and he beſturd himſelfe ſo among them, as two of them quickly tumbled at his ſecte, the other two ſeeing that, and knowing the ſmall pittie Florian would ſhew them, tooke heart aſreſh, and came to the Prince, aſſailing him couragiously, but he laying befoze them the treaſon of olde Alfernao, gaue them ſuch cruell and terrible ſtrokes, as he cut off the arme of one of them hard by the ſhoulder, and the fourth (ſo ſcare) was glad to leape into the Sea.

Then Alfernao ſeing his life brought into ſo great danger, came and humbled himſelfe befoze Arlencea, in this manner. Madame, if the vnfained loue I haue alwayes vſed, in doing ſeruice to your mother and your ſelfe, deſerueth any gracious reſpect, then is it neceſſary that you afford it me, and if that loyalty ought to be recompenced as it hath worthily merited, then I deſire you to intreate for me the fauour of this Knight, for your word (I knowe) may preuaile ſo much with him, as his anger will be pacified, and my life ſaued.

The Damaſell Giant was ſo amazed at the noble proweſſe of the Prince, as ſhe knew not how to addreſſe her ſelfe to him to moue intreatance, but being (as it were) in a quantarie, had not power to anſwere Alfernao, nor yet to ſulſill what he had requested: neither would Florian deale extremely with him, ſeing him on his knees befoze Arlencea, for whoſe ſake he thus began.

Truſt me, Madame, Alfernao had good Fortune to render himſelfe to you, for that you haue the power to preſerue his life, contrary to his deſerts, if I ſhould goe to the vt. moſt. Arlencea did maruellouſly eſteem the great humanitie, which the Prince vſed to Alfernao, who (at her commandement) was put in ſure guard, ſcaring leaſt he ſhould praſtiſe any



more treason, and the Prince beganne to esteeme very well of Arlencea (according as her honest and vertuous nature deserved) as well for the laudable bountie of her gentle minde, as also for vsing him so kindly as she had done: but albeit he was subiect to voluptuous pleasure, yet beholding the chaste regard this Damosell had of her selfe, she bridled her affection, and determined to bestow her as wife on his great friend the Giant ant Dramusiande, for he iudged it the part of a friend, to wish such an one to his friend, as hee knew to be acquainted with vertue and chastitie, and to subdue that wicked desire in himselfe, which should moue him to violate his faith to his friend.

And for the Damosell her selfe, albeit she preferred the noble behaviour of the Knight of the Sauage man, worthy the bittermost straine of her abilitie, yet had she an especiall regard of her honour, knowing it to be the chiefest ornament to make her esteemed of: and therefore shee behaued her selfe discretely and wisely, gaying the good commendation of all that knew her as the Historie hereafter will declare vnto you.

CHAP. XV.

Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, after he was come on land.



When the Noble Prince Florian, had thus vanquished Alfernao, and his companions, being so neare the shore, he determined to goe on land, whereupon he commaunded the Pilote to drawe to the shore, which he presently did, landing them in a haven belonging to Recinde the King of Spaine, where they rested themselves certaine dayes, because Arlencea and

and her Damosels were somewhat sickly with their trauaile, and Alfernao desired the knight of the Sauage man, that he would giue him leaue to returne into his owne country, seeing he was arrived in a place of assurance, and where he little needed to feare any danger: to which demaund the Prince shaped this answer.

I am wel assured Alfernao, that the Court of Constantino-ple is greatly troubled by your meanes, therefore I intend you shall depart no whither else, before you haue sworn to me to go to the Emperour againe, to let him vnderstand what hath happened to me, from the time that your false teares made me forsake the Court, euen vntill the instant that we came hither, which you may do well enough, without any feare of punishment that the Emperour will lay on you, because his clemency is farre greater then thy euill deserts, which in sooth shall neuer be laid to thy charge, in respect of the great good will I beare to Madame Arlencea, whose friendly pittie hath deeply bound me, in deliuering me out of the perill, wherein your malice hath craftily caught me, euen as you may at large declare vnto the Emperour.

My Lord (sayd Alfernao) libertie is so highly esteemed, and so greatly desired by them who are well acquainted with it, as sometimes the desire to recouer it, by him that was so wilfull to forgo it, maketh him for to put his life in great jeopardy: then, seeing himselfe brought into such mishappe, that he cometh in such sort to repent himselfe, as he wisheth rather continuall seruitude, then to haue liberty once, and then to lose it.

In this order it fareth with me at this time, who being desirous to liue out of thyaldome, am content to obey your noble commandement, yet not without feare of some inuenience: but such is the hope I haue in the Emperours bountie, as I trust to be pardoned for the heinous offence, wherein I haue displeased his imperiall Maieitie, then comming to Arlencea, he said.

Madame, bethinke your self in what it shal please you to command me to your mother, if so be it fall out, & I happen to the place

place where she is, to which words Arlencea replied thus. You may giue her to vnderstand from me, that I thinke it necessary she become friends with the knight of the Sauage man, if she desire that I should remaine her obedient daughter, and I request that she would forget the death of my Brethren, in that seeking to reuenge their losse, she cannot otherwise doe but cut off her daughters life: and this you may very well assure her, that if she refuse to graunt my request, she shall from henceforth neuer more see me, for I haue yielded my selfe to obey the commandement of the knight of the Sauage man, who doth me such honoꝝ, as I esteeme the greatest good fortune that euer could come to me, in conducting me to the Emperours Court, where I shall be acquainted with the gracious behaviour of diuers noble and vertuous Princes, and likewise I shall learne to amend my vnciuil conditions, seeing the rare qualities vsed in that renowned Court.

Madame (answered the knight of the Sauage man) to see you in this good and vertuous minde, I cannot chuse but conceiue great contentment, and when it shall be my fortune to come to the Court, you shall perceiue how well I thinke of you in the meane time, to render you some assurance of that which I say, I pray the Alfarnao, report to the Emperour, in what good mind thru diddest leaue the Lady Arlencea, and that I humbly request his Maiesty, that she may lawfully receiue Baptisme, to the end, that the Emperesse may bestow such a Lordly care on her, as her vertuous qualities doth well deserue.

Alfarnao promised to fulfill his whole commandement, and so he tooke his leaue of them, not able to endure the sight of the amiable courtesie, which Arlencea vsed to the knight of the Sauage man, who sojourned there a pretty space, while he had prouided him of necessary things for trauaile, because he intended to ride about the countrey there, to shew the estate thereon to Arlencea, and her Damosels.

When all things were in readinesse, he set forward with his faire company, and the first day, somewhat towards the euening, they arrived within a faire and goodly valley, well furni-

furni

furnished with Trees, where, comming neare to a pleasant Fountaine, they espied where two seuerall Tents were pitched, and not farre from them, they beheld foure Damoselles walking for their recreation vnder the graine trees, to shroud themselves from the parching heate of the Sunne: upon which occasion, Arlencea thus spake to the Prince.

If I iudge (amisse good Sir) these Damosels I coniecture receiue farre greater pleasure then I, in that they are free to their contentation, and I haue put my libertie into his hands, who maketh but small account thereof. The prince made shew as though he vnderstood not what Arlencea said, wherefore to change her present fantastic, which proceeded of the intire loue she bare to him, in other familiar talke he passed away the time vntill they came somewhat neare to the Tents, which were as rich and faire as could be deuised: and while Florian stood still taking pleasure to behold them, a Damosell came and vsed this conference with him.

He thinke it is a thing very strange (Sir knight) that one man should take vpon him to conduct fise Damoselles, in that it cannot chuse but be a very great charge, whereof I will something ease you, if so be it shall like you to follow my counsell, which shall not be to your disadvantage: wherto the prince thus answered.

Albeit I cannot thinke ill of your courteous speeches, where with you kindly come to salute me, yet shall you not perswade me to any thing, except it be accompanied with vertue and honesty: therefore I desire you to satisfie mee of your opinion, which standing with reason, I shall not faile to follow, as one that would not willingly disobey any good counsell. I am content (saide the Damosell) to answer your demaund, wherefore you shall vnderstand, that we are foure Damoselles, and are garded here by foure knights, who will not be long before they come hither, with whome (if you please, you may try the Ioust, and which of them shall happe to be vanquished, must of necessitie deliuer you his Lady, and you must be content to doe the like, if fortune denie you the fauour of victorie: but if she respect you with her friendly eye, and allowe you for her happy

## The second part

conquerour, all we foure shall be deliuered to you, which cannot be greater hinderance vnto you, in conducting nine ladies, then these five. On the other side, if for fine thyowes you in discourtenance, and commit you to our knights as vanquished, foure of these Ladies must be taken from you, but the fift you shall be suffered to enioy still: thus you see the Ioust cannot be any way disagreeable to you, for which way so euer it happens, you cannot lacke both pleasure and profite.

Gentlewoman (answered the knight of the Sauage man) you seeme so well acquainted with gentle behauioꝝ, as to gaine you, I will leopard the aduenture to lose my selfe: and I promise you I thinke the time too long, vntill I haue made a conquest of you: whereto the Damosell made this answer. I pray you sir, doe not thinke you shall purchase vs so lightly, in that the desire you haue to defend those Ladies which you conduct, will hardly permit you to speed so soone, such hardy valour you shall finde in those knights, which haue attempted to defend vs.

The Damosell had no sooner ended her words, but a Dwarf (being nere at hand vnderneath a tree) began to sound a trumpet, which he did with so high a note, as it brought a gallant Echo from the whole valley: then the Prince looking aside, espied foure knights come praucing along the valley, armed in white and greene Armour, their helmets very richly gilded, and vpon them they had faire garlands of flowers, and in their Shields (which their Esquires brought after them) was portrayed bluer Swannes in a field of Sinoble. Then they were come to the place, where the Damosell talked with the Prince, she rehearsed vnto them what communication had passed: wher vpon one of them thus answered her.

Madame, so it may be your pleasure, I will not feare to aduenture any danger, but I would be loath to be so unhappie as to lose you, without I might expect greater profit to happen for I would more willingly be depriued of my life, then to abide such a hard and irksome extremitie, as to be forced to commit you into the custodie of another, being more desirous to keepe you my selfe.

Trust

## Of Palmerin of England.

Trust me sir (answered the Damosell) if you seeke thus to excuse your selfe with words, that you would not willingly endure the Ioust, then will you proue me false in my words to the knight, to whom the Ladies (which beare him company) are greatly beholding, in seeing him to aduenture the triall so worthily himselfe, against vs that haue each one a knight to defend her. Madame (said the knight) this Gentleman esteemeth it a great trouble to him, to be burdened with so many Ladies, and therefore he would willingly be vanquished, to the end he might be discharged of them: so, in seeking to shun small occasions of harme, he steppeth into a maze of greater danger: whereto the Prince gaue this answer.

Truly sir, you are very farre from my meaning, and so farre as I giue you to vnderstand, as I do not onely intend to guard these Damosels which are in my company, but that which is more, I will disburden you of those foure Ladies which you presume to defend, and carrie them away with me. And if you do not manfully behaue your selfe on their behalfe, truly I shall be much displeased with you, for I am wont to make no account of the victorie, except I may atchieue it with great losse of my blood. Well then sir (answered the knight) seeing you desire to make your valor serue to these Ladies, prepare your selfe to entertaine me: with which words he clapt downe the Visor of his Helmet, and hauing couched his Lance, he fetcht his course against the knight of the Sauage man, who welcomed him very brauely: and albeit the knight brak his lance worthily, yet such was the rough charge the Prince gaue him, as he was constrained to measure his length on the earth, being so greatly amazed with his fall, as he lay a good space without mouing himselfe, in the meane while, the knight of the Sauage man came to the Damosell, with whom he had talked before, speaking to her in this manner. I perceiue Madame, his knight is not able to keepe her, whom he hath enterprised to defend, wherefore I pray you discharge your selfe of the promise, which you said I should enioy, by reason of your custome here appointed: to which words the Damosell framed this reply. You haue done your duty so well, and like an approued

knight at Armes, as I might be worthily apprehended of ingratitude, if I should withhold that from you, which you haue so well deserved: therefore since the lot hath first fallen on me, whom this knight did enterprize to defend, I submit my selfe to you, desiring you, that you would entertaine me among these other Ladies, which request I make in requitall of his misfortune, who hath thus unluckily lost me.

The Prince very fauourably respected the Damosell, and would haue made her answer, but the second knight cryed to him, that he should prepare himselfe, whereupon they set the spurres to their horses, and encountred with such valour, as the truncheons of their speares flew vp gallantly into the aire: then comming againe to their second triall, the Prince gaue the knight such a forcible stroke, as he threw him to the earth, with one of his legs broken.

The other two knights, seeing the great dishonour their fellows had receiued, and doubting they should speed no better themselves, they ran both together against the knight of the Sauage man, and dealt very discourteously with him, yet had they not the power to vnhorse him, but so soone as he could gaine the opportunitie. (being loath to trust too much to their gentleness) he alighted from his horse, and drawing his sword, he came to them with these words. Indeed Gentleman, you haue gotten the aduantage of me now, in that you two so dishonourably assaile one onely knight: yet cannot all this discourage me in purchasing the Ladies, whom I will haue from you before I depart, or you shall haue the best blow in my belly: to which words, one of the knights made him this answer.

I cannot tell how things may fall out, but before you haue these Ladies, you shall buy them at our hands so deere, as while you liue you shall know the price. And so they alighted from their horses, running very furiously on the knight of the Sauage man, who entertained them with such braue and ingenious sleights of sight, as in short time one of the knights (being not able to hold out any longer) was constrained to fall at the Princesse fete: which when the other knight perceiued, and

and saw his life was brought into such extremitie, put forth himself nobly to defend the strokes wherewith the knight of the Sauage man charged him, who doing his deuoir to bring him vnder his obeyfance, the knight (which began the ioust, and had sitten all this while in great anger) seeing his fellows distressed, by the prouidence of the hardy knight of the Sauage man, and the great danger wherein he was that endured the Combate, came with his sword drawn to assist him.

The Prince seeing that, and how he which was ready to yield, took heart afresh by his fellows company, redoubled his strokes vpon them, and sayd. I would gladly that more succor would come & helpe this knight, to the end that the victory which I shall obtaine, might yield me the larger estimation of renowne: and that I might likewise make knowne to these Ladies, how their beantie ought to be reserved for those knights who are more vertuous, and can better defend them. In briebe, such was the prouidence of the Prince towards them, as one of the knights, (being very sore wounded) fell downe to the earth, the sight whereof so grieved the other, as he ranne and fell downe before the Ladies, desiring them to shield him from the furie of the Prince, who smiling to see the behaviour of the knight, entred into these speeches.

Sir knight, you haue taken by your Hostage in a place of good assurance, otherwise, I would giue thee such a recompence as thy malicions and disloyall stomache deserueth: then comming to the Ladies, he began in this order. Faire Ladies, I desire that you would mount your selues vpon your palfreys, for I would willingly be out of this place, lest the remembrance of the ill hap of these knights cause you to be forgetfull of the honest penitence, which you made me before I began the Ioust.

In sooth worthy Sir (answered one of the Damosels) it is very hard to put out of our memory, their slender and unhappy fortune, that could not withstand the force of one knight, but because you haue deserved so well, we submit our selues most willingly to your worthy selfe, to dispose of vs as it shall seeme best in your iudgement, humbly desiring, that vertue be not

blemished by any inordinate meane, which oftentimes happeneth to a Ladies great dishonour, being too late to recover it againe, when such an especiall ietwell is lost.

Ladies (answered the knight of the Sauage man) I am not accustomed to vse discourtesie to any of your sexe, especially, not to them of whom I make account, but such is my misfortune as when I haue well deserued, my due recompence is farre enough from me. Then taking one of the horses of the vanquished knights, he rid away with the Ladies, leauing the knights in the Tents, to remember the great losse they had sustained: being thus depriued of their gracious ladies, who with their Esquires rid on merrily, reioycing that they were in the Custody of the noble and aduenterous knight of the Sauage-man.

CHAP. XVI.

Of the aduenges, which chanced to the Knight of the Sauage man, conducting these Ladies to the King of Spaines Court: and of that which happened to the Knight of the Tiger, in his voyage to the Profound Isle.



After the knight of the Sauage man, had left the Valley, where he vanquished the four knights, he determined to iourney through the Realme of Spaine, being very glad that he was so worthily accompanied with Ladies, and intending to let them vnderstand, what estimation he made of their singular beauty, which indeed was so pleasing in his eyes, as willing

willingly he could haue afforded them a point of his courtesie: but for the Damosell Giant Arlencca, the regard he had of her, and the promise wherein he had bound himselfe, beside caused him to qualifie his amorous humour, because his friend Dramusiande was of such account with him, as made him hee would not leuell at her so pleasant, as perhaps he did at the other.

In their company he shewed himselfe merry and iocund, so that at last hee tooke off his Helmette, and gaue it to his Esquier, when, the Damoselles beholding his faire visage, and how youthfull and comely he was withall, they severally fell into so good opinion of him (the dapper boy of the Goddesse Citherea, hauing somewhat touched them) as they repented the wordes they spake, when they first humbled themselves vnto him.

The Prince behaued himselfe to all of them very graciously, because he would not haue malice to growe on either side, and to the Damosels he brought forth of the Valley, he proceeded in earnest conference, to wit, of whence they were, and wherefore they remained in the company of those knights whom he had so nobly vanquished: then one of the Damosels, with a very modest countenance returned the Prince this answer.

Most worthy sir, to witnesse the regard we haue of you, and the dutifull affection wherewith we honour you, I wil presume (on the behalfe of all the rest) to satisfie your present demaund. You shall therefore vnderstand, that the first of these Damosels is named Armelia, the second Iulianda, the third Sabelia, and my selfe am called Artisia, we being all of one Citie, not farre from the Valley called Arleda, wherin those four knights (whereof two were Brethren, and so were the other twaine, yet being so allied together as they were all Cousins one to another) made their abode, being all desirous to doe vs seruice, that they might thereby in time marry vs.

And because we should not misse so great an honour as marriage is, by the licence of our Mother, we came oftentimes to recreate our selues by this fountaine, which you perceiued nere the Tents where you found vs, and there would  
the

## The second part

the Knightes usually take delight, to feede our eyes with such pleasant iestes and dares, as they could daily attempt in the Forrest.

Moreouer, that we might the better perswaded of their lone, they would offer the Ioust to any knight that passed through the valley, summoning them thereto by the Drwarffe which sounded the Trumpet, assuring you, that they were allwaies the Conquerours, until this time, which fortune made unhappy to them, by your noble and balliant proweesse.

Ladyes (answered the knight of the Sauage man) it were great shame for me to lose them, whom fortune (by my happy victorie) hath deliuered into my hands, wherefore, I promise not to forsake you, until some other knight bring me into such extremitie, as I shall be destitute of power sufficient to defend you: but I beleue he will very hardly vanquish him, who submiteth himselfe so earnestly to your direction. And thus much will I doe for you beside, I will conduct you to the King of Spaines Court, and bring you likewise to see the Castle of the Giant Almaroll: afterward, if you shall finde it so conuenient for you, to leaue my company, I am content to let you depart at your owne pleasure.

All the Damoselles (vpon this motion) desired him earnestly, that he would bring them into those places which he had promised, for that it is the nature of women, to desire to see newelties, and Arlencea, who was inflamed with the selfesame desire, was as forward in mouing the request as any of them, yet she feared least the company of these other Damoselles, would alter the Princes former determination to her, but she needed not to cast any such doubt, for the Princes will was as resolute as she could wish it.

Thus they journeyed on till night came vpon them, when, they went to a Castle nere at hand, where they were all very friendly entertained, and the Prince caused good attendance to be vsed to the Ladyes: so heare we will leaue him and them together, and will (as our Historie willes vs) proceed to tell you, how the knight of the Tiger, the sixtene day after he was imbarqued, came within the sight of the Profound Isle, which

## of Palmerin of England.

62  
which the Pilot knew very well, and so gaue the Prince Palmerin to vnderstand, whom he set a shoare in the most conuenient place he could find, committing him to God and good fortune.

The knight of the Tiger rode about to visite the Profound Isle, which seemed to him very pleant and fertile: but the night suddenly hindering him, he was constrained to alight at the foote of a mountaine, where he suffered his horse to refresh himselfe, and began to mourne, for lacke of the company of his appointed friend Siluan, whose presence was agreeable to him, as well for the remembrance that he was nourished with him, as also for the swete and louing counsel he would giue him, when he was in extreme grief and heauinesse, because he knew best how comfort him.

Thus for want of his company, he was constrained to passe that night among the greene leaues, vsing his Helmet as a pillow vnder his head, and there he tost and tumbled very vquietly all night, until the cleare morning had chased away the vncomfortable darkenesse: then he arose, and mounting on horse backe, rode on very heauy and pensieue, yet somewhat comforted by the pleasantnesse of the Isle, which he iudged more worthy to be peopled, then to ly wast and desolate. About the euening tide, he came where was a little Island, which was compassed about with very strong wals: into this Island he entred, and tooke vp his lodging in the house of an ancient knight, who was accustomed to giue entertainment to such knights, as bestowed their time in seeking aduentures, and because he saw the knight of the Tiger, without an equire attending on him, he came and tooke his horse himselfe, and afterward he helped to vmarne him, vsing him with so great humanity as was possible.

The knight of the Tiger was glad of this friendly entertainment, and desired to be informed by his Host, of the customes and manners of that Countrey: so, when he was risen from Supper, and had reposed himselfe a little, he requested his host to tell him, to whom that Island belonged, and what were the maners and customes thereof, that he might report it in other places,



## The second part

places where he came : to which demand, the ancient Knight his Host made this answer.

My Lord, you came now in good time to be resolved of that, which I perceine you are ignorant in, for if it had bene your fortune to come hither a little sooner (being in your sweetest times of yeares) your life would haue bene in very great danger, for you shall vnderstand, that it is not long time since a Giant named Brauorant the Cruell, was the Lord and possessor of this Island, who delighted to set spies at all his Ports, to informe him when any Knights or Damofels did arrive in this Island, and when any such happened to come, he would vse them extreame cruelly, the Knights he would deprive of their liues, and the Damofels he would villanously force, and after ward send them away stark naked, dispoyled of all their rich and costly cloathing.

And for this purpose he kept a great company of bassayles, who did nothing else but imploy themselves in following his wicked humour, and when as any Merchants (by fortune) came to cast Anchor into this Isle, his bassayles would compell them, to ransom themselves with great extremities, before they would suffer them to depart hence : but if they chanced to find fault with his tyranny, and refused to pay their ransom, which they knew to be laide on them without all right or reason, then would he murder them, or put them to some villanous death or other. But the heavenly powers seeing the great oppression and cruelty, which this bloody minded hell-hound continually vsed, and chiefly towards them that neuer offended him, in their diuine prouidence, they thought good to cut off such a tyrant, and so it fortun'd this Giant died, whose soule I thinke was carried to the place, where his vnnaturall deeds deserved to haue recompence, for that he could impley his life no better. Yet thus dying, left behind him foure sons which he had in issue, who were in all things to be compared to the Giant their father, the two eldest of his sons were named, Callurnien & Combaldam, who being not content to liue on so small reuenues as this Island yielded, went to inhabit another country: but albeit they were thus departed hence, the supreme authority

## of Palmerin of England.

63  
thoritic would not long suffer them, to liue in their vnsuppor-  
table cruelty and tyranny, but made a dispatch of their cursed  
liues, and that by the hand of one onely knight, who was called  
(as report hath here blazed) the Knight of the Sauage man, so  
named, for that he beareth figured in his shield a Sauage man.  
It may be, you haue better knowledge of this knight, then I  
haue, for that such a one as you seeme to be, cannot chuse but be  
acquainted with those noble mindes, as imploy themselves in  
seeking haughty aduentures, whereby their fame is thundered  
through the whole world. As for the two other Brethren, they  
were nourished in this Island vnder their mothers wing, a-  
gainst whose will (after they iudged themselves able to endure  
armoz) they determined to depart hence, to reuenge the death  
of their brethren, Callurnien and Combaldam. The earnest  
desire they had to be gone, would not suffer them to tary longer  
here, but taking shipping, away they went, and after they had  
spent a great time in the bloody and horrible life their predecessors  
spent before them, and in seeking the aforesaid knight  
of the Sauage man, it so fell out, that the good and hardy knight  
himselfe, chanced to come where they were, with them he en-  
tered the Combate, and behaued himselfe so worthily against  
them, as he likewise ended the liues of the other two Giants,  
whose death deliuered the inhabitants of the countrey (where  
they dwelled) out of a great deale of feare and trouble, so that it  
is to be iudged, that the knight was ordained to be the onely  
meane, to defend the miserable afflicted people, out of the life of  
slauish seruitude, wherein they had remained long time by their  
cruel Giants. The mother of these merciless hell-hounds before  
named, who is called Collambra, could not long endure the sor-  
row she suffered for the death of her children, wherefore she prac-  
tised, & compassed all deuises she could, whereby to get the knight  
of the Sauage man into her custody, & that she might spend the  
better in her close intent, she ioynd with a Magitian a friend  
of hers, one whom he loued well, named Aisernao, who is gone  
to the Emperors court of Constantinople, hauing ten daies al-  
lowed him to accomplish his intent, & to worke so craftily (as wel  
he can) the knight of the Sauage man must be brought hither.  
And

## The second part

And because no occasion that want that may helpe any way a Damofell Giant named Arlencea, who is the Daughter to this Collambra, accompanied with a certaine nūber of knights and Damofels, is toynd in company with this Enchauntoz, vpon whose promifes such assurance is made here, as the knight of the Savage man shall be brought hither. In this great hope which the cruell Collambra hath, to reuenge her deuillish will on this good knight, she is gone to a Citie foure leagues distance hence, being accompanied with a great many of her friends, as also with one of her bzyethzen, who (though he be young) yet is he maruailous bloody and cruell, and reputed for an especiall knight at Armes, who is also a Giant, and named Esponvautable, who hath conuerted his countrey into as great cruelty, as when it was gouerned by the Giant Brauorant the Cruell: and to speake vprightly, Brauorant was not altogether so terrible, as hee is whom I lately named to you, wherefoze I hartily pray, that the good knight of the Savage man fall not into the hands of this Giant, neither that the treason may preuaile which is laide for him: the ancient knight knitting vp his tale with a sigh, the knight of the Tigar thus began.

My good friend, it is hard for him to escape the daunger, whom fortune hath determined to fall into it, and seeing it is so, I could wish that she would suffer the Brother to Collambra, to take reuenge on me for the death of his Nephew: perhaps he might fall into his handes, who hath a good will to punish his wicked life, and make him knowe the desert of cruelty, as well as his kindred hath tasted it before him. And for the knight of the Savage man, hee is one that I knowe very well, and I hope he wil escape the hands of his enemies, as one that is reserved to bring to an end many worthy and hantye adventures: wherefoze, in respect that hee is my especiall good friend, I desire to knowe the certaintie of that you haue rehearsed, for if he speake ill, I cannot take it quietly, and therefore because I wil satisfy my mind, I am determined to morrow morning to goe take this Giant, not doubting, but if fortune fauour me, to repay his wicked and euill deserts, with such recompence

## of Palmerinot England.

competence as is mete for such an offender, I see well Syr (answered the ancient knight) that you are ignorant of the Giants force, in presuming so to combate with him: alas Sir, hee will not make any account of the enterpryse, if ten such as you came and waged the fight with him: therefore I cannot chuse but mislike your iudgement, in that any one will repute your enterpryse, rather for want of discretion, then vpon any good or sound aduise.

The knight of the Tigar took in good part, the counsell which his host laboured to haue him follow, but yet he did not intend to be ruled by him: so, after he and his host had talked an indifferent space, he withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, where he took his rest better then he had done the night before, and he reioyced greatly, that his bzyether Florian was not as yet arrived there, as also that himselfe was there ready to helpe him, if so be hee were brought to this cruell Collambra.

In the morning, after he had taken leaue of his courteous Host, hee departed to follow what hee had intended, and coming into a Forrest, where though he should trauaile to the Citie, where Collambra made her abode, he heard the roaring noise which the Sea made, whereto he would needes goe to see if he could espy any vessell, wherco the knight of the Savage man his brother might be imbarqued: but as he rode towards the Sea coast, hee heard a great bruit or noise some what nere him, and riding forward to see what it might be, he espyed a Shippe lying at Anker, and hard by it was tenne knights (belonging to Collambra the Mother of Arlencea) maintaining a fiers Combate against thre other knights, which he (so soone as he had seene them) knew them to be Platin, Berolde, & the Sage Aliard of the Obscure Valley, who had put their liues in hazard, onely to giue succour to the knight of the Savage man.

This sight moued him somewhat to reioyce, till suddenly he was astonished againe, beholding not past twentie paces from these knights that fought the Combate, a Giant of a maruellous stature, and Armed in rich and costly Armour,

who

who

## The Second Part

who cried to kill and murder those three knights, that presumed to make such resistance, and so hacked and hewed their enemies, as now one tumbled on this side, then another on that side, and the most of them being very dangerously wounded.

The Giant seeing this, beganne to waxe meruailous wroth with himselfe, when, mounting on horsebacke, he came to giue ayde to his knights, which the Knight of the Tiger perceiuing, and fearing least his arrivall would be hurtful to his three deare friends, he passed till he came before them, when, he saluted the Giant with these words.

Art thou not ashamed Espouuantable, to offer thy selfe against them whom thou seest soe wounded, and haue scanty power to defend themselves: let them alone and addresse thy selfe to me, who as my mortall enemy came now to seeke thee, for that I would deliuer that vnfortunate Isle, out of thy cruell and bloody tyranny. The Giant stayed a while to behold him, who had summoned him to the Combat in such braue manner, and perceiuing that he bare a golden Tiger in his shield, he knew presently that this was the knight, whom the world did hold in so great estimation, for he thought no other durst be so bold as to speake so proudly: neuertheless, regarding not the presence of the knight of the Tiger, but in seeing his knights so vanquished, he fell into these speeches.

I see well that the valour of these strange knights, is far different to them of this countrey, which maketh me the more desirous to hazard my fortune, for that my happy conquest will yelde me the more contentment, then coming to the knight of the Tiger, he began againe thus.

I desire you my knight to doe me so much fauour, as to tell mee, if any of you belong to the Emperours Court of Constantinople, or if you be the Sonnes, or of the lineage, of the noble Prince Don Edward, you might greatly content mee, if you would resolute mee herein, for I am perswaded, that you could not thus long maintain y fight against my knights, without you be some of them which I haue named.

I am content (answered the knight of the Tiger) to satisfie thee

## of Palmerin of England.

thou in that thou desirest, wherefore I giue thee to vnderstand that these knights were brought up in the Court of the Emperour of Constantinople, in the company of my selfe, who am the Sonne of the Prince Don Edward, and brother to the renowned knight of the Sauage man, on whose behalfe, I earnestly desire to requite the treason, which thou and other of thy kindred haue practised, to bring him vnder your subiection in this Island.

Art thou Palmerin (said the Giant) the eldest sonne to the Prince Don Edward, who vanquished Dramusian and Camboldam, and didst win the Isle which no man else could, thy King all them forth which kept the same?

For what cause desirest thou to know (answered the knight of the Tiger?) I pray for that I greatly desire said Espouuantable to enter the Combat with thee in the presence of my sister Collambra who would receiue vnspokeable contentment, in seeing thee severely tormented, for the dishonour thou hast done to her kindred: to which words the Prince replyet thus.

I am euen the selfe-same man whom thou hast so great desire to know, and I am glad to see thee so willing to fight the Combate, although it be in the place which thou thy selfe hast appointed, because I will make knowne publicly to all, how the heavenly powers haue sent me to chastise thy wicked life, as also the crueltie of thy sister Collambra. Well then (said the Giant) to the end thou maist the better follow thy enterprise, faile not to prepare thy selfe against the morning, and this night will I cause the field to be provided, wherein we intend to fight the Combate: and if those thy companions would be likewise set to worke, I haue three Cousins, which shall maintaine the Combat against them, and I will furnish them with Armour out of the Armoury of my brother Bravorant, because I see their Armour is greatly out of order, hauing fought so long against my knights: vpon which words, Berold took occasion to speake thus.

Thou shalt do vs great pleasure, to lend vs Armour that haue need of it, and so we will not refuse the Combate: as well to accompany and do seruice to the Prince Palmerin,

## The second Part

As to destroy and abolish the memorie of them, who haue kept the people here in such tyrannous seruitude. I see then (quoth the knight of the Tiger) that the combat betwene the Giant and me, must be ended first.

Noble Palmerin (said the Sage Aliart) We desire you to suffer vs the Combate first, for it may so fall out, as you hauing obtained the victorie against the Giant, feare will make his Cousins to forsake the field the day following: wherefore, to shunne the misfortune that may happen to vs, we desire you to cause the Giant to agree to this request, which if you do, you shall endue your selfe with perpetuall renowne, and doe vs a great pleasure, who are your humble seruants at commandement.

Seeing it is your earnest desire (answered the Knight of the Tiger) I am content that it shall be so, according as your selues thinke best to order it. The Giant went away as ioyfull as might be, for he promised himselfe the victory, and did verily make account to kill the knight of the Tiger, before the knight of the Sauage man arrived there, and in this ioy he came to his sister, who sat weeping and wringing her hands, because her knights were so vanquished, as also for the long tarryance of her daughter Arlencea, fearing least some mischance should hinder them, because they stayed so long: the consideration hereof, made her heart overmuch inclined in extreame passions, yet was she somewhat contented by her brothers presence, who prouided such necessaries for himselfe, as he should vse in the Combate in the day following against Palmerin of England.

The Giant being thus gone about his business, the Prince Palmerin demanded of his friend, for what cause the Giants knights did enter fight with them? whereto the Sage Aliart thus replied. My Lord, this Giant causeth a number of Spies for to lurke about this Countrey, who seeing but any strangers to come on the land here, or that any ship do but once lie here at Anker, they set vpon them with maineforce presently: in like manner chanced this misfortune to vs, who coming on land in this place, were no sooner offering to

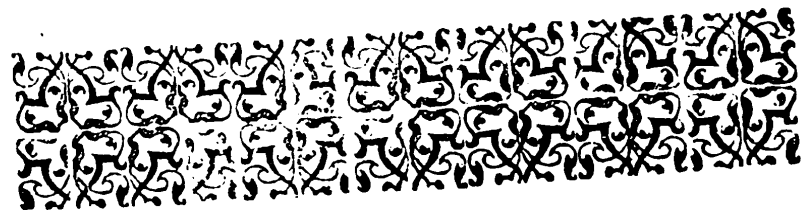
mount

## of Palmerin of England.

mount on horseback, but we were assaulted with these knights from the Giant, who came himselfe to encourage and animate them against vs, we being ready to fall into extreame danger, had not you so happily arrived, being sent (doubtlesse) to succour vs, that our enterprise might not come to an vnfortunate end, which could not otherwile be, in that the knight of the Sauage man is not yet brought hither.

Where making a pause, they went to seeke somewhat to sup withal, and to prouide something to lay to a little wound, which Berolde had receiued on his arme, for which cause Palmerin desired him, that he would not adventure the Combate the day following, but Berolde would by no meanes be perswaded.

The Sage Aliarts Esquier, took the Prince Palmerins horse, he staying there all that day in his friends company, all of them watching very diligently for the sight of any Shippe, wherein the Prince Florian should be brought captiue into his enemies hands: but when the darke night would not suffer them to looke any longer, they entred all into the Shippe which had brought them thither, for that they iudged themselves in more assurance there, then to tarrie on the land all the darke night, accounting them rather gouerned by arrogancy and folly, then any wise, done or discretion, that would trust them, who made no account of their faith, especially, being their professed and sworn enemies.



## The second part

### CHAP. XVII.

Of the Combate betweene the Giant Espouuantable, and the noble knight of the Tiger: and of the battell betweene Berolde, Platir and Sage Aliart, and the three Couzins of the Giant.



When Phebus had no sooner shewed his golden face on the earth the next morning, but these foure knights departed from the ship, three of them being armed but badly, by reason their armor had bene mangled very cruellly the day before: but yet though they were so slenderly prouided, they would not forsake the Combate against the Giants Couzins: so leauing the Shippe in the custodie of the Marriners, they rid on, accompanied with their Esquiers, who bare their Lances and their Shields, vntill they came to the place where the Giant remained. Being come thither, they beheld before the Castle, the place appointed for the combat, which was paled round about very handsomly, & scaffolds made of very great height, whereon was assembled an innumerable company of people, who came onely to see the Combat, for that they iudged it would be the most famous that euer was fought in y<sup>e</sup> Countrey, wherein they heartily desired that the giant might be depriued of life, for that he vsed the people with such extreame rigor, and yet they durst not speake against him, no not the chiefe nobles and gentlemen of the Countrey, but they stood in awe of him for his cruell dealing, being glad to honor him to his face, though they scorned and disdaind him behind his backe. And thus he liued Lordly ouer euery one, vsing all alike as slauiishly as might be, so that none durst displease or offend his rascall vassalls, least they should raise such a scandall among them, as the

## of Palmerin of England.

the tyrants punishment would be too hard for them to suffer, so that many times they practised the death of the Giant, that they might be discharged of his cruell oppressions: but let vs come againe to the former matter.

The knights entred into this place, which they knew was ordained for the combat, and there they stood attending for the Giant, who in short time after came to one of the windows of the castle, accompanied with his sister Collambra, he being armed as he was the day before. At last the Giant lifted vp the Beuer of his Helmet, to the end the Christian knights might be dismayed, beholding his sterne and vigorous countenance, and I assure you, albeit he was yong, yet was he so mighty and tall of stature, hauing such an ugly and fearefull face, as was sufficient to terrifie the hearts of them, who were not accustomed to see such a hideous proportion. For his face was alwayes bitterly frowning, the skin whereof smart and wrinkled, his lips bigge and boysterous, and gaping so farre asunder, as his teeth were seene very monstrously, so that the Anatomie agreed well with his name, he being called the Fearefull Giant. The Giant stood leaning on a Cushion of blacke Velvet in the window, and shewed to his sister the knight of the Tiger, desiring her to comfort her selfe, for that he intended to reuenge y<sup>e</sup> death of her sommes on him, because he that had slaine them was not as yet come: this he spake because he would not let her know what talke had passed on the day before, betwene him and the knight of the Tiger, lest she should chance to discoage her selfe, or doubt of the sufficiency of his strength, which both he and she esteemed equall to deale with ten good and hardy knights. In the meane while the Giant staid in the window, there came an Esquire of his, with men with him laden with armor, into the place where the Combate should be fought, and they coming before the prince and his company, after that the Esquire had saluted them, he entred into these speeches.

Gentlemen, my Lord the giant willed me to let you vnderstand, that he is not accustomed to make a conquest of those knights, who shal afterward excuse themselves, that their misfortune was for want of armor: and because he will auoid such an

impeachment, he hath sent you here choice of armour, willing you to take them, which you shall thinke most conuenient for you. And he willed me to bring him word, whether you will rather yeld to the mercy of his Sister Collambra, or abide the triall of himselfe and his Couzins: the Prince Platir answered the Esquire thus.

Trust me (my friend) I cannot thinke it mete to receiue thy Maisters armour, which we thanke him for, that he would so courteously send vs, because I carry this mind with me, that it is better for vs to lose our liues without his aid, then hauing his armour to fall into his hands vanquished, for our armour his not so much spoyled, but we may very well endure the triall of this Combate: wherefore, we will trie our fortune in this armour we haue, considering, skill must be used as well as defence, which if we imploy as we ought, there is no doubt but we shall haue the victory.

I am content to follow the aduise of Platir (saide Berolde.) And since you find it so conuenient (quoth the Sage Aliart) me think it were good the messenger returned backe to his Maister, and let him vnderstand, that he may come when please him into the field. I reioyce greatly (saide the Esquire) in the counsell of this young knight, that you will not take this Armour, which my Lord the Giant sendeth you: therefore let him that hath the aduantage boast of his winning in the end.

Thus the Esquire departed into the Castle of Collambra againe, giuing the Giant to vnderstand, what the knights had said, whereat he fumed and fretted greaely, to see what disdain these Christian knights made of him: whereupon, he toke his leaue of his Sister in this maner. Madame, I pray you abide at this window all the while the Combate endureth, for I shall be greatly iniured if I want your presence.

So departing, he went vnto his Couzins, who were all in blacke armour, conformed to their griefe and sorrow, and bearing for their deuices in their shields, the portraictures of Brocalon and Baleato, their Couzins, figured in a field of Sable they promising neuer to change their deuises, vntill they had reuen-

reued the death of the Giants the sons of Collambra, who were dearly beloued of their backle the Giant Espouuantable. With them he toke his way to the place appointed for the combate, the people reioyng when they saw him coming with his Couzins, who were in stature able to deale with fire such as the three knights were: which made the Giant to ride very merily, perswading himselfe, that the knight of the Tiger and his companions, should lose their liues in the field that day: then coming somewhat nere them, he began to vse these words. In sooth my friends, it were better for you to yeld your selues, then to abide the terrour of my combate. Not so sir (answered the knight of the Tiger) but albeit thy arrogant pride should seeme to fray vs, in these peoples iudgements, we are content to abide the vttermost: not doubting (God aiding vs) but to bring downe thy haughty stomacke, and these likewise that beare thy company.

Upon these words the Giant ran against the knight of the Tiger and his Couzins against the other knights, that the trampling of the horses made the earth to groane, and they were not so quicke and speedy in their course, but the knight of the Tiger and his companions were as nimble as they, meeting so brauely in the middelt of the Carriere, where the Giant broke his lance on the Prince Palmerins shield with so great force, as he was constrained to catch hold on the mane of his horse, otherwise he had fallen beside him: neuerthelesse the Giant was cast out of his Saddle with great violence against the ground, whereat he was maruailously offended, but the knight of the Tiger reioyced that he had broken his lance so well.

The other six knights were all likewise dismounted, except the Prince Platir, who kept his Saddle still: yet was the charge so rough vpon him, as he had almost borne his fellowes company, but that he recovered himselfe gallantly, hauing lost both his stirrups. The knight of the Tiger seeing the Giant coming towards him, cast himselfe beside his horse quickly, because he feared the Giant would haue killed his horse: then being on his feete, he spake to the Giant thus.

Content thy selfe a while thou counterfeist Don Quixote, and let thy



thy Cousins proceede in that they haue enterprised, for they that deale with him are such, as they shall find sufficient to abate their lofty minds: and after they haue tried their fortune (because we will not hinder them, neither do they the like to vs) thou and I will quickly decide our controuersie, when, do not doubt but thou shalt perceiue, the little regard I haue of thee, and the uttermost thou canst doe.

I see well (answered the Giant) that because thou hadst so good fortune to dismount me, it makes thee so bold to speake thus brauely: but I receive greater contentment the thou canst deuise, to see thee here in this place, where at mine owne pleasure I shall giue thee punishment, and with my sword repay the shame of my fall. Then drew he his sword forth of the scabbard, saying to the Prince, that he had caused that weapon to be made, onely to take reuenge therewithall, for the death of his Cousins Brocalon, and Balcato: with these words he ran fiercely on the Knight of the Tiger, and gaue him such cruell and forcible strokes, as had he not defended them worthily, his life would haue bene in great danger.

Merie rigorous was the blowes the Giant gaue the prince, so that most part of his shield was cut in peeces, and he had very little left to ward his enemy, and a great while it was before he could wound the Giant, yet at length he gained such opportunitie, as he wounded him grievously in three or foure places: which made the Giant to faint and waie somewhat wearie, both with the great losse of his blood, and also with his extreame sweating and chafing, to see himselfe so hardly matched by one knight, but all his fretting the prince regarded not, he folloved his intent so worthily, and redoubled stroke after stroke so roughly vpon him, as the Giant was constrained to retire, to take breathing awhile.

The knight of the Tiger was not sorry therat, for that he as gladly desired rest of the giant, though not by any such extreame occasion, considering also, he desired to see how his three friends continued the fight, with the giants three Cousins, who in sooth were brought to such a narrow point, as they had not the power to defend their enemies, for they both

had

had and did charge them so worthily, as the Prince did much delight himselfe in beholding them, they being so contragious, nimble and quicke, as they were at the beginning of the Combate. But the Prince Placir dealt so gallantly with him that was his enemy, as he had the general praise, and was iudged worthy the honour of that day, aboue his other two companions.

The Giant beholding his Cousins in such danger, and himselfe to haue lost the most part of his blood, likewise that he had such a strong and puissant enemy: his heart began to faint, but because he would not haue them know, in what great feare and debilitie he was, he came againe as lustily (as he could) to the Combate.

As for the Knight of the Tiger, he was ready and willing to entertaine him, which was more rough and sharply giuen to the Giant, then the first encounter was: and in the meane time they tried thus hardly together, the Knight which fought against Placir was so faint and feeble, as hee fell downe to the ground before him, when Placir taking his Helmet from him, strooke off his head, and shewed it to Collambra, as she sate in the window.

When she sawe that Fortune was thus fully bent against her, she presentlie shut the window, and weeping bitterly for this pittious sight, she pulled and rent her haire very cruelly, which the Giant beholding, that she dispaired of his victorie, and would not vouchsafe him any longer her countenance, he determined to sell his life as dearly as he could, to him that laboured to take it from him, and then beganne to assaile the Prince very furiously: but he perceiuing the Giants force could not endure long, so hackte and helued his Armour in peeces, as at last hee cutte out great collops of his flesh, and dyed all the grasse with the blood of the Giant Elpouan-table.

And the Knight of the Tiger looking aside, espied the Cousins of the Giants all subdued, and their heads presented (as the first was) by the other two Knights, euery one then expecting the ende of the Combate, betwene him and the Giant: and truely hee marvelled much that the Giant helde out

out so long, wherefore he layde such cruell strokes vpon him, as at the length he (being not able to sustaine himselfe) fell downe flat to the ground vpon his backe, committing his soule into the hands of them, who strengthened him in his wicked and abhominable deedes.

Then the knight of the Tiger tooke off his Helmet, to see whether he were alieue or dead, but when he saw no life was left in him, he tooke his sword by the point, and beate him with the hilt so about his head, as he made his eyes and his teeth to fall out, and then he cut off his legs by the knes, which being done, he thanked God of his happy victory, & the people for ioy gaue such a generall shout, as the earth did seeme to tremble there withall, they were so glad of their deliuey from the monstrous cruelty, wherein these Giants had so long time kept them.

And in this great ioy, they concluded altogether to goe and beset the Castle where Collambra was, that none of that bloody linnage might be left alieue: for except she were likewise dispatched, the people feared their former seruitude. In the meane while Collambra's knightes guarded the peoples entrance into the Castle, one of her Damosels came and humbled herselfe at the Prince Palmerins foote, with these speeches.

I desire you Sir knight, that you would take pittie on my Lady Collambra, and on vs that are her Damosels attendant on her, for we haue no other defence for our selues, then the three knights, who labour to keepe the people forth of the Castle, in that they would put my Lady to death, whom I pray you bouchsafe to defend from their crueltie: for more willingly would she receiue chastisement at your hands for her offences, then to fall into the peoples power, who are boide of reason in their reuenge.

The knight of the Tiger (fearing he should not come time enough to giue her succour) spake to his three friends in this manner. I desire you my brethren and friendes, to goe and assist Collambra, because the people seeke to put her to death. These three knights willing to satisfie the Princes request, began to thrust through the preece, and preuailed so much by their

their strength, that at last they attained the Castle gate, which was defended by Collambraes knights, one of them being slaine, and the other two ready to yeld themselves, at what time the knight of the Tiger and his companions, were come to the place where this great hurly burly was: which he being desirous to pacifie, thrust into the Castle Collambraes knights, and turning his face to the people, desired them to depart to their houses, and to assure themselves, that he would not faile to set them in such a sure state of libertie, as they should not be molested with such cruell tyranny, as they had but too long a time.

The people conceined such contentment by the words of the Prince Palmerin, as they presently departed thence, crying all in this manner: that the Island ought to be giuen to the knight of the Tiger, for that it was his owne by right, and they did heartily desire that he would accept it, they being content to humble themselves as his vassalles and subiects, so that he would not be perswaded by the flattering words of Collambra whose mallice was not inferior to the cruell Giants.

Palmerin made them promise to deale in such sort, as they should be all contented to their owne willes: so, giuing them a courteous farewell, he went into the great Hall to rest himselfe a while, and afterward he came to Collambra, who sat among her Damosels, her haire all disperced about her shoulders, hanging her head downe to the ground, and making such pittifull lamentation, as her Damosels could not chuse but bedew their cheekes with teares, beholding the extreame heavinesse of their Lady and misse, who at this instant remembered the death of her husband, the losse of her Sonnes, and destruction of her house, and the death of her Brother, who came onely for her sake thither, as well to defend her, as also to see the death of the knight of the Savage man, but now, being past all hope to haue him, and fearing lest by him, she had likewise lost her daughter Alencea, of whom she made most high and especiall account: all these occasions considered together, compelled her to immoderate mourning.

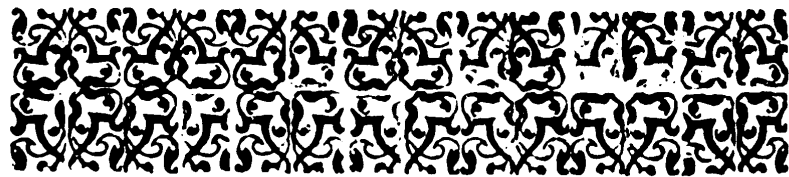
The

## The second Part

The knight of the Tiger hearing the great complaints of Collambra, was diuers times offering to comfort her, but he iudging his words would rather moze bere her, then pacifie her, let her alone to comfort her selfe so well as she could: but the prince Platir seeing how Collambra bectoled and made such a pittifull and heavy noyle, beganne thus to speake vnto the knight of the Tiger.

I thinke it good, and so do my two friends and companions that this Castle remaine vnto vs as our owne for euer, and to chase hence this cruell woman, or cause her to be brought into some such place, where her mallice may haue no power to endanger vs, or put any other good mind in feare. Friend Platir (answered Palmerin) I will agree to whatsoeuer you thinke expedient, but I pray you do not prouoke me to do Collambra any outrage, nor yet to bring her into my company, for I cannot endure to behold one so full of griefe as she is.

These three knights perceiuing that the sight of this cruell Giantesse, did much offend the Prince Palmerin, they concluded to haue her brought where their ship lay at Anchor, to carry her with them to Constantinople, because the Emperour should dispose of her as he thought mete: and they stayed not long to put their intent in execution, but caused her to be conueied in a Chariot, to the Port where their ship rode, leaving her there in the company of the Sage Aliart, vntill they had determined further for the state of the Island.



Chap.

## of Palmerin of England.

### CHAP. XVIII.

Of that which happened to the noble Prince Palmerin, of England, before he departed from the Profound Isle.



So fell out out (as the Historie reporteth) that Collambra) ouercome with exceeding griefe and anguish of minde) was brought into such a weake and feeble estate, as she fell on the ground in a trance, being no other wise reputed the for a dead body. When the Prince Platir, who desired the ruine of her whole progeny, commaunded his Esquire to take her vp, but she was so heauie and weightie, as they (hauing no other helpe) could scantly lift her, so bringing her downe the staires, conueyed her into a Chariot, with certaine Damoselles that attended on her, and so she was caried away from her Castle to the ship, being folloved all the way by a number of men and women on foote, who made such woefull and bitter lamentations, as it moued them to pitie, who had bene greatly iniured by her crueltie.

When they were come to the ship, they conueyed her there into, with two damosels of hers, who would by no meanes depart from her, but determined to beare her company, & take part of the ill fortune that might happen to her, such & so great was the amity they bare vnto Collambra, who seeing her selfe in the ship, and in the custodie of them that were her enemies, being depriued of al hope to come backe againe, she determined to cast her selfe into the sea, iudging that to be the onely way to end her sorowes, & so to be free from the practises of her foes. Berolde, Platir, & the Sage Aliart, being in the ship with her (but Palmerin by no meanes would come where she was) endeouored to comfort her as much as they could come where she was) endeouored to comfort her as much as they could, but she made no account of their

## The second Part

their perswasions, for she said, without he might see her daughter Arlencea againe, she should neuer give out her sorrowfull wailing, which she continued in the company of those knights, who knew very well, that nothing was such a soueraigne remedy to desperate folkes, as death it selfe: wherefore they concluded to leaue her in the company of the Sage Aliart, to prevent any cruellie she might offer on her selfe, as for Platin and Berolde, they went on sheare, and coming againe to the Citie, they found the Prince Palmerin among the people, who desired him to accept their faithfull homage, as to their onely Prince and soueraigne, in respect of the great and insupportable tyranny, from which they were deliuered by his noble prowess.

Palmerin receiued their curtesie in very gracious and gentle manner, but in no case would he accept the gouernment of the Isle, for that (quoth he) it appertaineth to my brother Florian, of the Forrest, otherwise called the knight of the Sauage man, he hauing aduentured his life to destroy those tyrannous Rulers, which sometime did possesse the same, as for me, and these my friends, we came hither onely but to finde him.

But if so be my brother Florian refused to be your gouernor, I will not faile to satisfie your iust and reasonable request, whereto reason commaundeth mee to condescend, and till the time I vnderstand my brothers minde, in his name I will receiue and make account of your homage, and assure your selues, I will see you haue a gouernour that shall like you all: in the meane time, I pray you make account of me, and behaue your selues as good and obedient subiects to him, who with great danger of his life, and losse of his blood, hath bought and redeemed your quiet libertie.

The principall Lords of the Island (who were there present before the prince) made answer, that they would in all things fulfill his commaundement, as those that honoured him with vnsained reuerence, in sight whereof, they resigned vp to him all their Castles and Fortresses, the keyes whereof they humbly deliuered him.

Palmerin in hauing visited their Castles, and set all things in

due

## Of Palmerin of England.

due and necessarie order, for the better encouragement of the inhabitants of the Island: he gaue the Ports and Castles into their hands againe, who had the custodie of them before, commaunding them to be very carefull and respectiue in the well guarding and ordering them, vntill such time as his brother arrived there.

The Prince Palmerin was entertained by the people of this Isle very honourably, and he caused the treasure which belonged to Collambra, to be locked vp within her Castle, that it might be deliuered to his Brother Florian: but as he was about to appoint a Porter, at the place of most assurance in this Castle, he perceiued Siluian to enter, accompanied with the ancient knight, who had borne the Hoste to the Prince at his first arriual in the Isle, for he being enformed of the victory, which Palmerin had atchieued against the Giant Espouuantable, would needs come with Siluian to the Citie, the sight of whom did not a little reioyce the heart of the Prince Palmerin.

The ancient knight being come into his presence, humbled himselfe at his seate, with these words. My gracious Lord, in that I haue not bled you with such entertainment as your nobilitie deserued, I humbly desire, that you would vouchsafe to pardon me. Palmerin arose and tooke him vp, and embracing him very graciously, spake thus vnto him.

I haue not forgotten the exceeding friendship, wherewith you bled me when I was in your house, for the which I account my selfe greatly beholding to you: and for that at this present, my power will not stretch to make you any sufficient amends, I pray you to accept the gouernment of this Island, the Lord thereof I know will be very well contented therewithall, for if Fortune vouchsafe to call me to any dignitie, I will not faile to remember your great kinnesse.

Doe you thinke my Lord (answered Argentio, which was the name of this ancient knight) that the people here, will admit any other gouernor then your selfe? Yea truly (answered Palmerin) for that he which is the Lord hereof, is my brother, to whom this Island doth appertaine by duty. I feare me

¶

my

## The second part

my Lord (saide Argentao) that some harme hath happened to him, by them of the stocke and lineage of the Giant Brauorant, but since it standeth so with your gracious pleasure, to call mee (vnworthy wretch) to so great credite and honour (which I knowe it is your will I should not refuse,) I esteeme my selfe the most happiest man aliuie, desiring you to vnderstand the will of the people, for if they doe not imagine well of me preferment, it were better for me to content my selfe with mine own poore house, where it liked you to accept a lodging, and whereof I pray you to dispose, as your owne alwayes at commaundement, and to thinke of me, who (during my life time) vowe my selfe your humble vassalle and obedient Subiect.

The people hearing the wordes of Argentao, who was a Christian Knight, one of very good life, and alwaies a great enemy to the Giants, did very well allow to accept him for their gouernour, promising generatly before the Prince, that they would honour him with dutifull loue and obedience.

The Prince Palmerin sent to call the Sage Aliart, commaunding Siluian to stay the meane while in the Shippe, who being come thither, and entred into the Ship, he was presently taken with exceeding feare, when he beheld the ougly frowning countenaunce of Collambra, which he iudged as ill fauoured, as the report went of Espouuantable her Brother, whom the people of that countrey thought to be inuincible, before they saw him so nobly conquered by the valliant Palmerin of England.

Siluian hauing declared the pleasure of his Lord, the Sage Aliart presently departed to the Citie, and being come to the Princes his friendes, he found them determining to send to Constantinople the Esquier of the Prince Berolde, who was named Albanis, willing him to depart thence with the Ship, and to present the Emperour of Greece with the newes of this happy victory in that Island, also to deliuer to his Maesty the Giantesse Collambra.

When they had concluded on the Esquiers message, he departed from them to the Ship to Collambra, when, the Pilot hoysing his Sayles, and the winde seruing them very gallantly,

## Of Palmerin of England.

73

lie, they rode on at pleasure, and cut the Seas with maruellous expedition. But the Prince Palmerin perceiuing, that his three friends had written their mindes to them they best thought on, he was sorry that he had done as much, neuerthelesse, he thought it not fit he should venture so boldly, to commit his secrets to any one else, sauing his friend Siluian.

When to driue fancies out of his mind, he desired his friends to beare him company in visiting the Isle, whereto they willingly consented, and Argentao caused two of the Giants Hoists to be put in a readinesse, wherein he and the principall Lords of the Island bare them company, in riding about the Island.

After they had seene the most part of the Profound Isle, they came to another, which was called the Perillous Isle, being very well peopled, and fortified with a number of goodly Towers and Castles of no small riches, that the noblest Prince in the world could not wish for a more stately gouernment. Argentao, who was very well acquainted with the customes and maners of that Island, gaue them to vnderstand the rare singularities thereof, desiring them not to thinke it strange, that they saw the people so scant, and they that were there, so fearefull, for it was the extreme cruelty of the Giant Brauorant, that made them forsake their houses, looking every houre when they should be put to the sword.

These knights receiued great pleasure in beholding these two Islandes, and so they rowed about untill it was the next day in the morning, when, then came they to the place (as you may reade in the first part of this History) where Palmerin went on shore to end a strange aduventure, there they landed, and mounted on their horses to get vp on the high Rocks, but the way was so narrow, and the Rocks so steepe, as they were faine to alight againe, and giuing their horses to their Esquires they went vp the Rocks on foot after one another.

But before they were come to the place where Palmerin found the Monument, with these letters engrauen thereon. Take heed thou passe no further: they were so weary, as they were glad to mount on their horses againe, and so in short

## The second part

time they attained the top of the rocke, where they rested themselves, being abashed to see such a huge mountaine. But when Argentao and the three knights were come to the fountaine, they had then a greater cause of astonishment, then any they had seen as yet, for there they saw monstrous huge Beastes, like unto them which Palmerin slew, when they would not suffer him to drinke of the water: and I assure you, that these Beastes were so cunningly and artificially framed, as one would haue iudged them to be aliue, they made such a bignons and fearsfull shew, being chained by the necke with the selfe same chaines as they were, whom Palmerin (by his noble valour) discomfited. This rare and ingenious figure declared, what great study and practise Vrganda compassed, to leaue such a strange edifice in remembrance of her knowledge.

Palmerin seeing this rare monument to surpass all that euer he had seen before, suspected that the Sage Aliart had done it by his Art, to cause them wonder at it. Wherefore he desired that he would satisfie him whether it be so or no, the Sage Aliart made this answer.

My Lord, the which intended the aduenture of this fountaine, did will, that he which was so happy to atchieue the honour thereof, should be recompenced according to his worthy deserts: and to leaue to all posterities a perpetual remembrance of him, she ordained that these cruell beasts, which are framed in the naturall shapen of them which you slew, should remaine still in this place, to the end that they which chaunce to come into this Island, may render continual laude and commendation to your worthy prolesse. Yet thinking this not sufficient enough to your prayse, she caused to be erected the portraictures of those knights which belonged to the Enchantesse Eutropa, and whom you worthily brought vnder your obeyesance, they being liuely carued in marble, of the same height and proportion as they were: and here they are figured defending their shields which you may yet see hanging on their seuerall Pillers, euen in the same manner as they were, when you fought for them before this Island was conquered.

And for the Isle it selfe, it sometime belonged to the Sage Vrganda,

## of Palmerin of England.

Vrganda, to whom you must thinke your selfe greatly beholding, seeing that by her means, your noble daides remaine registered for perpetuall memorie.

Certainely (answered Berolde) I cannot deny, but he must needs iudge himselfe well fauoured of her, yet ought we to regard him the more, who had the power to end such a perillous aduenture: and I may say to you, that some would make them as fearefull as these Beastes made by Arte, because they giue shewe of such rauinous crueltie, as they would of them which were one here aliue.

Do you not see (said Platir) the poesie engrauen on this Piller, which doth inuite vs to drinke at this fountaine: And then the letters which are within, commaundeth vs to defend our selues: trust me, since the danger is avarranted by the Prince Palmerin, I will yet see further into this aduenture. With these words he approached to the fountaine, and having drunke of the water, commended the sweetnesse thereof aboue all other waters.

Argentao, and they of the Profound Isle, did greatly maruel to see such strange sights: in like manner did Platir, and Berolde, albeit they were good and hardy knights, yet did they admire with the other for company, extolling his haughty and noble prolesse, who (by his famous conquest) brought the Island to be inhabited.

After they had a long time discoursed on the singularitie of this fountaine, they took their way to the Castle, where hard by the riuers side, stood foure faire Jasper pillars, whereon hangged foure shields, like unto them which Palmerin won from the foure knights, and there stood the images of the knights in Columbs of Marble, hauing the like Armour and Shields as the liuing knights had, and standing as though they best regard to their shields, whereon their seuerall names were written in letters of Gold.

Palmerin was as greatly amazed at y fight hereof, as he was the same day he approached the aduenture, & while the knights took pleasure to behold this strange monument, he perceined to come ouer the Bridge an Esquire, who was sent thither by



## The second Part

Satrafort the gouernoz of the Castle: the Esquire had no sooner seen the knight of the Tiger, but he presently returned into the Castle, to give his Maister to vnderstand, that the Lord of the Island was arrived there: whereupon, Satrafort came forth to receiue him, and with humilitie conducted him into the Castle, wherein they were no sooner entred, but Plair began after this manner.

He thinks the strange sights of this Countrey, is farre contrary to them in all other parts of the world, in that these motions shew the great danger of the aduentures passed, and the brauery of this castle doth evidently witnesse, that the skill and knowledge of the Sage Vrganda, ought to be esteemed aboue all other. The Prince Plair could not chuse but maruell very much, seeing the sundry rare monuments, which the Sage Vrganda had erected in that place, where she made her continuall abiding, because she would alwayes ayde those whom she made account of for her so speciall friends, as you may reade at large in the booke of the valiant Amadis of Gaule. But to come againe to our former purpose, these knights hauing seene the lower parts of the Castle, at last came to the place where Palmerin of England (in times past) found the Giant Demetail, the sight hereof caused them to passe on further, and after they came to the blacke riuer, wherein the malicious Eutropa cast her selfe, when the Prince Palmerin toke her by the hand, being on the plancke, which was so dangerous, the sight of this perillous aduenture, made them forget all the brauery they had seene before. Siluian began to thinke on his masters fortunate successe, in atchieuing such a worthy & famous aduenture, and the conceit of the manifold troubles he had passed, was of such force in the gentle Esquiers minde, as he began to shed teares: but the knight of the Tiger perceiving how Siluian wept, while his other friends were busied in beholding the occasions there present, he came and embraced Siluian, saying these words.

I would haue thee thinke (my good friend Siluian) that the knight, who hath the rare beauty of the princeesse Polinarda, imprinted in his heart, could not faile to accomplish these aduentures, how dangerous so euer they were at first to him, and I assure

## of Palmerin of England.

affure thee, that the vnfaired loue I beare to her, made me to trie the hazard of this vncouth place, from whence (in the soueraintie of her name) I returned victor: wherefore, I pray thee reframe thy teares, and perswade thy selfe assuredly, that the earnest desire I haue to do seruice to my Lady, encouraged me in all my trauailes.

Then he left Siluian, and came againe to his friends and companions, speaking to them in this order I pray you my friends to forsake this place, which doth nothing else but trouble your thoughts with silent verations of grieve, thinking on things of so small importance: for me thinks Satrafort saith, it is time that we go to supper. At these words the knights departed thence, commending highly the valour of the knight of the Tiger, and Satrafort brought them into a faire great chamber, the windowes thereof being ouer a faire Garden very thicke beset with trees, and a prettie small riuer taking his course thorough it. In this place the knights were set to supper, being serued with such great pompe and state, as there wanted nothing that could be deuised, and Satrafort being desirous to witnesse their great welcome into the Perillous Isle, shewed himselfe surpassing bountifull, and beside, he was so glad of the presence of the noble Palmerin of England, as he spared no trauaile to purchase those things that might yield him contentation.

All Supper time, they delighted themselves in pleasant discourses, vntill the tables being withdrawne, they arose, with courtesie one to another, and then Satrafort brought each of them into his chamber, which were hanged with rich cloathes of tapestrie, that the Enchantresse Eutropa, and the Giant Dramusiande had left there, because the house should be decked at all times, that when any of his friends came, they might haue the better entertainment: as for them whom he thought not well on, they durst not be so bold as to presume thither, because as he blessed his friends with courtesie, so did he his enemies with crueltye.

## The second Part

### CHAP. XIX.

Here is yet continued what happened to Palmerin of England in the Perillous Isle.



These foure knights were no sooner risen on the next morning, but they walked into fields about the Castle, which were very faire and fragrant to behold, in that the Sage Vrganda did take great delight in her life time to be very busie there, during the time the Spring lasted, in planting and setting yong and tender grafts, which were done in the manner of walks and Arbours, hauing kept such iust proportion and measure in setting them, as surely they would content any friendly eye. The walks were paved with large stones, of colour of white and greene, and the trees about them were so brauely branched, as in the Summer time the Sunne could not offend any with heate, there was such a delicate shadow, and in the winter, the cold and sharpe winde could not come at them, by reason the trees were so thicke and high. In the Garden there stood a goodly Cestern, to receiue the water that fell when it rained, and from it by pipes and other deuises, the water was conueyed into all the necessary rooms in the Castle: this cestern was inclosed round about with Crystal, and bound with barres of siluer maruailously beautifully. These knights could not sufficiently content their eyes, with the diuersitie of braue deuises about the Castle, and so long they walked till a messenger came and called them to dinner, when, though they were loath to go so soone in againe, yet (remembering their courteous hoste) they went presently. The rest of the day they spent in their former exercise, vntill the night came stealing

on

## of Palmerin of England.

on them, and euery man being in his lodging, could not entend to sleepe, they were so busie in praising the doods of the Sage Vrganda.

When Aurora had saluted the knights with her amiable countenance at their windowes, Satrafort came into their chambers, to giue them the mornings courtesie, and comming to the Prince Palmerin, he began to vse these speeches. As it seemeth to me (worthy Sir) the nouelties of this Island is continually chaunging, and they appeare more strange euery houre then other, for in the Garden where you were yesternight, at this instant is standing a goodly Lodging, inuented and builded (me thinks) very ingeniously, and as it cometh to passe, it exceedeth all the occasion: you haue yet seene: for as I made an offer to enter into it, I was forcibly kept backe by two monstrous Giants, who will not suffer any to come in at the doore. Therefore I thinke it good that you trie their courtesie, for I am perswaded, that the reward which is due to your knightly trauailes, bestowed in the conquering of this Isle, vndoubtedly is within that place.

These newes did so greatly amaze the knights, as they started by presently, and armed themselves, and comming into the Garden, they found in the middell thereof, the stately Lodging which Satrafort had declared to them. The workmanship whereof, seemed miraculous strange, the walles being of Marble, and so ingeniously built, as it is vnpossible to finde the like.

The couerture of the house was of Azure stone, which with the glimpse of the Sunne did shine so brauely, as it greatly delighted the knights to behold. On the top of all the house, stood a Piller of Siluer of a great bignesse, and there leaned against it a faire Table, compassed with exquisite deuises of Arte: on the highest part thereof was figured the heauens, and the seauen Planets in liuely Images pictured therein, Mercurie being Lord as then, who was attired in the ancient habite, which they of ancient time did report him to weare in the middell of the table was pictured Hercules, tearing in peces the

the

## The second Part

At the foure corners of this house was foure goodly trees, who were iust of the height of the house, and their branches spreading brauely all abroad: and round about the house was glasse windowes of maruailous costlinesse, which gaue light plentifully into all places of the same, the glasse hauing such ancient Histories figured in gold on it, as the knights could not loke so much as they liked: which made Platir to speake thus. It should seme if Vrganda made this her Study, and delighted to decke it so brauely without, no doubt but she would make it farre more sumptuous within, wherefore, I thinke it good that we trie the crueltie of the Giants: and if fortune doe accept vs in her fauour, we shall spee of the treasure inclosed within this house, and I desire that I may be the first in prouing the aduenture, if so be the Prince Palmerin like well of it, for I would be loth to go against his will in any thing.

Why do you not procede in your determination? (answered Palmerin) I promise you I cannot mislike of any thing you allow, and therefore I pray you get vs libertie of the giants to enter: but if it be so, that you cannot spee as you would, we will assist you if we see any danger. The Prince Platir hearing the words of Palmerin, would not trise any longer time, but hauing drawn his sword, and buckled on his shield, he went on nobly against the Giants, who taking their places in their hands prepared themselves to receiue the Prince Platir: and when he had set his fete on the first step, which was not past the height of one Cubite, one of the Giants cast his space to the ground: and coming two paces forward (as though he had bene a living body) he took the Prince Platir in his armes, and hauing throwne him downe the thre steps to the groued, returned againe to his companion.

Platir being greatly offended to see himselfe so vsed, came and made a second assault: but he was serued againe as he was before. Which when the Prince Berolde perceiued, he went and tried his fortune: but hee spee according as Platir did.

Palmerin being agræued to see his friends so abused, desired to reuenge this spightfull iniurie, and so aduanced himselfe to  
trie

## of Palmerin of England.

trie the aduenture, not knowing whether the Sage Aliart would hazard himselfe or no: but because he would be one, he stepped before the Prince, knowing the aduenture was not reserued for him, and making no account to beare his friends company in their foyle, therfore he went to it smyling, but the giants shewed him so much fauour, as they did but thrust him forth againe, because an Image of golde (which stood at the doze within) cried out aloud thus: Take heede you suffer not the Sorcerer to enter the Chamber, where my Treasure lyes, because he is not worthy.

Then suddenly these two Giants took Palmerin by the arme, and thrust him downe one of the staires, which made Palmerin haue an ill opinion of this aduenture, and then he remembred all his good fortunes passed, thinning now he should make a conclusion of all, seeing he could not atchieue the conquest of this, which seemed to him lesse then any other he had attempted.

In the meane while his thoughts were occupied in this conceit, the Sage Aliart, (who knew well his inward afflictions) came to the gate againe, more to be partaker with his friends in their foyle, then for any opinion he had himselfe to ende the aduenture, and he no sooner offered to charge the Giants, but without making any shewe of resistance, they humbled themselves at his fete, granting him free libertie to enter at his pleasure.

The sight hereof pleased well the Sage Aliart, and as he stood beholding the workmanship of the doze, the Image of gold (which stood there as the watchman) opened in the presence of them all, a little Chest, which she held upon her knees, and hauing taken a key of gold out of it, threwe it downe before them on the ground.

The Sage Aliart stooped and took it vpp, and without any further delay opened the doze, when, Palmerin, Platir, and Berolde, coming to him, did all enter with him, they attributing the cause of their repulse as thus, that Vrganda had not left the aduenture to be discovered by them, in that her wisdom was discovered by so strange a meane, this first  
chamber

chamber being her library, and therein she was alwayes went to study: the sight hereof did very much delight their eyes, more then any thing else they had seene in the whole Island. This Library was round about garnished with bookes, which this Sage Lady was alwayes went to contemplate on, the bookes lying vpon very sumptuous Desks of Gold, and the Desks being supported with beasts of Antique worke, being all of the selfe mettall. The coverings of these bookes were of cloath of Gold, hauing at euery corner placed pretious stones of incredible value: but the riches of this Chamber might not compare with the next to it, the walles wherof was round about decked with costly pictures of ladies, manifesting most rare and singular beauty, they being all in such rich riches and deuises of apparell, as one would haue iudged them liuing creatures, such was the rare inuention of arte, bestowed on these Images of Goddesses, and diuers other beautifull Ladies. The Princes gazing on these delicate figures, attributed to them maruellous commendation, wishing that their ladies were there present, to see such braue and sumptuous monuments: and they iudged that the sight of these beautifull Pictures did as well content their eyes, as though they had seene their best beloved Ladies, being the better put in minde of them by these so like shadowes. All along one part of this chamber, was the portraits of such kings and Quenes, as liued in y<sup>e</sup> time of this Sage Magitian Vrganda, her owne picture likewise being in the midst of the, she sitting in a chaire of gold, hauing her booke lying before her, wher on she made semblance as though she read. On the right side of her counterseit was placed Oriana, the daughter of king Lisuart, king of great Brittain, and on the other side was Briolania, the Quene of Sobradisa: then Leonorina, the Princesse of Constantinople, and with her the two faire princesses Melicia, and Olenda, each of them hauing their names imposed vnder them in letters of gold. And such was the rare beauty of these ladies which I haue here named, as not one of the was extolled aboue the other, but all of them equall together: which maketh me to think, that they which reigned, & had the commendation of beautie in the time of the valiant king Amadis, had worthily the

the praise is used of them, and their knights gained immortall renowne in aduenturing for them. In another place was to be seene Yseul the faire, Geneuera the Quene to king Arthur, and friend to sir Launcelot du Lake: Yseul with the white hands, was accompanied with many beautiful ladies, which sometime flourished in great Brittain, and of her Bracando was studious to leaue most worthy report, because she was highly esteemed of him. In another place stood the Emperesse Polinarda, and Agriola the Emperesse of Allemain, Gridonia, Florida, and Franceлина, figured so nere their iust proportions, as there wanted nothing but life it selfe: all of them worthy high praise for their delicate swete faces, but Florida was supposed to exceed them all. In another place of the Chamber was placed their shadowes, who (in the court of the Emperour of Greece) caused many knights to take aduenturous trauals on them: the first was Polinarda, the Daughter of the vertuous and magnanimous prince Primaleon, accompanied with the faire Miragarda, Leonarda y<sup>e</sup> princessse of Thrace, Altea, Sidelia, daughter to the king Tarnaes of Lacedemonia, & Arnalte the princessse of Nauarre: as chiefe of these was placed the Princessse Polinarda who seemed in beauty to be aduantaged aboue the other. And there was the prince Florendos painted, to see if fortune would respect him any more in that place, and to speake indifferently, such was the workmanship bestowed likewise on Miragarda, as one could hardly iudge whether Polinarda did excell her or no. Oriana and Briolania were of such equalitie together, as it would haue tried a sharpe wit to say, which of the was fairest: but yet the portrait of the fair Oriana, was set forth with more shew of gravity, as wel becommed the daughter of such a famous king, assuring you that her ciuill and gracious countenance, was able to haue woone the victorie of the prettiest eye.

But what if vpon these beautifull motions, each one of these knights should haue fallen from affecting his best beloved: for I promise you, that nether Oriana, Briolania, Polinarda, Florida, nor Miragarda, was not to be compared to Yseul the faire: yet notwithstanding, no one of them could be moued to that opinion, for each of them was so deceitfull in regard to his swaine, as

## The second part

all other beside did but offend their eyes. For thus they perswaded themselves, that true and faithfull hope being grounded in the heart, and firmly fixed in the eyes of any man, could not be remoued by any sinister occasion, in that their thoughts were settled, and their liking satisfied: but they that are changed with euery countenance, and euery face liketh them, but none contenteth them, they are such recreants from Loue, as they are not worthy to come within his court.

The Princes commended the beauty of Yseul, as it worthily deserued, but yet they thought their owne Ladies fairer then she, and so they stood maruailing at these delectable inuentions, whereon they could not gaze sufficient, their desires were courting in such an endlesse Labozynth. Beyond them all, the Prince Palmerin was rauished in affection, seeing the counterfeite of her that did so much torment him, she being attired in the same manner, as she was when he took his farewell of her: whereupon he fell into such an arrogant conceite, as though it were his Lady Polinarda indeed, and fearing he had moued her to any offence, he began in this manner to speake to the Picture.

Madame, I know you are she who onely hath the power to command me, but what profite do I receiue in vsing such speeches to her, who maketh her selfe deafe, and will not heare me? And yet do I couet y<sup>e</sup> you would but respect my words, which fauour would but strengthen my loue, and lengthen my life. But I see wel madam, you make no account of the words which may and can preuent my vnhappy destinie: wherefore, by how much I vtter them to my great detriment and grief, by so much the sooner shall I knit vp my small lamentations, and thus I assure you, that I am he who onely liues to die for your sake. Platir vsed the like language towards Sidelia, the Daughter to king Tarnas of Lacedemonia, to whom he was shortly after espoused. Berolde the Prince of Spaine finding not his Lady and Mistres in this place, failed not to praise her, as though she had bene in presence: for it is the custome of a true and faithfull louer, who delighteth in her he made his choise of, whether she be absent or present, yet to commend & extoll his only felicitie,

## of Palmerin of England.

tie, and so did the Prince Berolde thinke it a great iniurie, that any should commend their Ladies, aboue his best beloued Onistalda, who in sooth did well deserue her place among the other.

And if the Sage Vrganda forgot to place her in her Study, it was for no other occasion, then because the place was so furnished with them, who were esteemed the most soueraigne in beautie through the whole world, when they had sufficiently contented their eyes with these bzaue shewes, the Sage Aliart spake vnto them in this manner. I perceiue my Lordes, that these images haue deprived you of naturall vnderstanding, in that they cause you to forget them, whom your duty commandeth you to vse with honour: wherefore, I pray you doe not seeme so fond in praysing these figures, which are no other but shapes without substance, for in the beholding these, you do but mispend your time, looking for that recompence which they haue not the power to giue you. And therefore it shall be more necessary for you, to goe to them whom the Pictures represent, who in time will more sufficiently content your hearts, then your eyes receiue pleasure in looking on these toys, which Vrganda giueth you to see at this present, by her Enchauntment.

Palmerin hearing the words of his Brother the Sage Aliart, returned to him with this answer. Doe you maruaile (Syr Aliart) if they which behold the liuely presentations, of so faire and beautifull Goddesses, finde good cause to busie their bzaines, and receiue their memories? Credite me, I thinke no man but would be rauished in delight, to see things of so rare and excellent importance.

Palmerin spake in this manner, because he would not haue his friends suspect his amorous thoughts, so departing thence, they went againe to the Castle, where (prouision being made) they sate downe to dinner, which being ended, they concluded to depart from the Island: whereupon, Palmerin caused Satriafort to be called into his presence, with the other Gentlemen that came in his company, when, Palmerin speaking to his Brother the Sage Aliart, began to vse his speeches thus.

## The second part

**I** should not consider with my selfe (my noble friend and Brother) which way Fortune might aduance me to such estate, as I should be able to recompence the manifold courtesies I haue receiued at your handes, you might repute mee of a most base and ignoble minde: wherefore to witnesse to you the great feare I haue, least I should be condemned amongst the vnthankfull, I here frankly and freely giue you the Perilous Isle, which I haue conquered with great trauaile and losse of my blood, desiring that you would accept thereof, in that it ought rather to be vnder your gouernment, then any other that I know.

Wherefore, I pray you not refuse my gentle gift, and I would it were of such estimation, as I could finde in my heart to bestow vpon you, for I perswade my selfe, that it was the will of Vrganda, it should be reserved for you. And so Satrafort, I perceiue he is as willing hereto as my selfe, desiring you, that you would account of him as his noblesse and vertue requireth, that you may discharge the duty wherein I am greatly bound to him.

My Lord (answered the Sage Aliart) they of this Island haue good occasion to be offended, seeing you will commit it in to the handes of him, who is not worthy to come within it: neuerthelesse, the earnest desire I haue to doe you seruice, willet me not to make refusall of your gracious offer, and I accept Satrafort, not as my subiect, but as my loving friend and companion, as well for the valour of his person, as likewise to let you perfectly vnderstand, that I am he who bowes himselfe alwayes at your commandement.

Thus concluding his speeches, he offered to take the Prince Palmerins hande to kisse it, but the courteous Prince would not permitte him, then taking the Sage Aliart in his armes, he beganne againe as followeth. My louing Brother, if Fortune rapse me to any such preferment, as I may finde some what worthy your good desertes, you shall well perceiue the affection I beare you: in the meane while, imagine the best of mee.

The

## Of Palmerin of England.

The Prince Berolde and Platir, commended marueilously the liberalitie of Palmerin, whose presence was more acceptable to Satrafort, then the Sage Aliart, so that he would gladly haue changed his maister: neuerthelesse, he concealed his mind closely to himselfe, doubting least he should purchase the displeasure of his new Lord, to whom he aduanced himselfe to giue him his faith for his dutifull obedience, praying the Knight of the Tiger, that he would continue him in his wonted noble fauour. Palmerin vsed such friendly behauiour towards him, as he remained well content withall, and hauing left the Sage Aliart to giue order about the customs of the Isle, he imbarqued himselfe in the ship with Argentao, being desirous to goe on firme land so soone as he could possible, considered also, that hee would haue Arganto returne to his gouernment.

And because he would the more commodiously rip vp his secret grieue to Siluian, he tooke his leaue of the princes Berolde and Platir, giuing the to vnderstand, that he must of necessitie goe alone by himselfe, for that hee had an aduenture assigned him, where he promised to be on the day ensuing.

These three thus parting, Platir and Berolde being glad to please the Prince Palmerin in any thing he thought meete, they entred the same foyll, wherein they were brought thither, and so humbly taking their farewell of Palmerin, they sayled towards Constantinople, the wind and weather seruing them so commodious, as in few dayes they attained the firme land.

In like manner did the Prince Palmerin in another Countrey, after he had taken his leaue of Argentao, who likewise returned into the Profound Isle, where his Subjects receiued him very patiently, accounting them highly bound to the Prince Palmerin, in ordaining them such a Gouernour, who would in no case suffer the people of that Island to be so cruelly dealt withall, as they had bene before of the bloody Giants.

M

CHAP.



CHAP. XX.

How Alfernao arriued at the Emperours Court of Constantinople, and of that which happened to him.



At many dayes after the Knight of the Sauvage man, was departed from the Citie of Constantinople, the Emperour was aduertised of his losse, by the Prince Florians Esquire, which caused no small grieve thow the whole Court: but it came so to passe, that Alfernao arriued there vpon the sudden, euen as the Emperour sat leaning on the Table, lamenting for the want of his Nephew Florian, and when he had caused him to come before him, Alfernao fell downe at his fete with these words.

Illustrious and most gracious Emperour, I humbly desire your maiesty, that you would thinke of me in your wonted fauour & clemency, not remembzing my passed transgressions, for if your Grace looke into the depth of them, I shall be found worthy of most grieuous punishment, which your royall clemency hath power to moderate, in that you are accustomed to be mercie to them, whose offences deserue rigorous intreating. I am (dread Prince) that ancient man, who came and requested your highnesse assistance, and dissembling with teares and faine speeches, (which were nothing else but more deceite) that I had great neede of the ayde of one of your Knights: wherebpon you granted licence to your noble Nephew, that he should leaue your Court and goe in my company, but I intending deceit, was deceiued my selfe, and could not execute on him what I had determined.

Then began Alfernao to discourse to the emperour, the whole successe of his Nephewe Florian of the Ferrell, who had sent him

him to informe his Maiestie of all that hapned to him, that the report of the Esquire might be the better belicued: whereto the Emperour thus answered.

Certainly Alfernao, you haue brought my deere Friend and Nephew, into the greatest danger that euer could happē to him, and albeit I haue good reason to the contrarie, yet not for thine owne deserts I pardon thee, but for bringing me so good tydings of him, whom the Heauens would not suffer to fall into the hands of the cruell Collambra: but trust mee Alfernao, your dealing shall remaine to me for a sufficient example, how I giue credit hereafter, either to teares or faire speeches, especially coming from such a one as you seeme to be. As for Arlencea, I esteeme maruellous well of her courtous dealings towards my Nephew: and if it fortune that she come into my Court, I will neede my good will to requite her honest and vertuous deserts: in the meane time you may goe to your Chamber, and rest you: selfe, and if you please to stay the coming of my Nephew and Arlencea, you shall beare record of their entertainment, in hope of which, I remit all that is past.

I would gladly (answered Alfernao) go where the Emperesse is, that the feare which shee hath conceyued by the Knight of the Sauvage-mas Esquire, may be perswaded in hearing the truth. While he was thus speaking, the Emperesse (accompanied with her Ladies, came to the Emperours presence, whercof he was very glad, which made him beginne thus.

Madame, I perceiue that the desire you haue to vnderstand what is become of my Nephew Florian, hath caused you to come so suddenly hither, which hath saued this man a labour, for that he was coming to you.

The Emperesse and their Ladies, being all in their accustomed places, he commanded the Pigromancer Alfernao, to re- presse againe vnto the Emperesse his former discourse, that shee might likewise be acquainted with his deceiptfull treason: but the reporte displeased her very much, as also all her Ladies and Gentle-women, raising such a hatred in themselves against Alfernao, as they desired the Emperour they might departe the place.

The second part

The Prince Primaleon seeing the great choller of the Ladies began very pleasantly to smile at them, all the Princes in the Hall likewise bearing him company: and in the meane time this laughter lasted, they heard a great noyse without in the Pallace, diuers running to know the occasion, they beheld Albanis the Esquire to the Prince Berolde of Spain, to come leading by the hand the Giantesse Collambra, the sight of whom, made the people to flocke on heaps exceedingly, and such wondering, as all the Pallace sounded with the Echo of their noyse.

Albanis entred the great hall holding Collambra by the hand, her face being so fearefull, as moued the Emperour to start suddenly. Alfarnao had no sooner espyed her, but his heart came in a manner dead, neuerthelesse, he couered his grieffe so cunningly as he could, and hauing embraced her, began in this manner.

Madame, it should appeare, that the same misfortune which hath brought me hither, hath had the like authority ouer you: wherefore I desire you to take all patiently, and commit our unhappines to Fortunes vntestednesse. When the cruell Collambra, (who had all this while eyed the Emperour) heard the words of Alfarnao, she began to cry aloud, (suspecting that she was betrayed) as though with her voyce, she would haue shaken the Hall in peces: and after she had wept bitterly a pretty space, she spake as followeth.

O Alfarnao, I see at this instant, thy monstrous and disloyall dealing, in that thou hast forgotten the good and kind affection, which my husband Brauorant in his life time did alwaies beare thee, in that thou hast deliuered me into their hands, to whom thou hast also betrayed my daughter, thou hauing used the matter so, as I shall neuer see her againe.

Madame (said Alfarnao) I know well the doubt you make of my loyalty, and I see I must be constrained to satisfie you, by rehearsing my manifold and extreame misfortunes, as well to qualifie your anger towarde me, as to cause you see how equall our unhappinesse is, in that one unhappy Planet hath stricken vs both. Then he began to rip by the whole circumstance, of that which had happened since his departure from

of Palmerin of England.

from her, and at the end of his discourse, he gaue her to vnderstand, that Arlencea her daughter willed her to forget the death of her children, and the enuie she bare to him that had killed them, which if she did not agree vnto, she should be in danger neuer to see her againe: Collambra returned him this answer. Credite me Alfarnao, I am not so much offended at my present misfortune, as at these thy wordes, wherefore to knite by the matter, I giue thee this assurance, that I die, in thinking Arlencea my daughter is so forgetfull of her selfe, as to endure the courtesie of him that hath murthured her brethren, and the death of them is the more ykesome vnto me, in that she honoureth him, who hath so much dishonoured me. With these wordes she cast her selfe doونه on the ground so furiously, as if it was a good while she would vse any more talke: so, during y time she was in this rage, Albanis, the Prince Beroldes Esquire, aduanced himselfe to make knowne to the Emperour his message, not forgetting to declare the whole circumstance, of that which happened in the Perillous Isle, both how Palmerin had slaine the Giant Espouuantable, and how his three Cousins were deprived of their liues, by the proesse of his Lord Berolde, Platir, and the Sage Aliart.

These newes did greatly satisfie the Prince Primaleon, and Gridonia: then further proceeding in rehearsing the dangers, which moued them all to great admiration. Upon this Alfarnao declared how the people of the Prolound Isle, had chosen the Knight of the Savage man for their head and Gouverneur, and because he was absent, Palmerin had placed Argentao to rule the Isle. More (quoth hee) the Knights haue left this Island, and are gone into the Perillous Isle, where they are determined to sojourne for a while, and then after ward they will come hither vnto your highnesse Court: to this the Emperour answered thus,

I perceiue that the most noble and knightly aduentures, are reserved for my Nephew Palmerin, of whose welfare I doubt, if he be deprived of the company of the Sage Aliart, therefore, I would both he and the Prince Florian were here together, for that (I promise you) I doe euen long for their company. When breaking

## The second part

breaking from the matter, he desired Alfernao to tell him, if the Prince Florian did intend to tarry long in the Realme of Spaine.

My gracious Lord (answered Alfernao) he is not determined as yet to returne vnto your Court, before hee haue first shewne to Ailencea, the Castell of Almaroll. These words were not welcome to Leonarda the Princesse of Trance, shee hauing already giuen entertainment to the Prince Florian in the chiefest place of her heart, for she doubted least the sight of the Princesse Miragarda, would quite extinguish the remembrance of her: but when shee thought that the knight of the Sauage-man, would enter Combats against him that kept the Shield of Miragarda, she quite and cleane forsooke her former opinion, and lauded Fortune, in sending her so good knight for her seruant.

Polinarda perceiuing the troublesome thoughts of her especiall friend, very softly gaue her this comfort. Madame, and my sweete friend, suffer your knight to frequent those places where his own affection serueth him, for I dare assure you, that the beantie of neuer a Princesse in the world, can attaine the power to change his fancy, and therefore I pray you be not discouraged by the beauty of the Princesse Miragarda, your owne being so sufficient, as I am perswaded, she will not be hired to contend with you.

Madame (answered Leonarda) I am not able to iudge how much I am indebted for your gracious fauour, and sving loyall friendship commandeth nothing should be concealed betwene vs, I will let you vnderstand thus much, that your present comfortable words, hath brought me out of a tedious conceit, wherein my spirit was grievously passioned.

The Emperour commanded the Magitian Alfernao, to comfort Collambra, and to assure her, that for her daughter Arlenceas sake, hee did afford her his fauourable welcome into his Court: and if shee would consent to be baptised, euery one would so greatly honour her, as she should quickly forget the death of her Children. Collambra seeing Alfernao comming, could not suffer him to declare what the Emperour had assigned him,

## Of Palmerin of England.

him, but as a woman mad and desperate, spake vnto him in this order. How dost thou (Alfernao) recompence the good deeds thou hast receiued at my husbands hands, to render thy selfe so willingly on my enemies side? and by the perswasion of them, thou comest to will me forsake the law, wherein I haue bene nourished and brought vp all my life time: I promise thee, I will both finish my life, and thy treasons together, to the end it may be an example to them, who enterprise things against their dutie, and specially dealing with me, who rested my hope the fidelity, whereof thou madest me assurance by promise. With these words she ran to one of the great open windows of the hall, and before any one could get to her to succor her, she threw her selfe headlong downe into the Court, and Alfernao comming (as though he would haue hindered her) threw himselfe likewise downe after her, Collambra fell so waightily on the stones which were sharpe, as she was bruised all in peeces, not hauing the remembrance to speake one word after ward, but Alfernao liued vntill the next morning.

The Emperour and Primaleon were sorry to see such a desperate murder, but the Emperour and the other Princesse reioyced, that they were so well deliuered of the cruell Collambra: yet did they graue to see such a bloody stratagem, and being not able to endure this pittifull sight, they withdrew themselves into their Chambers. The two yong Princesse Leonarda and Polinarda, passed away the time, in discoursing scurrally the valiant prowesse of their knights, vntill such time as they were called to Supper.



## CHAP. XXI.

How the Princes and Knights which were Prisoners to the great Turk, arrived at the Court of Constantinople, whereupon the King Recinde deliuered out of prison the Prince Albayzar.



**P** the next day the bodies of Collambra and Alfernao were buried, and the Emperour sitting conferring with Albanis, the Prince Bereldes Esquire, about many matters of the Profound Isle, an ancient knight (whom his Maiestie had given charge to guard the Port of Constantinople,) entred the great Hall, and being come into the Emperours presence he kneeled downe, and spake as folloeweth.

Inuincible Emperour, if these newes which hath bene rehearsed of your noble Nephewes, did moue content, amid your manifold discontents, the tidings which I bring you at this present, will be no lesse welcome to you then the former: for I aduertise your Highnes, that within your heuen is entred some Gallies from the great Turke, wherein are Polendos, Belcar, and all the other Princes and knights of our Court, which haue bene kept thus long in prison by the Princesse Targianaes Father, I came to let your Maiestie vnderstand hereof before they were landed, because it is meete you should be acquainted therewith, before any other.

The Emperour remained so ioyfull of these tidings as possible might be, and without making any answer, he departed forth of the Hall so ranished inwardly with ioy and gladnesse, as he could not tell (for a prettie while) whither to goe: in like manner it happened oftentimes to them, who haue newes brought

brought them of those things which they are most desirous to haue. At length he came downe the staires into the open court, where he sate downe in a chaire, untill he might see them come in at the gates: in the meane while, many knights of his Court came to tell him of the arrivall of his sonne Polendos, but he did not make them any answer, for that his minde was busied, in rememb'ring how many misfortunes had come to him one in another necke, and yet (notwithstanding) they haue all come to a prosperous end, whereupon he humbly desired the heavenly Powers to continue him still in their wonted fauourable protection, for it is the nature of men of good iudgement, to doubt of danger after they haue once receiued good successe, for that it hath bene euermore scene, that felicitie and miserie doe not equally happen, but a dram of pleasure, hath commonly a pound of paine. In this maner the good Emperour discoursed secretly with himselfe, and comparing euery cause ioyntly together, the teares did plentifully run downe his white beard, thinking how Fortune fauoured him in his Age, when hee was worst able to witnesse his dutie to her: Nevertheless, he feared he should not long enioy the company of his knights, their imprisonment had gone so nere his heart, as hee feared betwene two extreames to be suddenly capt away.

While the Emperour was thus winding vp the endlesse bottom of vncertain thoughts, the prince Primaleon his sonne came and kneeled before him, giuing him to vnderstand how the Gallies where arrived: whereupon he commanded his Horse should be brought him, & so presently he tooke his way to the Port, accompanied with his sonne, all the Princes of the Court, and the chiefest inhabitants of the Citie, each one greatly desiring to see the prisoners. When the Emperour came to the port, he saw on land, Polendos, Belcar, Onistalde, with others others, & that he might the better welcom them, he alighted fro his Horse, being very much abashed to see his knights in such order, they faces pale & black, their strength weakened, and their beards and haire growne so long, as they which sawe them when they departed fro Constantinople, in the company of the Princesse Targiana, began now scantily to know them: when they were all come on

Moore, the Emperour contained them with the selfe same courtesie, and his mild nature did dayly affoord towards his especiall friends.

The Prince Belcar presented himselfe to the Emperour, offering to kisse his highnesse hand, but he received him in his armes, embracing him very lovingly, and bled such gratiuous courtesie towards him, as he did vnto the Prince Primaleon his son, as well for that he had bin brought vp in his Court, as also because he was the sonne of his owne sister, and the hardy Frisoll king of Hungaria his brother and especiall good friend. As he continued this sauozable vsage to Belcar, Onistalde, son to the King Recinde, and his owne sonne Polendos, came and knoed downe before him, then leauing Belcar he returned to them very gratiuously, declaring in the sight of euery one his incomparable beauty: so departing from the Port, he walked with them on foote towards the pallace, refusing to mount on horsebacke, his mind was busied with such exceeding ioy, as well for the recovery of them, as for the Princely commendations Targiana had sent him, who he had now proued his speciall friend. The Prince Primaleon went in the middlest betwene Belcar and Onistalde, and the other Prince and knights came lovingly, communing with their friends, in which order they all followed the Emperour: who being no sooner come to the Pallace, but there he found the Emperesse accompanied with her ladies, attending their comming at the outtermost Gate, she hauing given the knights her amiable welcome, the Emperour commanded they should be brought to their chambers, for that their great trauaile on the Seas required some rest.

The Princes were conducted into the Emperours chamber, according as it was the custome for those whom he esteemed, at their arriual, and they were scant out of the great hall, when, they perceiued to enter a Turkish Esquire, who coming before the Emperour, began to salute him with these words. My gratiuous Lord, Almaneor Ambassador from the great Turk, commanded me to let your maiestie vnderstand, that he is loth as yet to take landing, fearing lest he should hinder the pleasure your highnesse conceineth, seeing your knights so safely returned,

ned, he being come with them, and hath here sent them vnto your maiestie: wherefore, he desireth you would not iudge amisse of him, in that he hath done, and if so be he haue in ought moued offence to your Highnesse, he will to morrow morning come and be soze for it, when he wil make you acquainted with the summe of his ambassage, which will cause you to lose part of the contentment, which at this present your knights hath animated you withall.

Certainely my friend (answered the Emperour) I am sozry that I did not make more remembrance of him, but let him commit the fault to my knights with whom I will enioyne in making amends againe to morrow, because I shall see him to day, he being willing to rest himselfe this night in his galley. The esquire departed with this courteous answer of the Emperour, who taking the Emperesse by the hand, withdrew themselves into their chamber, where they passed the night with greater contentment, then they had done of many daies before.

But when faire Phoebus in the morning had displayed his golden face on the earth, the Emperesse walked to the Chappell to heare seruice, the Emperour and the knights being farre behind her, and seruice being ended, they all dined with the Emperesse in her chamber, for that she had determined to feast Polendos, Belcar, Onistalde, and the other Princes, who were serued at dinner with maruellous great state.

The Tables being withdrowne, the Emperour commanded the principall knights of his court, to goe welcome on land the great Turkes Ambassadour, to whom he would shew himselfe honourable, as well for that he would not be thought vngratefull, hauing recovered home againe his knights, as also to vnderstand the will of the great Turke.

Polendos, Belcar, and the rest of them that had bene prisoners, went foremost to receive him on shoare, because they would not haue him thinke, that they had forgotten the kinnesse he shewed them on the Seas: where Primaleon was somewhat displeased, because his nature could not suffer him to be such kindnesse, towards them he knewe his professed enemies.

## The second part

Polendos with his company being come to the Port, (he with such as he thought good (tooke a Barge, and went aboord the Galley to the Ambassadors, and brought them on shore with them very nobly, with such a noise of drums, pipes, trumpets, & flutes, as the Turkes wondered at this royall entertainment. The Ambassador noting the great courtesie of Polendos, who was diligent in shewing him the greatest honour might be, knew very well, that this exceeding humanitie came from him that was their Lord and gouernor: whereupon he considered, that a Prince so wel beloued of all, as the Emperour Palmerin was, should finde more friends to aid him in his necessity, then enemies to molest him.

All this while, the Emperour attended the Ambassadors coming to the Emperesse chamber, accompanied with his sonne Primaleon, and many Princes and knights of his Court, and the Ambassador (who was the same man that came before, to request in the great Turkes name, the freedom of Albayzar, in change of those Princes that were prisoners in Turkie) being in the presence of the Emperour, made him such humble reuerence as his Maestie well deserved, and not vsing any such proude behaviour, as he did at his first coming to Constantinople.

The emperour welcomed him very gratioously, desiring him not to be offended, because he did not accept of him y day before according as willingly he would haue done. Most worthy Emperour (sayd the Ambassador) I am not of so small discretion, but I knew well how busie you were yesternay, in receiuing home them, who you haue so long looked for: but letting these needlesse matters passe, I must request to know your highnes munde, as concerning the libertie of the prince Albayzar, whom you would not sende to the great Turke my Lord, for that you doubted he would not sende home them, whom he kept as prisoners. As touching the deliuerance of them, my Lord hath bin so hardy as to trust to your gentlenes, onely at the intreatie of his daughter Targiana, hee hauing no assurance for the Prince Albayzar his daughters husband, but onely the word of her who is your great friend: & desireth that you would now  
send

## of Palmerin of England.

send home her beloued Lord Albayzar, of whom the great Turke himselfe willed not me to vse any speech, hauing ioyned me to speake of those things, which will but little please you in the hearing them: the Emperour returned him this answer.

I know not what the great Turke your Lord hath determined to make me acquainted withal, but I am so accustomed to doubtfull occasions, as let his mallice stretch neuer so far, and his deuises purchase what scope he can, yet haue they no power to make me feare. But for the Princeesse Targiana, I am to thinke my selfe highly in her debt, in that her earnest intreatie wonne the libertie of knights, and surely it graueth me, that her father would be so enuious towards me, who would with all my heart, haue his daughter againe in my Court, that I might recompence some part of her gentlenesse she hath vsed to me, and for that she would so kindly pledge her selfe vpon the assurance she reposeth in my fidelitie.

Moreouer, I promise you Sir, I haue written to the King Recinde, that he should not faile to send me the Prince Albayzar, and I beleue certainly it will not belong before he come higher: wherefore, I pray you to stay here till he come, and in the meane time I will vse the matter so, as the Turke your Lord shall be rid of his doubt, and the Princeesse Targian satisfied to her owne contentment.

I am of the opinion (said the Ambassador) that the Prince Albayzar will be here, and that quickly, for the Damosel (who was sometime sent in secret to your mistresse, was dispatched with her message twenty dayes before my setting forth, that she should let the King Recinde and the Prince Albayzar vnderstand of my coming, and certifie them likewise of the liberty of our knights: by meanes whereof, they will not faile to come hither to your Court, vntill which time I am determined (by your licence) to sojourne here, but I will not declare my Lord the Turkes minde, before I see the Prince Albayzar, neuertheless, I here present you with his gracious letter, and after you haue well vnderstood the contents thereof, I will declare what I haue in charge.

There



There pausing, he tooke forth of his bosom a letter written in parchment, and sealed with the Armes of the great Turke, the which he humbly presented vnto the Emperour, who presently caused it to be opened, and perceyuing thereby, that the Turke willed him to giue faithfull credit to what the Ambassadoz said, he desired him to report the cause of his arriual: whereto the Ambassadoz thus replied.

My gracious Lorde, I knowe you haue not forgotten the day, when the Princeesse Targiana came vnto your Court, neyther the subtiltie wherewith she was entised, and brought forth of her fathers Courte, by the guilefull dealings of your Nephew, the Knight of the Sauadge-man, who was hindered in such sort in his iourney, as he could not bring the Princeesse Targiana vnto your Court: but she being here, was entertained by your Excellencie, the Emperesse, and the Princeesse Polinarda, in such gracious manner, as she esteemeth her selfe (during life) bound to you for your manifold courtesies. And my Lorde the Turke (in regard of your Noble fauour toward his Daughter) would gladly (in any thing hee could) witnesse his beneuolent minde to you, forgetting all iniuries past, for his faire Daughter Targianas sake: but with this condition by the way, that your Maestie offer him nothing against right or reason, for if you doe, hee shall be constrained by forcible strength, to reuenge the shame and iniurie he hath receyued by the Knight of the Sauadge-man.

And for the substance of his minde, it is thus in brieft, he desireth you to send vnto him the Knight your Nephew, because he would chastise him for his haynous offence. And if you refuse to satisfie his request, he commaundeth me to let you vnderstand, he is your enemy, and will so reuenge that Knights abuse, as all the world shall take example by him.

I cannot belieue (said the Emperour) that the Turke your lord will seem to threaten him, at whose hands he requireth nothing but Justice, the which I being very willing to doe, cannot thinke well of your present proceedings, for that in sooth you demand no Justice. Besides, it is not reasonable to graunt what your

lord

lord requireth, for if Florian be accused for bringing away his Daughter, I answer, that he did it at the earnest intreatie and desire of her selfe: So that your lord (I perceyue trauelleth in vain after my Nephew, the Knight of the Sauadge-man whom I will not send vnto him, if I wist he should be as welcome to him as to my selfe. And if I should come to content the will of your lord, I cannot send my Nephew except he please himselfe, and I am perswaded he will not consent vnto it, much lesse his Father, who is a Prince of great authoritie.

If this reason I haue made you, will not content the will of your lord the Turke, I am willing to receyue whatsoever he please, eyther to bring or send me, but I am sozie I am so farre spent with yeeres, that I cannot shewe him what I haue bene sometime. Nevertheless, for a sufficient witnesse of my selfe, I will sende him the Knight whome hee demandeth, that hee may tell him what I would doe my selfe, and let him be bolde, that Knight will doe his errand to the uttermost. As for other answers I with you not to looke for at my handes, wherefore I thinke it good you goe to rest your selfe, and when the Prince Albazar cometh, if you finde the time so conuenient for you, you may departe when you please: and in the meane time, I will honour you with such courtous entertainment, as you shall thinke well off.

I was assured before (answered the Ambassadour) of the answer you would make me: wherefore hauing fulfilled my charge, I neede not for this matter henceforward vse any more words.

When the Ambassadour had thus concluded, Polendos desired the Emperour, that he would suffer him to entertaine the Turkish Infidell, while he stayed there, whereto the Emperour gladly consented, and Polendos bringing him into his Lodging, failed not to let him see, that enemies were better welcomed in the Emperours Court, then friends were to his lord the great Turke.

Primalcon remained very well contented, hauing heard the answer of the Emperour his father, as also for that he had so desired the

the

## The second part

the cause of the knight of the Sauage man, for the loue of whom the Princesse Leonarda was diuersely moued, fearing least he should fall into the great Turkes hands, who would appease the anger of his stomacke, in sacrificing the good and hardy knight to his Gods.

The sudden dumps of this yong Princesse, was well perceiued by her swete friend Polinarda, who hid her knowledge thereof for the present time, untill they had brought the Emperesse to her chamber: then they two walking together to their Lodging, Polinarda demanded the cause of her grieffe, whereupon the Princesse Leonarda, being ignorant that Targiana had bene brought to Constantinople by the noble Florian of the Forrest, or how else the matter stood, but she desired Polinarda (if so it were her pleasure) to declare how these occasions had happened.

When the Princesse had herein satisfied her minde, there remained in sorrow without measure, as well by occasion of suspecting the beautie of Targiana, as also to thinke on the ingratitude of the knight of the Sauage man, so that at that very instant she reputed him as a man without faith, loue, or regard of loyalty, and she would gladly haue deuised the meane, whereby to banish the remembrance of him forth of her heart. Which the Princesse Polinarda perceiuing, and willing to prevent any mischance that should happen to her Cousin, she began to vse her talke in this manner.

Madame, thinke you the Prince Florian will be the same man to you, as he was to the Princesse Targiana? You must not thinke so, for their loue (as it was then) was not to be allowed among persons of honour, and that which made him so ready to thinke well on her, was for no other occasion, but that he might finde the meanes to get out of the hands of the great Turke her ffather: and from that Court he could neuer haue escaped, had it not bene by the aide of the Princesse Targiana, so that to satisfie her will, & helpe his owne necessity, he made himselfe so hardy to bring her into Greece, where being arrived, he left her, knowing that it was no honozable signe, that a chrestian knight should make loue to an Infidell Moore. Now there

fore

## of Palmerinot England.

fore it is not for you to ground your iudgement on that which is done and past, for that your beauty farre excelleth the blacke hew of the Princesse Targiana, and you being accounted as one of the most renowned Ladies thzough the whole world, must iudge thus with your selfe, that he will not a little boast of his good fortune, being entertained into your gracions service.

And on my word you may assuredly build, the knight of the Sauage man is onely yours, and he would not follow the aduentures he hath enterprised, but onely in hope to gaine your fauourable acceptation: wherefore I pray you let the consideration of that I haue spoken, cause you to forsake the conceit you haue of my Cousin.

Madame, (answered Leonarda) you haue won such power ouer me by your friendly words, as I am forced to forget my former imaginations: but yet it is to be doubted that your Cousin will be inueigled, seeing he hath the conducting of so many Ladies thzough the Realme of Spaine.

Good swete Lady (saide Polinarda) I pray you let not your spirits be troubled with these suspitious passions, for your knight is not of so weake iudgement, as any other should make him to forget you, for such aduentures happen commonly to travelling knights, to meet in many places with Ladies and Damoselles, the company of whom maketh them to haue the better remembrance of those, who ruleth their thoughts by the soueraigntie of loue: as for my Cousin, I dare giue you my faith that he is none but yours, and thereof (on my word) you may assure your selfe.

These speeches that Polinarda vsed, did so perswade the yong Princesse of Thrace, as she quite forsooke her iealous thoughts, which before was caried with so many contraries, as there was hardly any place for reason to harbour. As it often happeneth to them, who play the wantons with the little blind boy of the Goddesse Cytherea.

N

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXII.

How the Knight of the Sauage man (accompanied with the Damofels) arriued in the King of Spaines Court, and of that which happened to him there, against the Prince Albayzar.



**H**He Ambassadoz from the great Turke, staid certaine dayes in the Court of the Emperour, in the company of the Prince Polendos, who made better account of him there, then his entertainment in Turkie deserved, and many along looke made the Ambassadoz, waighting the coming of the Prince Albayzar, the Emperour and Primaleon could not sufficiently commend the courtesie of the Princesse Targiana, in that her teares ransomed the Christian prisoners forth of their trouble.

Here wee must come againe to the Knight of the Sauage man, who iournied so speedily (after he had banquished the foure Knights in the Valley, and gotten the Damofels) as he arriued in the Citie of Brusia, which at this time is called Tolledo, where the King Recinde as then made his aboad, who was not a little glad, when tydings came to him of the libertie of his sonne, and the other Knights, which were held in captiuitie by the great Turke.

So soone as Florian was come to the kings Pallace, he called his Esquire to him, desiring him to goe let the Quene and her Ladies vnderstand, that a strange Knight was come thither, who enterprised (if her maiestie thought it so conuenient) to approue himselfe against the King Recindes Knights. The Esquire being acquainted with the will of his Lord, presently went into the Pallace, where he was brought to the Quenes Chamber, the King himselfe being there, for that he had dyed there in the company of the Quene and her Ladies, whom the Esquire beholding, iudged them very faire and beautifull,

marry

marry he found a great difference betwene them, and the Ladies he had seene in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin.

The Esquire aduancing himselfe into their presence, went first and humbled himselfe to the king Recinde, then comming to the Quene, he kneeled downe and spake as followeth.

Madame, a strange knight, in whose company I came vnto your Court, hauing passed thorow your Realme, is now desirous to try himselfe in Armes, against the Knights of your royall Court, for the great desire he had to doe seruice to the King your husband, but such is your intent, as he proceedeth on the request of certaine Ladies he hath brought in his company, which preuaileth so much with this good knight, as (if your Maiestie so accept of it) he would venture the Ioust with the Knights of your Court, who wil maintaine the beauty of their Ladies, to excell them he hath brought with him. And that he might procede in his enterprise, he rather intended to aske leaue of you then of the King, because he knowes he shall not any way offend his excellency. The King and the Quene were verie glad of these newes, in that fortune had sent them the tryall of those matters they most desired, which was in a manner very dainty there, for that the Emperours Court of Greece carryed such a braue report, as all the noble Knights in the world went thither to try their valour. Beside, if any aduventure were approued in the Realme of Spaine, they were altogether done at the Castle of Almaroll: so that these two aforesaid places, had the generall triall of famous knights. The King of Spaine seeing the Quen returned the Esquire no answer, he spake to her in this manner. Trust me Madame, you ought not to refuse the gentle offer of the knight as wel to satisfie their minds, which haue desired to see such haughty exploits, as also to auoid the secret hard iudgment of your Ladies, who (I am sure) would gladly see y<sup>e</sup> courage of their fauoured knights, the Quene mildly returned this answer. Since it liketh you so wel my gracious Lord that the request is to be allowed, thou mayst Esquire say vnto the knight, that the King and I doe thinke very well of his comming to our Court, and that we doe permit him the libertie of the Ioust, against any

## The second Part

that will enter the fiede with him, whether it be for the Ioust or Combate, that is as the occasions shall happen, but howsoever it be, the King alloweth him the freedom of the fiede, and if the Knight desire to resist himselfe, hee shall be most hartely welcome, then to morrow morning he may put his intent in execution.

The greatest rest or quiet (answered the Esquire) which the Knight my Maister desireth to haue, is that he may finde such Knights, on whom he may bestow the breaking of some Lances, but since your Maiessty hath so freely granted him the Ioust I will not faile to let him vnderstand your gracious pleasure in the meane while, I hope your Knights will put themselves in a readinesse.

The Esquire was no sooner departed, but the King went and looked forth at one of the windows, and seeing the knight in the fiede, among so many Ladies, hee saide to the Quene: Madame, come hither, and you shall see the strangest aduenture, that euer you did in all your life. Certainly (saide the Quene, when shee had well beheld the knight and the Damoselles) it should seeme they haue a good opinion of the Knight, they be haue themselves so amiably in his company, and one of the ladies appeareth in stature, as it were a Giantesse. Indeede saide the King, her strangenesse makes me to eye her the more, and for the Knight, I iudge either he is very foolish, or else he is compelled by the commandement of some great Princesse, to leade about with him these Damosels.

While the King and the Quene stood thus ieasting on the Knight and the Damosels, the Prince Albayzar (who was giuen to vnderstand of this aduenture) came forth of his Chamber, and when he came to the Pallace gate, he mounted on Horse backe, and came to the window where the King and Quene looked forth, and hauing giuen them the salutation of the day, and questioned somewhat about the enterprise of the Knight, he determined to trie the Combate with him. But his hasty intent was staied at this time, for that a knight very well armed came into the fiede, mounted on a lusty Courser, and bearing for his deuise in his Shield, a white Hart, in a

## of Palmerin of England.

field of Sable. The knight being in the place where the Ioust was determined, the Esquire (who had bene before sent with the message to the Quene) spake vnto him in this order.

Sir, the Damosels knight, saith that he is not accustomed to Ioust, without that which shall be his recompence if hee remaine victor.

Wherefore I pray you let him vnderstand, what shall bee his desert if he chance to conquer you: for if the victory fall on your side, he will yeld the Damosell vnto you, which you shall thinke best on in all the company: the Spanish knight replied thus.

The knight (my friend) as it seemes to me, is farre beyond the scope of my minde, in that he would trouble other folkes, with them that he would be gladly rid of himselfe: wherefore you may say vnto him, that I am such a Ladies seruant, towards whom I haue dot yet so well deserved, as (if I were vanquished) to yeld her vp into his custodie. And I come for no other cause into this place, but to let him well and truely vnderstand, that the beauty of those Damosels, may not compare with the heavenly face of my Lady. And if my fortune proue so good, as my triall will preuaile, I shall content my selfe without expecting any other recompence at the Knights hands: therefore till him I would gladly know, for whom he presumeth to hazard the Ioust.

The Esquire hauing brought the Spanish Knights answer to his Lord, hee did content himselfe very well therewith: Harry tell him (quoth he) that I haue not the leisure to name the Lady, in whose cause I fight, but if hee be so happie as to conquer me, I will withall my heart satisfie his request. The Esquire went to him againe with his Maisters minde, which when the Spaniard heard, hee presently entred into these words. I perceiue that thy maisters proud and hauty stowack, which made him so bold to enter the fiede, causeth him now to be so braue in speeches: wherefore I must take paines to assayge his courage, because I will helpe him away with one of his Damosels.

The King Recinde and Albayzar, who marked well their large

large language, desired to see if their deeds would counteruaile their wordes, especially if the Damosels knight were such a one as he made himselfe to be. At last they boached their horses with their spurs, and ran together with so great force, as the Spanish knight, who was the seruant to Policia, the daughter to Duke Ladislaue, receiued such a pleasant stroke, (the Damosell knight hauing broken his staffe so fast vpon him) as his shield was rased thorow the midst, and himselfe throwne to the ground with his heeles vpward: but hee recovered himselfe quickly like a good knight, and drawing his sword, came to reuenge the foyle hee sustained in the Ioust, which the Damoselles knight beholding, he stayed him with these speeches.

Sir knight, I came not to craue licence for the combat with the sword, wherefore I pray you pacifie your selfe, and let me Ioust with these fine knights, who I see attend for me, and if I be so happy to escape out of their hands not disaduantaged, I shall be content to pleasure you in your owne desire.

The Spanish knight was so offended at this mishap, as he cared not if he had dyed there presently, but that the king commanded him to auoid the place.

Then one of the five knights entred the field, but he was welcommed like the first, and so in briefe did they all beare one another company: which Albayzar seeing, said, that the Damoselles might not be won without good paines were bestowed, they hauing such a good and hardy knight to defend them. The Damosels knight hauing broken foure Launces, withdrew himselfe, attending when his Esquire should bring him another. Then Albayzar (seeing the knights necessity) sent him one of his owne Launces, which was blacke, and the head was of pure Gold, but the Damoselles knight would not receiue it, speaking to him that brought it in this manner.

Thou mayest say vnto Albayzar, that the little loue and good will I beare him, maketh mee disdaine to receiue any thing hee sendeth. Aduauncing himselfe towards hee toke a Launce that was sent him by the King, wherewith he charged an

another knight that came against him, in such sort, as he was cast out of his Saddle so boisterously, that for a good while he remained senselesse. In the meane while the Damosels knight gallopped on to the end of the course, because he could hardly stay his horse. The vanquished knight arose and departed out of the field and then the Prince returned backe againe to the place, where Albayzar sate to behold the ioust, who came and took him by the arme, vnto these speeches to him. Sir knight, I iudge that the little knowledge you haue of me, hath made you to despise and contemne the Lance I sent you, but yet I pardon your folly in so doing.

I desire (said the Damosels knight) to believe the wordes I sent you by your Esquire, and perswade your selfe, that I know you to be Albayzar the Souldan of Babylon, with whom I could willingly enter the Combat: Albayzar hearing these wordes, answered him thus.

I am content (because you know me so well) that you shall not take a misseit by losing your desire, and if you will stay till my armour be brought hither, I will breake this Lance on you, because you presumed to refuse it: and afterwards, I will entertaine you with the Combat, when, I doubt not but to giue seuerer chastisement, to your proud and mallapart stomacke.

I would with all my heart, answered the Damoselles knight, that thou wert armed, for my mallice is such against thee, as I cannot tell it, but thou shalt feele it. Albayzar presently sent for his Armour, and the King seeing their fury, and noting the high wordes that had passed betwene them, came down into the field to them, to the end he would not that Albayzar should fall into any misfortune, before he had bene first in the Capereous Cent, to which place the Turke had sent the imprisoned knights, because he would recover home againe Albayzar safely: for which cause the King Recinde would not permit them to trie the combat, and scantly would he suffer them to ioust together, so greatly he feared lest the Damoselles knight, would endanger the person of the Prince Albayzar.

## The second Part

The Quene was verie well pleased, in that by the meanes of the Damofels knight, she perceiued the valor of the knights of the Spanish Court, and the Damofels (albeit they reioyced not in their ill fortune which were vnholp) yet they greatly commended the prowesse of their knight, that had defended them so well. And still they looked for the coming of the Spanish Ladies to them, delighting that they had no better seruants to venter for them, but the Ladies themselves greued, to see their good friends so vnfortunatly foyled.

## CHAP. XXIII.

How the Damofels Knight and Albayzar Iousted together.



At long it was before the Prince Albayzars esquires returned with their maisters armour, which was blacke, and streamed all ouer with little stroakes of Gold, and when the Prince of Babylon was armed, and had taken the same Lance which Florian refused he came before the king, speaking to him in this manner. I desire you (my gracious Lord) that you would not dissuade me from my enterprise, because I know my selfe able to reprove this knight, that shewed himselfe so disdainfull towards him, whom I am sure you would not haue receiue any shame in your Court: to which words the king thus replied.

Albayzar, I am so earnest in regard of your well doing, as I would be sorry any thing should happen to you here but well, wherefore, to grant you the Combate against the strange knight, trust me, I neither dare, nor will consent to it, as well for the care I haue of your person, as for that I will giue no occasion

## of Palmerin of England.

92

occasion to the Emperour Palmerin, whereby he may thinke any ill by me.

Well then (quoth Albayzar) I hope this Lance shall do so much as I would haue it, but if it do not, I may well complain on your highnesse, in that you will not suffer me to punish the pride of this knight. Good Sir (said the Damofels knight) doe not thus waste the time in needlesse words, it were good you prepared your selfe to the Iust, and if I be prouder then you would haue me, punish me as you see occasion: but yet doe no more then you dare do, for if fortune so friend you, as you remaine victor ouer me, let my payment be such as you shal please and there is an end.

I pray you (quoth Albayzar) do me so much fauour, as to tell me who you are, for I assure you, I would gladly know for two causes: the first, that I might not be ignorant of the knight whom I shall vanquish: the second, if so be I spend not according to my desire, that I may the better enquire after you as I trauaile abroad: the answer of the Damofels knight was this.

It is not my wil to satisfie thy honor so much, but perswade thy selfe, that I am the greatest enemy that euer thou hadst in all thy life, and I graue that I may not haue libertie of the Combate against thee, because I long haue wished to haue my fill on thee: but since it is the pleasure of the king it shall not be, I will not presume to excede his highest will, neuertheless I will awaite the time, when I may deale with thee according to my desire.

If I be not deceined (answered Albayzar) I think I know know you, for I thinke I haue seene you sometime in the Castle of Dramorant the Cruell, where you made your selfe so bold to vse such language, as I haue not yet forgotten: wherefore assure your selfe, that the speeches thou diddest vse there, & the brauery thou seemest to haue at this present, shall be the destruction of all such, as dare affoord their ayde in the iniury I haue receiued. But for that I may a little ease my stomacke, both in taking reuenge, and quailing thy vsurping boldnesse, which



## The second pair

which I cannot so deale with all as I would, till ffter time serue for my purpose: I desire that thou wilt best take one staffe with me, vnder the name of some faire Lady, that I may see whether she deserue better in praise then my Lady whom I run for, the same Princeesse Targiana.

I will take her (said the Damoels Knight) which is the simplest in beautie of all these in my company, for my fauourite at this time, & in her seruice I am determined to iust against you. I would wish (quoth Albayzar) because the Lady I haue named (is the gracious Mistresse of my fight, is knowne to be of great and high authoritie, that you would name your most fauoured to be such a one, as may be thought worthy to equall her.

You presse me ouermuch (answered the Damoels Knight) in that you would haue me reueale that which I will not, but this I aduertise you, that fortune hath made me seruant of a Lady, in whose gracious fauour I live, and will not let the soveraigntie of her name be shewen in any skauces, but onely such as are of great importance: yet since I see you affect so much, I am content to breake one Lance with you for her sake. And because your thoughts may be the better satisfied, I assure you, that she is farre more excellent in beautie then the Princeesse Targiana, and so singular aboue her, as her name is not worthy to be talked en, in respect of my royall and incomparable Mistresse. And I desire that you would not request to know her name, because I haue vowed to keepe it in secret, that I may the better make others maruaile, what and who she should be. I cannot suffer (said Albayzar) thy reproachfull speeches, especially when thou seemest to dispraise her, whose beautie no Lady liuing can any way equall.

Then these two Knights departed to fetch their carrie, and ranne together with singular courage, Albayzar having before his eyes the loue of his Lady Targiana, and the iniurie that his enemy had offered him, and the Damoels Knight was accompanied with the secret good will of the Princeesse Leonarda: in briefe, these two Knights were so greatly

## of Palmerin of England.

greatly affectionate towards their Ladies, that they encountered together with such force, as their Lances flew vp into the aire in peeces, and so they passed on, not being shaken any thing at all. When they were come to the end of the race, they failed not to take newe stauces, which were broken againe like as the first were, and yet no further aduantage on either side.

The King of Spaine made great estimation of the noble valour which he perceiued in the Damoels Knight, and deuised how he might accomplish the meanes to knowe who he was: for he doubted not but Albayzar would discharge his dutie well enough, because the Shield of the Princeesse Miragarda, had made his valiancy well knowne in the Court of the Emperour Palmerin.

These two Princes were very much amazed, seeing they could haue no more aduantage ouer one another, whereupon they tried the third Lance, wherewith they met together so forcibly, as the Damoels Knight lost one of his stirrropes, and was cast vpon the croupper of his Horse: in like manner, Albayzar forsooke both his stirrropes, and was constrained to catch holde about the necke of his Horse, and greatly offended they were both of them, hauing fought so many times, and yet could not speade of that which they seuerely desired, wherefore, they determined not to depart then, before one of them should bee cast beside his Saddle.

Then these two redoubted Knights, went to proue their fourth Lance, which hauing in their hands, Albayzar spake to the Damoels Knight thus.

I pray you Sir fauour mee, in doing that which I must demand of you: the Damoels Knight would passe no further, before he had returned him this answer.

Of trueneth Sir, I am thus intended, not to depart hence before I see you on the ground, therefore I pray you trouble not your selfe, in desiring any other thing of mee.

Certainely Sir (said Albayzar) I would not haue thought you

## The second Part

you had bene so uncourteous, neuerthelesse, I will yet intreate you once more, that you would goe present your selfe before the giant Almaroll, (if so be I proue so fortunate as to foyle you) and say to him, that by your meanes I haue acquitted the bond, wherein the Princesse Miragarda so straitely tied me, in that she may see the knight, that Iousted against the beauty of my Lady Targiana: and if it happen that fortune fauour you with the victorie, I will doe any thing you shall command me.

You offer me so faire play (said the Damosels knight, as I cannot otherwise chuse but consent to your request. Thus they pointed to fetch their course, and they met together so directly, as their Launces being broken, they buckled together mightily with their bodices, hauing giuen each other such a rough græting, as the Damosels knight was compelled to forgoe both his stirrups greatly amazed: but Albayzar measured his length on the ground, so sore shaken, as he lay in study a pretty while. The Damosels knight seeing him so astonished, said vnto him: You may know what aduantage you haue gotten, in that you haue not leaue to trie the Combate with me. Then he caused his Helmet to be opened, that he might receiue some aire, and when he had sitten a good space, grieuing at his misfortune, especially in the presence of the King Recinde, he arose, being holpen vp by Gentlemen, whom the King commanded to honour him so much: whereupon the Damosels knight beganne thus againe.

Albayzar you may perceiue how little fortune fauours you, and what aduantage I haue won, maintaining the beauty of my gracious Mistres the princesse of Thrace, to whom I pray you present your selfe, when you shall arrive in the Emperours Palmerins Court, and there you shall say to her thus: That a strange knight, who calleth himselfe the Damosels knight, both vanquished you, & commanded you to submit your selfe to her excellency. And when thou hast seene her, let thine own eyes be iudg, whether the beauty of Targiana may presume to compare with hers, when if thou be not too deeply drownded in thine owne conceit, thou wilt recant thy former blasphemous

erroz

## of Palmerin of England.

94

erroz, and thou maist assure her, how I am greatly grieued, that this present seruice is of no more importance, being the first that she hath receiued of me as yet: Albayzar in a rage made this answer.

I will not faile in keeping my promise to thee, and if the gods boughsafe me line so long, I will present thy head to my Lady the Princesse Targiana, in reuenge of the shame I haue this day receiued at thy hands. I would be so (said the Damosels knight) that thou shouldest die in this minde: then returning his face to the King Recinde, he said. I desire your Grace that you would suffer me to depart, and that you would not be offended because I declare not who I am: but this you may per-  
made your selfe, that there is no one knight in the world, that doth more wish your good, and is readier to doe you seruice then my selfe: to which words the King thus replied.

Since it is not your will (Sir knight) then you would be knowne, I will not be he that shall moue you to the contrary: but if at any time you passe this way, I desire you to visit me, for in sooth you shall be welcome. I thanke your Grace most humbly (answered the Damosels knight) and the great honour and courtesie I haue found at your hands, shall not be forgotten so long as I live. Then taking one of the Launces that were left, he gaue a reuerent shewe of obeysance to the King, the Quene, and all the Ladies (who tooke great delight in him, beholding his knightly behaviour) and so he departed with his company.

The King returned into his Castle, accompanied with the Prince Albayzar, whose heart was so intrailously overcome with grieve, as he would not speake to any, nor suffer any to speake to him. The quene and her ladies were so rie, they had no further knowledge of the Damosels knight, and beside they were offended at the Prince Albayzars foile, as well because his gentle behaviour was such, as for the reputation he gained when he carried away the Princes Miragardas Shield.

The Damosels knight was not very farre from the Citie, but the darke night drew on, and they being in a Forrest, and nere to a faire Fountaine, concluded there to rest themselves

for

for that night: so, after they had refreshed themselves, they laid them down among the greene leaues: the Prince himselfe, he went and lay a pretty space from the Damosels, and laying his head on the roote of a Tree, the beautie of Leonarda the Princeesse of Thrace, presented it self in his amorous thoughts, charging him with so many contrary Passions, as all that night he could not lay his eye lids together, yet was his leue so irresolute, as the least thing in the world could haue made him forget all quite.

While the Prince Florian lay thus busied with a thousand imaginations, Arlencea, who was marnailously affected to waite him, seeing her companions were all fast asleepe, went to the place where the Prince Florian was laid, where, sitting downe by his side, she began to fall into these speeches. It seems to me (most worthy knight of the Sauage man) that the iniury which I heretofore haue done you, doth as yet remain fresh in your memory, in that you make no account of her, who liueth and dieth onely for your loue. And that I speake the truth, you may be perfectly resolved, in that (without regard of mine owne honour) I come to sake you out, the cause being this, that my intreatie might moue you pittie her, who perserue the loue of none aliue but you: which courtesie, if you shall seeme to refuse, my conceite of griefe will be so extreame, as I must needs giue entertainment to my latest enemy, who will set both soule and body in quietnesse, when you (that might haue comfort of both) remaine deafe, and will make no account of me.

So breaking off, she laid her head on the Princes brest, fetching so many grievous sighes and groanes, as though the life would haue forsaken her body, whereupon the Prince took her in his armes, and with very amiable speeches (though not such as she gladly looked for, he began to comfort her thus.

Madame Arlencea, I do not so little esteeme of you, that I would willingly consent to doe the thing, which should seeme displeasing or offensive to your honour, desiring you to thinke, that before I was so much bound to you as now I am, I intended to accomplish that which your selfe desired: but since the time

time that your great faueur, deliuered me out of the danger whereinto Alfernao brought me, I forsooke altogether the folly of so vaine a humour, being loath to reward her so vngently, whose courtesie, neither time nor death can make me forget. And thus perswade your selfe, that I haue prouided a husband for you, according as your noble bountie doth well deserve: yea, he is so good a knight, as you will refuse to make choyse of the knight of the Sauage man, whom you may at all times vse, as your friend and seruant.

There pausing, he kissed her hand, and brought her again to the place where the other Ladies slept, and he departing againe to his owne lodging, she began to be ashamed of her folly, noting well the wittie words of the knight of the Sauage man: for whose loue she was so extremely passioned, as she was constrained to discouer the flame that did so torment her, to one of her Damoselles, the very same that gaue the fatall ring to the prince. To her she ripped vp her whole discourse of the words which had passed that night, desiring her earnestly, with the teares trickling down her cheekes, that she would giue her such assistance, as she might enioy the loue of the knight of the Sauage man: the Damosell answered her Lady thus.

Trust me Madame, you haue not any occasion to finde your selfe aggrieved, for by good reason the knight ought not to satisfie your will, in that such a Prince as he is, ought not to trauell himselfe for Damoselles, and then to receiue shame and dishonour by them: but yet to content your minde, and because you thinke me willing to doe you what pleasure I can, I will goe to the knight, and vse such friendly perswasions with him, as I will vnderstand the depth of his intent. Arlencea embraced the Damosell for this gentle answer, and spake to her againe in this manner.

I know well, my sweete wench, that if I shall haue any remedie in this case, I must enioy it by thy meanes, wherefore I pray thee goe, and fortune be with thee. But if it come so to passe, as neither perswasion, nor any thing else will moue him to loue me, I pray thee intreate him, that he would pardon the fault I committed, in disturbing him of his quiet ease.

Madame

Madame (said the Damofell) repose your selfe altogether on me, and so she went to the Knight of the Sauage man, whom she found in a lumber, when sitting downe by him, she began in this manner. He thinkes that he which enforcelth Ladies to liue in sorrow, because he wil vse no more regard vnto them, enght not so easily to take his rest. The Knight of the Sauage man hearing the voyce of a woman, opened his eyes, and seeing it was not Arlencea, but the Damofell whom he loued best amongst them all, he beganne friendly to embrace her, giuing her better words then he did to the Giantesse her Lady: Whereupon, the Damofell beganne to him thus againe. Syr Knight, I desire that you would vouchsafe to tell me, what is the cause you make no more account of my Ladys loue, seeing she hath (for your sake) forsaken her mother, forgotten the cruell murdering her Brother, and likewise hath lost the libertie of her selfe?

Madame (answered the prince) I feare I shall not haue time enough to discourse the whole matter to you, because it is now vpon this point of day, wherefore I intend to let Madame Arlencea apart a while, and demaund of you, for what occasion you haue forgottē me, seeing I remaine yours in affection, since the day that Alfernao deliuered me into the power of your Lady Arlencea?

I pray you Syr (said the Damofel) that you would not be offended at my nicenesse all this while, it was but onely to auoid the malice of my Lady: in her absence, I pray you thinke so wel on me, as you may be pleased for my displeasing you, and I haue the better will to come to moue my Ladies sute againe. The Knight of the Sauage man hearing her courteous answer, and that he might now breake a lance in the face of Venus, he tooke her in his armes: but because the day came on apace, and they vnwilling that any should see their secret pleasure, I durst not see what they did, for feare I should be shent for my labour.

CHAP. XXIIII.

Of that which happened to the Damofels Knight, in going to the Castle of Almaroll.



Vpon the point of day breaking, the Damofell gaue her Lady Arlencea to vnderstand the answer of the K. of the Sauage man, & the prince seeing the Ladies walking, came and gaue them all the mornings courtisie, after ward, when they were all mounted on horseback, they beganne to set forward on their iourney: and because Arlencea was somewhat moued with her euill fortune that night past (which the P. perceived very well) he came vnto her, and vsed such kinde and gentle language to her, as in a while she forgot the cares which had troubled her so much.

The Prince began to deuise pleasantly, with the foure Damofels he woonne in the Forrest, and iested with them in such merry conceites, as the iourney seemed nothing troublesome vnto them: but this pleased not Polyphemia, (who was the Damofell that Arlencea sent, to moue her sute to the Prince) for she thought that she deserued better countenance at his hands, then all the other.

The Knight of the Sauage man knewe well by the countenance of Polyphemia, that she grieued to see him vse such pastime with the other Damofels. Whereupon, he began to smile to himselfe, and because he would bere her the more, he would now embrace one Damofel, and come to another and kisse her, and one after another he would be very familiar withall, and that with very much pleasure, Polyphemia seeing the dealings of the Knight of the Sauage man, went on the further side be-  
hinde

hind all the Damosels, dissembling (so much as she could possible) the extreme afflictions of her amorous thoughts, for that the regard of her honour commaunded her to keepe secret, what had passed betwene the Prince and her: but he making as though he saw her not, continued on his pleasure with the other Damosels. And when for recreations sake, they tooke delight to walke on foote a while, he would giue each of them (one after another) a graine of Solace, and iest and iube with them so pleasantly, that poore Polyphemia knewe not well how to take it: yet hoping to haue some of them partners with her in her misfortune (as indeede she had) before they came to the Castle of Almarol.

It chanced fift dayes after their departure from the Spanish Court, that they came into a faire Greene field, which was gallantly decked with flowers, & apistrey, & there the Ladies tooke delight to stay a while, because they would make them Poses, gayes and garlands of the flowers: when they had disposed themselves so long as they thought meete, they put their Garlandes on their heads, & mounted on their horses againe, being very merry and pleasantly disposed. But to change their iocund humour, they beheld to come from a ranke of trees, a bigge tall knight, in manner of a Giant, mounted on a horse meete to carry such a mightie person: his Armour was all azure colour, spotted very thicke with little silver flowers, and in his Shield he caried for his deuise, Hydra the serpent with seven heads, in a field of Sinople. This big knight had two Esquiers attending on him, one of them caried his Lance, & the other a battell-Axe, the knife thereof being of gold: and when he was come to the place where the knight of the Sauage man and the Damosels staid, he began his language in this manner.

I aduertise thee (knight) that it is a long time since I desired to goe to the castle of Almarol, where my heart became affectionate to the faire Princeesse Miragarda, and in such good liking did I growe of her, as I determined to try my fortune against the knight that keepes her shield, being in good hope to vanquish him, that I might afterward take both his office, and his place. But it hapned to me farre contray to my desire, & I am

perswaded, that her fauour makes him more victorious, then his owne force is able: the consideration hereof doth not a little offend me, so that I am determined to reuenge my selfe by other means. Wherefore aduise thee wel of these two conditions I shall put to thee, which of them thou shalt best like of, either to enter combat with me, or to surrender these damosels which beare thee company.

My friend (answered the knight of the Sauage man) I assure thee, that I am not the man thou thinkest me, neither shalt thou find such a one, as is wont to be vanquished by thy haughty words: and because thou shalt not be deceiued in me, I giue thee to vnderstand, that I am not accustomed to feare such fellows, as speake with such a glorious pride in themselves, neither can the huge stature of a Giant dismay me, for if thou durst presume to take the worst Garland from any of these Ladies heads, I would sel thee my life, but I would make thee restore it againe.

The affection (said the knight) which thou bearest to some of these, maketh thee not to estimate the danger wherein thou maist fall: but seeing thou wilt be so lustie, I am content, for courtiers sake, to offer thee this condition, that he which shall be dismounted of vs twaine, may haue for his paines seuer of these Damoselles, as for the other foure, they shall still attend vpon their Lady, whom I see likewise in thy company: to which wordes the knight of the Sauage man thus replied.

I could wish thou hadst as many Damosels in thy power, as thou hast here in name, to the end that either thou mightst win these which I conduct, or I might be the maister of thine. But except thou intendest to take these ladies from me by force, for other wise thou shalt not haue them, I pray thee get thee going about thy businesse. I see well, said the knight, that our contention cannot be ended without laying hands to our weapons, & so to try the conclusion: then he called his esquire, who brought him his Lance, which when he had searched, he ranne courageously against the Damosels knight, who met him brauely in the mid way, & encountred with him so worthily, as the peeces

## The second part

of their lances flew whistling in the ayre, and in this encounter the knight lost both his stirrups, & meeting together with their bodies, their horses began fiercely to fight one with another, so that the strange knight was cast to the ground, and the damosels knight had almost bozne him company, because his horse was slaine by the other knights horse. Arlencea and the Ladies did greatly feare, least the knight would overcome the Prince Florian, who leaping from his horse, that tumbled with him on the ground, drew his sword, and stood still to heare what the knight would say: but he seeing the Damosels knight so ready to the combate, began to be somewhat offended with himself for the rough stroke of the Lance, made him more to feare the knight then he did before. When he had stood a pretty space, he buckled his shield, and drew his sword out of the sheath, coming to the Prince with these words. If thou art (knight) so much a friend to thine owne life, as to agree to the condition I made thee before we iousted, thou shalt see that I will keepe my promise to thee. I pray thee (said the Damosels knight) vse no such friuolous speeches to me, for I am thus determined, to make thee beare me company on foote, because thou seest my horse is slaine: and so without wasting any more time in words, he began to charge the knight very fiercely, which when the knight both saw and felt, he likewise laid on with huge and waighty strokes, till in the end he receiued so many wounds, as what with the losse of his blood, and faintnesse of his body, he was constrained to fall downe to the ground: when, the damosels knight set his foote on him, and taking off his helmet, made show as though he would haue smitten off his head, but the knight yelded himselfe to his mercy, desiring that it might please him to saue his life: whereto the damosels knight thus answered.

I am content to giue thee thy life, on condition thou wilt fulfill what I command thee. I know no aduenture (said the knight) so perillous, which I would make any account off, for sauegard of my life. Thou shalt first then (quoth the Damosels knight) tell me what and who thou art, and after ward, thou shalt take one of the Horses, whereon thy Equires rides, and

## Of Palmerin of England.

98

and take thy way presently to the Court of the King Recinde, and there (before the Quene) thou shalt say on my behalfe, that the Damosels knight, who Iousted in their presence against the prince Albayzar, saluteth them with his humble duty, and desireth such fauour at the kings hands, that he will thinke no ill because I made not my selfe knowne to him, but thou maist assure his Highnesse, that I will not faile to make my selfe knowne, at my returne from the Castle of the Giant Almarol. And because I may get thither the sooner, I will take thy horse, in recompence of mine which I haue lost in iousting against thee: the knight arose, and made this answer.

Worthy Sir, since Fortunes great unkindes hath brought me into this extremitie, I shall not faile to obey whatsoeuer you commaund me, and for my name, I am called Trofolant the Feareful, of whom you haue heard sometime, if you remember. Very true (quoth the damosels knight) but I pray you not to make me knowne in any case, but declare what I haue said to you, and so you may now depart on your way to accomplish your promise.

Then the Prince mounted on Trofolants horse, & so tooke his leaue of him, setting forward on his iourney with the damosels, till he came to the end of his pleasant Valley, where he leaned himselfe against the stump of a tree, because he espied before him three knights very richly Armed, and one of them cryed aloude to him, that he should stay till they came to him. The Damosels knight hearing these words, would goe no further, but staid to heare what they had to say to him. When they were come nearer, the same knight spake againe in this manner.

Sir knight, I would gladly haue one of the ladies which are in your company, wherefore, I pray you bestowe her on me, to whom you beare most affection your selfe. Trust me Sir (answered the Damosels knight) they doe all like me so well, as he which dare be so bolde to take one of them from me, I iudge will put his life in great daunger. My fancy (saide the second knight) doth best esteeme her that excelleth them all in stature (meaning Arlencea.) And I will content my selfe (quoth the third knight) with her that rideth next the tall Lady (meaning



Polyphemia ) because me thinkes her beantie excēdeth all the other: wherefore I pray you sir knight, content your selfe with the other Ladies, and sticke not with vs for these thre, for we will so well behaue our selues to them, as they shall haue no occasion to complaine on vs.

I perceiue then (answered the Damosels knight) that you would gladly haue these Ladies, whom I am determined to defend against you: if any of you therefore haue such minde to them, there is but a little Riuer betwene vs, which you may easily passe, and if your fortune be so good, you shall carry them with you when you go backe againe. With a good will (answered the first knight) and seeing your stomacke serues you so wel, I will shewe you the small aduantage you shall get in dealing with vs.

Vpon these wordes he passed the Riuer, and hauing placed his Lauce in his rest, ran valiantly against the Damoselles knight, who entertained him with such a puissant stroke, as he was compelled to fetch an errant in the bult, being so greatly amazed with the fall, as he had not the power to stir himselfe a great while. When the other two knights saw their fellows foyled, they came ouer the riuer together, and being abashed at the valour of the Damosels knight, they durst not venter to try it one after another, but ranne both together against him, who (though they offered him wrong) would not refuse them: but breaking his staffe nobly vpon one of them, he lent him to keepe the first knight company, hauing his arme broken by the force of his fall. Then drew he forth his sword, and welcommed the third so friendly, as in a little while he tumbles do wne before him.

The Damosels knight after this victorie, commaunded his Equier to alight, & tooke off the knights helmet, that he might take aice, and when they were all before him, he commaunded them to shew obeysance to the thre Damoselles, whome they would needs haue had, before they knew the price of them and if they did not as he willed them, he sware they should all lose their liues.

The knights perceiuing they had reckoned with a wrong

Hoste, promised they would not doe any thing contrary to his will: wherupon one of them came to Arlencea, with these words. Madame, in that you are the whom I make most account of, I beseech you command me, in any thing my poore power can do you seruice.

I haue so little neede (saide Arlencea) of your seruice, as it would grieue me to vse your assistance in any thing whatsoever: neuerthelesse, that you may be an example to such, who (following your qualities) commit many outrageous facts to Damosels, and to encrease his renoune who hath now nobly vanquished you, and deliuered me and my company from you, I command you to go to the King of Spaines Court, and there on my behalfe, let all the Ladies vnderstand, what desert is come to you for your wretched dealing: and say, that I aduertise them, no one of them presume to trauaile abroad, without the company of some such knight, as is able to defend them against all vnlawfull actions.

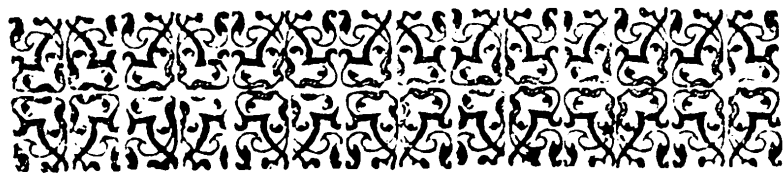
And you Madame (saide the second knight to Polyphemia) what shall it like you for to command me? Marie (quoth she) that you take the same course that your companion doth, not forgetting to tell the Ladies, that I pray they may liue in safetie, without hauing affiance in any knight whatsoever: for that such as enterpise to conduct them in their trauails, whom they put in trust with their honourable loue, and euen bow their soules to them in loyall affection, yet haue they most neede to shunne their company, rather then any other, and let them not doubt of it, for if they proue they shall find my words true.

The Damosels knight vnderstood well enough, the couert speeches of Polyphemia, but yet he dissembled, as though he knew not what they meant.

And you Lady, saide the third knight, will you be so cruel, as to commit a greater taske to me, then these two Ladies before you haue done to my companion? I am (quoth she) so cruel, as I would haue the banished the company of thy very dearest friends: then the Damoselles knight himselfe began thus to them againe.

Since it is the will of these three Ladies, that you shall carry these messages of the King of Spaines Court. I pray you tell the Ladies there, that I desire them to repose their trust in me, if they shall imagine themselves in any danger, and let them be well assured, that I will adventure what hazard soever, if my helpe may yeld them any assistance: notwithstanding, one of these three Ladies is desirous to haue them thinke the contrary but as for her counsell, I desire them humbly to make no account thereof. And because I may know who you are, I pray you tell me your names before you depart, for that I may demand another day, whether you haue fulfilled your promises or no. My Lord (quoth the first Knight) we are all three of the same Court whereto you send vs, by meanes whereof, we grieue more to go shew our misfortunes there, then in any court whatsoever it might like you to send vs. And for our names, you shall vnderstand, that I am called Grouanell, and this other knight is my brother named Brabosan, we twaine being the sonnes of the Countie Loban, and the third knight (who is our Cousin) he is called Claribard, a knight greatly renowned in the Court of Spaine.

Truely Gentlemen (said the Damosels knight) you ought not to thrust your selues into such dishonourable actions: neuerthelesse, I must excuse you, for that the beautie of women, hath sometime inueigled the wisest heads, but I would wish you to be better aduised, albeit I my selfe do often feele the heat of the same fire. So ending, he rode on with his charge of Ladies, being very glad that he had sped so well of these knights in their presence, and they likewise commended his high good fortune.



C H A P. XXV.

How Trofolant and these other three Knights yeelded themselves in the Spanish Court. And how the damosels knight arriued at the Castle of the Giant Almaroll.



I was long before the Damosels knight could reach to the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, because he was hindered in his way by many knights, who ventured themselves to take the Damosels from him, which he had taken charge of, in conducting them. But it chanced as the King Recinde stood pleasantly talking in his window with the Quene, and many knights in the Chamber with him beside, he beheld to enter a goodly tall knight, his face being couered with his Helmet, his armour broken in many places, and so besprent with blood, as the fine deuises thereon could hardly be discerned. His shield which was carryed after him by his squire, was shiuered in the selfe same manner, and because his deuise therein could not well be seene, euery one was in great admiration of him: but he went with such proud iestures, as he made estimation of neuer a knight there (who came to entertaine him at the Pallace gate) but passed on till he came into y<sup>e</sup> Chamber where the King was, to whom when he had made obeysance, he returned to the Quene with these words.

Madame, I haue Combatted with a knight, who not long since was in this Court, and Iousted against the Prince Albayzar, he hath in his company nine Damosels, and I desired him to bestow the one halfe of them on me, whereto he would by no meanes consent, but made me answer, that he could with I had as many Ladies in conduct as he had, for then would

## The second part

would he take mine from me, to beare his Ladyes company in trauaile. Upon this proude answer, I intended to take them from him perforce, which he would not suffer, but made such resistance against me, as in the end I was not onely conquered, but in great danger to lose my life, had not this valiant and redoubted knight granted me mercy, vpon condition I should perforce what he did command me. But such was his great humanitie, as he would adioyne me no other punishment then this, that I should come and present my selfe to your maiestie, to craue pardon (on his behalfe) that he would not let himselfe to be knowne when he was in your court: but at his returne, he will not faile to come in better acquaintance with your highnesse: in the meane while, he craueth that you would pardon him for his offence past.

I know not (said the king) how I should remit this iniury, in that he hid himself from me, whomost of all desired to know him, and moze earnest I am now, seeing your Armour so much defaced. My good Lord (answered the Quene) I desire you would not be offended at that which is past, for I cannot thinke that such a knight as he is, would desire to passe vnknewne to your grace, without he were compelled so to do by some earnest occasion.

When said the king to the knight, I pray you Sir tell me who you are? Those that know me (said the knight) call me Trofolant the Fearefull. I haue (answered the king) oftentimes heard much talke of you, and the knightly deedes which you haue atcheiued: and for this cause would I the moze gladly haue knowledge of the Damoselles knight, wherefore I pray you tell me if you know him, or can iudge of whence hee should be?

My Lord said Trofolant, I promise you I neuer saw him in all my life till now, but I iudge him to be one of the souldiers of the Prince Don Edward, for I am perswaded that no one knight else could haue conquered me, whereof I am not a little ashamed, yea, and so much grieved thereat, as I take my leaue of your highnesse, now that I haue discharged his commandment.

Quoth

## of Palmerin of England.

101

Quoth the Quene, I giue you licence to depart at your own leisure. And I would no other thing with you, saide the king, but that you would take a better Armour at my handes, because your own is not in case to doe you seruice: beside, I would not that any of the knights which serue the Emperour should depart my court destitute of horse or Armour.

My Lord, answered Trofolant, I thinke my selfe highly bound to your maiestie, for the Princely offer you haue made me: but I am determined to goe euen as you see me, because I will decide Fortune to her face, and so he departed. The king gaue the Quene to vnderstand, that Trofolant was reputed as good a knight as any other: but he would not beleue, that any of the Sonnes of the Prince Don Edward would come into his Court, and depart againe without his knowledge.

While the king was commending the valour of the Damoselles knight, Grouanell, Brabosan, and Claribard entred into the Chamber, who hauing made reuerence to the king and the Quene, came and presented themselves before the Ladies: to whom they rehearsed their great misfortune, and that which the Damoselles knight and Poliphemia had commanded them.

The Ladies knew well that Poliphemia had received some iniury by the knight, whose noblenes made the king to speake thus. Gentlemen, I promise you I greatly desire to know the knight who hath thus vanquished you, and I intend to send some of my knights after him, that they may bring him hither once moze.

If it shall like your highnesse (answered one of the knights) he, whose good fortune serued him to ouercome vs, your grace must well thinke, that it will be hard to bring him hither, except he list himselfe.

Trust me (said the king) it makes me maruell very much, that he is accompanied with so many Damosels, in that one knight cannot long endure to be patient, being in the conuersation of but one woman.

With these wordes the king departed from them, and the knights

## The second part

knights withdrew themselves into their chambers, being not offended that the Damosels knight had vanquished them, because he had shewne such incredible prowess in that Court, against the Prince Albazar.

But returne we to the Damoselles knight, who made such expedition in his iourney, as he came nere to the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, wherefore he stayed a while by the River Thefin, speaking to the Damoselles in this manner. We are now arrived at the place (faire Ladies) where it is convenient to display the force of your beautie, in favouring him that will enterprize the Combate on your behalfe, for I assure you, the picture of the Princesse Miragarda is here at the Castle, which is of such excellency, as the knight who hath the keeping thereof, cannot (as yet) be vanquished, the cause is (as I iudge) rather by the singularity of this faire Princesse, then the force or valour that is in the knight, against whom I intend to try my selfe. Wherefore I pray you (faire Ladies) to separate your selves asunder, and bethinke your selves under whose name I shall enter the Combate, and be you all present by, for I know I shall purchase some advantage by your company.

Poliphemia (who had the greatest opinion of beauty in her selfe amongst them all) spake to the Prince in this order. I know very well (Sir knight) that the victory which they gaine, that enter the Combate for the Princesse Miragarda, procured by the force and loyall friendship, which truly is very far off from you: wherefore, if fortune chance to forsake you in the Combate, the doth no more then you deserve, seeing the great inconstancy of you towards them, on whose behalfe you seeme to enter the Combate.

The other Damoselles were somewhat abashed, hearing Poliphemia spake so plainly, whereupon the Prince Florian returned her this answer. I perceive Lady, that you are very unkind towards me, without any great occasion, and you offer truly great discourtesie, to conceive so bad an opinion of me: wherefore, to put you out of such an ill suspicion, I am determined

## of Palmerin of England.

102  
determined to enter the Combate, under the favour of your beautie, when you shall well perceive, that you were in a very contrary judgement.

So riding on, they came at last to the Castle, at what time Miragarda and her Ladies came forth, to recreate her selfe upon the water, being accompanied with the Giant Almaroll. The Damosels knight no sooner beheld the beautie of this faire Princesse, but his heart was presently deprived of libertie: yet had he a good qualitie, for the passions that tormented him by the beautie of Ladies, was of no longer continuance then while they were before him.

After that Miragarda was gone a pretty distance off, he said to the Damosels: What say you to the beautie of this gallant Princesse? We say (answered Poliphemia) that you should not dismay your selfe any more: in that each of us conceiveth this opinion of our selves, that we may equall her in beautie. Miragarda was no sooner returned againe, but shee late done a while at the Castle gate, greatly delighting her selfe to behold so faire a company.

Florendos (who was not farre off) being Armed for all assaults, was somewhat moved, seeing her that made him live in continuall languor: and the Giant Almaroll beholding him, beside, knowing well that Miragarda did greatly delight, to see him Combat with strange knights, called to him with these words. Sir Florendos, doe that which your dutie commandeth you, for the Princesse Miragarda stayes onely to behold you.

Florendos taking good view of the Damosels, and seeing the knight prepare himselfe to the ioust, he presently mounted on his horse backe, and coming to the knight, he began in this manner to salute him, I pray you Sir knight to tell me, upon what occasion you are come hither: if so be you are compelled to bring these Damosels to this place as your pennance, and would be gladly deliuered of them, peradventure I may fortune to do you such a pleasure.

I promise you Sir Florendos (answered the Damoselles knight) I came not hither to enterprize to take the guard from you

you, whereof you make so great estimation : but chely to see, if these Ladies did repose any trust in the prowess of him, who hath conducted them thowow many countries.

I cannot tell (said Florendos) what answer I should make him, that hath so good knowledge of me, neuertheless, I would desire you breake a couple of Lances with me, that we may giue a little pleasure to the Princesse Miragarda. And if it so fall out, that the ioust be moze hindzance to the one then to the other, it shall be lawfull for him to enter the combat : the Damosels knight answered thus.

Sir Florendos, I would be loth to Combat against you, although I dare be so bold to iust a little, as well to satisfie your desire, to the Princesse Miragarda, as to delight these Damosels that beare me company : for whose sakes, I will likewise breake two Lances with Sir Almaroll himselte, and force not greatly to enter the Combate with him after ward. I know very well (said Florendos) that the assurance you haue in your owne deeds, makes you vse such hardy language: Therefore I agree to whatsoeuer you iudge reasonable, and you may assure your self, that Almaroll will not faile to accomplish your owne desire.

## CHAP. XXVI.

Of the Iousts which were enterprised betweene the Damosels Knight, and he that kept the Shield of the Princesse Miragarda : And of the Combate which the Damoselles Knight had with the Giant Almaroll.



While these knights were preparing themselves to the ioust, Almaroll stoppe betweene them, desiring them to stay a little, till the Princesse Miragarda (who was beneath on the ground) might goe vp into the Castle, and take her place at the window. The knights (who were ready to

to Ioust (set their stauces to the ground, and staid till the Princesse Miragarda was come to the window, Florendos contemplated her face a while, and hauing taken his leaue on her, gaue his horse the spures against the Damosels Knight : who met him in the middest of the Carrire, with such great force, as the trunchions of their lances flew vp into the aire, and they passed on nothing shaken at all. Then their Esquiers brought them new Lances, wherewith they ran together againe couragiously, and hurst their stauces as nobly as they did befoze, wherby on they prepared for the third triall.

Florendos was somewhat grieued, hauing felt the prowess of his aduersarie, and feared least any misfortune should happen to him, in the presence of his Lady. And the Damoselles Knight was in great doubt whether it was Florendos or no, beside, he was somewhat offended that he had begun the Ioust, perceiuing well the minde of the Prince his couzin, if Fortune should discountenance him in the presence of his beautifull Mistres : which to preuent, he came to him with these wordes. He thinkes it were necessary, Sir Florendos, that you and I should content our selues, seeing that neither of vs can boast of the aduantage of the Ioust, beside, you cannot purchase any great renowne, in conquering one of your affectionate seruants, who verily would be soze, that you should receiue any misfortune at his hands, in that it might hinder you in place of most hope. Therefore, I pray you giue me leaue, to breake two or thre Lances with Sir Almaroll, which will yelde some contentment to these Ladies that beare me company.

Florendos returned him this answer, I perceiue, sir knight, you haue so little desire to deale with me, as you feare nothing that may happen to you, you witnes so well your knightly behaviour, wherefoze I pray you do not forsake me in this order, befoze you tell me of whence and what you are. To tell you my name, saide the Damosels Knight, and afterward to Ioust against you, is much against my will, so that I cannot resolue my selfe, upon which of these two points I should rest : neuertheless, because I would gladly content you, I am well pleased to venture againe with you.

Then

Then these two Princes ranne together with such force, as they burst their staves to their hands, whereupon, their horses hurt each other so cruelly, as both they and their Paisters fell to the ground: the Damosels Knight having the shoulder of his horse broken, but Florendos his horse was slaine outright, which did so greatly bere him, as he dyed forth his sword, being very willing to enter the Combate, which the Damosels Knight perceiuing, he stayed him with this friendly language.

Sir Knight, I would gladly intreate you to forbear so much resistance against your friend, who desireth (in any thing he may to doe you seruice, I beare so much good will vnto you, and loath I am to enter the Combate with you, not for any feare I haue of your valor, but because the duty of friendship forbiddeth mee such vngentlenesse. And this perswade your selfe, that I am of no lesse courage then your selfe, and could make as good assurance of the victorie, but that it would grieue me to see you iniured: wherefore, that no discourtesie may happen on either side, I pray you sheath your sword againe, and reserue the triall therewith, till such a one come, as shall seeke you with a more malicious intent, then I doe.

The Princesse Miragarda, who had heard the whole discourse that passed the Damosels Knight, could haue bene content (for the boldnesse she saw in him) to see the Combate tried betwene them: then Florendos spake to him againe in this manner. I can very hardly content my selfe (sir knight) without I might see the one of vs dismounted, or else that you would tell me who you are: to which words Arlesia (one of the Damosels) made this answer.

I will tell ye Sir Knight, this order was he wont to vse with such knights, as he knewe to be lesse gouerned by discretion then himselfe, with them would he neuer end the fight, making his excuse by vs, as your selfe may behold at this time: for seeing the Princesse Miragarda doth not fauour him, he is content to knit by thus, without passing any further triall, thinking vs vnto of his good will.

Truely

Truly my friend (answered Poliphemus) you haue saide that which is most certaine, and I beleeue our knight is of the same opinion himselfe: Florian smiling, made him this answer. I see very well now (faire Ladies) that the paines I haue taken in conducting you, is made of no account at all: neuerthelesse, I haue this aduantage, that your enticing words want power to deceiue me, for I am, and will be master of my selfe.

These words albeit he spake them somewhat softly, yet the Princesse Miragarda did well vnderstande them, by reason whereof, she took him presently to be one of slender fidelitie: but she iudged Florendos to be one at libertie, and that loue had no power ouer him. But he himselfe desired not to liue in such libertie, if he could haue compassed any remedie for so great a torment, as the beautie of his faire Mistresse enforced him to endure.

And now to returne to Florendos he could not be so wel perswaded by the Damosels Knight, but that he desired to enter the Combate with him, which the giant Almaroll perceiuing, he caused to be brought forth a goodly bay Courser, and sent it to the Damosels knight, with this request. That he would put himselfe in a readinesse, to the ende they two might trie themselves together, which would giue some delight to the princesse Miragarda: and because she should haue the better will to the Combate, he was content some reward should be ordained, in requitall of his paines that remained the conquerour: vpon which motion the Damosels knight made this reply.

Loke (Sir Almaroll) what it shall please you to appoint, you shall not finde me contrary thereto. It is to be then, quoth Almaroll, that the victorie happen on your side, I pray you to giue me (as my reward) this Lady named Arlence, whom I will not faile to esteeme as chiefe mistresse of my affection: and if it comes to passe that fortune make her choise of you, you shall receiue for your recompence, the horse wheron you are mounted, which I warrant will be as good as any in the world.

Trust me (saide the Damosels Knight) I haue already determined with my selfe, to bestow her vpon such a knight as I make good account of: yet will I accept this horse, if so be the

B

vidoz



vidozie fall on my side : and if it come to passe that I am vanquished, if the Lady herselfe can finde in her heart to satisfie your request, you shall not finde me to hinder it any thing. I am content (answered Almaroll) hearing you speake so reasonably, for I presume, that she will not refuse the knight who is so willing to doe her service.

So (without any more words) they placed their Lances in their restes, and being couered with their Shildes, gaue their horses the Spurs, and encountred together so brauely, as the Damosels knight forsooke both his Stirrops, but Almaroll was cast to the ground with his Sable betwene his legs, who was not a little offended to haue such a disgrace, especially in the presence of his new chosen friend.

The Damoselles commended greatly this gallant beginning, but chiefly they whom Florian won from the knights that kept the Valley. Almaroll hauing recovered his feete, drew forth his sword, and came marching towards the Damosels knight, who presently alighted, lest the Giant should offer any harme to his horse: and then they charged one another with such cruell strokes, as moued great admiration to all there present. And the more couragious was the prince Florian, as well to delight the Damosels, as to declare his noblenesse in fight to the Prince Florendos, not forgetting withall, that Miragarda should well perceiue, he stood in no feare of her knight, by refusing the Combate.

On the other side, Almarol behaued himselfe very gallantly, for the desire he had to gaine Arlencea, and such was the regard of her loue with him, as in all his life he neuer fought more brauely.

These two champions continued such notable courage, as in short time their armour was broken in many places, and their bodies so grievously wounded, that the blood ranne from them very pitifully: but Almaroll (being not so nimble and quicke as his aduersarie) was brought into the greatest danger, by meanes whereof, he was glad to breake square a little, to take breathing.

But the damosels knight would not to suffer him, for he followed

loved his intent so fast upon him, as he was constrained to fall to the earth, seeming rather to be dead then aliuie: the sight whereof did graue the Prince Florendos out of measure, and was so much offensive to the Princesse Miragarda, as she departed from the window, commanding that Almaroll should be brought into the Castle, which was presently done, and Florendos went with him into his Chamber, to see some prouision might be made for his wounds, which in sooth were very dangerous.

Then was the Damosels knight brought somewhat aside, where the damosels vnarmed him to dress his wounds, which were not in any great danger, whereupon he caused himselfe to be armed againe, and mounted on horsebacke, intending to depart thence. But as he was about to set forward on the way, two knights of some strange countrey arrived at the Castle, who came desirous to try the aduventure. One of these knights was in Carnation coloured Armour, very thicke beset with Grasse of siluer, and in his shield was figured a white Hart, in a field of Sinople: the other knight was in blacke armour, and bearing in his shield the same deuise his fellow had.

These two knights no sooner beheld the Damosels knight, but he in the carnation Armour spake thus to his Companion. It seemeth to me Sir, that we are come vnto the place, where we shall haue no occasion to vse our armor, if he which keepeth the shield of Miragarda, be not in case to endure the Combate: this knight should seeme to be he, wherefore, because it shall not be sayd, we came hither in vaine, I will goe disburden him of one of his Ladies, she will be as meete for my company, as for his.

Certainely (answered the other knight) I cannot content my selfe with things of so base estimation, hauing before mine eyes the shield, wherein is pictured the beautie of the faire Princesse, the regard whereof, maketh me account nothing more worthy. At these words, his companion cast his eyes on the image of Miragarda, which hung in the sameliest place of the Pillar, wherewith he entred into these speeches.

I see now (my good friend) that they which haue aduentured to this place, haue not bestowed their labour in vaine: for more willingly would I lose my life for her, whose heavenly visage this Shield represents, then to content my selfe with hope of any further glory. I assure you (sayd the first knight) I intend not to depart from this place, without I carry this Shield with me: yet would I (if it were possible) first make tryall of my worthinesse, against him that durst deny me to take it hence. So, aduancing himselfe to the tree where the Shields were placed, he offered to take downe the Shield.

The Damosels knight perceiuing his intent, and knowing that Florendos was busie about the hurts of the Giant Almaroll, he would not suffer that in his presence any one should offer so great wrong to the Prince Florendos: wherefore, in regard of the good will he bare him, he broched his horse with the spurs, and when he came to the place where the Shield of Miragarda hanged, he took the knight by the arme, and puld him backward with so great strength, as he fell beside his horse headlong to the ground, and with all spake to him in this manner. I may well perswade my selfe (Sir knight) that you desire not to trie your fortune in this aduventure, being so forgetfull of your honour, as to procede so cowardly, not attending the presence of him, who hath the authoritie to defend this Shield: in his absence therefore, I will trie if you be such a gentle companion as dare presume to carry it hence by your manhood.

Miragarda (who was come againe to the window, to take better aduise of the Damosels knight, vnderstanding the braue words he had giuen the knight, did greatly content her selfe in his presence, in that he took vpon him so worthily to defend her shield, against the knight that offered to take it away: who, when he had gotten himselfe on foote againe, he drew forth his sword, and in a phrenzie or a madnesse, (as it were) he came to assault the Damosels knight, which his companion perceiuing he came betwene them with these words.

I pray you Sir to amount vpon your horse, and in the meantime, I will trie if the valour of this knight, may answer the proud attempt he made to you. Upon this, he aduanced him

himselfe against the Damoselles knight, who for the great desire he had, to witnesse his courage to the princeesse Miragarda, prepared himselfe brauely to meete his aduersarie, which he discharged so nobly (hauing his full desire at him) as neither his shield, armour, nor mail-coat could defend the push of the Lance, but it passed cleane thorow his body, so that the strange knight tumbled beside his horse to the ground, being altogether deprived of his life.

When the Damosels knight had gotten his Launce out of the knights body, he prauced till he came vnder the window where the Princeesse Miragarda stood, expecting the coming of the other knight, who meeting him in the midst of the course, brake his Launce on the Prince: but when they came together, the Damoselles knight caught hold on his enemies shield, which he pulde from him with so great force, as he brought his head on the necke of his horse, where (not permitting him the leisure to recover himselfe) he gaue him with his owne shield such a cruell stroke on the Crest of his Helmet, as the knight was so giddy therewith, he could hardly tell how to recover himselfe. In the meane while the knight was thus amazed, the prince took off his helmet, and gaue him such another heauie stroke, as he fell beside his horse, foaming forth blood out of his mouth abundantly.

Florendos (being in the Chamber with the Giant Almaroll) was greatly abashed, seeing a combate fought at his Ladies Shield in his absence: wherefore, fearing least any displeasure should come thereby to him, he forsooke all other occasions, and went presently thither, where (hauing well viewed the two knights) he receiued no small admiration at this aduventure, which when the Damosels knight perceiued, he spake to him in this order.

Sir Florendos, see here the deedes wherein I haue employed my selfe, onely because I would doe you seruice, I am as yet ignorant (answered Florendos) wherein I shall thinke my selfe beholding to you, for I see two knights here brought in to very badde estates, yet I knowe not vpon what occasion. You shall Sir Florendos (saide the Damoselles knight) here

## The second Part

solved hereof. This knight which you see here slain, would have carried away the shield of the princeesse Miragarda, and he which is yet living (but in very slender abilitie) was the fauourer and aider of the others attempt: but I haue giuen them to vnderstand, that a thing of so high estimation, might not be wonne without some labour.

Thus in regard of the offence they were about to offer you, and to witnesse the good will I vnfeinedly beare you, I tooke vpon me to hinder them in such a disloyall enterprise, for proofe of my words, you may behold whether they be true or no.

I pray you Sir (quoth Florendos) tell me who you are, for I desire to know the name of him, whose promise hath so deeply indebted me to him: Sir (Florendos answered the Damosels knight) I will satisfie you, because I see you are so desirous: wherefore I aduertise you, that I am Florian of the Forrest, your Cousin and obedient seruite, who will not suffer you to receiue iniurie, in any place where he shall be present: Florendos in great ioy replied thus.

Now is my minde (which hath bene troubled a good while) very well eased, in both knowing and seeing the promise that is in you: wherefore I humbly desire you to thinke so well of me, that you would spend a litle time here with me, that I may commune with you about matters of some importance. Beside you shall cause the wounds of the Giant Almaroll to be the sooner healed, in that he will not grieve so much, hauing receiued the foile at so noble a knights hands.

I doe not thinke (answered the Damosels knight) that you would wish me to tarrise here, in that I haue promised to visit other places, which if I should faile to doe, I should gaine the ill reports of a number: wherefore I desire you suffer me depart hence, and that you would take the oath of this last knight which I conquered, that he shall make you faithfull promise (after you haue knowledge of his name) to trauell to the court of the King Recinde, where he shall declare to the Quene for what occasion I did combat with his fellow and himselfe, and I desire you againe, not to receiue any ill opinion by my sudden departure.

Florendos

## of Palmerin of England.

Florendos laboured to dissuade him from his iourney, but he would by no meanes be moued from his determination: wherefore, after a friendly embracing, he set forward on his way, accompanied with the Damosels, who held him in greater reputation then they had done before: but he began to ware contrary to them, in that he esteemed of them euery day worse then other.

## CHAP. XXVII.

Of that which happened to the Damosels Knight, as he returned to the Court of Recinde, King of Spaine.



Early on the next morning, the Damosels knight set forward in his iourney to the Court of the King Recinde, intending when he came thither, to discharge himselfe of some of the Damosels, because he would haue none in his company but Arlenca, and the Gentlewoman that attended on her, to do her seruice: being loath to forsake her, till he had brought her to the place, where she might be married, according as her honest behauiour deserved, and to the end she should not thinke him to be vnmindfull of her.

As he rode on thus musing with himselfe, he heard the voyce of a woman crying very pittisfully, in a Wood, which was hard by the way: and because the cry was so lamentable, he gaue his Horse the Spurres, and rode till he came where he heard the noyse. He then looking a side, beheld

on the banke of a goodly Riuer, a knight, whose armour was of Azure colour, very richly wrought all ouer with little fillets of Gold, in his shield was pictured a golden Lion, in a Siluer field, and at his fete he held a Damofell by the haire of the head, whose beautie deserued not such despightfull vſage, as the knight ſhewed to her, for he held his Sword byawne in his hand, and made ſhow to cut off her head, if ſhe refuſed to obey his luſt.

Not farre of, he eſpyed another knight tumbling among the graine leaues, who laughed at this pittifull ſight ſo heartily, that he was ready to fall in a ſwoone, beholding what hard ſhift the Damofell made to helpe her ſelfe: and after he had laughed a good while, he ſpake theſe words. It doth me good to ſee that fortune enforceth you to take ſuch great pains, for by this meanes I ſhall be eaſed of ſuch buſie labour, when I come to take my pleaſure on the Damofell.

The Damofels knight perceiuing the ſhame which theſe knights endeououred to offer to the Damofell, he cryed to them aloud, that they ſhould forbear their villany, or elſe he would cauſe them to buy their pleaſure dearly. The knight which had the Damofell by the haire of the head, ſeing the knight that ſpake ſo boldly to him, returned him preſently this anſwer. Are you offended Sir, to ſee me vſe the Damofell in this manner? Truſt me, were not the water ſo broad which is betwene you and me, I would quickly make you know the price of your boldneſſe. Howertheleſſe, if thou daereſt tary long, I will not faile but come to thee, when thou ſhalt well vnderſtand, that thou meeteſt with ſuch a knight, as will ſone allay thy brauery. I pray you my companion (ſayd the other knight that lay by) doe not offend your ſelfe with fretting, or raging, for I iudge it beſt that we go to this knight, who hath ſo many Damofels in his company, where we may take our choyce, and that without trouble.

I deſire you my friends (anſwered the Damofels knight) that you would tell me where the ford for paſſage is, to the end I may make triall of your valours. If you haue ſo great deſire to come to vs (ſaid the firſt knight) you muſt ſwim ouer, for I know

know no other way for you. Then began he againe to pull and hale the Damofell very cruelly, becauſe he would moue the Damofels knight to more anger: who being earneſt in reuenging great ſhame and villany, and making no account of the danger in paſſage, he alighted from his horſe and leapt into the river, which he paſſed very well, and recovering the further ſide, the knight that lay among the greene leaues ſaid to his companion. Doe not trouble your ſelfe from your determination, for I will quickly quail the luſtineſſe of this knight: whereto the Prince thus answered. It is hard for me to ſay holy things may come to paſſe, but I intend to hinder the pleaſure you make ſuch account of.

So, without any more words, he ſetled himſelfe cloſe to the knight, and gaue him ſuch friendly entertainment, as he tumbled to the ground, with his left arme broken in ſhivers. The other knight ſeing the miſfortune of his fellow, left the Damofell to defend himſelfe from the waightie ſtrokes of the Damofels knight: who handled him in ſuch ſort, as he was conſtrained to craue aid at her hands, whom he ſought to haue abuſed, with theſe words. I beſeech you faire Damofell, to forget the iniury I haue done you, and intreate this knight to ſaue my life. The Damofels knight held his hand and would not ſtrike, becauſe he expected what the Damofell would ſay: then ſhe (beholding the amiable countenance of him that would haue forced her) was ſuppreſſed with exceeding græfe, ſo that ſhe pittied more to ſee him ſo neare his death, then ſhe required reuenge for his diſhoneſt enterpriſe: whereupon ſhe ſpake to the Damofels knight in this manner.

Let me intreate you (my Lord) to ſaue the life of this wicked man, it may be, hereafter he will be warned from falling in the like offence. I promiſe you faire Damofell (ſayd Florian) you cannot command me the thing that I would not willingly conſent vnto, but becauſe the knight hath deſerued greater puniſhment, then as yet he hath ſuffered. I giue him his life vpon this condition: that he ſhall take his companion with him in the beſt manner he can deuife, and they bot ſhall trauaile to the King of Spaines Court, where they ſhall declare

declare to the Ladies, what shame they would haue offered you, and they shall promise neuer to weare armour againe, without it be their pleasures to suffer them.

The knights promised in all respects to accomplish his will: whereupon, their Esquires prouided a knightly Bère, whereon the knight was layd, that had his arme broken, and so he was carryed with his companion to the court of the king Recinde.

The Damosels knight walked along by the Riuers side, holding the Damosell by the hand, who by reason of her exceeding feare, had forgotten her Esquire, whom the knights that would haue rauished her, had bound fast to a tree, and they had put a gagge of wood in his mouth, because they would not bee preuented of their purpose by his crying.

But it was not long before the Damosell embraced him, when she desired the Prince that he would returne againe, to deliuer the Esquire out of this miserable veration: and when they came to him, there they found their two Waltrayes, vpon one of them, the Prince caused the Esquire to mount, commaunding him to ride along the Riuers side, till he could finde some place to get ouer on the other side, to bring him his horse.

In the meane while, the Esquire went about that he was comanded, the Prince vnarmed himselfe, to drie his garments, which were full of water, and then he questioned with the Damosell, how she happened into that place, and vpon what occasion the knights so sought to dishonour her: to which words she made this answer,

You shall vnderstand (sir knight) that I was borne in this Countrey, and do belong to the Princesse Miragarda, I know not whether you haue heard of her before or no. Yes indeede haue I (said the Prince) for the name of the Ladie is so much renowned throught the whole world, as many knights (by meanes of her beautie) haue wrought themselves much dishonour.

So it is then (said the Damosell) that I took occasion to tra-  
uaile

uaile a little the Countrey, but Fortune was so vnhappie to me, as I chaunced to meete with these two knights, who demaunded of me, into what place my iourney lay: I then misdoubting no harme, because their behauiour seemed very honest to me, declared vnto them the whole state of my iourney, whereupon, one of these knights spake thus vnto his companion.

I thinke it good, in reuenge of the shame we haue receiued at the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, that we should raise our anger on this Damosell, who is one of them attendant on the Princesse Miragarda: in respect that her beautie will render vs sufficient pleasure, to forget the foyle we toke at the push of the Launce.

The other knight being equall with his felloso in this vngenerous intent, did presently allow of the others iudgement: So they cast lots which of them should abuse me first, and it fortun'd to fall on him, whom you saw pulling me so cruelly by the haire of the head. Then because my Esquire (griewing to see me so ill intreated) cryed aloud that some might come succour me, they dealt with him so discourteously as you haue seene: and had it not bene for your gracious assistance, God knows the sorrow that I poore soule should haue endured.

Truely Madame, (answered the Prince) I reioyce that it was my chance to be your reskewe, yet had it bene better for me not to haue come hither at all, such a secret wound haue I receiued by your singular beautie: but if you consider my god deserts, and withall the readinesse you shall finde in mee to your welfare, I iudge you may bestow that on me by gentleness, which the vncourteous knights would haue taken from you perforce.

The Damosell noting his words, regarding his sweet countenance, remembryng his noble behauiour and Princely courtesie, made him aunswere, but I knewe not how: if it were incident to his purpose, he is able to answer it, if not, then there was no harme done. A new accident

willeth me to let them alone, and hearken to the Damofelles Esquire, who being returned, cried to the prince, that he should presently mount on his horse, to give assistance to the other Damofels, who a knight in blacke Armour fought to leade away perforce.

The Prince hearing the words of the Esquire, was incensed with such a sudden fury, as not tarrying till he was all armed, he ranne to the river, and did swimme over in very great hast, willing the Damofell to come after him, and passe over the fford, which the Esquire could shew her, and bring her likewise into the company of the other Damofels. So soone as Florian had passed the river, he perceiued Poliphemia come riding towards him, crying and fearing her haire very pittifully, that he should make hast to succour her mistresse: which he being very desirous to doe, was glad to follow after her on foote, because the knight that carried her away, had grievously wounded the legges of his horse.

But fortune so much fauoured Arlencea, as she spied the Damofels knight comming, who ouer-tooke them befoze they had gotten halfe a miles distance from the river: and then he perceiued how the knight had set by Arlencea behinde him, and his Esquire could very hardly cause her to sit still on the horse, she stroue so often to get the ground, wherfoze he rid by, to hold her on the horse.

The Damofels knight, seeing the knight in blacke Armour had clapt his Helmet on his head, and would haue dismounted to defend himselfe, he aduanced himselfe towards him, and Arlencea held him fast on his horse, till the Damofelles knight had stroken him such a blow betwene the necke and the shoulders, as he fell to the ground like a dead man: and taking off his helmet, he would haue parted his head from his shoulders, but yet he pacified his furie, because he would send him likewise to the Ladies in the Spanish Court.

Then he caused the Esquire to be vnarmed, who held Arlencea on the horse behinde his Maister, but he wept very bitterly, desiring the Prince to haue compassion on him: and comming againe to the knight (who was all this while on his knees)

knees) he commanded him to declare what was his name. I am called Rocamor (sayd the knight) a friend to those two knights which you did lately vanquish, and in reuengement of their iniurie, I intended to carry away this Lady.

Tell then (quoth the Damofels knight) this is my will, that you faile not to accomplish the charge I shall commit to you, for if you do, I sweare you shall presently lose your life: the knight answered thus. Good Sir, to the end I may escape so great danger, I bow my selfe obedient to whatsoeuer you command me.

I will then (sayd the Damofels knight) that you presently take your way to the king of Spaines Court, and there present your selfe to the Ladies attendant on the Quene, reporting to them what hath passed betwene you and me, beside you shall neuer while you liue beare armes againe, without it shall please them to licence you. The like charge I haue giuen thy two companions, and they haue promised me they will fulfill it.

I beseech you Sir (answered the knight) to tell me who you are, to the end I may declare his name, that command me thus to submit my selfe in the King of Spaines Court. You shall say (quoth the Prince) that the Damofels knight enioyned you this pennance, and I will so bold as to borrow your Horse, because you haue dealt so discourteously with mine. So causing Arlencea to mount on horsebacke, he left the knight, and returned to the place where the other Damofell stayd his comming: by the way he conferred with Arlencea, how dishonourably the knights of that Countrey, behaued themselves to wandring Damofels.

And when he was come to the rest of his company, he saide amongst them Siluiana (which was the name of her whom the knights would haue rauished) to her he assigned a gentle melcome, and the Damofels were not a little glad, at the returne of their Lady Arlencea, whom they feared they should neuer haue seene againe.

The night being on a pace, and there they concluded to passe that night, because they knew of no other provision neare at hand,



## The second part

hand, every one took a modicum of their small refection, and afterward they layde them downe to their rest: but Siluiana could not suffer any sleepe to enter her eyes, such was her good opinion of the Prince, and so farre in loue was she with him, as she rather took delight to discourse at the night thereon, then to entertaine such quiet rest as her fellows did.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

What the Princes Florendos did to the vanquished knight and how those knights whom the Prince Florian had conquered, arriued at the King of Spains Court.



After that the Damosels knight was departed from the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, the Prince Florendos being desirous to execute the charge was left with him, came to the vanquished knight, desiring that he would satisfie him, of whence and what they were, and to what end they came thither, whereto the knight thus answered.

You shall vnderstand (worthy Sir) that we were bozne in the Realme of Spaine, and haue bene held of good account in the king Recindes Court, as for our names, you shal know that I am called Brandamor, and my companion had to name Sigerall. We two being desirous to seeke knightly aduentures, among many other which we passed with honour, we concluded to make triall of the conquest of this shield, wherein is figured the heauenly face of the Princesse Miragarda.

But fortune not minding the former regard she had of vs, caused vs to be conquered by the Damoselles knight,

## of Palmerin of England.

before we could accomplish the meane to enter the Combate with him, whose charge was onely to defende the Shield. I assure you my friend (answered the Prince Florendos) the bold and discourteous enterprize you took in hand, deserued greater chastisement then you haue as yet receiued, for one can not deale seuerely enough with those, who put forth themselves in such actions, as doeth reproach them with high dishonour.

Wherefore that you may purge your selfe of this notozious crime, you shall here faithfully protest vnto me, that you will goe submit your selfe to the King Recindes Court: and if so be you presume to contrary what I haue adioyned you, I shall enforce more grievous affliction on you, then these wounds can doe which you haue on your body.

The knight (being not as yet thoroughly receiued out of the feare, which the Damosels knight had frighted him withall) bowed faithfully to Florendos, that he would execute to the vttermost what he had commanded him: wherefore, hauing his wounds dressed, he presently betooke himselfe to his iourney, leauing the buriall of his companion to the Prince.

In few daies after, he arriued at the king of Spaines Court, being very loth to enter in, because he was so well knowne to the king, & the chiefe noble men of his Court, but notwithstanding his great vnwillingnesse, the regard of his oath so much preuailed with him, as he entred the Pallace.

The Ladies which beheld him, did not repute him amongst the number of those vanquished by the Damosels knight, because his Armour was so faire and vnbroken, nor blemished in any place: beside his Shield was no whit impayred, but the deuill therzof to be seene at pleasure, so that the Ladies delighted greatly to behold him.

Brandamor being come into the Chamber of presence, the king and the Quene being there both together, he opened his Helmet, and kneeling downe before the Quene, rehearsed the whole circumstance of his charge, as concerning the behaviour of the Damosels knight.

In

In the reporting of this his great misfortune, seeing so many of his sciences present, the colour arose so redde in his face, as neither the King nor the Quene knew him, no, not they that had bene daily conuersant in his company, but generally they reputed him for some strange knight: so that the Quene demanded of him, what he was, and for what occasion he enterprised to Combate with the Damosels knight, Brandamor, then gaue her to vnderstand, how the Damoselles knight had slaine his companion Sigerall, and how before he had vanquished them, he foylsted against the knight that guarded the Princesse Miragardas shield, likewise that he Combatted with the Giant Almaroll, and had brought him in very great danger of his life. Whereupon, the King entred into these speeches.

Certainely, I cannot chuse but wonder, hearing the noble prowesse of this vnknown knight, and I promise thee knight, thou deseruest to haue the same punishment which hath happened to thy companion, and I assure thee, I would see it executed on thee my selfe, if I did not perswade my selfe, that the beauty of the Princesse Miragarda hath rauished the minds of other knights, who might boast of better assurance in themselves then he could.

At these wordes, Brandamor came and kissed the Kings hand, by which occasion the king knew him, which made him to iudge the more worthily of the Damoselles knight, and he commaunded his Chirurgions should vse good respect vnto Brandamor, because he had well deserved by his valour in times past. But scantely was he departed their presence, when the two knights that (would haue rauished Siluian) arrived at the Court, they being so feeble and weak, as they were constrained to leane on their Esquiers shoulders, till they came into the kings presence, where he that had the least hurt, began to vse his language in this manner.

My gracious Lord, the Damosels knight, whose renowne is so highly commended in this Court, having vanquished vs in the open fieelde, commaunded vs to come and submitt our selues to your excellency, to be iudged according as our deedes haue

haue deserued: in respect whereof, we come to present our selues to the Ladies of this Court, whom we intreate so to worke on our behalfe with your Maiestie, as the offence may be pardoned, which our fleshly willes procured vs to commit. Then these two knights discoursed at large, how euery thing had happened to them, vpon which occasion the King thus spake.

Surely, it doth not a little content me, that God hath suffered you to receiue punishment for your misdoedes, by the hands of the renowned Damosels knight, on whose behalfe, and for the loue I beare him, I will procede against you, according as your hainous offences haue worthily deserued: & I assure you, the more I heare the noble valour of this knight, the more desirous I am to haue knowledge of him.

My Lord (said the knight) you haue very great occasion to esteeme of him, for I am of the opinion, that all the worthines which ought to be in a knight, is in him: for his sake therefore, we humbly intreat your maiestie, to vse such perswasion with the Ladies, as they will suffer my companion and me to beare Armes, which were forbidden by the Damosels knight, vntill the Ladies of your Court haue pardoned the iniurie, which we offered to the Damosell, whom this knight by his hardinesse tooke from vs.

I promise you my friendes (saide the King) my good will is so tender in this case, as you shall receiue no fauor by my ayde. The knight noting the Kings answer, desired the Quene that it might stand with her pleasure to commaund her Ladies, to entertaine them into their fauorable iudgements: and they would so witnesse their good affections towarde them, that so long as they liued, they would be ready to spend their liues for them.

The Quene had not the leisure to make them any answer, because the knight that would haue carried away Arlethea, came and humbled himselfe on his knees before the Ladies, declaring to them how the Damoselles knight had commaunded him, to come and render himselfe to their mercy, without which, he would not permit that he should weare armour any

## The second Part

more, the conceit thereof was so grievous to him, as he took the hardinesse to intreate the Quene to assist him in his sute: whereto she returned this answer.

It seemeth to me, that the Ladies of my Court remaine greatly indebted to the Damosels knight, for whose sake I wil not seme to hinder you, but commit you all thre to their discretions, to whom you are sent. The knight which had last of all deliuered his message, no sooner beheld the other two, but he presently knewe them: the one was called Ferrobrequé, and the other Gentafort, they being both descended of a giants race, the sight of them caused him not to take his misfortune so heavily, as he did all the while before.

The Ladies vnderstanding the pleasure of the Quene, concluded to giue them leaue to weare their Armes, warning them on perill of their liues, not to vse them in any places, where Ladies or Damosels should be iniured, but to passe on and let them alone, whether the cause were iust or vniust, they should not intermeddle withall.

This charge seemed very vnfriendly to the knights, but they durst not seme to dislike thereof: wherupon they were constrained to allow of their sentence, afterward they took leaue and departed from the Court.

A good space it was, before any more tydings came to the Spanish Court of the Damosels knight, but at length thre knights armed very brauely, arrived at the Wallace, about the euening tide, the king, the Quene, and the Ladies, being walking in a faire Gallerie, the prospect whereof was out into the Court, where they might beholde these thre knights, who sent an Esquire, to declare their willes to the king Recinde.

The arrivall of the Esquire, caused many to assemble into the Gallery, where the Esquire being come before the king, he humbled himselfe on his knees with these words. Renowned Prince, these thre strange knights, commaunded mee to let your Highnesse vnderstand, that they haue trauailed a long time, in the service of the thre Daughters of Galiaster, Duke of Arragon, who were iudged faire in the eyes of these

## of Palmerin of England.

113

thre knights, albeit they were found verie false in their loue. For they (after they had long time entertayned these knights as chiefe of their affections) were married vnto thre other Gentlemen, who were brought vppe in their fathers Court, and with these receiued great contentment, not considering the offence they haue committed, in being so forgetfull of their owne honour, as to marrie with such as belomed not their degrees.

These thre knights are so highly offended hereat, as they haue concluded neuer to espouse any other Damosels, but onely such, as being wearis of their owne seruants, will vouchsafe to admit them entertainment. But if any such as are forsaken of their Ladies, shall alledge, that this change is not equall, these thre knights will iustifie the triall thereof against them by Combate.

And because these Ladies may fauour them in their demands, without any preiudice to the renoume: I will declare to you the estates of these knights. The first is named Lustramar, the eldest sonne to the Marquesse Astramor. The second is called Arpian, sonne to the Duke of Archeke. The third is Gradian, the Count of Artasia: who doe altogether humbly desire these Ladies (by your Highnesse licence) that they would shew their good willes vnto them, because they are so desirous to make knowne to them, the haughty valour of their inuincible stomackes: for here will they abide all this day, in the same manner as you see, to make prooue of Armes against their amorous seruants.

But if it so fall out, that they find the Ladies of this Court more desirous to keepe their old seruants, then to entertaine these so newly come, they will be content to depart hence, euen as they came hither, and being once gone from hence, they will visite most of the Princes Courts in Christendome, to trie if fortune will be so fauourable to them, as to knit by their earnest desires to their contentment. The king Recinde was greatly abashed at these sudden newes, and the knights were moued much at this aduenture, especially,

regarding the estates of them that would Combate for their Ladies: and for them thus much I can say, that there were many among them, who would gladly haue forsaken their old fauoured seruants, on condition they might marrie with these three noble Princes.

The King and the Quene allowing well their worthy enterprise, they stayed a great while, looking when some one knight or other of the court, would be so venturous as to deale with them: but seeing none would come, they prepared themselves to depart, at the very instant as the Damofels Knight arriued there.

This valiant and renowned knight was no sooner espied, but they that knew him, came and met him, letting him vnderstand the enterprise of the three strange knights: which being rehearsed to him, the Damofels received very much ioy thereat, for that they being wearie of him, and hope to depart with these three knights, and the Prince vnderstanding their intents, said vnto them. You shall now do what your selues imagine expedient, and I will recompence my selfe by these means on these three knights, for the great trauaile I haue taken dayly in your seruice. I haue bene so greatly deceived in your loue (sayd Artelia) as I am content to change your company. And we are of the same minde (said they, whom he had wone from the knights in the Forrest) vpon this, he sent them to the three knights, (who were preparing themselves to the Ioust) and willed them to come and deliuer them out of his handes, who would compell them to stay in his company.

I feare me (quoth the King) that these knights wil not attaine the cheefe of their enterprise, against the hardy Damofels Knight. Artelia and her companions forsooke the company of Ailencea, and put themselves apart from them: which the Ladies of the Court perceiuing, they could not chuse but maruell thereat, knowing very wel the prowess of the knight that had conducted them. Some iudged the occasion, to be the Damofels desire of themselves, that they might be at their owne libertie: others reputed the cause to some vnfaithfulness they

they had found in their knight.

Gradian seeing the day wait apace, tooke the hardinesse to aduance himselfe forth first, making shew of the Ioust: which the Damofels knight beholding, he gaue his horse the spurs, and encountred Gradian with so great force, as he made him fetch an errand on the ground: then hee came to Artelia with these words.

It is necessarie that once againe you come and obey that I shall command you. Then he received another Lance, which one of the Kings Pages brought him, and with it he vnhorsed Arpian, because he had not learned to sit fast in his Saddle. Lustramar was very angry at the misfortune of his friends. Wherefore he encountred the Damofels knight so nobly, as he caused him to forsake one of his Stirrups, but himselfe was sent to keepe his fellows company.

These three knights, seeing the dishonour they had received in the Ioust, offered to trie the Combate with the Sword, and chiefly Lustramar did seeme most desirous of it: but the Damofels knight excused himselfe, seeing the day departing so speditly, and the dark night ready to overcharge them, yet would not Lustramar be content with his answer, which when Poliphemia perceiued, she came vnto him with these words.

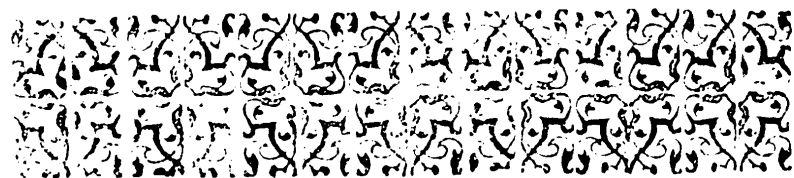
I pray you (Sir knight) content your selfe, and seake no further occasions at this time, for I assure you, that our guide is so little wont to be conquered, as they that deale with him, are very well contented (hauing felt him indeed) to put by the scyle of a fall. I haue found so small assurance (answered Lustramar) in Alomons words, as (for your counsell) I will not forsake to follow my enterprise. Then I promise you (said Artelia) you will not boast of your bargain in the end.

While these two knights prepared themselves to the Combate, the King Recinde (who was desirous to know the Damofelles knight) came himselfe to the place, where these two knights were offering to charge one another, when hee caused them to be paused, and they all foure were very honourably brought into the Pallace.

The Damoselles knight humbly saluted the Quene, and hauing taken off his Helmet, hee knoeled downe to kisse her hand: but the King (who knew him presently) embraced him very louingly, speaking thus to the Quene. Madame, I pray you to make good account of the deedes of honour you haue receiued by this knight, for he hath finished as rare aduentures as euer did any: assuring you that he is the prince Florian of the Forrest, other wise called the knight of the Sauage man, Sonne to the Prince Don Edward, and the Princesse Florida your great friends. The Quene hearing these wordes, took him by in her armes, and embracing him very gratiofly, charged him with his great discourtesie, when he passed by the Court, and would not suffer himselfe to be knowne.

Lustramar and his companions, knowing that he which had vanquished them, was the noble knight of the Sauage man, they made no account of the foyle they had receiued: but on the next morning when they had departed thence, they desired the Prince to esteeme of them as his vnfeined friends.

Two dayes after, the knight of the Sauage man, was desirous to leaue the Court of Spaine, wherupon he took his leaue of the King and the Quene, leauing Siluan there in the court, because she was well knowne, as also Artesia, and her companions, who wept at their parting, for the losse of that they could not recouer againe. The Quene took her leaue friendly of the Giancesse Arleacea, because the Prince Florian did make so good account of her, and the King Recinde brought them forth of the Citie, wheretaking a courteous farewell on all sides, with charging him to doe his commendations to the Emperour, and his children in the Emperours Court, the King returned againe into the Citie, and the Prince rode on his iourney.



CHAP. XXIX.

Of that which happened to the knight of the Sauage man, when he came to the Castle, where Arnalte the Princesse of Nauarre made her abode.



Lorian of the Forrest, not forgetting to take new armour, when he departed from the King of Spaines Court, yet keeping his deuise in his shield of the Sauage man still, because he had greater delight therein, then in any other: in this manner he travelled, atchieuing many rare and singular aduentures, which (for breuities sake) I let passe, because they were not of such importance, as to be placed among his other knightly deedes. After he had coasted along through diuers Countreies, it was his fortune at length to arrive in a very pleasant valley, euen there where the Castle of the Princesse Arnalte stood: she being rid abroad on hunting, as also to see a Combate fought betwene Dragonat, the sonne of Drapos, and another knight, who would not confesse the Princesse Arnalte to be the fairest Lady on the earth. And I assure you, that the presence of Arnalte gaue such encouragement to Dragonat, as he vanquished his aduersary, without any great endamage-ment of person or armour: which was of Azure colour, and bearing in his shield the same deuise which Miragarda had enioyned him, when he came with the Princesse to the Castle of Almaroll, where he left the honour of the day, and vpon which occasion Arnalte did greatly stomacke him. But the knight being beautifull, gratiofly, and often fortunate in triall of aduentures, continued in such earnest affection of service to her, as she in the end began to fauour his courteous deedes, with more regard then she had done before.

But returning to the knight of the Sauage man, whom the Princesse (being in company with her Damosels) had espied comming a far off: whereupon she came to Draganolt, and after she had very graciously saluted him, she said, Behold, here comes the onely man in the world, who is my cruell enemy, and of whom I desire to be seuerely reuenged: wherefore, (my especiall good friend) I desire now to see the very bittermost of your redoubted behauiour. And if fortune regard you with such happinesse, as you enioy no danger in the fight, I wil not faile to recompence you in such sort, as you shall be thoroughly satisfied and contented.

The promise which you make me (answered Draganolt) is of such estimation in my thoughts, as your words is onely able to assure me the victorie, albeit fortune should seeme to set her selfe against me. And perswade your selfe, that it is impossible for me to be vanquished, if you continue me in your acceptable fauour: in hope whereof, I will not onely enter the Combate with the knight (for the desire I haue to reuenge your wrong) but I will likewise deprive him of his Ladies, yea, and of his life, if it shall like you so to command me.

While Draganolt spent other amorous speeches, with the Ladie and Mistresse of his conquered thoughts, the knight of the Sauage man and his company, came to the place where they layed: then Draganolt (to content the honour of the princesse, aduanced himselfe forward with these words.

Sir knight, I am to let you know, how you are arrined in the place, where it is thought meete that you make triall of my valour, which you shall finde of such authoritie, as will enforce you to obey the commandement of this Princesse: whom I will cause you to confesse, that she is the fairest Lady liuing on the earth, and is best worthy of knightly seruice. And when I haue dispoyled you of your armour, you shall goe and submit your selfe to this my Lady and Mistresse Arnalte, the Princesse of Nauarre, who shall accept into her seruice those Damosels in your company, because we pittie to see you so ouercharged: where to the Prince Florian thus replied.

If the Princesse of Nauarre (my friend) be so desirous to be serued with my Damoselles, it is very great shame to you, that you haue not sought me before this present, for you might haue found me better acquainted with Damoselles, then I am now, and by whom the Princesse Arnalte might haue receiued far more honour: but as for those which are with me, I thinke I shall defend them well enough from comming in her seruice. Moreover, if I should be so impudent, as to confesse the large title you haue made of her, I should imagine my selfe deprived of my wittes: for I am (my selfe) the seruant of such a gracious Ladie, as the Princesse Arnalte may no way equall in beautie, and that I shall make you confesse before I depart.

Draganolt being offended to heare the words of the knight of the Sauage man, tooke a strong Launce from his Esquire, and bowing himselfe to the Princesse to assist him with her fauour, he broched his horse against the prince, who likewise prepared himselfe to the Assault: and they encountred together so valiantly, as Draganolt breaking his Launce on the knight of the Sauage mans Shilde, lifted him vpon the croucher of his horse, but Draganolt himselfe was cast forth of his Saddle. Upon this the Prince Florian cast himselfe from his horse, and Draganolt hauing recovered his feet, they beganne to charge one another very furiously, for Draganolt intended to accomplish his promise, or he would fight till the knight of the Sauage man were deprived of his life.

But he found himselfe greatly deceiued, for the noble Florian handled him in such sort, as the Princesse Arnalte well perceiued, that the strength of her knight began to faile, and no maruaile, for he was grievously wounded in many places: whereat the knight of the Sauage man was greatly offended. And fearing he should kill him outright, he paused awhile, because he would suffer him to take breath, when, he deliued him to give ouer the Combat, & returne to the Passage which he had enterprised to guard: but Draganolt gaue him this answer. Your counsell (Sir knight) were necessarie to be followed, if I made more account of my life, then the honour of the



the fight: therefore I let you vnderstand, that I intend not to giue ouer the Combat. When began they the Combat afresh, wounding one another so cruelly, as Arnalte and the Damo- sels did greatly pittie to see the knight so cruelly bent, that their blood altered the colour of the grasse where they fought: in the end Dragonalc not able to endure any longer, fell downe at the knight of the Sauage mans fete, to whom the Princesse presently, and fearing he would cut off the head of her friend, she spake to him in this manner.

I pray you (sir knight) do not take his life from him, considering, the victorie is sufficient for an honorable mind. I promise you Madame (answered the knight of the Sauage man) I will not hold my hands, without he recant his former words, or you promise me a gift that I intend to demand of you. I pray you (said Arnalte) let him rise, for I am content to grant what euer you request, provided alwayes, that you seeme not to impeach mine honor. Then the knight of the Sauage man, gaue Dragonalc into the hands of the Princesse Arnaltaes damoselles, who presently vnarmed him, and conueied him into the Castle, to haue his woundes dress, the danger whereof was not so grievous to him, as the concept of his minde, because he was againe conquered in the presence of his Ladie.

The knight of the Sauage man lodged without the castle (Arnalte now thinking, that she should neuer be reneged on him) and there he sojourned three dayes, at the end whereof, he came to take his farewell of her: and finding her in the Prince Dragonalts Chamber, he fell in conference with her, therer prouing him, for the small account he seemed to haue of her, whereupon he made her this answer.

Madame, if you were as firme and constant, as you are both kinde and beautifull (which is a thing most necessarie in you) I durst awarrant you, that your knights could not be conueied in this manner: beside, there is no knight, but would willingly ioyne with them in doing you service: and I assure you, that had you not offered to compell me against my will, I would willingly haue granted your owne desire, so de-  
sirous

desirous I am to doe faire Ladies service, remembering alwayes, that such as you are, ought to be well esteemed and not forgotten. And you shall vnderstand, that I haue bene both in the Court of England and Spaine, which are not a little renowned by the beauty of the faire Ladies, that there are nourished. Likewise I haue scene Florenda, daughter to Arnedes the king of Fraunce, whose beautie is honoured of a great many: but she whom your Champion named, and those that I haue rehearsed to you my selfe, may not compare with the Ladies of the Emperours Palmerins Court.

There haue I scene Gridonia, Polinarda, Leonarda the princesse of Thrace, and Sidelia, Daughter to the king Tarnaes, of Lacedemonia. I haue scene also the Princesse Targiana, daughter to the great Turke, for whose loue, Albayzar the Soldane of Babilon, hath suffered very dangerous traualles: all these (in my iudgement) are highly aduanced in beauty beyond you, and so it will be granted of any, that is not wedded in affection towards you.

But let it not offend you that I speake more plainely, it is your crueltie and pride together, that doeth much deface your title of beautie, which you cannot deny your selfe, making so light account as you doe of sir Dragonalc, not remembering that he is a worthy knight, and Sonne to one of the most valiant Princes on the earth.

And if this triall is not sufficient to cause you loue him faithfully, trust me I must needs say, that he hath put himselfe in danger for an vnfaithfull person, whom neither knightly bounty, nor regard of her owne duty hath power to moue. In respect therefore that you made me promise to grant what I requested, my desire is, that in recompence of his noble deserts, you would accept of him as your Lord and Husband: so shall you both fulfill your promise to me, and accomplish the commandement, which the king your father charged you should fulfill: I now respect your answer, to see if a man should build any assurance of your word. Sir knight (answered Arnalte) do me the fauour to tel me first who you are, and afterward I will doe my good will to satisfie your request.

## The second part

The knowledge of me faire Lady (saide the Knight of the Sauage man) shall be no hinderance to the matter, wherefore I aduertise you, that I am called Florian of the Forrest, Sonne to Don Edward the English Prince, and Florida, the Daughter to the Emperour Palmerin: Dragonalt hearing these words, spake thus.

If in the victory you haue obtained (Sir Knight) I should lose nothing else, but the reputation of a good Knight, I could not be any iote offended, being vanquished at his handes, who alwayes returneth from the Combat conquerour: but seeing I am frustrate of the hope that should yeeld me content, I cannot chuse but complaine on fortune, who hath caused me fall into so great perplexitie.

Arnalte, vnderstanding that the knight of the Sauage man, was the Sonne of the noble Prince Don Edward, she began to blush, remembering what had passed betwene her and him, and very desirous she was to match with him in mariage, but seeing she might not doe as she would, she contented her selfe with his request, declaring her minde in this manner. I did not thinke (Sir Knight) that he which could so nobly vanquish the enterprise of knights, would studie and practise how to deceiue poore simple women, neuerthelesse the behauiour of the Prince Dragonalt enforceth me to obey your desire. Upon this condition, that within one yere, you and hee shall bring mee to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, as well for the vnfained reverence I beare to his Maiestie, as also to be acquainted with those gracious Ladies which you haue named.

God forbid Madame (saide the Knight of the Sauage man) but I should agree to this lawfull request, and the rather, because I knowe your presence will greatly honour the Emperours Court. Then Florian offered to kisse the Princesse Arnaltes hand, but she embraced him very courtcoufly, and Dragonalt would haue humbled himselfe at his fete, but he would not suffer him to rise from his bed, for he made such estimation of him, as he sent for the chiefe gouernours of the Realme: who hauing knowledge of the Knight of the Sauage man, iudged the mariage of Dragonalt and the Princesse to be according

## of Palmerin of England.

118

according as it ought, and to do them the greater honour, the Prince Florian caused the mariage to be solemnized presently in the Castle.

On the next morning, he came to take his leaue of the prince Dragonalt, and the Quene Arnalte, to whom hauing made promise, that he would not faile to accompany them to the Emperours Court, he tooke his way on his iourney, where we will forsake him a while, and speake somewhat of the Prince Albayzar.

## C H A P. XXX.

How the Prince Albayzar embarked himselfe, to saile into Turkie, after that he had presented himselfe to the Princes of Thrace.



Albayzar the Soldane of Babylon, was desirous to leaue the King of Spaines court, thre dayes after he had tried the Ioust against the noble Prince Florian of the Forrest, and taking his farewell of the King, the Quene, the Ladies, and those knights of the Court who were his friends, he set forward on his way, accompanied with two Esquires, making such speedy haste, as it was not long before he attained to the Cittie of Constantinople.

When comming to the Pallace, with a very proude and stately iecture, he entred the Chamber of Presence, where he found the Emperour, the Emperesse and her Ladies, beside the chiefe Princes and knights of Court: he making no reuerence to any, stood viewing among the Ladies (whom he had seene before) which of them he might repute for the Princesse of Thrace. At last, iudging her to be the Princesse, that late next

unto

unto the faire Polinarda, he came befoze her, and kneeling down saluted her with these speeches.

Madame, at the very instant I was about to depart from the King of Spaines court, a knight arrived there, being accompanied with nine Damosels, and he trying the Jousts with the most redoubted knight of the Court, unhorsed them bravely one after another. The sight hereof made me desirous to hazard my fortune, but such was my ill hap, that he served me as he had done the other knights: and having thus conquered me, he enforced me to make my faithfull promise, that I would come and submit my self befoze you, and declare the message he would command me, for the condition was so made on either part when we began the Joust. This knight charged me to say unto you, that it was no small griefe unto him, since fortune would not present him with any especial occasion, where by he might declare the good will he bare you: neuerthelesse, he desired you very humbly, that you would make acceptance of this his first service: though it be not of so great estimation as your singulartie deserves. And now I remaine to know, in what cause it shall like you to imploy me, that I may doe you service. Albayzar being well knowne in the Emperors court, great ioy was made on all sides for his arrival, and the Emperour himselfe was very well pleased, to see him come in so good disposition, for the good regard he had of the Princesse Targiana his Lady, whose vertuous deserts had bound him to be very carefull of Albayzars health, prosperity, and safe deliuerance.

The Princesse of Thrace arose, and taking Albayzar by the hand, spake thus unto him. I pray you (Sir Albayzar) to doe what it shall please the Emperour to command you, which I iudge will be nothing hurtfull unto you, seeing the great desire he hath to reioyce the Princesse Targiana with your presence.

Albayzar tooke in very good part the gentlenesse which the Princesse of Thrace vied towards him, and having giuen her hearty thanks for her courtesie, he came and saluted the Emperesse, and the Princesse Gridonia, after ward he came to the Emperour, who taking him in his armes, entred into these speeches.

I assured him (Sir Albayzar) that the Soldane Olorique, your Father, received more great contentment when I embraced him, then I can doe: yet am I desirous to doe you all the honour you can, as well from the friendship I beare to your father, as to recompence some part of the great courtesie, which I haue received by the Princesse Targiana, your espoused Lady, who may commaund any thing she shall thinke good in my court, and I am soxe that you cannot perswade your selfe, how you may doe as much.

My gracious Lord (answered Albayzar) I am not of so simple vnderstanding, but I can well perceiue what great honour you haue alwayes offered me: but yet I cannot forget the shame I received here in your Court, when I was vanquished, and likewise, how you haue not done Justice to the Prince Florian, for the iniury he offered the Princesse Targiana, albeit the great Turke her Father requested it at your hands, which is no more but right and Justice, and which you daily permit to euery one, but kindred preuaileth so in you towards him, as you will not heare what Justice calleth for.

I see well then (said the Emperour) that reason cannot preuaile with you, I certifie you once more yet, that the princesse Targiana came hither more on her owne good will, then compelled or enforced thereto by Florian of the Forrest, my Nephew. But referring this talke, because it is not to be vied among friends, I pray you imagine your selfe welcome, and goe rest your selfe in your Chamber, while the Gallies be provided, which haue expected here your coming, since my sonne Polendos and the other knights arrived at Constantinople. My Lord (said Albayzar) I take the time so commodious for me now to saile, as I will not vse so good opportunitie, and therefore I intend to stay no longer in this Countrey. Euen as please you for that (answered the Emperour) it is not meet that I should dissuade him that is so resolute.

The ambassador (who had staid there all this while) came very reuerently to the Prince Albayzar, and to hold that the Gallies were ready, the Sea in good case, and the winde very well

well for their voyage. The Prince Albayzar took his leaue of the Emperoz, the Emperesse and her Ladies, and being accompanied with the princes, Primaleon, Polendos, Belcar, the Giant Dramusiande, and others, they came to the Port where the Gallies lay: but the Giant Dramusiande, seeing the small account Albayzar made of the Princes that bare him company, he spake vnto him in this manner. I see well Albayzar, that the Emperoz is worthy to be blamed, for shewing honour to such an vnthankfull person as you are, who seemes not to regard the Prince Primaleon, he (at his Fathers request) coming to grace you with his company, albeit he needed not to abase himselfe so much.

Lush Sir (answered Albayzar) it is long since I knew the small good will thou couldest allow me, but this I tell thee, that a noble mind disdaineth familiarity to them, whom he accounteth for his better enemies, and thus thou maist perswade thy selfe, that I am an enemy to all of the Emperozs Court, and so thou maist tell him from me: wherefore then should I vse any courtessie to the Prince Primaleon, to whom I will shewe the very worst I can. Wherefore (sir Dramusiande) grieue not to see me behaue my selfe as I doe, among mine enemies, for I promise you, I will returne with as much expedition as I can, to witness before the walles of his Citie, that which I haue at this houre in my minde.

I could wish (saide Dramusiande) that thou hast bene there where thou wouldest be, and wert returned hither againe, that I might reuenge the iniurie thou didst me, when thou wast so bold, as to cary away the shield of the princeesse Miragarda. Albayzar was about to make him answer, but the Prince Primaleon took Dramusiande by the hant, & with the other knights returned to the pallace, where they gaue the Emperoz to vnderstand, what good will the Prince Albayzar bare him. The Gallies being launced into the deepe, the Marriners hoysed their sayles, hauing their wind so at will, as in short time they reached the great Caire, where the great Turke made his abode, who iudged that the Emperour Palmerin would be offended, for the bad entertainment he gaue his Knights.

But

But when he had knowledge of the arrivall of the Gallies, he was so ioyfull, as he came himselfe to receiue the Prince at the haue, being not desirous to question of the Emperozs honest vsage towards him, for then he feared least his owne intent of treason would reprove him.

Albayzar remained a certaine time in the great Turkes Court, attending the cōmning of the principall estates of Babylon, whom he would haue there presented at the second solemnizing of his marriage, which was honoured with the presence of the Soldane of Persia, the King of Bythinia, the King of Cassia, the King of Terbisonde, beside many other Princes and Knights, who concluded all together to passe the Seas, and lay siege to the citie of Constantinople, and because they would the more suddainely execute their intent, they seuerely returned into their dominions, to make preparation for their traitercous enterprise.

CHAP. XXXI.

Of that which happened to the Knight of the Tiger, after he was departed from the Perillous Isle, taking his iourney towards the Citie of Constantinople.



The Knight of the Tiger, (of whom our Story hath bene silent a long time) entred the foyll with Argencas, the Gouernour of the Profoud Isle, at what time the wind was so contrary, as he was faine to take landing in the same Isle, where he scoured for certaine daies, at the earnest importunitie of the inhabitants, who could thinke themselves neuer enough satisfied with his company: but yet the long desire he

had

had to see the Citie of Constantinople, made him imagine the time tedious till he came thither. At length (with much ado) he departed thence in a Galley, accompanied with his friend Siluan, being in a new Armour which he caused to be made in the Profound Isle, but keeping his deuise of the golden Tiger, which was renowned throu all countries in Christendome: hauing sayled a long time, hee came at last to the Coast of Scotland, where his minde serued him well to goe on shoare.

And after he had trauelled thre dayes in that Countrey, he came into a goodly Valley, along the middest thereof was a great riuer, and not far off, he beheld a faire house standing on the riuer side, hauing a bridle for passage to it, the which was kept by a knight in greene Armour, who bare in his Shield a white Bull, which deuise made him suspect that it should be his brother Pompides.

On the other side the bridle, which crossed ouer another part of the riuer, he espied another knight, who seemed as hardy a man as the knight of the Bull, being in very rich Armour, and he might not passe the bridle, without he did first Combate with him that defended it: as for him that would not endure the fight, he must yeld himselfe to Armisia the King of Scots daughter, to whom the house belonged. This strange knight attending while the other got on horsebacke, he put his fortune in triall to set at libertie the passage, but he failed in his intent as you shall heare hereafter, and rendred himselfe to the mercy of Armisia: who ordained the custome to this ende, that she might haue her house furnished with Kinges of good courage, whereof she knew she should get a number, because this passage was one of the chiefe in all Scotland, and none could get to the other side of the riuer, without they passed at this bridle, which was so large, as foure knights might easily combate thereon, and it was so well fenced on either side, as they could not bee in daunger of the Riuer while they fought the Combate.

The knight of the Tiger stayed a while, to see the ende of the Combate betwene these knights, and viewing well the knight

knight of the Bull, who had lifted vp the Creuer of his Helmet, to speake to a Damosell which stood looking forth at a window: he was then perfectly perswaded, that it was his brother Pompides, who hauing concluded his familiar talke with the Damosell, took his Lance, and came further forth vpon the Bridge, whereupon the strange knight spake to him in this manner.

I feare me (Sir knight) that we shall be hindered by the night which draweth fast vpon vs, before we can make an end of our Combate, whereto I see you prepare your selfe, onely to witnesse your seruice to the Damosell in the window. What is that materiall to you Sir? (answered the knight of the Bull) if for her sake I enterprise the fight, doubt you not but I will be as good as my promise.

So without any more words, they ranne together very couragiously, and after they had broken their Lances, they met so fiercely with their bodics, as they fell both beside their horses, to the ground.

When they had recovered themselves, they drew their swordes, wherewith they fought a very doubtfull and dangerous Combate, the aduantage whereof fell to the knight of the Bull, yet not so easily, but he was glad for to rest himselfe as his enemy: which when he perceiued, he leaned himselfe against the wall, giuing these speeches to the strange knight.

How say you now Sir? doe you not perswade your selfe now, that I haue power sufficiently to accomplish what I haue promised? Therefore I would counsell you to reserve your manhood for other occasions, better then to lose your life here, and therefore be ruled by my aduise, goe submitte your selfe to the Princesse Armisia, who will not deale discourteously with them, that will so render their seruice vnto her willingly: the straunge knight returned him this answer.

Sir knight, I know as well as you, what profits or danger can come to me, if I should doe as you perswade me,

therfore I pray you let this talke passe, and let vs end what we haue begun.

And so without attending any answer, he began to charge the knight of the Bull againe, who entertained him in such sort, as in short time he felt himselfe to feble, to resist the hard strokes his enemy gaue him, so that in the end, being unable to continue any longer, he had lost so much blood, he fell downe before the knight of the Bull, who taking off his helmet spake vnto him in this manner.

You shall vnderstand now (Sir knight) that because you scorned to follow my counsell, you shall now whether you will or no goe submit your selfe to the Princesse Armisia, and if you refuse to doe it, I will not fayle to part your head from your shoulders. I know not Sir (answered the strange knight) which of these two conditions I should chuse, where with you present me, so dangerous they both seeme to me, for I would more willingly receiue my death at your hand, then goe submit my selfe to her, who can be pleased with nothing else, but adioynning me a most shamefull death.

The knight of the Bull being ignorant of the reason, why he feared so much to goe render himselfe to the Princesse Armisia, desired that he would tell him his name. Truly Sir (said the strange knight) I intend not so much to satisfie your will: for it is yet some contentment to him that is vanquished when the conquerour hath no knowledge of him.

The knight of the Bull seeing him so obstinate, sent his Esquire to the Princesse Armisia, desiring her, (if so it were her pleasure) to grant this knight his life. Armisia, who was alwaies very courteous to them that had any preferment in her fauour, commanded one of her Damoselles to goe to the knight of the Bull, and tell him that he should giue the knight his life, after he had knowledge who he was.

The Damosell was no sooner come to the Bridge, but she presently knew the vanquished knight to be Adralpe, sonne to the duke of Sizana, who had slaine the Prince Doriell, brother to her Lady and Mistresse Armisia, for the reuenge of whose death, the guarding of that passage was first ordained.

Upon

Upon this, the Damosell began to crie aloude and teare her haire very pittifully, saying he was now come that had slaine the Prince Doriell, which her Lady hearing, she came downe immediatly, with her Damosels waiting on her, both shee and they weeping very bitterly, when she spake to the knight of the Bull in this manner.

I pray you Sir knight let me haue your assistance, to be deliuered out of the grieuous passions wherein I haue long time remained: for you shall vnderstand, that the knight whom you haue conquered, is the very same that slew my brother Doriell, for whose death the king my father liueth in extream heauinesse.

The knight of the Tiger marking her words, spake in this order to his friend Siluian: I see wel it is more dangerous to fall into the hands of a woman, who is desirous of vengeance, then to deale with a hundred good and hardy knights. Wherefore I pray thee take my horse a while, and I will goe see, if by my entreatance his life may be saued. Then came he to the Bridge, and desired the knight of the Bull, that he would not offer the knight any more cruelty: and turning to the Princesse Armisia, he saluted her with these speeches.

Madame, if any anciant enmitie causeth you to desire the death of this knight, I pray you admit to memorie, that a Lady of so great calling as you are, ought not to be void of lenitie and pittie, and chiefly at such a time, when you haue most power to execute the extremitie of your will. And if my reasons be not sufficient to appease your anger. I pray you yet consider with your selfe, that no persons vse crueltie where they may shew pittie, but they repent themselves afterward when their collicke mode is ouerblowne and past.

The honest and vertuous language of the knight of the Tiger, had not the power to moue any pittie in the Princesse Armisia: but she commanded the knight of the Bull, that he should cut off the head of her enemy, then the Prince gaue her these wordes. I promise you Madame, if neither pittie nor persuasion may preuaile with you, I will stand such an eye-sore in your way my selfe, as you shall not execute your malicious

A 3

humour.



haviour. I would with all my heart (said the knight of the Bull) that it might please the Princesse to grant this knight his life: but since you presume so boldly to defend him, I will not refuse (albeit I am so sore wounded) to let you understand that you neither can nor shall hinder me, in fulfilling what my Lady hath commanded.

The knight of the Tiger did not use these wordes, to the end that hee would enter the Combate with Pompides, but onely to change the rigorous humour of Armisia, and because he saw the knight in such danger. But such was the cruell minde of the Princesse, as she continued still in one song, calling for the head of the vanquished knight Adraspe, who with the great expence of his blood, and grieve to see the weakefull will of Armisia, ended his life while the knight of the Tiger and Pompides were preparing themselves to the Combat: Armisia seeing Adraspe was dead, could not be yet contented therewith, because his head was not smitten off as she commanded. Therefore, because Pompides did not accomplish what she willed him, shee flang away in a furie, and went into her Chamber.

Pompides, who was brought into great extremitie for her sake, did so grieve at her departure, as he was constrained to set him downe upon the bridge: but the knight of the Tiger perceiuing his heauines, took pittie on him, and came to comfort him, which Pompides seemed to disdain, because he iudged that his presence procured his misfortune. Siluian seeing his maister not returne, came walking with his horse before the bridge, whom Pompides hauing espied, he knew presently that the knight of the Tiger, was the renowned Palmerin of England, in which perswasion, for the great ioy hee conceived, he came to him with these wordes.

I am well assured my gracious Lord, that the comfort I received at this present instant, will deface and extinguish all my former mishaps. Palmerin took off his helmet, and hauing embraced Pompides, beganne to perswade him in good hope of his Lady, who had no sooner forgotten her anger, but shee reproached her selfe of great unkindnesse, and then shee sent to

intreate

intreate Pompides that he would pardon her, and if so it were his pleasure, to bring the knight into her house with him, whom she saw so familiar with him.

Pompides understanding the will of the Princesse, took his brother by the hand and walked into his Chamber, where, when they were vnarmed, the Princesse came her selfe to visit them, entring into these speeches to the knight of the Tiger. I beseech you Sir knight to excuse me, in that I made no more account of your honest and courteous wordes: for I assure you, the great danger wherein I was at that instant, would not suffer me to regard any perswasion whatsoever, but onely to reuenge my selfe on my cruell enemy. And because you shall not conceiue any ill opinion of me, I will tell you for what cause I enuied the knight so much.

You shall understand Sir, that I am the daughter of Meliadus the king of Scots, in whose Court Adraspe the eldest son to the Duke of Sizana (whom Pompides hath slaine) beganne to waie very amorous of me, but because I knew him to be one of very bad conditions, I made no regard of his earnest suite. Nevertheless he was so importunate and boorde of reason, as he would not be answered. Therupon I was constrained to complaine to the Prince Doriell my brother, of whom when Adraspe perceiued himselfe to be hated and despised, he practised which way he might best be reuenged on him, and following his secret trayterous intent, it was not long after before he had the opportunitie for to execute his malicious stroke.

It so chanced, that one day my brother and he had appointed to walke abroad together, when, Adraspe being priuily armed, and hauing at hand such as prouided for his purpose, he slew my brother, whose death the king my father could not accomplish to reuenge, because hee should then deale with one of the chiefest Princes of his Realme, and his best assured friend.

Yet was not his heart free from continuall vexation, in respect that nature could not otherwise chuse, which I pittying, and willing to assist my father to the uttermost I could,

I left the Court, and caused this house to be erected in this place, which being the chiefest passage in all this Realme, I enterprised to haue some valiant knight defend this Bridge, promising to marry with him, if he could be so happie as to kill Adraspe. And he (as he was alwayes accustomed) bearing a proude and loftie minde, would oftentimes come to shew himselfe here, onely to bere me with the remembrance of my Brothers death: and still hee would Combatte with my knights, beingeuer moze so fortunate as to banquish and kill them.

But after the knight of the Bull tooke this charge vpon him, Adraspe (who had heard of his noble promise) remained two moneths before he could come hither againe: yet at the last, came to trie his fortune against the knight of the Bull, who hath depriued him of his life as you see, and satisfied my wil that made me to ordaine this custome,

Madame (answered the knight of the Tiger) you should haue had my helpe in taking his life from him, if you had told me at the first what great wrong he had done you, for the very earth will open to swallow those, that intend or practise any treason against their Prince, yea and the Prince himselfe cannot be free from such secret conspirators, when fauour shall stand in steade of Justice to such wicked offenders: wherefore, if they be sharply punished, the rest will be the better warned by their transgression.

And I assure you Madame, you haue done as well becommed a vertuous Princeesse, in cutting off that branch, when fortune made the instrument of your unhappinesse: beside, the duetie wherin you are bound to the knight your father, did command you should see so good a deede executed.

Now therefore let me humbly intreate you, that you would keepe your promise to Sir Pompides, who is my Brother, the nephew to king Frederick of England, and sonne to the prince Don Edward, who is father to him and me, and friend to you.

I see well (sayde Armisia) that I haue wrought the contentment of the knight my father, and taken vengeance for the death

death of the Prince Doriel my brother, by the promise of him, whose presence is no small honour to me: neuerthelesse, I may thinke my selfe little beholding to him, in that he hath concealed himselfe so long from me, who would haue allowed him more honourable entertainment. And I pray you Sir, let it not offend you, that I desire to know, whether you be the prince Palmerin, or Florian of the Forrest, his Brother: not that I am affectioned more to the one then the other, but because I would know, which of them fortune hath made me so happy to see: the Prince returned her this answer.

Florian of the Forrest (Madame) is so farre off this place, as very hardly can one tell where to meete with him: wherefore, you may perswade your selfe that I am Palmerin, whom (if you please) you may command as your seruant. The Princeesse Armisia embraced him very graciously, reioycing that she might any way accomplish the meanes to honour him, because the king Meliadus her father, was brother to the Queene of England, the Prince Don Edwards mother.

The death of the proude Adraspe, was reported the same day in the king of Scots Court (which was but foure leagues from this place) and the name of the knight that had slaine him: whereupon the king vpon the next morning tooke his Coach, and being accompanied with many worthy knights, he came to see the Prince Palmerin of England: and hauing giuen him many gracious salutations, he tooke Pompides by the hand, promising to make as good estimation of him, as he did of the Prince his sonne while he liued. While the aged king sat familiarly talking with Armisia his Daughter, the Archbishop of Esbrequie arrived there, by whom, Pompides and Armisia, were presently married together, and then departing thence, they went very strongly to seeke to the Duke of Sizana, father to the proude Adraspe, whom the king bowed to put to death, or keepe him prisoner: but he reckoned without his Hoste, for the Duke being aduertised of his intent, fled into Ireland, whereupon his goods and liuing fell into the kings handes. They in England hauing knowledge of Pompides marriage, made Triumphs and Bonfires, for the good fortune that had happened

## The second Part

happened to Pompides, who was very well beloued of euery one, as well for being the Sonne of the Prince Don Edward, as for his vertuous bounty and knightly courage.

### CHAP. XXXII.

How the knight of the Tiger, tooke his leaue of Meliadus the king of Scots, and of the Princeesse Armisia his Daughter and what happened vnto him during his voyage.



When the Nuptials of Pompides were solemnized, to the great contentment of the King of Scots, and his whole Realme, the Knight of the Tiger tooke his leaue of the King, and the Princeesse Armisia, accompanied with his brother Pompides, to whom (before he was imbarqued) he gaue to vnderstand, the charge wherein all Princes were bound that receiued royall dignitie, desiring him very earnestly, since fortune had brought him to so great felicitie, that he would vse himselfe modestly and wisely, because Fortune was so vncertaine in her selfe, that sometime she put those persons in greatest feare, whom she had placed in most assurance, whereby she letteth them vnderstand, that she can quickly dispossesse them of their happinesse, at such time as they little looke for any such alteration.

But to the end you may enioy your dignitie with most assurance, I counsell you to entertaine your subiects with amitie, administering iustice rightly vnto them, which let be done with so good zeale, as it be not conuerted in rigour and cruelty, whereby you shall cause them to say, that their Governour is become tyrannous and vnmmercifull to them.

My Lord (answered Pompides) your wordes saucouring of

## of Palmerin of England.

so good iudgement, as they are worthy of most high commendation, I cannot but thinke my selfe much bound to you, for this your noble and friendly counsell, assuring you that I will lodge them faithfully in my heart, and accomplish them according to your gracious commaundement, for in doing otherwise, I shall iudge my selfe vnworthy to be named your Brother.

After many such like speeches had past betwene them, they embraced one another, Pompides returning to the Citie, and Palmerin entring the Shippe, caused the sayles to be hoysed, when the winde seruing them so well, as (after they had spent such time as is mete for so great a iourney) the Prince tooke landing in Hungaria. When he had past through diuerse places of the Countrey, it was his chaunce to arrive in a goodly Forrest, where at length he came to a very faire Fountaine, which was couered with an Arke of maruellous ingenious workmanship: and because the weather was exceeding hot, he alighted to refresh himselfe at this Fountaine. In the meane while Siluian suffered the horses to graze in the pasture, and when the Prince had washed his hands and his face, he espied a little from him some further in the Forrest, a Damosel running very speedily, with her haire hanging about her shoulders, and tearing her faire visage with her nailes, crying and weeping out of measure: at last she espied the Knight of the Tiger, to whom she came running a great pace, and casting her selfe at his feete, she remained fearefully looking about her a good while, hauing not the power to speake one word.

The Knight of the Tiger seeing her perplexed case, began to pittie her very much, and doubted lest he that had feared her, would make pursuite after her, he called for his Helmet, which he had no sooner clasped on his head, but he beheld comming the way that the Damosell came, a giant very strongly armed, carrying in his hand a huge Axe, who seeing the Damosell, had demanded succour of the Knight of the Tiger, spake vnto her in this manner. Trust me Damosell, you betake your selfe to very simple assurance, in that this knight wanteth strength to defend you against me.

So without any more words, he strooke at the Prince with his Pace, who put his Shield before him to resist the stroke, which was so rigorous, as his Shield flew in two pieces: the Prince was somewhat offended hereat, wherefore (drawing his sword) he gaue the Giant such a blowe on the arme, as afterward he could hardly strike to any great purpose. The Damosell remaining still in extreame feare, by the cruell intreatance the Giant had vsed to her, would haue departed to hide her selfe in the Forrest, because she iudged the Knight of the Tiger vnable to subdue her enemy: which Siluian perceiuing, came vnto her, and counselled her to see the end of the Combat, whereupon she gaue him these words. I pray you gentle esquier and my friend, that you would not seeme to hinder me, for this Giant, nay rather a Deuill (whose force none is found able to resist) will assuredly put me to death, after that he hath slaine your maister. I would yet (said Siluian) that you would stay to see the ende of the fight: for peraduenture it may happen otherwise then you expect.

The knight of the Tiger (who was destitute of a Shield, to auoid the cruell strokes of his strong enemy) behaued himselfe so politiquely and nimble, as he lent the Giant many sore blowes, who was constrained because he could not lift his mace in his right hand) to vse his left, thinking yet to deale well enough with the Knight of the Tiger: but the Prince was so fierce vpon him (hauing giuen him many grievous and mortall wounds) as his heart began to faile him, so that he retired, not able to resist so many waighy strokes, neuertheles, the prince seeing he had almost brought him to buy, let lie still so fiercely on him, as he could not haue the meane to charge him againe. The Giant perceiuing himselfe in such extremitie, leaned his backe against a Tree, when he defended himselfe a great while so well, that the Prince could hardly reach to hurt him, hee waged fight euery way so precisely with his Pace, which hee held in both his hands, watching the time when he might giue the Prince such a stroke as he willingly would.

The knight of the Tiger, he might not preuaile against the Giant, without hazarding his person in great danger, he went  
and

and rested himselfe against a Tree likewise, which when the Giant beheld, he spake vnto him in this order. I pray thee Sir Knight, let me find so much friendship at thy hands, as to let me vnderstand what is thy name, because I haue euermore thought that no ten of the best knights on the earth, could not do as much as thou hast done, neither that they could haue bene able to resist me halfe this while.

I am content (answered the knight of the Tiger) to satisfie thy will so much, on condition thou wilt promise to tell me thy name, and the cause why thou doest pursue this Damosell. So much (quoth the Giant) thou shalt commaund at my handes, wherefore, thou shalt vnderstand that I am called Vaicalion of Ocrance, Sonne to the Giant Lucran, who was slaine at Constantinople by the hands of Primaleon, with who he was so hardy as to enter the Combate, to reuenge the death of Don Perrequin of Duas, and to haue in marriage Gridonia, the duchesse of Ormeda, who was afterward espoused to Primaleon. At what time my father was slaine, he left me in the keeping of one of my Brethren, named Dramoque, who is likewise slaine be one of the sonnes of the Prince Don Edward of England, and this knight is yet in the search of knightly aduentures. But I assure you, I am not a little agréued to see my selfe in this case, because I am almost depriued of any hope, to reuenge the Death of my Father and his Brother, before I dye.

And for this Damosell, it is so, that fortune caused me to meet with her to day, and as I vnderstood by her, she is going to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, to visite Leonarda the Princessse of Thrace: now, for that I am desirous to do all the iniurie that I may, to any of that Emperours Court, I endeouored my selfe to rauish this Damosell. But at the time I was about to fulfill my pleasure on her, an Esquire of hers (who had escaped my hands) came and hindered me with the ayd of five knights, whom I haue left to hold Combat with ten of my knights because I would follow this Damosell, who took her selfe to flight, so soone as the five knights began to charge me. Thus haue I told you the whole circumstance of my minde,  
now

now it remaineth that you reueale your selfe to me, according as at first you promised.

Belæue me Vascalion (answered the knight of the Tiger) it is necessary that thou shouldest receiue sharpe chastisement, for vsing thy life in such wicked actions, the pꝛoofe hereof thou mayst now behold thy selfe: for thou being not content with the death of thy ffather and his Brother, seekest to reuenge the villainous will on this innocent Damosell. I let thee know therefore, that I am a kinsman to Primaleon, and the same man that slew thy ffathers Brother, which made me be called Palmerin of England, sonne to pꝛince Edward and faire Fle-rida the Sister of Primaleon, for whose sake, I intend to take thy life from thee before I depart.

Vascalion (at these words) began greatly to dismay himself, for he knew well that his strength was not sufficient to hold out long against him, but yet he presently aduanced himselfe, to shew what desire he had to be reuenged on him that had slaine his Truckle.

Palmerin being very glad, when he perceiued the Giant had forsaken the Tree, which serued him all the while as a Rampire of defence, assailed him with such furious strokes, as the Giant would gladly haue rested himselfe againe: but the Prince followed him still so earnestly, as at length he tumbled on the ground before him, when (not content to see him so conquered) he set his foote vpon him, and when he had taken off his Helmet, he presently parted his head from his shoulders. The sight hereof made the Damosell so glad, as she had now forgotten the feare wherein she was when the Giant pursued her, and then came the knight of the Tiger to her with these words.

Faire Damosell, I iudge that the five knights who are in Combate for your occasion, cannot otherwise chuse but be in great daunger: wherefore, I will goe seeke them forth to succour them, in the meane while you may come faire and softly after with my Esquire, who (for your better ease) shall take you vp behinde him on his horse. Then tooke he that way which he saw the Giant come, when he pursued the Damosell, and

it

it was not long before he heard the clanching of the Swoordes, whereupon he gaue his horse the spurs, and neuer left galloping till he came to them, where he saue they had slaine foure of the Giants knights, and of the other sixe, there were but two that could defend themselves to any purpose.

The knight of the Tiger knew Dramian the king Recindos sonne, by his Armour and the deuise he bare in his Shield, then alighting from his horse, he put himselfe among his friendes, charging one of them that fought so stoutly, as he tumbled reeling to the ground: which the other fiue perceiuing, they were so greatly dismayed, as in short time, the knight of the Tiger and his companions made an ende of their wretched liues.

The Damosell arriued there very soone after, when the sight of Siluian made the knight of the Tiger presently knowne to these fiue knights, who were not a little glad of his company, being all his knowne and appꝛoued friends.

The first was Dramian, sonne to the king Recinde, the other were Frisoll, sonne to the Duke Drapos of Normandie, Luyman of Burgundy, Tremoran, and Brandendon: all these fiue knights were conducted by their Esquers, to a little village not farre from the Forrest, where they were carefully attended till their wounds were healed.

The knight of the Tiger kept them company two or three dayes, when afterward he tooke his leaue of them, setting forward the next way he could deuise, to bring him to Constantinople, where the Emperour was presently giuen to vnderstand, of the death of Vascalion and his tenne knights, which newes were highly welcome to all in the Emperours Court.



CHAP. XXXIII.

How the Knight of the Tiger, arriued at the Emperors court of Constantinople, & of an Aduenture which was offered to him at his arriuall.



Because the Prince Palmerin was desirous to be at Constantinople, he left the company of the Damosell and the five knights of the Emperours Court, continuing so long in trauaile, as at length he came into the Empire of Constantinople, without the finishing any aduenture worthy the rehearsal: for I assure you the deuise of the Tiger he bare in his shield, made such report of him in all places abroad, as very few or none would willingly meddle with him. But the nearer the Prince approached to Constantinople, the more he found himselfe passioned for the loue of his Lady, remembzing her unkind speeches, & the sharpe entreatance she vsed to him, when he departed from the Court, which were now so earnest in his thoughts, as he durst hardly now offer to come again in her presence. Siluian labouring as much as he could possible, to cause him forsake that fond humour, perswading him that the Princesse furie could not chuse but be now thoroowly forgotten, and he durst a warrant, that she had repented her selfe many times since that she had vsed him so vngently.

The Knight of the Tiger hearing the wordes of Siluian, began to comfort himselfe indifferently, and riding on, they came at last to haue the citie in their sight, which the Prince stood and beheld a great while, with the teares running downe his cheekes, and many a scalding sigh sent from his hart, beholding the Chamber wherein his Lady and Distresse lay.

When

When he had passed this cogitation so well as he could, hee clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Shield and his Launce, hee commaunded Siluian to goe before into the citie, and prouide some place where he might alight, because he would come vnknoone, if so be any aduenture might be presented to him when hee arriued at the Court. And so it came to passe, that a knight came to the Emperours Court, the day before the arriuall of Palmerin, hauing two Esquires attending on him, who carried his Helmet, Shield, and Launce: and coming very proudly into the Emperours presence, he vsed his language in this manner.

I giue thee to vnderstand (most redoubted and famous Emperour) that I Arnolte, the Lord of Astronomical Isle, and the giant Brauorant, were very great friends together, for that our governments were somewhat nere one another, and to confirme this friendship long continued betwene them, my father concluded, that I should marry with Arlencea, Daughter to the Giant Brauorant: but because both my yeares and discretion serued not as then, they prolonged our marriage for the space of five yeeres. In which time Brauorant departed this life, so likewise Camboldam, Calburnien, Brocalon, and Baleato, who were slaine by the two sonnes of prince Edward of England, your nephews. And to abolish altogether the house of Brauorant, Collambra his wife (by the counsell of the Magician Alfernao) sent Lady Arlencea her Daughter into this Countrey, to the end that by their deceit, they might cause the Knight of the Sauege man to forsake this Court, that reuenge might be taken on him for the death of her Sonnes, which would remedie her inward sorowes, saing him brought into her subiection.

But now it is thought vnpessible to helpe this misfortune, for Alfernao is slaine by Colimbraes meanes, who threw her selfe headlong downe in the presence of her enemies: they are they not onely depriued of their lues, but that which is worst of all, Arlencea is vtterly lost, being in his keeping that hath slaine her whole linage. And because I haue desire to finde her, I enterprised to trauell hither, being minded to deale with

So

the



the knight of the Sauage man, and not doubting but to discharge him of his life: but he is not now in this Court, where at I am not a little offended, for if Fortune refuse mee, I shall not account it any iniurie to be vanquished at his handes, who is daily wont to remaine victor in all places where he comes.

Beside, if I be deprived of my life, I shall make an ende of those careful thoughts, which maketh me desirous to be dissolved: and for this purpose I intend to waite his coming. Now if in the meane will, your Maestie will giue me leave to make some triall at Armes, against the knightes of your Court, I shall count my selfe highly pleased: the Emperour returned him this answer.

Trust me (my friend) you haue enterprised to seek your owne ruine, wherefore I would counsell you to giue your hande to such thinges, the fruite whereof may yelde you more commoditie then this is like to you. And I assure you, that neither Florian, nor Palmerin his Brother, is at this instant in my court, whom I would wish to be heare: neuertheless, if in the time you expect their coming, you be so desirous to make knowne your valour, I grant you the libertie of the field, where the knightes of my Court shall not faile to visite you.

I desire nothing more (answered Arnolfe:) And so without any more wordes he entred the field, where he Iousted against thre knightes, two of them being unhorsed, and the thirde vanquished in the Combat with the sword: then the day declining, they gaue ouer for that time.

On the next morning he entred the field againe, being in blacke Armour and hauing painted in his Shield little flames of fire in a field of Sable. The knight of the Tiger stayed not long, before hee came and shewed himselfe in the field, armed as he was wont to be, but very much disguised with shades, least hee should be knowne, and his deuise of the Tiger was so defaced, as one could not iudge what proportion it should be.

As he passed along by the Emperesse Chamber window, he

he chanced to see his Lady Polinarda, whereat he was somewhat abashed: but seeing that Arnolfe was so ready to Ioust, he let passe all fond conceits, and prauced into the Lists to know the state of the enterprise, which was presently declared to him by one of the Judges of the field, whereupon the prince aduanced himselfe to the Giant Arnolfe, speaking vnto him in this manner.

Thou shalt vnderstand Arnolfe, that thou art now to deale with a kinsman to the knight of the Sauage man, wherefore if thou hast any thing to say vnto him, reuenge it on me, who is one of his linage. Arnolfe was so iocound when he heard these wordes, as he presently gaue his horse the spurs against the knight of the Tiger, they encountred together with so great force, as the Prince forsooke one of his Stirrups, but Arnolfe was sent to the earth with his heeles upward.

This braue beginning caused the Emperour and Primalcon to reioyce, they iudging the strength of Arnolfe vnequall to be compared with the knight of the Tiger, who alighting from his horse, came and receiued Arnolfe at the point of the sword, he being not a little moued at his sore fall, especially, hauing receiued such a foyle at his hands, who was allied to the knight of the Sauage man. The Combate beganne and continued with great fury, which moued the Emperour to these wordes. I perceiue now, that Arnolfe might haue vsed lesse boasting of his prowes, because he seemeth far vnable to make resistance against the knight that fighteth with him. It is reason good Father (answered Primalcon) that euill persons should be punished, that example may remaine to others, to beware how they meddle in such vnduttfull attempts. Arnolfe and the knight of the Tiger so hacked one another, as their Armour witnessed their cruell rage and furie, especially the Giant, whose flesh was so cut and mangled in many places, that the blood trickled apace downe his armour, the great losse whereof caused him giue ouer to take breath awhile, when he desired the knight of the Tiger to tell him his name: whereto he returned him this answer.

I tell thee Arnolfe (said the Prince) I am a very nære kinsman to the knight of the Sauage man, hauing no lesse desire to end thy cursed life, then I haue to do the like to all such as thou art: Arnolfe replied thus. I am in the place where of long I desired to be, and I assure thee, I receiue no small contentment in dealing with thee: for if I be so happie as to deprive thee of life, I shall perswade my self to be reuenged on my greatest enemy. But if fortune giue thee the power to vanquish me, I shall be likewise well content, because I shall the sooner visite Brauorant and his sonnes: to reuenge whose death, I will either end thy dayes with my sword, or offer vp my spirit here at thy fete.

The knight of the Tiger pere iuing him so obstinate, began to charge him more roughly then as yet he had done, following his intent so gallantly, as he neuer left him, till he tumbled on the ground before him starke dead: when, taking off his Helmet, and seeing he had no life left in him, he kneeled downe, and thanked God for his victory.

When came Primaleon, and other Princes, who conducted the knight of the Tiger into the Emperesse Chamber, where taking off his Helmet, he kneeled downe before the Emperour, who weeping for joy to see him, embraced him in his armes very graciously. Afterward he came and humbled himselfe before the Emperesse, with kissing her hand, doing the like to Gridonia, and to the other Ladies: but when he came to his Lady and mistress, such was his speech and behaviour, as it caused suspicion of their loue, to all then present.

Chap.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Of the talke which the Prince Palmerin had, with the Princess Polinarda his Lady.



So greatly troubled was the Prince Palmerin for certaine dayes, in visiting his friends, as he could not attaine the felicitie his heart desired, which tormented him secretly, though he bare it sooth with a good countenance: for neither could he find the meanes to speake with his Lady, nor with Dramuciana her Gentlewoman, that he might discover his grieffe to her. To the end therfore, that he might some what remedy his affections, he made his case knowne to Siluian, who entring the Emperesse Chamber, desired Dramaciana to speake a word or two with her: and so well did Siluian handle the matter, that Dramaciana came to speake with the prince Palmerin, at her chamber window, which was underneath her Ladies Chamber, and so shadowed by the Arches of stone towards the Garden, that one might very hardly perceiue him.

Palmerin receiued no lesse contentment, in speaking with Dramaciana, then he would if it had bene to his owne Lady, who made her Gentlewoman acquainted with all her secret passions: whereupon he iudging that the houre of his good fortune could neuer come to passe, without the assistance of this Damosell, opened his whole minde vnto her, whereon when she had sufficiently scanned, very modestly she gaue him this answer.

You may well thinke (most famous and renowned Prince) that she who is so willing (as you perceiue me) to doe you service, would be loth to hide any thing from you, which might re-

turne your benefite: and this you may perswade your selfe, that the dutifull god will I beate you, maketh me so hardy at this time, not knowing whether I shal be deceiued, or if you intend otherwise then I make account of. It is not meete my friend Dramaciana (answered Palmerin) neither doth the time permit, that I should be such a shamelesse person, as to render in iurie for courtesie, neither would I wish you to iudge me such a one: wherefore (setting all such doubts aside) I desire you to certifie me, what end (as you thinke) will my long service come vnto: for the hope I haue receiued by your meancs, hath enermore sustained me untill this present, from the cruell extremities, which else had bene sufficient to kill me.

He that knowes so well (said Dramaciana) how to declare his griefe, shall neuer make me beleue that he can be depriued of good hope, considered also, that your noble behauiour cannot be blemished by forgetfulness. And this you may build vpon, that the Princesse Polinarda, hath bene as grievously pained during the time of your long absence, as you haue bene daily tormented with fearefull and displeasing thoughts, as you say you haue suffered. If these newes (answered Palmerin) ought to be sufficient to content me, that I pray you to waste no more time, but acquite your selfe of the promise it hath pleased you oftentimes to make me: for it is not conuenient that these wordes (whereby you doe so highly please me) should be changed into flattery and deceit, which might growe to such a seuerer cause, as might be both the losse of me and my Lady: Tell them (quoth Dramaciana) I haue already provided the place where you may speake your minde to the Princesse my Lady, which shalbe at a close and secret window, whereto you may come, as you enter the chamber by the Princesse Fleridaes garden. And I pray you behaue to your selfe in such order, as you shall not neede to speake together againe so secretly, because the place and the honor of the Princesse cannot agree together, without occasion of your great danger. I may now perfectly behold (answered Palmerin) of what account your god will hath bene alwaies to me, which when I call to remembrance, it causeth me to abandon all my unhappy occasions, wherewith I haue bin too long acquainted,

acquainted, and enuious despite can no more molest me, hauing your famous furtherance on my side. But when I consider my sweet contentation I shall receiue, hauing the meancs to speake with my gracious mistresse, I find my selfe thrown into many doubtfull perplexities, in respect of my vnworthines & her honorable dignity: so that I shall be abashed, and feare my displeasure will withhold me, from discourting my long and tedious trauailes for her sake. Certainly sir Palmerin (answered Dramaciana) it were fond you should conceale the princely deeds, wherewith so many renowned potentates haue bin acquainted: for if you haue bene so valiant and hardy, as to spend your time hitherto in trauailes of exceeding danger, & yet haue finished them all worthily, it is needlesse you should now dismay your self, presenting your person in the place, which is free from any hazard or misfortune, And if you wil tel me, how this feare & affliction was so coupled together, I wil tel you what remedie I can for it, but I would haue you to stricke with your selfe, y all feare may be out of your mind, when you come to reueale your secret thoughts to my Lady and mistres. Palmerin well noting the friendly wordes of Dramaciana, made knowne vnto her the very depth of his amorous afflictions: but y knight drawing on apace, & the talk of the prince (in a manner ended), they brake off their conference at that time, the shewing him the place, and appointing him the houre to speake with his Lady. Palmerin taking leaue of Dramaciana, went to his chamber, where he spent the night in thinking on the talk had passed betwix y gentlewoman and himselfe: so the good hope he had through her meancs made his hart not so sorrowfull as it was wont to be, but somewhat he behaued himselfe pleasantly remembryng the honors of his felicitie dyed nere. The time being come, which Dramaciana had charged him to respect, he took his way to the appointed place, and passing so couertly as he could through the garden, he entered the princesse Fleridaes chamber, leaning Siluian without, to giue him knowledge if any came to trouble him.

Palmerin walking by and alone the chamber alone, admitting many cogitations to his present attempt, he began to thinke on the greatest detriment that might happen to him, for he knew very well, that he came to Combate amouously

with him, who had the power to deprive him of his wonted courage, and could drive him to so strait a point, as no refuge he might have to lie vnto, but her Princely and favourable bountie, which if he did not afford him, he could not make account of any conquest. Then offering to approach the window, he espied the Princesse coming, whose sight abashed him with such sudden feare, as he found his voyce too faint to speake, and the iudgement wherewith he had bene alwayes acquainted, was now so weake and simple, as one would haue taken him rather for a Ghost then a liuing man: the which the perceiuing and greatly pittying, withdrew her selfe a little from the window, rememb'ring the good counsell that Dramaciana had giuen him. At last he stepped to the window, which the princesse seeing, aduanced her selfe to him, when, after a little pausing, he entred into these speeches.

O Madame, if this houre of good fortune would allow me the recompence, to end my long and laborious trauailes, I should haue no occasion to find my selfe agræued, for well I assure my selfe, that your presence hath the power to make me forget all the paines I haue suffered, during the time I haue borne the yoke of loue, to whom I haue alwayes remained faithfull and abiding, in regard of her fauour that brought me to this place, where I receiue vspeakable content, in requitall of my past afflictions in trauaile, which I esteeme of no importance, in comparison of the dignity now present before mine eyes, which is of so high and honourable authoritie, as I esteeme my fortune to excede all others. But I could wish, that his golden face of beautie, which is so splendante to my drouping thoughts might neuer be shadowed with any cloud of misfortune, in that my ioy, honour, and felicitie hath euermore bene, in making especiall account of my excellencie, who I iudge will pitte to see me liue in continuall seruitude. And since the extremitie of griefe hath compelled me to take this boldnesse on me, I would desire you to thinke, I come yet with this regard: as well to auoyde any impeachment that might happen to blemish your renowne, as for the desire I haue that your

your gracious fauour might end my carefull and continuall vexations, which you must iudge to be great, if you consider all things past aduisedly. For such hath bene my dutifull remembraunce of you, as my conceite did imagine any thing to your honour, I neither forsooke griefe, danger, trouble, or any misfortune whatsoever, (these hauing bene alwaies the familiars of my life) that I might eternize your name for time of memory, reposing so good hope in your noble selfe, that the end of my trauailes shall agræe with your gentle acceptation, which I am enforced earnestly to request. But albeit my labours haue bene great and grieuous in your service, yet am I not so forgetfull of my selfe, but I repute this present gracious fauour of your excellencie, to be farre beyond that I haue done, and the rather, because I know your sweete and amiable nature, will not seeme altogether left unrewarded. When if it come passe, that you make a friendly account of me, I shall finde my selfe so dutifull towards you, and my desire will be so comfortable to yours, as looke what liketh you, will content me, and how you dispose of me, I cannot but accept gratefully, such and so great is the content I receiue in the trauailes I haue done for your sake, as no winde can blast mee, if your bounty shadowe me, nor any feare feele me, if your fauour stand by me: to which wordes the Princesse thus answered.

I did not thinke (Sir Palmerin) that you would cause me to come into this place, to hold me with these frivolous & needlesse words, and I promise you but for reason, I should thinke my selfe so deceiued, as I could hardly withhold my selfe from leaving your company. The first is, because you were nourished and brought vp in this Court, being likewise my kinsman friend, which hath made me the more willing to regard your trauailes. The other to satisfie the earnest intreatie of Dramaciana, to whom I perceiue you are a greater friend then to me: but seeing the fault is in mee, I will rather blame mine owne timoriticie then you, though you seeke to satisfie your desire, without any consideration of my honour, wherby you let me sufficiently vnderstand, what small regard you

you haue of the danger, wherein you may fall sooner then you thinke soz, only through your vnadvisednesse. I cannot deny, but I am greatly indebted to you, yet in no such deepe summe, but I can easily come forth of it, without any prejudice to my renowne: soz I do not esteeme it reasonable, to recompence your noble service with mine owne disadvantage, because the good fame and commendation you haue gotten, may content you, if you haue no other reward. But if your good will be so great towards me, as by your speeches you seeme to make it, it is meet soz you to make it knowne to the Emperour your Grandfather and mine, as also to the Prince Primaleon my Father, not doubting but they will be very willing to match vs both together, as soz me, I shall esteeme it the greatest good fortune that may happen to me, hauing gained the loue and liking of you; whose promise and Princely desertes, are woorthy most gracious estimation. Thus if consent knit by the long desire of vs both, we may ioyne in one agreement of gladnesse: and this I pray you to accept as my answer, soz without their good wils, I neither may noz can accoord vnto you.

I promise you *Adams* (answered *Palmerin*) it is very hard soz me to receiue contentment in their commending my deedes, whom I cannot regard o2 make any account off, and if I should seeme to refuse to go to the Emperour and the Prince Primaleon, I might be thought very vnwise: but first I would be perswaded tho2 woly of your good will, which is the principall in this action. And if it so fall out, that they will not consent vpon the words I shall vse to them: yet when I am resolved of your acceptation, I shall take the boldnesse on me (seeing time and place so seruing) to let them vnderstand our sure and inuolable consent and loyalty together.

And albeit my fond timoritis vsed towards you, may cause you iudge me farre vnable to speake with such audacitie in this cause, I would haue you yet this to thinke on me now that the faithfull affection, wherewith I haue continually serued you, will compell me enter in this boldnesse to them, as tell you. And if they doe not seeme to leane me to be contented, by such laudable recompence as I may receiue at others hands

hands, it is the regard they haue of my trauailes and aduentures, daily vsed in the honour of your name, and no other, maketh me thinke to deserue this great fauour. But if your nature cannot then agree, when they would be loth I should be any otherwise rewarded, I must and will content my selfe to obey your pleasure, yet shall I finde my selfe deceiued in the opinion I haue hitherto conceiued, in that to be depriued of the presence of his Lady, is the chiefest misfortune that can happen to a faithfull Louer.

What then is left to comfort such a carefull minde? None but this, that the absent friend hath this commoditie, to sit and rip vp many sad and sorrowfull discourses, wherewith he may chase away the remembrance of their deceytes, whose presence was dearer to him then life it selfe. But yet such is the custome of Loue, to mingle among the sharpest conflicts some hope: If it be but onely to sweeten their monthes a little with some delightfull taste, who waste their time in leaue and dalliance, vnder his amorous Ensigne. And with this gay soyle, he graceth his Copper soz rurant Gold, being the only meane to shaddow his deceitfull dealings: yet a number that spend their liues in his service, gaine such knowledge of his trumperie, as in the end they are glad to forsake him. Which I dare not take the hardnesse on me to doe, soz that I am so surely bound to him as when I shall leaue him, I desire to be loued of none but you, in regard of whose good will, I haue thrust my selfe into all dangers, whatsoeuer returning victo2 rather by the aide of your incomparable beautie, then by the force o2 valour that remaineth in my selfe: there pausing, she replied in this manner. I did not thinke (*Syz Palmerin*) to receiue any such answer soz the words I gaue you, wherfore you make me iudge that they are of no estimation at all with you.

But since I perceiue that loue hath so fondly blinded you, as he will not suffer you to see, the more then modest readiness in me to pleasure you, I am content to giue you yet a further and greater assurance of me: soz I would not that such a noble and renowned Prince as you are, should depart from me offended o2 iniured, perswading my selfe that you

you will not seeme to enterprize any thing, whersby but a motion of impeachment may come to mine honour, for if you did, I should thinke very hardly of the diligent service you haue done to me all this while.

Therefore once againe I humbly intreate you, to speake to the Emperour, and Primalcon my Father, to knowe the estate of their good willes, wherof if you should faile, I giue you perfect assurance of mine: if this answer (which truely dutie accounteth but bad obedience to my superiours) will not suffice you, I will verily perswade my selfe, that the loue you seeme to beare me, is rather to disgrace, then preserve my honour.

If now sweete Madame (answered Palmerin) I refuse to doe as you advise me, it were but reason you should thrust me forth of your service, knowing (as I doe) that the ouerthrow of my blisse, and erecting me to happinesse, consisteth duely in my gracious Mistresse. Thus concluding, he took her by the hand, which he kissed a number of times together, not without the expence of many a salt teare and reking sighes, which made the Princesse blush and grieue at inwardly, pittying to see the great humilitie of the Prince Palmerin, to whom she betrayed her selfe in the presence of the Princesse of Thrace and Dramaciana (who gaue him counsell to vse the matter in that order, & by whose meanes Polinarda so soone contented.) They being altogether at the windowe, the matter was knit fast for the more assurance, and there did Palmerin keepe them company all that day, and most part of the night, till pittying to see his lady stand so long, compelled him to take his leaue for that time.



## CHAP. XXXV.

How certaine Knights arriued at the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, who were aduertised how the Turks had prouided a great Armie, to come and besiege Constantinople.



During the the time this great ioy was in the Court of Constantinople, for the comming of the prince Palmerin, the Emperour had tidings brought him, how the Prince Albayzar had leuied a great and mighty Armie, to come and besiege the Cittie, and assure the Messenger, that the Lord (who was the Soldane Bellagris) was preparing himselfe in a readinesse to come and aide him.

The Emperour being at this time overcharged with age, found himselfe farre vnable to deale in these affaires, the consideration whereof did not a little displease him. Nevertheless he sayled not to make prouision (as wisdom willed) to entertaine the enemy, whereupon, he wrot to the Soldane Bellagris, sending him heartie thanks for the good forwardnesse he saw in him, especially in a time so needfull, and when the messenger to the Soldane was dispatched, the Emperour sent presently to informe of these newes, Arnedes the King of France his Sonne in law, Recinde the King of Spaine, Don Edward the Prince of England, the Emperour Vernar of Allemaigne, Maiortes, and many others.

The Armie of the Turkes was no sooner heard of, but the Knights (who followed their noble aduentures) returned to Constantinople, knowing they shuld make better trial of their valour there, then in any other places: and such was the rumour spread



spread abroad to the Turks intention, as in short time the Citie of Constantinople was furnished with many noble and redoubted knights, where adventures was presented to them day by day: but the Emperour would not suffer them to pursue after such occasions, (because they were nothing else but deceit and villany) wayting still for the time when he should be assaulted by Albayzar, who was now setting forward on the Seas, being accompanied with diuers approued knights at armes, as also a number of cruell and bloody minded Giants, intending to make a generall spoyle of all the Emperours Dominions.

But till we haue better occasion, we will leaue them a while, and returne to the Prince Palmerin, who (during the brute of the Turkes Army) was aduertised of the death of Sartrafort, the gouernour of the Perillous Isle, being taken by Trofolant the Fearefull, who was descended to the giants kindred. And as it is rehearsed in the first volume of this History, that Trofolant was vanquished in the Tournament by the Prince Florendos, and had the like mishap the day following, by the prowess of the Knight of the Sauage man, who guarded the shield of the Palme Tree, in the Forrest of the Cleere Fountain which the Damosell from the Sage Aliart brought to the Emperour Palmerin, that he might deliuer it to the Knight his Nephew, who had wonne the honour of the day in the Tournament.

It was likewise his fortune after, when he traualled to the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, to be vanquished there by the Prince Florendos, who guarded the shield of the faire Miragarda: and returning thence, he met with the Damoselles Knight, when, offering to take one of his Ladies from him, they fell to the Combate, and in the end was likewise vanquished. The conceit of his so many and sundry foyles, and all by the Knights of the Emperours Court, caused him to deuise by what meanes he might worke some iniurie to them that belonged to the Emperour, in respect he was so scuerely bent against them, as he would take vpon him to reuenge the death of Calfurnien and his brethren.

But

But to the ende he might the better execute his treacherous enterprise, he tooke his way to the Profound Isle, thinking there to inuent some treason by the aide of Collambra: but his intent was there disappointed, for it was told him, that she was brought to the Emperours Court of Greece. When he determined to goe visit the Perillous Isle, being accompanied with two knights that were his kinsmen, with whom he knewe well how to dissemble the treason on his stomacke: and Sartrafort thinking them to be of the Emperours Court of Constantinople, entertained them very louingly into his Castle, where when they had sojourned for certaine daies, they murthered Sartrafort and all his household.

But the pleasure of this victorie was very short to them, for Argentao the gouernour of the Profound Isle, came by a secret wile suddenly on them with his power, and taking Trofolant in the Forrest, sent him presently to the Emperours Court: where was no little ioy of his comming, in that he saued Palmerin a iourney, who was taking his leaue of his friendes, because he would goe to take the Traitors that had done such villanie.

Trofolant was condemned by the lawe, and publiely executed, according as his treacherous dealings deserued: and Argentao was honourably recompenced, that he might haue the better occasion to be carefull and circumspect in his office. So soone as Trofolant was put to death, the Sage Aliart arriued at the Court of Constantinople, whose presence gaue greater assurance to the Emperour and his Knightes, and he gaue them heartie thankses, in that they were so ready to goe recover the Perillous Isle. After the Sage Aliart, there came to the Court, the Prince Floraman, Albanis of Frieze, Reccamon, Leyman of Burgunuy, beside many other princes and knights, who had euery one forsaken their seuerall countries, to assist the Emperour of Constantinople with their aide, because they had heard of the Turkes preparation.

The very same day was tydings brought to the Court, how Fredericke the king of England was dead, which newes caused  
no

## The second part

no small griefe among the Princes, especially to the Emperour himselfe, who being as aged as King Fredericke, was iudged himselfe not of long continuance behind him, in that this was a speciall president for him to regard, King Fredericke being one he made most chiefe and high account of. Prince Edward was then crowned King of England, to the great ioy of all his subjects, he being such a vertuous and magnanimous Prince: and the funerals of King Frederick was solemnized in Greece, with very great state, their Beacons burning, and Bonfires made through the whole Empire, according as it was the custome in that Countrey.

## CHAP. XXXVI.

Of an aduenture which happened (during the troubles at Constantinople) in the Realme of France, and after what manner it chanced.



The History reporteth that certaine Ladies in the Realme of France, enuying the renowned of Polinarda of Greece, Miragarda of Spaine, and Leonarda of Thrace, (whose beauties defaced greatly the Ladies in all other Countries) began to complaine very much on the French knightes, that either by the want of courage, or their little regard of loue, their beauties remained unknowne in other Realmes, Countreies, and Prouinces.

Upon this occasion they found themselves somewhat agreed, and to the end they would remedie the cause, foure Ladies of the King of France his Court (thinking to excell all other in beautie) enterprised to establish an aduenture, to moue the mindes of many knightes to come endure their triall, against such as would maintaine their beauties.

The

## of Palmerin of England.

The first of these Ladies was called Mansia, the second Telansia, the third Latrania, and the fourth Torsia, each of them having a Castle called after their owne names, to the end that those knights who desired to see them, should come to the Castles where they remained.

Many and sundry strange knights traualled to these Castles, and shewed such rare and incredible prowess, that the renowne of these foure Castles shall neuer be forgotten: as you may at this day yet behold in France, where the Castles of these foure Ladies are yet honoured with most speciall estimation.

These foure Ladies being couetous of their owne glory, would know which of them was aduantaged in beautie aboue the other. Telansia serued the Princesse Graciana, the second daughter to Arnedes King of France, hauing such an opinion in her selfe, as she thought she excelled all the Ladies in the world in beautie, Mansia, Latrania, and Torsia, who serued the Quene, were forged in the same stampe with Telansia: but Mansia held her selfe of greater reputation then all the other, because she was higher in the Kings fauour.

It came so to passe, that thre of these Ladies were married so soone as they beganne this aduenture, which neuerthelesse, they would haue continue still, fearing least any other Ladies should take the preheminence aboue them. Torsia, who remained unmarried, perswaded her selfe to excorde the other thre: in briefe, these Ladies were so earnest in their intents, and so willing to see the issue thereof, as they concluded to entertaine no knight into their seruice, before his fortune serued him to see them all, for then afterward he might the better submit himselfe in obeysance to her, whom he iudged the charest in his affection.

Moreouer, they ordained that the knight should first of all binde himselfe, to endure the Combatte against foure seruants to any other Ladie, the one after the other: and if he proued so fortunate as to vanquish them, he should then be called her knight, for whom he had fought the combate. Beside, this knight should not be licenced to goe seeke aduentures

after

after

## The second part

afterward in any strange Countrey, because his Lady remained the victoress, carrying the true title of supreme beautie. These foure Ladies were agreed to establish this aduventure, in the same manner I haue told you, that their beauty might purchase like commendation as the princeesse Miragardaes did, by the noble trial of her shield, which was kept at the Castle of Almaroll.

The King of France his Sonnes (who were accounted the most puissant at Armes in all that realme) because their affections were placed else where, made no account of this aduventure, neither Germaine of Orleance, because his minde was likewise at Constantinople. The other French knights remained doubtfull to proue this aduventure, rememb'ring with what conditions these Ladies would be serued. As for them that were so hardy to venture, they hauing seene the beautie of the first, were so caught captiue, that they promised to endure the hardest perill in obtaining her loue. But when they had seene the second Lady, they presently committed the first to forgetfulness, making the same promise, that they would lose themselves to purchase her: then looking on the third, their wittes were so busied, and their thoughts were so laboured, as then none but she was faire in their iudgements. At length, when they came to see the fourth swete and delicate face, all the other thre were counterfeited in respect of her, and they serued but as foyles to set her beautie out to sale: so that from the first to the last, their opinions were so variable, and their mindes so ravished in contemplating them all, as not forcing what might happen to them, either trouble, miserie, daunger, or death it selfe, they threw themselves into the face of fortune. And many knights that had bene vanquished by his prowess, who defended so nobly the shield of Miragarda, did yet aduventure boldly to trie this enterprize: but they could not vanquish the foure knights these Ladies presented them, who took upon them to be the seruants of any Lady, so that this aduventure continued a long time, before that any of these Ladies could vaunt of the conquest.

And I assure you, the renowne of this famous enterprize, was

## of Palmerin of England.

was so blazed abroad in all places, as the knights traualled to this place early, and laboured very earnestly to deserue the fauour of these foure Ladies.

The Prince Floroman of Sardignia traualling through the Realme of France, intending to goe offer his aide to the Emperour of Constantinople, met with a damosel, as he entred into a Forrest, she hauing in her company two other Damosels, and because she was desirous, that the Prince of Sardignia, should behold her beautie, she took off her maske, and gaue it to one of the Damoselles. Floroman who traualled continually mourning in his spirit, for the losse of faire Alcea, his Lady, passed on giuing them no salutation: which when they perceived, one of them followed him, and spake vnto him in this manner.

I would know (sir knight) what you meane, to passe so by these Ladies, offering no signe of courtesie or salutation: perhaps you did not see my Lady as you passed by, which may at this time well serue to excuse you. And because your sadnesse maketh my Lady to think, that your heart is passioned or moued by some occasion, she desireth you to take your lodging for this night: in one of her Castles not far hence, where she will not faile to entertaine you, in the most gracious manner she can deuise: to which words the Prince Floroman thus answered. Faire Damosell, if I haue bin any thing forgetfull to wards you Lady, I humbly desire her to pardon me: for she may persuade her selfe, that not seeing her, I passed by, without vsing any courtesie, rather then by any other occasion.

So turning his horse, he ridde with the Damosell after her Lady, who was entred into her Castle, before Floroman had the power to overtake her, whereat he was greatly agranted: and comming to the Damosell that brought him thither, he presently entred into these speeches.

I pray you (faire Gentlewoman) tell mee the name of this Castle, which in my iudgement seemeth one of the fayrest that I haue seene in all my life: and I pray you, what Lady was that, which entered in ere I could shew her my dutie?

## The second part

The Castle (answered the Damosell) is farre more beautifull within, then this sumptuous building which you see without, and I assure you, the knight hath good occasion to reioyce, that can passe by here without some aduventure happen to him. But because you may account my words of truth, and that it is impossible for you to depart hence without triall of your prowess, I espie three knights vnder the greene trees on your left hand, who will not presume so nere this Castle, but they haue some further meaning. As for the Castle, it is called the Castle of Lattrania, which is the Ladies name whom you saw to enter, on whose behalfe many knights put themselves in danger, agtinst them that defende three other Ladies of the French Court, onely being in contention for their beautie. But to the end you may giue the sounder iudgement in this case, and be the more earnest in trying the Combate, on the behalfe of the beautie of my Ladie Lattrania, I will worke the meanes that you shall see her: and if it come to passe that you be afterward vanquished, you may the better know, whether it be by your owne imbecillitie, or the imperfection of her beautie for whom you enter the Combate: Floraman returned her this answer.

I haue bene alwayes so vnfortunate (saie Damosell) in maintaining the like euterpises, that I will not now make it dauntie in hazarding the inconstance of flattering Fortune. I haue often heard of Madame Lattrania, and I take her to be one of the foure Ladies of this Realme, who excēde all the other in soueraigntie of beautie: I could wish (if it were possible so good hap might come to me) to be entertained into her gracious seruice, but the greater part who are giuen on the other side, maketh me to be doubtfull herein, according as it is permitted to the freedom of a mans will.

As the Damosell and Floraman continued this talke, they came before the Castle, and as they offred to passe on, these three knights stepped before them, vsing these words to the Prince Floraman. We would know Sir knight, if you be determined to imploy your selfe on the behalfe of any of the foure French Ladies, because that each of vs, being no seruant to her

## of Palmerin of England.

her whose cause you maintaine, shall then be constrained to enter the Combate with you. Sir (answered Floraman) I may not lawfully refuse the Combate, because I haue not sene any of these foure Ladies: one of the three knights replied to him againe thus.

If it be so Sir, that as yet you haue not sene these Ladies, you shall be suffered to enter the Castle, where you may contemplate the beauty of Lattrania: and if it chauce you to remaine affectionate to her, as many other haue done before you, we desire you not to enter her seruice, because you may so shun the danger of the Combate. The knight laying his hand vpon one of his companions, spake thus to Floraman. Her whom I hold my honour by, they that haue the sight of them all foure, would chuse my Lady Mania for his Distresse: then another of them saide. And my selfe with this knight, wee are altogether addicted to the seruice of Telania, and for this cause we abide in this place, to see if any knight that holdeth on the other part, dare be so bold as to come into this place, that we may try our fortunes, in gaining the recompence the Ladies haue ordained for him, who shall be so happy as to remaine victor.

Floraman (who was greatly enflamed towards these Ladies, remembering still the losse of his faire Altea) entred the castle, where Lattrania receiued him very graciously, he excusing himselfe towards her, because he did not his dutie to her as she passed by him in the Forrest: and I assure you, Floraman iudged the Lady of the Castle so faire, as hee could willingly haue offered himselfe to sustaine her quarrell, but that he feared least he should be reputed vnfaithfull, vnto his best beloued Altea.

Where he stayed in the Castle till the morning, when hee would haue departed thence, the Lady vnwilling to see him, she was so much offended that he had not offered to maintaine her beautie. Upon this, Floraman went forth to the three knights, when one of them came vnto him, and demanded if the beauty of Madame Lattrania, had wrought any power ouer him: to whom he answered, No.

## The Second Part

Certainly, said the Knight, I greatly desire to deale with thee, that I may giue due correction to thy proud ingratitude. Gentlemen (answered Floraman) I pray you put your selues in a readines, to reuenge the shame, which you say I haue done to Madame Larrania, whom I may as well serue as you, because I haue better knowledge of her deserts then you haue: neuerthelss, such is my humor at this present, as I dare not adventure my selfe on her behalfe.

When I entend (saide the Knight) to make you knowe the offence you haue done vnto her. And so he gaue his horse the spurres against Floraman, who (albeit in the Ioust he lost one of his Stirrappes) encountred the Knight so valiantly, as he sent him to the ground headlong, so astonished, as he could not tell where he was. Which the other two perceiuing, they desired him likewise to runne with them: Since my Lance is yet whole and sound (answered Floraman) I am content to doe you so much sauiour. When he ran against the second Knight, seruing him like as he had done the first, and the third came after to keepe them company.

The first knight being offended that hee was so unhorsed, desired Floraman to strike halfe a dozen blowes with him, to the end he might amend the foile he receiued in the Ioust. The Prince of Sardignia seeing no excuse would perswade the knight, alighted from his horse, and hauing drawn his sword, he dealt so nobly with him, as in short time he perceiued what great dishonr he gained, in prouing his valour against him: for he continued so roughly in the fight, as the knight was compelled to step aside to take a breathing, which made Floraman giue him these words.

I beloeue sir knight, you iudge me as sufficient to serue Larrania as your selfe is. No truely (saide the Knight) for it is not your force, but the beautie of the other, to whom she may no way equall her selfe, that hath brought me into this dangerous estate. I am very well content (answered Floraman) to heare you say so much, but the greater aduantage should I haue, if your Lady were present to heare you: and I assure you, she hath good occasion to accept well of you, for that you haue

haue spoken as became a man greatly affected to her.

Then beginning afresh againe, the Knight (though very faintly) defended himselfe so well as he could. Larrania leaning in one of the windowes of the Castle, seeing the great daunger whereinto the Knight was brought, came downe to the place where they fought the Combate: and being come before the Prince Floraman, she desired him to saue the Knights life, whereto (at her request) he willingly consented, speaking to her in this manner.

I would gladly to honour you the more, end the Combate, but because you thinke it not so conuenient, the Knight may thinke himselfe highly beholding to you, for that you haue saued his life, which I was thorowly intended hee should lose, seeing the small regard he made of you, as your selfe did heare, when I let him rest himselfe.

Larrania gaue him very honourable thanks, and returning into her Castle, she grieved exceedingly, that this good and hardy Knight could not thinke so well of her, as to be her Champion in her cause.

Floraman willed the Knight to tell him his name. I promise you (answered the Knight) I entend nothing lesse, for our Combate was hindered by the Lady, to whom you haue giuen greater aduantage thereof then to me. Thou hast reason (saide Floraman) to wis thy selfe thus, for that one ought not to be knowne in these affaires, especially, hauing receiued his shame in the presence of one of these Ladies. So, taking his leaue of the other Knights, he rid away presently, they being very desirous to haue knowne what and who he was.



CHAP. XXXVII.

Of that which hapned to certaine other knights, who would proue the aduventure of these foure Ladies.



**L**ike the mean while the French Court kept at the Cittie of Parris, many knights took pleasure to come thither, the most part whereof, were the affectionate seruants of these foure Ladyes, and there they would practise Iousts, combats, and other honest pastimes such as amorous persons are wont to take delight in. But I assure you, the French men themselves were not so forward in affectiō, for that they were daily in the presence of these Ladies: neuerthelesse, the strange knights (whom loue conducted thither to see them) felt those secret and sundry assaults, which he enforceth them to endure, who wold themselves obedient to his lawes.

These foure Ladies were not a little proude, to see themselves so esteemed, but the knights gaue themselves most on Torfias side, because she was not in the Company of the other, who vied with their beautie, very gracious entertainment towards their knights, that they might vse them with the greater regard. But Torfia (who iudged her selfe more worthy then the other) she was very squemish and disdainfull, not making account of the trauailes which the knights endured for her sake, thereby to make her beautie the more honoured and extolled: for her selfe made so great estimation thereof, as she iudged that those knights, who aduentured on her behalfe, were greatly honoured by making proue of their valor, in defence of her beautie, and this was the cause she was lesse serued of the French knights, then of other.

But

But the strange knights, they gaue themselves altogether to her seruice, desiring to trie fortune, and knowing there was no victorie more noble, then that which was most doubtfull in the obtaining. While the knights of the French Court delighted themselves to behold, these welcome louers, Albayzar (who came to the castle of Almaroll, where he robbed Dramusiande of the Princesse Miragardas shield) passed by Paris, desiring to sojorne there for the space of two dayes, at the end whereof he departed thence, for he would not enter the Combate with such, as would praise these Ladies about the Princesse of Targiana. Yet he returned againe to the Court, and would see these foure Ladies before she went, he not esteeming the knights two Daughters, Florenda and Graciana, whose courtesie did well deserue, that the knight should enterprise something to their honour, for they were as beautifull as these other foure Ladies, among whom Albayzar gaue the praise to Torfia, so that her beautie best contented him, which was the cause, that in all places where he came, he praised her above the other three.

Albeit seeing the French knight were so affected to these ladies, as they made no account of his sweete friend Targiana, he trauailed thence to Constantinople: where he enterprised to maintaine against the knights of the Emperours Court, that the Princesse Targiana excelled in beautie, all the Ladyes and Damosels in the world.

At the same time Palmerin of England, and the prince Florendos, passed by the French Court, and staying there, they had so great desire to approue themselves against Albayzar. Dramusiande likewise passed by some after, being very willing to see these foure Ladies: but the intent he had against Albayzar, would not suffer him to goe hither. And I assure you, had it not bene for the enterprise of Albayzar, this aduventure in France had bene as worthy of commendation, as the noble prowesse shewen at the Castle of Dramusiande in England, and that of Miragarda in Spaine.

While many knight trauailed to see the Prince Albayzar, Pompides, and Blandidon (who iudged themselves to be



## The second Part

Brethren) came to the Court of France, where they thought so well of the beautie of these Ladies, as (setting all other remembrance of loue aside) they tried the Combate, wherein their lines were brought to great danger.

These two knights renowned among them that stayed in the French Court, were both of them so inueigled with the beautie of Torcia, as they discoursed to each other their intents: beganne to mallice one another cruelly: whereby they showed the small iudgement of them, who called Loue by the name of Vertue, seeing that so many misfortunes took their originall by her.

Pompides conquered with the onely regard of Torcia, seeing that Blandidon would not give him place by entreatance, concluded to trie the Combate with him: agreeing thus betwene themselves that hee that was the conquerer, should remaine there to defend the Ladies beautie. Blandidon, who was as desirous as he could, to purchase the acceptable fauour of Torcia, agreed to enter the Combate, vnder the same condition which Pompides opposed: and that these two knights might the sooner execute their willes, they came and humbled themselves befoze the Quene, in whose presence Pompides spake in this manner to Torcia.

Madams, this knight and I who are brethren, and so conquered by the grace and beautie wherewith you are accompanied, as notwithstanding, both nature and friendship) we intend to make prowe at armes, which of vs twaine shall be iudged worthy to be receiued in your service: desiring you humbly not to be offended at what we haue enterprised, and that you would vouchsafe to entertain him for your seruant, whom fortune shall fauour inatchieuing the victory.

Great and sudden admiration was among them all, hearing the braue attempts of these two knights, but especially, the other three Ladies, who seeing Torcia so highly preferred, beganne to be dismayed and changed their colour: which Torcia dissembling, although shee had no knowledge of their secret enuie, was iocund and pleasant to her selfe as could be, then casting her eyes on the Quene, to whom she made signe as

## of Palmerin of England.

as though she would answer, she spake to Pompides and Blandidon in this manner.

It may be seene by you (Gentlemen) that the merits of these three Ladies, hath not as yet gained any knowledge of your valour, seeing you enterprise to hazard your selues together for one selfe-thing: wherefoze I admonish you, that it is meete you should defend the cause one after another, for otherwise you goe contrary to our determinations, and then he that can be so happy to vanquish the knights, that come on the behalfe of these other Ladies, shall be iudged worthy of that honourable reward, meete for such a famous and noble conquerour.

These two knights were indifferently satisfied with the answer of Torcia, whereupon many knights that desired to see her, went and presented themselves in the field. The first of them was Rupert Rosselin, a knight of good estimation, who maintained the quarrell of Telancia: Brician of Rochfort, who loued Manfia, and the Countie Brialte, the affectionate seruant to Latrania.

Pompides and Blandidon came no sooner into the Parke, but they entred both together, because Torcia had not declared which of them should enter first, to maintaine her beautie against the other knights: therefore they desired the Quene, that it might please her to vnderstand the will of Torcia, who ordained that he which was first disclosed to his companion, should enter first into the field. When Blandidon (who was discovered at the beginning to Pompides) had the meane to trie himselfe first: wherefoze, without any more tarrying, he entred the middest of the field, at the entrance wherof, the Ladies were placed very stately. Florenda and Graciana showed themselves maruellous rich in beautie: but they were nothing pleasant, because neuer a knight would esteeme of them in his proweesse. Brician of Rochfort, who prepared himselfe first to encounter with Blandidon, regarding Manfia (whom he iudged worthy of the chiefest victory) spake somewhat angrily to himselfe thus.

Haile mistres, I may thinke this enterprise not worthy to be presented

## The second Part

presented before you: yet somewhat doe I content my selfe, who remaining victor, you will not disdain to call me your seruant: Blandidon who earnestly desired to witnesse his bounty in the presence of Torcia, contemplated her in his spirit thus.

I doe not demand (Madame) any fauour at your hands for receiuing new such a benefit of you, I shall not purchase any glory in conquering my enemy. When can he courageously against Brician of Rochfort, and encountred with him so brauely, as their Lances flew up in pieces, yet neither of them in danger to be unhorsed: which Brician perceiuing (who was reputed for a good knight at armes, he desired Blandidon to breake once more with him, to which request he made no refusal, but ran the second time, and met Brician with such force, as he was constrained to forsake his stirrups, & cast his armes about the necke of his horse, to saue himselfe from falling to the ground, and Blandidon was cast on the croupper of his horse. After these two knights had taken their seates againe, they prepared themselues with the third Staffe, which was discharged by Brician so strongly, as his horse and himselfe tumbled on the ground, and Blandidon was in danger to haue bene him company. But he seeing his enemy had drawne his sword, alighted from his horse to receiue him: and I assure you their Combate was esteemed one of the most dangerous that euer was seene in that Countrey.

Brician of Rochfort, desirous that his mistresse Mania should perceiue how willing he was to purchase her loue, and Blandidon, vanquished with the beauty of her, who caused him to hazard so great danger: redoubled their strokes so fiercely vpon one another, as at length Brician, sore weakened in fight, and deprived of the beauty of his Lady, fell downe to the ground. Blandidon presently tooke off his Helet, and made offer to part his head from his shoulders, except he would conesse Torcia to excell the other three in beauty: but while Brician lay in this extremity, one of the Maidens of honour cried to Blandidon, that the Ladies adiudged him the victory ouer Brician of Rochfort, who was caried to his lodging, & Blandidon having

## Of Palmerin of England.

lost very much blood by the wounds he receiued, was compelled to withdraue himselfe, hauing not the power to endure what he had attempted. For he that should remaine victor, ought to maintaine the combat for the space of one day, against the other knight that came, and the vanquisher (if they were so fortunate) they should be bound (being in any likely disposition) to beginne the Combate afresh against the other three knights whom he should subdue, before he might haue the praise of the victorie.

Pompides being sorry to see Blandidon so wounded, was (nevertheless) glad, that the honour of the day happened to his side, and vpon this he perswaded himselfe, that the Ladies seruice would fall to his share. The next day following, he sayled not to present himselfe in the field, where he had not long stayed, before Rupert Rosselin entered, being in blacke armour crosse strickt with little fillets of Gold, and his Shield (which was of the Indian colour) the God was figured, who brought all other vnder his obeyesance. This knight was mounted on a goodly roane Courser, and so soone as he beheld Telancia, who was very faire, and of whom he was greatly affectionate, he spake to himselfe in this manner.

Who is hee that either can or may iniurie mee, hauing your selfe before me? Therefore I pray you good Madame, that you would vouchsafe to accept his loyal heart, who will neuer refuse to do you seruice, especially, if he may know in what to pleasure you: and perswade your selfe, that I will soone discountenance this knight, who maintained the beautie of Torcia, to excell yours. Pompides knowing well by the behaviour of Rupert Rosselin, the little content this more Louer receiued beholding the beautie of Telancia: but he was somewhat offended, that Torcia was not as yet come to the place where the combate should be fought, and being passioned for this cause, he spake to Rosselin in this order

Thou must remember knight, that thou art not come hither to waste the time in contemplating of her beautie, who transfixeth thee from all sense and reason. I perceiue well (answered Rosselin) that Torcia reposes but little hope in your valour, because

because the disdaineth to honour you with his presence. You are so full of words (said Pompides) that if I should spend the time in giuing eare to you, the day would sone be gone, without trying either the fount of combat. So, without any more words, he ran against Rosselin, encounting him in the midst of the carrice, so worthily, and very hardly he recovered himselfe from falling, Pompides being nothing at all moued. Rosselin toke a new staffe, wherewith he tryed his fortune the second time, when, Pompides meeting him directly, brake his staffe nobly on him, and coming together, their weapons fought so one with another, as Pompides horse (which was not of such strength as the other) fel down in vnder his master: which Rosselin perceiuing, aduanced himselfe to him, but he had recovered himselfe, and stood ready to receiue him at the point of the sword. When they buckled together, and the combat was so cruell betwixen them, as in short time the flesh was sene through Rosselins armour: but he made semblance as though he were nothing moued, because he would not haue his Ladies make any doubt of his prowesse, and so earnestly he followed his intent, that Pompides had as small aduantage as himselfe. Neuerthelesse, his heart was more liuely, and himselfe more nimble and quicke then Rosselin, who had suffered so many sharpe strokes, and was so weake and wearie, as he was enforced to intreate Pompides to let him take a little rest, I am content (answered Pompides) to let you pause a while, to the end you may the better trauaile your selfe, in beholding the beautie of Telanfia: considered also, the small fauour that Torsia bestowes on me, cannot hinder me from vanquishing of you. It is moreouer sene (said Rosselin) that it is great danger to fight against men depriued of hope, but who one remaineth conqueror ouer such persons, the honour of the victory giueth them the larger contentment. When he had spoken what pleased him, Pompides and he beganne to combat againe, hacking and helwing one another so cruelly, as within a while Rosselin was so sore laboured, as he was altogether vnable to harme his enemy. Pompides saing himselfe in but little better estate then Rosselin, and doubting least the

Com

Combat would endure too long, he caught him in his armes, and threw him violently against the ground, being hardly able to sustaine himselfe from falling on him: but the remembrance of the victory made him take the more courage, whereupon he made proffer to cut off the head of Rosselin, which the Ladies would not agree vnto. Then was Rosselin caried forth of the fieelde very dangerously wounded, and Pompides (for the greater honour) was conducted to the Chamber where Blandillon lay, where Chirurgions looked diligently to their wounds. they being now as great friends as euer they were, hauing the one of them as good assurance of Torsiaes fauour, as the other.

The King himselfe came very louingly to visite them, and after he had knowledge of them, he was greatly offended that they had not bene knowne before him in his Court: but the knights excused themselves by their Ladies, whose beauties caused them to trauaile thither, alwayes desiring to be vnknewne: The Quene was very carefull to haue them well regarded, during the time they remained there in the Court: but after they were in good state of health, they humbly tooke their leaue of the King, the Quene, and Madame Torsia, Blandillon taking his way to Constantinople, and Pompides into Scotland, where he espoused the Princesse Armisia, according as I haue declared already to you. For you shall vnderstand that this French aduventure continued, from the time that Albayzar shewed his prowesse in Constantinople, hauing in his custody the Princesse Miragardaes shield, vntill the instant that the knight of the Sauage man (accompanied with Arlencea and the damosels) returned from the king of Spaines court, and passing through the Realme of France, was the first that by his noble prowesse attained this aduventure, as you shall hereafter heare: whereupon many secretly enuied him, whereof he made no account at all, because he had so well made his knightly behauiour knowne to the Ladies of the French Court.

Chap.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, inproouing the aduenture these foure Ladies had ordained.



**A**s the Knight of the Sauage man was conducting Arlencea towards Constantino-ple, to shewe her his lady Leonarda, the faire Princesse of Thrace, he was aduertised by the Quene of Nauarre and Dragonalt, of the aduenture which the foure French Ladies had ordained. And for that the report went of them, to be maruellously endued with beauty, he took his way into the French Court, which as then lay in Burgandie, and drawing nere to the Citie of Sonier (now called Digcon) somewhat towards the euening he entred a forest, wherein was a Monasterie of Nunnes, which had a goodly riuer passing a long by it, vpon the banke whereof hee perceived certaine tents erected, and by them saw diuerse Ladies and Damosels, making Garlands of flowres vnder the greene trees, wheron were hanged many shields, which were defended by certaine knightes that were nere at hand, resting themselves within the tents. It seemeth (said the Knight of the Sauage man to Arlencea) that wee shall not passe here so easily as we did make account.

When he had so said, he espied nere him an ancient Knight, of whom he requested to know, what honourable personages they were that recreated themselves in that place: Sir (answered the ancient Knight) it is the Quene, who came abroad to solace her selfe with the King, hee being somewhat higher in the Forrest with his Courtly attendants, hunting the wilde Hart. I pray you then tell me (quoth the Knight

of the Sauage man) for what occasion are the knights armed that keepe her company. You shall vnderstand Sir (saide the ancient Knight), that they are seruants vnto foure Ladies, who keepe themselves in this manner, to aduenture the Combate with him, that dare aduance himselfe to proue the aduenture: but I pray you Sir be not offended that I part so sone from you, for I see I must alway, and so the ancient knight left him.

I see well (quoth the knight of the Sauage man) that I must prepare my selfe for the Ioust. Whereupon, because he would not be knowne, he commanded the Equire to couer his shield with somewhat, and in the meane while he ranne his horse vp and downe, finding him nimble and quicke enough. After his shield was couered, he rode on toward the Trees: but when the Ladies saw him come, and a Damosell of such a great stature with him, they began all to laugh heartely. The Knight of the Sauage man had no sone beheld them, but not willing to serue them all, then staying his horse, that hee might the better contemplate their diuine faces, a French Damosell (by the commandement of the other Ladies) approached to the Prince with these words.

You giue sufficient example Sir Knight) of the small affection you beare to Ladies, in maintaining of whose swete and delicate complexion, these knights haue placed their shields on this Tree, to defend the passage, if you dare be so bold as to trie the aduenture. I pray you faire Damosell (answered the Knight of the Sauage man) to let mee knowe the conditions which these knightes obserue in garding this Valley: for if so be I iudge them any thing dangerous, it were better for me to depart, then trouble them, for I assure you the Lady you see in my company, would be very loth to see me in any perill. I perceiue then (saide the Damosell) you are one of those knights, who carries their Armoz rather to make a shoue, then to hazard your person in any doubtfull aduenture, neuertheless, I will let you vnderstand the custome vsed in this place. It is so Syr, that the Quene of Fraunce, (who is within these Tentes) hath foure Ladies in her company,

pany, who are reputed to excell all others in Beauty, and they are desirous to know, which of them may best make claime of this Title about the other three. For the tryall heereof they haue ordained, that the knight, who will iespard himselfe in the Adventure, shall take a viewe of them one after another, and hauing made his choyse of one of these foure, he must enter the Combate with the three knights, who are seruants to the other Ladies: if so be his fortune be so good to conquere them, hee shall be called her knight, on whose behalfe he entred the Combate: which honoz (I tell you) is highly esteemed in this Countrey, because each of the ladies deserue most especiall preferment. Now say, if your stomacke be so good, you may haue libertie to see them, and they will not disdain to behold the proweesse wherewith you are accompanied. I promise you Damosell (said the knight of the Sauadge-man) I would not hazard my person for these 4. onely, but as well for all the rest that are in y<sup>e</sup> Quenes companie: Warry first I will goe doo my dutie to her Maiesty, and after I haue seene the Ladies, I will so behaue my selfe, as I doubt not but to be well esteemed of all before I depart. Then he alighted from his Horse, and shewed himselfe so reuerent to the Quene, and her Ladies, as they remained greatly contented. Then the Damosell shewed him the foure Ladies, and after he had well viewed them all, shee desired him to tell her his minde. The knight of the Sauadge man casting his eyes first on Maria, her Beautie so well contented him, as he thought to rest there, but the Decree of the Adventure commaunded him to passe further, and looke on Telansia, whose presence did so abash him, that he knew not to which of those twaine he shoul submit himselfe. When Latrania came before him, his affection did so iuggle with his iudgement, as he could not tell well what to say, yet were they all forgotten. Upon the sight of Torsia, for her beautie so enflamed him in euery vaine, that he gaue her the title of Beauty about them all. But hee had such slender stabilitie in his Loue, as looke how forgetfull he was of them, one after another, euen so he failed not to be the like in iudgement: so, hauing bene a long while ere hee made his answer, at last he spake to the Damosell in this manner.

Faire Damosell, you haue brought mee into so great perplexitie, as I am almost willing to forsake an adventure so dangerous: neuerthelesse, I am content to enter the Combate for the honour of Mansia, and if Fortune fauour me with the victorie, I will attend other three on the behalfe of Telansia, with whose fauour I will enterprise with three more, for Latrania: then turning to Torsia, he said.

And if I escape the danger for all these on your iust quarrell I will approue my selfe, not onely against three, but against all that dare come against me, to let you vnderstand, what little account I make of my life, being thus honoured, to imploy my selfe in your seruice.

Those Ladies were greatly abashed, hearing the bzaue offer the knight of the Savage man had made, and such bruit was presently spread hereof abroad, as the king left the Chase, and returned to the Tents, where the Ladies rehearsed to him the intent of the knight. Arnedes, who was a very wise and discrete Prince, knowing the enterprise to be very dangerous, laboured to haue him perforce the promise he had made to the Ladies.

The knight of the Savage man made his humble reuerence to the king, afterward he mounted on horsebacke, speaking thus againe to the Damosell that brought him thither. If these foure Ladies be contented that I shall serue them, I will let them see, how willingly I will venture my life for their sakes, but since you haue tolde the recompence for him, that shall be so happy to ende the adventure, I will not passe any further before I declare to you, with what condition I will enter the Combate against their seruants, which is, that they shall grant me but one gift, if so be the victorie happen on my side.

And to the end you shall not bee ignorant of my intent, I will take the paines to discourse it to you. You shall vnderstand, that I am determined to guard the passage in this Passay, against all knights that dare presume to passe by, during the space of eight dayes, and if Fortune allosne me fauourable countenance in the victorie against their knights, that

that none of the Ladies shall depart hence, but if my mischance otherwise, they may depart at their owne pleasure: Latrania vpon this, spake thus to the other Ladies.

This knight (methinkes) is desirous to deale as the knight of the Sauage man did, who not long since conducted nine Ladies in his company through the Realme of Spaine. By my faith (saide Telanfia) we ought to grant what he demaundeth, because we shall haue the better knowledge of his valour. I am content (answered Mansia) vpon this condition, that he bring vs to the Castle of Almaroll, and enter the Combate with him that keepes the princeesse Miragardaes Shield, on the behalfe of one of vs foure: this I force not to doe, if so be he preuaile in the Combate against our knights. I pray you (saide Torfia) change this fond humour, for he is moze liberall to promise, then all you are or can best grant.

Truely it contenteth me very much (answered the knight of the Sauage man) that you know my minde so well, but me thinks Madame Torfia, it is more then reason that you should refuse any thing, yet would I be loath to turne againe to the Castle of Almaroll. I pray you Sir (quoth the Damosell to whom he spake first) haue you seene the Princeesse Miragarda, and conquered the knight that kept her Shield? Surely Lady (answered the knight of the Sauage man) I haue seene Miragarda, and Combated against the knight that kept her Shield, but I was not so fortunate in power, as to ouercome him. How then (saide the Damosell) dare you take the hardnesse vpon you, to make such a large promise to these Ladies, that you would not faile to vanquish their knights, and could not preuaile against that one knight? Marry (quoth he) for that the presence of these Ladies, and the affection I beare them, shall be sufficient for me to enter the Combate, and conquer all the knights that dare meddle with me. I see well (saide the Damosell) your loue is too full of incertaintie: then turning to the Ladies, she said, they might well agree to his request, and for the great desire he had to see the knight of the Sauage mans behaviour, she desired the king to giue his consent.

Mansia was so highly fauoured of the king Arnedes, and he

he, besides, so willing to see the pastime, gaue them all franke and free licence: whereupon the foure Ladies graunted him to keepe the passage, and they would accompany him during the eight dayes: then came the Damosell to the knight of the Sauage man, with these words. I haue so much preuailed, Sir knight, as these foure Ladies haue giuen consent to your request: wherefore, I greatly desire to see, if your deeds will proue conforimable to your brane words.

The knight of the Sauage man hearing what the Damosell said, came Arlencca, desiring her not to reueale who he was, and comming backe againe, he set downe his order thus. The first Ioust, quoth he, shall be for Mansia: the second for Telanfia: the third for Latrania: and the fourth shall be for the honour of Torfia. I perceiue then, saide the king Arnedes, the knight is willing to accomplish his promise. Then the Countie Girarde, desirous to make knowne the good will he bare Telanfia, would needs take the field first, and encountring the knight of the Sauage man, he met him with such force, as he was sent to the earth with his heeles upward, so farre out of remembrance with himselfe, as he was faine to be carried forth of the field: at which sight the king was maruellously abashed, in that the Countie Gerard was reputed one of the best knights of his Court. Mansia beganne to thinke, that in her name all the three knights should be vanquished, and the honour of the day should be aduodged to her, because the Prince would be so ouerlaboured, as he could not haue the power to vanquish the other three knights that came after.

The Countie Gerard was no sooner carried out of the field, but Brialte the seruant of Latrania, gaue his horse the spurres, and burst his lance brauely one the Prince, but he gaue him such a friendly welcome, as he was constrained to fall to the ground, with one of his armes broken, whereupon, he was carried forth of the field to the Countie of Gerard. Mansia was so glad of this, as she could not hide it, but they that sate against her did easily perceiue her secret reioycing: but the king Arnedes seeing the dangerous hurt Brialte had receiued, beganne to doubt, that the strange knight would iniurie all the other.



Then Aliart of Normandie (being servant to Torcia) ran and brake his Lance gallantly on the strange knights Shield, but he was sent to keepe his fellow company: whereas he was so offended, as he started up againe presently, and drawing his sword, came marching to his enemy, who fearing least the knight would haue slaine his horse, leapt beside him, casting his eyes vpon Torcia, making shew that he was very sozie for the foile the knight had receiued vnder her name. But yet to acquite himselfe of his promise, he charged Aliart so roughly, as in short time he tumbled at his feet, yet would not he offer to take his life from him: when the Damosell came to him, granting him the victory for the thre dayes.

I am sozie (saide the strange knight) that you should take such paines Lady. I see well (answered the Damosell) that you witnesse in your doedes, what you promised in words at the beginning. The knight of the Sauage man (who counted himselfe to be called the strange knight) mounted on his horse againe, and taking a Launce, he came to the place where the Ladies sat, entring into these speeches.

Would ye me now ready Ladies, to enter the field vnder the name of Madame Telanfia, whose beautie is sufficient to make me remaine victor ouer all the knights that dare speake against her: and you Lady Manfia, doe not you forget what you haue promised mee, since you sawe me willing to discharge the bond wherein I haue tyed my selfe.

The king Arnedes, well noting the valour of the strange knight, deuised how he might haue knowledge of him: for he did not thinke him to bee one of the Prince Don Edwardes Sonnes, because then he iudged, he would not haue concealed himselfe from the Queene: beside, he was aduertised, that Palmerin of England had giuen ouer following such aduentures, and that the knight of the Sauage man, was in the realme of Spaine.

While he was thus imagining who this strange knight should be, Brian of Burgundie, servant to Manfia, came into the field, very gallantly armed, and bearing for his deuise in his shield, Hope crowned with a garland of flowers, in a  
field

field of Azure: he pausing a little, and looking stedfastly on his Lady Manfia, parted to himselfe in this manner. I pray you Madame, not to make any doubt of the great prowess of this strange knight, in that he could not faile of the victory, maintaining your singular and heauenly beautie, but now that he presumeth to change you for another, I doubt not to make him lose, what he seeks so gladly to purchase, so that the victory shall be adiudged onely to you, and he that hath the power to winne it, will remaine yours in dafie while he liueth: the strange knight came to him with these speeches.

Haue you done sir knight your secret fancies? I perceiue you are one of them, that seeks to content your selfe with silent discourses, but I trust to send you after your companions, by the meane of Telanfia.

I know not (saide Brian of Burgundie) what the ende will be: so couching his Lance, and giuing a signe to the strange knight, they ranne together couragiously, and brake their Lances with such force, as Brian of Burgundie was unhorsed, and very sore hurt, yet would he haue dissembled it, and entred the combat with the sword, but the foure Ladies were so afraid that the strange knight would haue slaine him, as they caused him to procede no further.

The king was very much displeased, seeing the knights of his court so handled, yet were they themselves willing to continue the Toust: whereupon Monsieur of Artois servant to Latria, (who would not wast the time in needless words) cald to the strange knight to defend himselfe. I would iudge, sayd the strange knight, that the beautie of your Lady should cause you to regard her somewhat: but since I see you repose more assurance in your owne strength, then her beautie, whereby you might enioy most hope, come on and welcome. When setting their lances in their rests, they encountred together brauely, and albeit they failed for to brake their staves, Monsieur of Artois, receiued such a forcible accant, as he was throwne in the dust, so sore shaken that he could scantely moue himselfe. The strange knight caught hold on his Helmet, and pausing a while, he spake to Manfia in this manner.

## The second Part

Behold Lady, I giue you this knight, desiring you to let him be carryed south of the field: Mansia caused two knights to conduct him to his lodging, but Brian of Burgundie, being very much offended, he would not depart before he had fought the Combat: whereto the Ladies would not consent: Beside, the King began to be angrie with him, by whose commaundement he was reputed among the banquished. After that Brian was departed the place, Brisar of Gennes the seruant of Torfia, presented himselfe very richly Armed, not making shewe of any spech towards his Lady, so that the deeds of the strange knight (whome he thought long to deale withall) made him so inuaded as he would not speake: which the strange knight perceyuing, he spake to him as followeth.

I pray you Sir to contemplate her beautie a little, for whose sake you are so bold to enter the Combate: to the end her countenance may cause you to imagine the griefe lesse, if fortune direct herself against you. I know well (answered Brisar of Gennes) that you would gladly see in mee some shewe of feare or fainting, because you would thereby magnifie your deeds the more: but prouide your selfe for mee, and assure your selfe, that such is the hope I repose in my Ladies fauour, as I doubt not ere I go, but to vnhorse you.

Upon this, these two knights met together with such force, as Brisar of Gennes brake his staffe, though not able to remoue his aduersary, who encountred him so brauely, as he was sent to the ground with his saddle betwene his legges: and as he offered to strike him with his sword, the Damofell came and stepped betwene them, so that the strange knight could not execute his intent.

The King Arnedes was extremely grieved, seeing the victorie come so fast to the disadvantage of his knights, and the strange knight being very glad, to see fortune fauour him so well, prauced till he came before Latrania, to whome he vsed this Language. Hee that hath the power to performe what hee promiseth to your Companions, hath no lesse force to quite himselfe to you, whome I iudge as beautifull as any of them.

Then

## of Palmerin of England.

Then cast he his eyes on Madame Mansia, whose griefe hee might easily perceyue, because shee saw her victorie equall with Lady Telania: and Latrania could not assure her selfe on their strength that followed, because shee feared that ouermuch trauell, would weaken the strength of the strange knight.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

¶ How the strange Knight entred the Fielde, to Ioust vnder the name of Latrania.



When the strange knight was entred the field againe, he came to Arlencca, and talked with her: but Gomer of Benoit stayed him, letting him vnderstand that the Day passed apace, wherfore on the behalfe of his Distresse Telania, he bade the Ioust to the strange knight, who entertained him in the midst of the way so gallantly, as he was faine to keepe the other knightes companie. But because hee was a knight of good courage, hee recouered himselfe quickly, and drew his sword, which when the strange knight beheld, hee forsooke his horse, and saluted him with such cruell strokes, as that the Ladies were glad to send the Damofell to separate them asunder, fearing least the strange knight would haueaine them.

The Damofell hauing sent Gomer away, seeing the strange knight so pleasant and iocund, as though he had not laboured himselfe at all, deuoured of him, when he would thinke himselfe to haue trauelled enough. Marrie quoth he when these Ladies (for whome I commit my selfe to the daunger) thinke themselves to haue neuer a knight left to doe them seruice. I pray you then (saide the Damofell) that you would tell mee who

who you are, that I may make report of you to the King, who cannot be quiet, for the desire he hath to know you.

My name Ladie (quoth he) is of so small estimation, that I am much ashamed a knight so vnexpert at Armes as my selfe, should be discouered to his Highnesse. Not so (answered the Damosell) for your valour is such, as may well abash the best knight that we haue seene.

After the Damosell was gone forth of the Lyffs, the strange knight mounted on his Esquyres horse, because his owne was very much trauelled: but the King reioycing to see him so victorious, and pittying he should be destitute of a Horse, commaunded one of his Esquiers to bring him the best and most assured Horse in his sight.

The strange knight humbly thanking the King for his gift, mounting on his backe, attending the knight that should next enter, which was Benteier of Berlande, the seruant of Manlia: but such was his misfortune, as he was vnhorsed likewise, very sore hurt in the fall. And because he was vnable to helpe himselfe, the king commaunded he should be carried out of the field, still practising how he might know the strange knight: who rid on to the end of the race, and seeing neuer a knight ready to Ioust, he sate still in a great study.

Then came Arlencea to him, and willed him to remember his businesse, for there was a knight ready to trie him. You haue done me a great pleasure madame (answered the strange knight) for I was in such a mauellous conceite, as I little regarded what affaires I had in hand. Then gaue he his Horse the spurres against Bertrand of Beaumont, the amorous seruant of Torfia, who sped according as his fellowes did, and was likewise carryed forth of the field, after ward he came before the Ladies, speaking to them in this manner.

You may see (saie Ladies) the great affliction I haue in you in that I sustaine the quarrell of you all together, and I remain conquerour ouer your seruants, for that their good will is not of such good estimation to you, as the loyall and vnfained loue I beare to you, which makes me so forward in your seruice: neuerthelesse, I am you so displeased for the misfortune of

of your friend, as I iudge I shall haue but slender recompence for my labour. Then came he to madame Torfia, saluting her with these speeches. If I had acquitted my selfe (Madame) towards these Ladies, what thinke you swete mistresse I would doe for you? I promise you, I will behaue my selfe in such sort, as you shall say your selfe, I excede my promise.

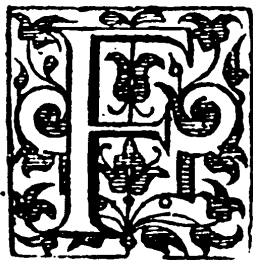
So concluding, he returned to the Ioust, wherein he had so good fortune, as hee vnhorsed fise knights together: their names were Alteo of Frieze, Dirdell of Burdeaux, Gualter of Dordonne, Danes of Picardie, Richard of Tolose. The King Arnedes knew now what to say, seeing the best knights of his Court so discomfited, therefore he would haue had the strange knight procede no further: whereat he was somewhat offended, and fearing the King would not suffer the Ladies to accomplish what they had promised, hee entred into these speeches. Your Highnesse is already acquainted with the conditions, whereon I presume to enter the Ioust, therefore me thinks it is more then reason to deny me iustice, especially I being a stranger: considering I haue fulfilled what I promised the Ladies, whom I desire you to command to satisfie my paines. I perceiue (said the King) you will not forget what is your right to haue: but I would know with what intent you seeke to accompany those ladies, who I can hardly afford to be sent from my Court. If it please your Maiestie (answered the strange knight) there was no such doubts made to me before I tryed the Ioust, therefore I take it very unkindly, that your highnesse should deprive me of my right, seeing it is your office to let euery one haue his desert. I pray you, said the king, tell me who you are: for your noble behauiour maketh me the more earnest in desire to know you: and content your selfe, for I will not hinder you of any thing the Ladies haue promised you.

I beseech your grace humbly (answered the strange knight) that you would not bee offended, considering I am loth to bee knowne as yet, untill I haue reuenged an iniurie which one hath done mee: but I promise you faithfully, your highnesse shall know who I am, ere I depart your Realme, for I will not faile to declare my name to these Ladies.

dies, because they haue him in remembrance, that suffered so great trauaile for their sakes. I see well then (quoth the King) you will not now ease my troubled thoughts: well, I will therefore build vpon your promise: Then the day declining apace, the king set forward on his way to Digeon, thinking the strange knight would come to take his lodging there, but his will was farre contrary, wherefore these few Ladies took their leaue of the company, tarying there with the strange knight: whose seeing them somewhat sad, because they had lost the Queens company, took off his Helmet, which made the Ladies greatly abashed, so that one could hardly iudge, which of the foure was most affectionate to him. The strange knight durst not be too familiar with them in speeches, because he feared to disturbe their patience: so after he had brought them to the Monasterie (which was nere at hand in the valley) the Abbatesse brought them into a faire Chamber, the windowes whereof ouer a goodly Oratorie, where the strange knight himselfe was lodged, and there he laboured his thoughts so extremely all the night, as he had done his body all the day before.

## CHAP. XL.

Of that which happened to the strange knight, the first day he enterprised to guard the passage of the Valley.



Aire Aurora saluting the Ladies at their Chamber Windowes, they put themselves in a readinesse, because they desired to see more of their knights promise: so, they went with him to the field, not vRING any great fauour towards him, because they thought hee would leaue them the sooner; and Manfia requested of him, into what places he intended to conduct them.

Madame

Madame, answered the strange knight) I am so extremely passioned, as I cannot at this time report whither I shall trauaile. Dare you not be so bold saide Manfia, to bring vs to the Castle of the Giant Almaroll, and enter the Combate for our sakes, with the knight that keepeth the Princesse Miragardaes Shield, as the knight of the Sauage man did for certaine Damosels that kept him company? I knowe no daunger so great answered the strange knight, which I would refuse to hazard, if I might be vsed with gracious behauiour, for that inciteth a noble minde most to the fight. If any of vs, saide Lirania, were desirous you should approue the Combate against the Princesse Miragardaes knight, for which of vs foure would you adventure most willingly? It is greater trouble for me, quoth he, to answer your present demaund, then to hazard the Combate against any knight whatsoever. Yet quoth she, admit the necessitie were such, as we would faine knowe, which of vs should make best account of her selfe in this case? I will me Madame, answered the strange knight, it is impossible for me to make you any direct resolution in this matter: for mine eyes are so equall in iudgement on you all foure, as I cannot either loue or affect one more then another.

Maue you sit, said Toria, at any time seene the princesse Miragarda? I see Madame that I haue, answered the strange knight: I pray you then good Sir, quoth she, that you would vouchsafe to tell me, is she so exceeding faire, as the common bruit is blazed abroad of her? Madame said the strange knight, you may well assure your selfe, that your singular beauty hath so dazled my iudgement, as I neuer sawe any that liked me better then you doe.

Ah ha, quoth Manfia, haue we taken you at last? We may now be well perswade our selves, that Toria is she whom you make most account of, for you neuer gaue so good wordes to any of vs: wherefore seeing she hath the most power ouer you, and that you preferre her beautie aboue all ours, I am determined to depart hence with these two knights, which I see conuincing hitherward, for I knowe them to be such, as will carrie

## The second part

carrie me away in the despight of you. And I pray you Latrania and Telanfia to beare me company, seeing the knight hath reuealed himselfe, how simply we are esteemed in his fauour.

The strange knight thought to excuse himselfe, but before he had the comoditie so to doe, the knights of whom Manfia spake) were there arrived: the one of them being called Sir Menelao of Clermont, the other Monsieur Arnar: who being asked to see these Ladies in the power of a stranger, came to vnderstand the occasion. Sir Clermont (saide Manfia) since fortune hath so luckily brought you hither, I pray you to deliuer me from this strange knight, who saith, that in despite of all the knights in France he will carry vs into Spaine with him and there make vs give attendance on his Lady.

Clermont, who was the servant to Latrania, giuing credite presently to Manfias words, took his lance from his Esquier, and comming to the strange knight, he entred into these speeches. Since you haue (Sir) receiued the order of knighthood, to offer iniurie and displeasure to Ladies: I wish he may be accursed that bestowed it on you, and my selfe too, if I should not attempt to chastise your follie. You are wrong informed Sir (answered the strange knight) and I perceiue Manfia would gladly see you brought into danger, as she would aske me the like fauour, if it lay in her power: and I thinke you shall gaine more in going about your busines, then by tarrying long in this company.

Clermont seeing himselfe so lightly esteemed, grew into such melancholy, as he ranne against the strange knight, before he would suffer him to take his Launce: but hee slipping by the puch of the Launce, caught him in the carriere by one of his armes, & pulling him beside his horse, threw him to the ground with great violence. His Esquire then deliuering him a Launce, he rode against Arnar, who prepared himselfe to reuenge the shame his fellow Clermont had receiued, as also to desire the fauour of Torfia, because he had good hope to espouse her: but the strange knight being ignorant of his affection, met so iustly with him, as he sent him to keepe Clermont company.

And to the end the Ladies might perceiue, how he deserved better

## Of Palmerin of England.

151  
better account then they made of him, he alighted fro his Horse, and hauing drawne his Sword, he deakt with them so brauely both together, as he made them know they went against those orders, which a good knight ought carefully to keepe and esteeme. The strange knight desiring to delight them, whose kindnesse was very mean and slender to him, brought the knights into so bad estates, as they would very willingly haue had a little rest, if so be their enemy would haue suffered them. Manfia seeing the knights in so great danger, she desired the strange knight, that it might please him to heare her one word: the in the mean while he stayed to heare what she would with him, Clermont and Arnar had the leisure to breathe a while, whereof they were not a little glad, and Manfia began thus to the strange knight, I am highly contented sir, in that you haue witnessed your noble valour vpon these two knights, whome I desire you to re-mit, seeing they are not able to purchase any advantage ouer you: for I perswade my selfe, that both Syr Arnar and Clermont wil not refuse your gentleness in so doing, and I my selfe shal haue cause to thanke you for it. These two French knights were as glad as might be, that their Combat ended in so good order: neuerthelesse, because their Ladies shuld not iudge them to be so faint hearted, they made as though they gaue ouer very du willingly. Which the strange knight beholding, he desired Manfia to suffer him to begin again, for he doubted not to make them better contented, when hee brought the into a little more danger. Such is the pride (answered Torfia) as you will not be contented till some knight may haue the power to qualifie your lustinesse. Your beauty faire Madam (saide the strange knight) doth so torment mee, as you cannot with me any greater punishment: yet will I take it thankfully, comming from no bodys hand but yours. Arnar was so sore wounded, as the Ladies were constrained to vnrarme him to dresse his woundes, which were very dangerous, & Torfia took paine to binde them vp with his shyft stoues. The strange knight seeing the gracious courtesie these Ladies vsed to Arnar, begaune to pittie him very much, especially, beholding Torfia to these teares: but they were not very many, for French Ladies doe not vse to weepe much.

With le

While these Ladies were thus busie about Arnar, a knight arrived in the place where the Combate was fought, bearing in his shield in a field of silver, a Speare broken in pieces, whereby was to be understood, that his hope was altogether lost: after the knight a pretty space beheld the beautie of these Ladies, he made his rest upon Latrania, and being very desirous to doe her service, he came to her with these speeches.

You shall understand Madame, that I have sometime staid my hope in the place, where I could purchase but slender advantage, as you may behold by the devise I beare in my shield: and I assure you, I will once againe venture my fortune on your behalfe, for I perswade my selfe, I shall not endure any great torment for your sake, having the favour of your divine beautie before mine eyes.

Menelao of Clermont, being so amorous of Latrania, as he iudged none ought to love her but himselfe, could not suffer the words of the knight of the Speare, but returned him this answer. If you doe attempt (Sir knight) to fight on foot against me, albeit you see me soe wounded: yet will I give you to understand, that the favour of this Lady is reserved for him, that hath suffered thus much in her service, and thinketh himselfe worthy of her gracious recompence. I perceive Sir (saide the knight of the Speare) that you are ignorant of me, who could wish (for the love I beare this Lady) and you were in good estate, and armed double against me: for as you be now, I iudge you farre unable to make resistance against me. The strange knight hearing the proud words of the knight of the Speare, mounted on horsebacke, and taking a Lance from his Esquire, came on to him with these words.

Sir knight, I have promised these foure Ladies, to guard the passage of this Valley for eight dayes space: the two first dayes in the service of Manfia, the Lady that sitteth on your left hand: the third and fourth for Telanfia: the fift and sixt for the Lady whom you like, called Latrania: and the two last dayes shall be altogether imployed, in the honourable service of Madame Torfia. And I assure you, I am as greatly affectionate to the one as the other, except the speciall opinion

I have of Torfia, for that I saw her wepe for the harme of her knight, yet will I not pittie the carelessse grace I endure for her sake. Notwithstanding all this (Sir knight) if you can thinke so well of your selfe as to trie the Adventure, you shall finde me verie willing to entertaine you.

It is ten dayes since (answered the knight of the Sphere) that I did arrive in any place, where I could be more desirous to trye my valour then I am this present: but seeing these daies are limited by course, I will awaite till they come, which are appointed for the hono<sup>r</sup> of Latrania, for on her behalfe I meane to adventure my selfe. In troth (sayde Clermont,) I see the knight beginneth to dismay himselfe, and can finde no better meanes to excuse himselfe, then to put off the trial of his manhood. If you thinke so (answered the knight of the Sphere,) make your returne hither at the appointed time, and I will not sayle to let you know what small account I make of your Choller.

So leaving Clermont, he approached to the Ladies, who demanded of him, if he had bene at the Castle of the Grant Almaroll. He being willing to shew himselfe obedient to them, courteously shapd them this answer. I have bene not long since (sayde Ladies) at the aforesaid Castle, and I have seen the Princesse Miragarda, yet not entring the Combate with him that keepes the shield, for that Albayzar set himselfe against me, and vanquished me. I thinke you (saide Manfia) any more beautie to consist in Miragarda, then in Madame Latrania: You drive me to a hard point Lady (quoth the knight of the Sphere) for I iudge him of simple understanding, that will reproue them absent, to content the humours of them present: and I thinke it expedient, that each of you should be content with your severall Wives, not grudging nor repining at that which is in another.

Sir (saide the strange knight) you witnesse very well your badde entertainment at the Castle of Almaroll, which hindreth your iudgement of the beautie of Miragarda & these foure Ladies: in whose defence I will stand, that no Ladies beautie may compare with theirs. The knight of the Sphere suspected



## The second Part

suspected, that it should be the knight of the Sauage man, where-  
 upon he beheld his shield, which he could not perceiue because  
 it was couered: but he knew his Esquire, so that he was assu-  
 red with whom he would deale. Neuerthelesse, the affection  
 hee bare to Latrania, made him forget the friendship of the  
 knight of the Sauage man: so he tooke his leaue of the Ladies,  
 intending to lodge not farre from the fforest, vntill the dayes  
 came for him to aduenture with the strange knight, on the be-  
 halfe of his beloued Latrania. Clermont and Arnar departed  
 heauily, and the strange knight went with the Ladies to the  
 Monasterie againe, where he caused Arlenoca to remaine, till  
 he and the knight of the Sphere had jousted together, fearing  
 least in her company he should be knowne, and because he reser-  
 ued her to be married to his friend Dramusiande.

## CHAP. XLI.

The complaints which the strange knight made in the night-  
 time, vnder the window of the Chamber where the foure  
 Ladies were lodged.



These ladies were brought againe into their  
 Chamber, where out at the windowes (be-  
 cause the knightes were quiet, calme, and  
 faire) they might discerne the most part of  
 the Walley. The strange knight was so ve-  
 hemently surprised with their loue, as the  
 great trauaile hee had sustained that day,  
 was not of force sufficient to cause him giue his mind to rest: for  
 it is euermore saine, when the spirit is troubled with newe  
 imaginations, the heart must needs be tormented with infi-  
 nite passions. Euen so was hee molested with so many newe  
 cares,

## of Palmerinot England.

cares, as he was constrained to come forth vnder the Ladies  
 Chamber window, hoping that some of them would take pi-  
 tie on him: then laying him downe among the grane leaues,  
 and folding his armes crosse ouerthwart his stomacke, he  
 entred into these discourses.

I know well that loue is enuious at my libertie, for that I  
 haue saine the Dames of England, of Greece, of Spaine, and of  
 Nauarre, without remaining affectionate to any of them: but  
 now being in Fraunce, I am suddenly inueigled by foure  
 Ladies, who onely delight to depriue me of life. And that  
 which tormenteth me most, is this, I loue them all, and am as  
 much affected to one of them, as I am to all the other three: for  
 when I regard the one, my heart biudgeth me forsake all to yeld  
 to her: and beholding the second, I finde my selfe in the same  
 alteration. So that when I would forgette such vncertaine  
 assaults, I see them the more readier to be extant before me,  
 which maketh me thinke it cannot be true loue, that doth tolle  
 and turne in so many sorowes: and yet doe I imagine  
 my griefe the lesse, remembering that I endure it for their  
 sakes.

But me thinkes the case is very hard, when no one of them  
 will seme to make account of me: wherefore, I see well, I  
 shall be charged with more extreame cares, then as yet I am.  
 O vnforsunate knights, that vnder their names prepare your  
 selues to giue me the Combate.

The Ladies who were at the window, heard very well  
 the complaints of the strange knight, whereupon, Manfia,  
 spake the rest in this manner. I thinke it good (my friendes)  
 that we goe vnto him, and spend a little conference with him:  
 for seeing the night is long and troublesome, I iudge we can-  
 not better driue it away. Now dare you (sayde Torsia) be so  
 hardie to goe visite the man, who maketh no account to kill  
 them that come in his presence? It is not for you (answered  
 Telania) to make any shew of fearefulnesse now: for if any  
 mischance happen to vs, you are the first that shall be boyde of  
 it.

21  
The second part

This discourting to one another, at last they departed all together, being in their Petticoates, and their Mantells wapt about them, to shielde the Deawes from falling on them. After these foure Ladies were come to the place where the strange knight lay lamenting, they having saluted him, Mania beganne thus.

It is so Syr knight, that we are desirous to knowe who you are, and vpon what occasion you utter these complaints: and if you seeme to hide these demaunds from vs, wee shall be enforced to cause you lose that without Armes, which you haue obtained of other by Armes. Indeed Ladie (answered the strange knight,) one of you hath power sufficient to vanquish me: then shall you offer me great iniurie, to aduantage your selues all foure against me. Trust me Syr (saide Telanfia) wee repute you so good a knight, having seene sufficient occasion to cause vs think so, as that some of vs remaine yet in doubt, by reason of the knowledge we haue of your Noble doodes. If my beddes faire Ladie (the strange knight replied) were accompanied with any shew of estimation, it proceeded only by being imployed in your service, which seeing they are so agreeable to you, I shall attempt to Conquere all the knightes in the French Courte vnder your names: but I see you denie your fauour, and I am out of hope euer to purchase it. I pray you Syr (saide Torfia) let me aske you one question: Haue you bene in Loue heeretofore, or no? Certainly Adam (answered the strange knight) I haue bene many times practising to follow the will of the little god of loue, who compelleth (by his envenomed shafts) both Gods and men to loue. And haue you bene (quoth Torfia) so greatly tormented then, as you seeme to be at this present? No Adam (quod hee) so that I gaue my selfe to the service of one, whose loue I hope to enioy (in time) by my Trauels: but now that I haue adu ventured to loue foure, one of them seemeth to forsake mee, to the ende the other may deale with me in the same sort. And I asseure you Madame, I neuer loued in any place, where I seemed to be deuiued of my life: but now I desire to be consummated, being fallen into so extreame occasions.

3

154  
of Palmerin of England.

I pray you Sir (saide Torfia) doe not molest your selfe so, for he that is accustomed to trauaile countries can shake off these passions well enough I warrant ye. I thinke it good that you grant to satisfie Madame Larranias desire, which is, that you would conduct her to the Castle of Almaroll, where you must enter the Combate vnder her fauour, against the knight that keepeth the portraiture of Miragarda: or else that your trauaile to seek the knight of the Sauage man, from whom you must take by force of Armes, the Damofelles that are in his company.

You will me Lady, a charge against all dutie, for I aduertise you, he that guardeth the Princesse Miragardas Shield is not now at the Castle of Almaroll: but I am well content to search the knight of the Sauage man, and to enter the Combate with him, vnder the fauour of Madame Larrania, who shall beare me company, and you all likewise, for I cannot liue, being deuiued of your presence.

I perceiue, saide Larrania, you can excuse your selfe well enough: but I hope the knight of the Sphere will reuenge the squemishnesse you vse towards me. Larrania thus breaking off her purpose, they all foure took their leaue of the strange knight, because the desire of sleepe compelled them so to doe, and being entred their Chamber, they discoursed among themselves sometime commending the knights noble valour, and then againe his gracious and Princely behauiour, whereupon they determined to shew him better countenance then as yet they had done.

The strange knight remained in extreame passions, because they departed from him so suddainely, and fearing he had uttered somewhat that they could not like off, he passed the night in many melancholly conceits, untill in the morning, his Esquire brought him some refection. And during the time he was at breakfast, the knight of the Sphere came secretly to the Monastrie where these Ladies were, who by reason of their late watching, kept their beddes as yet: but because the strange knight should not see him, he wente late downe at the foote of a Tree. And hauing taken off his Helmette, he be-

E 3

gan

## The second part

ganne to recount his manifold misfortunes he had endured, which when he had advisedly considered, he found them not to be compared to the violent afflictions that he suffered for the loue of Lactania, whose beautie was of no small estimation with him, in that he had promised for her sake to enter the Combate against the knight of the Savage man, the Sonne to Prince Edward his Lord and especiall good friend.

## CHAP. XLII.

What happened to the strange Knight, the second day he guarded the passage of the Valley.



Still it was two houres after mid-day, the strange knight kept within his Tent, not hauing any occasion to arme himself: which the Ladies perceiuing, they were desirous to be gone, Manfia aduancing her selfe as chiefe of them, setting forth her countenance to the uttermost: and because that day was ordained for her honour, she behaued her selfe most hauely in the presence of the other Ladies.

The strange knight knew well the intent of Manfia, how glad she was to see the triall of her beautie that day, whereupon he scanned his language to her in this manner. I would willingly (Madame) discern some kinde of imperfection in your Courtly bruary, that thereby you might receiue occasion to respect somewhat with pittie, the man that is extremely afflicted in thinking how he may compass the meanes to win your good opinion: for you being adorned with such rare and exquisite beautie, do exceed lengthen their liues, who take pleasure

## of Palmerin of England.

sure to behold you. But I good Madame cannot be so happy as to be one of those, in that I am he, to whom you take delight to conceale your selfe: but this day I desire you to prepare your selfe as gallant as may be, for your beauty may happen to winne the estimation aboue all these other Ladies, because it is unknowne what knights will come.

These words of the strange knight did not so well please Manfia as he iudged they would haue done, for she take them very disdainfully, and gaue the knight to vnderstand, that she was not reserved for him.

Lactania seeing him so earnest in contemplating the beautie of Manfia, spake vnto him in this manner. I see well Sir, that the regard you haue of Manfia, causeth you to be forgetfull of all the rest. Not so Lady (answered the strange knight) and if you will doe me the honour to heare me speake, you shall some perceiue you are in a wrong opinion. You will not gainsay (sayd Lactania) but her beautie is honoured as your owne this day. If the day (quoth he) whereon I lost my libertie, both for her and you, were as yet to come, you should haue some reason for to conceiue this opinion. But if you be desirous to know the state, wherein I ouer hath bound his Subjects to his Law, the knight of the Sphere (whom I perceiue is comming hitherward) will satisfie you therein: and you may demaund, if as yet he containeth the same minde, wherewith he presented himselfe to doe you seruice.

While the strange knight vsed these and such other like speeches to Lactania, the knight of the Sphere lifting vpp his Helmet, came to the Tents, and saluted the Ladies very graciously: and as he stood earnestly beholding Lactania, the Ladies perceiuing thre knights comming towards them, being all armed after one manner, as if they were all thre the Seruants of Manfia, the first of them was an English man, called Brauor: the second, Alter of Amiens: and the third Gualter of Amboise: they being all thre of the King Arnedes Court.

And because they had not the meane, to make triall of their valour in the forest against the strange knight, when he behaued himselfe so brauely in the Kings presence, they concluded this day to hazard their rencowme, which was the last day the strange knight enterprised to shewe his puissance for the honour of their Mistresse. These three knights being come before their swete Saint and Lady, were in a manner depriued of their wits, her beautie was of such stately preferment in their eyes: which the knight of the Sphere beholding, and noting well their amorous passions, he spake to Manlia in this manner.

You cannot deny faire madame, but you are more beholding to this strange knight, which hath kept you company for certaine dayes, then to these knights which are come to seek you: for that in my iudgement they rather seeme to yeld themselves conquered by your present sight, then any desire I can perceiue in them to the Combat, but it may be, your braue apparel hath more dazzled their eyes, then your singular beautie, which is of sufficiency to set the whole world to worke.

Sir (answered Brauor) if you are so busie to descant on our meanings, and that you will seme to iudge of our inward thoughts, prepare your selfe to the fust, and I will not fayle to giue due chastisement to your lauish speeches. Trust me Sir (answered the knight of the Sphere) I am content to satisfie your desire, on condition this knight shall thinke it so conuenient.

I pray you (Sir said the strange knight) that you would not seme to hinder me in my enterprise, which being once achieved, you may afterwards make triall of this knights courage, which to say, I iudge you shall not neede to trouble your selfe much. I perceiue (answered Brauor) what the intent of your speeches is, neuerthelesse, I hope the gallant brauerie, wherein I haue this day beheld my Mistresse Manlia, will not onely graunt me the conquest ouer you, but also be sufficient for me, to correct the pride of this other knight. I perceiue now verie well (saide the strange knight) that your affection was onely vpon her gay cloathing, but mine is on her swete selfe,

self, that weareth them: then casting his eyes vpon Manlia, he entred into these speeches. Faire Madame, since the honour of this Day is dedicated to your praise, I desire you to allow mee so much fauour, as to beholde the entertainment of this new come Guest: for I feare me, my blowes will yeld him greater Disauantage, then hee receyued content in beholding your Beautie.

Vpon this they ranne together courageously, and Brauor brake his Launce worthily, but the strange knight encountered him with such force, as hee pierced him quite through the bodie, so that he fell beside his Horse to the ground dead: his companions being as greatly abashed, as the Ladies did take it heauily seeing the misfortune of Brauor, whose boodie was carryed to the Monastery to be buried.

Alter of Amiens, and Gualter of Amboyse, notwithstanding the death of their friend and companion, determined to hazard their honour in this Adventure: but Gualter of Amboyse was the first that presented himselfe to fust, vntill this Language towards his Ladie. I desire you heartily (good Madame) that you would not suffer him to dye at a strangers hand, who sheweth liuely to doe you service: but so well I desire you to thinke of me, as in in the extreamest occasion you will not forsake mee. These words vttered by Gualter of Amboyse, were spoken after such manner, as the knight of the Sphere easily vnderstood them, whereupon he spake to Madam Larrania, in this manner. This knight in my iudgement (faire Mistresse) is vniuersally the loue of any gracious Lady, that disdaineth of his enterprise before he begin it.

While hee stood thus communing with his Ladie, the two knights encountered together, but Gualter of Amboyse was cast forth of his Saddle, being unable to moue the strange knight: hee hauing broken his Launce, addrested himselfe to Alter of Amiens, who being very timorous and fearefull, yet to shewe some good countenance to his Ladie, gaue his Horse the spurs against the strange knight, who could not make with him according as he would. Neuerthelesse, Alter of Amiens brake his Launce in such sorte, as the parties stode about the strange

## The second part

strange knights horse head, whereat the horse so fumed as he gallopped with his maister violently throught the field, whereupon the strange knight cast himselfe beside him, commaunding his Esquire to ride after, to take him againe. Alter of Armiens, seeing that fortune more fauoured him then his other companions, was very desirous to enter the combat with the sword, for which cause he alighted from his horse, then Gualker put himselfe before him, because he had Jonsted first: but the strange knight handled him in such order, as in short time his companion was glad to come helpe him, whereupon, the strange knight entred into these words.

You come (sir) euē as well as heart can wish, for I am determined to lay claime to your horse, because mine is runne away from me. Then he charged him so furiously, as the knight of the Sphere was constrained (pittying the estate wherin they were brought) to desire Mansia to give them some succour: but before she could well perswade her selfe to doe so, these two knights came and rendred themselves at her feet, desiring her to pittie their present case, not doubting but they would apply their liues many other wayes in her service. The strange knight desirous to see what estimation Mansia would make of them, came vnto them with these words. You shall vnderstand (sir knights) that I am not determined to giue you ouer, without the Lady intreate on your behalfe her selfe: or else she shall promise to graunt me one request, which I intend to vtter to her.

I assure you sir knight (answered Mansia) I doe not intende to make you any such promise, giuing you to vnderstand, that you ought to beware how you passe any further your selfe, for the hope which you haue in me, who by this meanes shall haue perfect knowledge, of the loue and good will you seme to beare me. I see well (quoth the strange knight) that you are desirous to let me know, how your nature is bent towards them, that aduenture themselves in your service: which is: that they shall receiue better entertainment, then that which you vse towards me: whereat, I haue some occasion to grieue, for I would be he, that should onely receiue your

## of Palmerin of England.

your fauour: in that I practise all meanes possible to please you. But I see your intent is to vse me with rigour, which I would wish you should vse to these knights, whose liues are of so little profite to you, so that I count my selfe happy, because my life is farre from your power.

When he had thus sayd, he offered to mount on Gualters horse, but the Ladies gaue him to vnderstand, that he did much abuse the knight to offer him such iniurie, by which meanes, these two knights rid presently away to the King of France his Court, where they made knowe the misfortune that had happened vnto them.

The knight of the Sphere, tooke his way vnto his lodging, and the Ladies to their Monastery: Mansia being greatly contented, that the strange knight had so well acquitted himselfe towards her, as the other thre did very much maruell, at the noble behaviour of this braue Champion.

## CHAP. XLIII.

Of that which happened to the strange Knight the third and fourth day.



After the sight of these Iousts, the Ladies hauing withdrawne themselves into the Monastery, the strange knight entred into his Tent, where he refreshed himselfe with such viands as the Puns had sent him. And for that he was somewhat sore trauailed, hee was the more desirous to rest: in the neane time his Esquire returned from the search of his horse, which he could hardly take all that day, but his maister was iad when he saw him.

Then

## The second Part

Then the strange knight, thinking the Ladies would walk abroad, as they had done the night before, he took his way to the greene Trees againe: but they came not abroad untill the morning: when, being mounted on theyr Harts, Manfia ridde foremost, hauing a Garland of flowers on her heade, in signe of Victorie: Telanfia followed next her, beeing in good hope to attaine the selfe same honour. Latrania and Torsia came somewhat behind, vsing such a maiestie in theyr countenance, as the knight was more and more enclained towards them. When Manfia was come somewhat nere the strange knight, she spake vnto him in this manner. Trust me Syr, we are so weary of your company, as we haue concluded to returne to the kings Court, not doubting but we shall be aduertised, what things happen to you in our absence: whereto the strange knight thus replied.

These words (good Madame) which you vs to me, cannot be thought welcome to me, and I am perswaded that the lawe which these Ladies of France hath set downe, being first begun by their chiefe good willes, cannot be thus broken, without their great impeachment. Good Syr (answered Torsia) doe not thus grieue and offend your selfe, for Manfia did speake but onely to trie you, and she will not be gone so soon from you, I warrant you: as for vs we will not breake our promise to you, till the eight dayes be fully compleate, except some other knight come, whose power shall be sufficient to cut off your determination.

Ye thinke Lady, saide the strange knight, you should not wish him more misfortune, who endureth too much already for your swete sakes: but methinkes you should rather wish the victorie to fall on my side, then on any others, for the laudable commendation you shall get thereby. While the strange knight behaved himselfe amiable, in the entertaining these gallant Ladies, the knight of the Spere arriued there on a sudden, who shewing his obeysance to Madame Latrania, spake to her as followeth.

Faire Mistresse, neuer were any dayes so troublesome vnto mee, as these which I endure at this present, earnestly thirsting

## of Palmerin of England.

and desiring for the time, when your swete selfe may allow me some fauour: Neuerthelesse, I am very well perswaded, that the knight who honoureth you with his seruice, cannot be easily vanquished, for that he beares as great good will to you as I do, adioynning hereto, that he imagineth himselfe worthy your loue. But you may assure your selfe, that I am so highly affected to you, as this knight may no way equall: Neuerthelesse, I cannot chuse but take it heauily, fearing you will allow the like ingratitude, which I perceiue you vs to him: To these words Latrania replied thus:

Your speech (Syr knight) is farre different from the offer you made me, when you first arriued in this place, when you were so liberall in promise, that you would not sticke (for my sake) to conquer the whole world. The strange knight being desirous to make one with them, offered to aduance himselfe to them: but he was hindered by a Damosell, who arriued there at that very instant, who desired him to shew her the knight that guarded the Passage of the Valley: Then disclosing himselfe to the Damosell, she saluted him with these speeches;

Hauing vnderstood (Sir knight) how you are of the opinion, that these foure Ladies are the fairest in all the world, I was somewhat desirous to trauell hither, accompanied with these foure knights, which you see vnder this Tree: and they (to honour me with theyr seruice) haue concluded to Ioust with you, not doubting but theyr paines will returne greater profite vnto them on my behalfe, then that which you bestow for these Ladies. And this you must vnderstand beside, that these knights come not to enter the Combat with the sword, in that I reserue them for especiall affaires, which are to mee of greater importance then this.

When the strange knight had well aduised himselfe on the Damosells words (who bare her face couered) hee answered her in this manner. I would I were, in as great estimation with these Ladies, who keepe mee here captiue, as these knights (in your company) are to you. And for that you vs them with such fauour, I desire that Madam Telanfia may speed no worse then Manfia hath done, for whose sake I haue already Conquered three



## The second Part

three knights. I pray you Sir (saide the Damosell) to shew me which of these foure Ladies you call Telanfia? After the strange knight had satisfied her request, she entred into these words.

In soth (Sir) her beantie is sufficient for you to enterprize great matters, yet I imagine, my knights shall not be any thing more discouraged thereby, to doe me seruice. This Damosell was the very same, that came to succour the vanquished knights, which were conquered by the strange knight in the King and Quenes presence: and because the strange knight spied alwayes so fortunately, many knights sought secretly to iniurie him: which the Quene would prevent as much as she could, causing this Damosell to entice them to trie their valour against the strange knight, for her sake.

Hereto they willingly consented, neuertheless, the King had forbidden them to enter the Combate with the sword: for which cause the Damosell entreated the strange knight, that he would hazard the breaking of ones Launce, against one of her champions. After that the Damosell had thus concluded, these foure knights (who bare for their severall deuises in their shields, the Globe of the world, figured in a silver field) beganne to aduance themselves forward, which the strange knight perceiuing, he coasted Telanfia with these speeches. If the world (saide Madam) were of no bigger quantity then this which the knight beareth in his shield, I indge I might with easie trauaile overcome it, & make you the onely Quene of the world. Without any more words, he gane the spurres to his horse, and encountred the knight in the midst of the carrer, so brauely, as both horse and man went to the ground: then turning to the Damosell that conducted them thither, he spake to her as followeth. You cannot denie now saire Damosel, but you haue scene me throw the world to the ground, onely by the fauour of Madame Telanfia. Wherby (answered the Damosell) you doe but as yet beginne, these other three knights know very well the prowesse of this knight, to be farre greater then they thought for: but since such great misfortune hath befallen him,

## of Palmerin of England.

him, you see the second knight desireth to reuenge his companions wrong, and if he faile likewise, these other two knights will beare them company. But I perceiue well (saide the Damosell) they must be tried knights, which shall liue in hope to conquer you: yet may I say thus much without offence, that your courage is the more emboldened by the presence of these foure Ladies. Then taking off her maske, the strange knight presently knew her, which made him beginne in this manner. I am very glad (saire Damosell) that you can now witnes my fastnesse and stabilitie: but I doe greatly abash my selfe, of the hope you reposed in these foure knights, who (for any thing I can see) beare no greater affection to you, then to me. These knights desired the Damosell to suffer them to depart, for they were afraide, least they should be so handled as their companion was. The king Arnedes commaunded that night, that a great dancing should be kept in the Quenes Chamber, where at he was aduertised of the sundry and high good hope of the strange knights: which moued many Ladies to intreate their amorous seruants, that they would bring them to the place where this knight kept the passage.

These foure ladies entred the field, accompanied with their champion, and the knight of the Sphere. Whom the Ladies desired that the king should not be offended, by his entring the Combate with the strange knight: As for the resson of their seruants that were in the Tent, to encourage them to be earnest in desiring to enter the Ioust, each of them promised vnto her knight a garland of flowers, if the victorie chanced on his side. Baldwin of Nainnis, who was the affectionate seruant to the saire Albania, was the first that presented himselfe to Ioust against the strange knight, who would not suffer him to run before he had first craued leaue of the ladies, that it might be their wils to crowne him with the garlands of flowers that remained victor: the ladies contented themselves greatly with this request, whereupon the strange knight spake thus to Telanfia. Madame, for that it is pittie your golden lockes, so gallantly garnished with these fragrant flowers should be iniured by any, or these garlands worne by any other then your sweete

selfe;

selfe: I desire you to lay these garlands by the tree before you, and doubt not but I will haue more companions to them presently. So saying, he ran against Baldwin with such force, as he sent both horse and man to the ground on a heape. The Lady Albanis garland was presently sent to the strange knight, which he immediately presented to Telanfia, vsing this language. If (swete Mistresse) you will doe me so much honour, as to receiue in worth this present I offer vnto you: I will not faile to enterprise in your gracious seruice, to decke this tree with flowers of surpassing beautie.

Nert to Baldwin, was dismounted Bameran, the amozous seruant of Lady Brisfa: whose garland of flowers was set next to Lady Albanias. Rion of Belze, seruant to Madame Vertuosa, being discomfited, her garland was a companion to Lady Brisfaes. The fourth was called Lusaman, seruant to Lady Zapella, he was likewise sent to keepe his fellows company: next to him was Riant, the seruant vnto faire Blas. And Altar of Bayonne, seruant to Mananfia, who seeking to reuenge his friends iniurie, was cast forth of his saddle, with his arme broken. Garland of Beziers, seruant to Montpensier: Forlian of Granoble, seruant to the Lady of Iurie, Brisar, seruant to the Lady of Bur, sister to Telanfia: beside many other knights, who were all banquished by the strange knight.

These garlands were hanged on the bowes of the tree, the sight whereof, yeelded no small contentment to Telanfia: but the other Ladies found themselves greatly discontented, thinking on this honour, and what had passed before, especially Manfia, who indued this day farre more triumphant, then those which the strange knight maintained vnder her fauour. Latrania and Torsia, were out of hope to attaine such honour as Telanfia had done: so these banquished knights departed presently thence to the Court at Digcon. The knight of the Speare was greatly abashed, noting the noble deeds of the strange knight, whereupon he toke his leaue, and went to his accustomed lodging, to passe that night away: reioycing greatly that the day was come at last, when he should witnesse to Latrania his prolowe and affection: the strange knight was so

so transformed in the one of these Ladies, as he thought neuer to leaue the company, and contemplanting them very earnestly, his Esquyre came, and told him his Supper was ready: rememb'ring him also, that on the next day hee must enter the Combat with the Knight of the Sphere, whom he iudged to be one of good and hardy courage. I pray thee answered the strange knight, let me alone, for the hope I repose in these Ladies, is sufficient to make mee breake both the Sphere, and the hope likewise of the knight thou namest to me.

The Ladies vnderstanding the wordes of the Champions, gaue no small commendations to the knightly deedes, in the meane while, the knight layde him to rest: but so vnquiet was his sleepe, as he did not containe the same minde he was wont, to goe walke vnder the Ladies Chamber window, to vnderstand if they would come into the field againe. And I assure you, these Ladies being parted but a little thence, they imagined amongst themselves, by casting of Lottes, which of them that sight should goe to him: the lotte fell vnto Latrania, who departed as brauely garnished, as she did the first night.

CHAP. XLIII.

¶ Of that which happened this night to the strange Knight: and how the knight of the Sphere entred the Combat the day following.



In the meane while the strange knight slept at the fote of a tree, Latrania came to him, being in a wastcoate of white Taffatey, all the breast whereof was embroidered with silver twills, and hanged very thicke with Aglets of Gold, the brauery whereof did not a little grace her, being likewise couered with a graine silke mantle, because the dew should not

not hurt her. In this order as I haue told you, Larrania came downe and sat by him, not speaking one word to him, because she thought he should speake first. The strange knight, who was not wont to be abashed at any thing, presently caught hold on her mantle and for that she had her face covered, he spake to her in this manner.

I beseech you (faire foule) not to be offended, if I request to see your face, whereby you may in some sort assure the doubt which as yet I remaine in. Larrania put by her Maske, and being accompanied with a milde and affable countenance, she spake vnto him as followeth. You shall not now refuse (O strange knight) to graunt me the request I haue continually desired at your haande. Alas (faire Distresse) you lay such hotte assaults vnto my daunted spirit (answered the strange knight) I must be faine to yield, because the victorie shall be the more famous. And it doth not a little reioyce me, that you haue thus taken the paines to come alone to comforte mee, for that you may perswade your selfe, my power is farre too weake to make resistance against all you foure: To which wordes Larrania thus replied.

You haue oftentimes said to me (O knight) that there is no one vpon the Earth, hath greater desire to doe me seruice then you selfe: but I cannot conceiue the same opinion, if you will not at this instant let me know who you are. Madam (said the strange knight) if I were in the seruice of any other, then might I easily graunt your request: but I will leave you to thinke what I will doe to morrow when I must be employed in maintaining your Beauty. But now and it doth not a little displease me, that you are so unwilling to regard me in your fauour which I esteem the most especiall fortune that can happen to me if I could attaine the honour to reioyce in her presence whom I loue as the onely pillar and stay of my life: as I haue already witnessed to your companions who may not presume to equall themselves with you, albeit their Beauties deserue good commendures, yet you being so worthy to be serued, I intend to reueale my name to you, to the ende you may haue knowledge of him, whom you haue enforced to endure so great trauell.

The

These wordes gaue occasion of Larrania, to take him at the advantage, because she might the better attaine her desire, and he likewise triumph in this great fauour, so that he declared his name to her: which when she vnderstood, her minde was indifferently rased, for Larrania had (in times past) heard of his inconstant and vnfaithfull dealings, and fearing least her honour likewise might happen to be impeached, she failed not presently to depart thence, promising not to discusse him to the other Ladies.

After that Larrania was thus departed from him, he deuised which way he might exclude her out of his remembrance: but so great was the affection hee had bowed to her, and the conceyte of her delicate affections so pleasing to him, as they would not suffer him to forget her, but did so vehemently vex and torment him, as it was vnpossible for him to enioy any quietnesse.

But Larrania sustained no such vntuly passions, for she slept soundly till the morning, not making the other Ladies acquainted with that the strange knight had told her: whereupon Manfialpake to her in this manner. I knowe well Larrania, that you will make vs believe, how the knight hath not discovered his name vnto you: wherefore I intend to goe proue to morrow morning when it shall be seene which of vs hath the most power ouer him. And if it so fall out, that hee will not reueale himselfe to none of vs seure, I shall ascribe his passions not so troublesome, as his complaints to some to witnesse.

Upon this determination the Ladies rested, and so soone as the Sunne had shod out his golden countenance on the earth, certaine of the Kings Court attended in the field, who caused tents and pavilions to be presently set vp, because the king and the Quene would come to see the Jewels that day. The Ladies would not as yet come forth of their chamber, because it was too early, and for that the Jewels should not be begun before the king came: but it was not long before the king and Quene came to their Tents, accompanied with many honourable personages, as also Ladies and Damoels of great calling.

P 2

The

The Judge s of the fildes caused Tables to be set vp in the Valley, which were couered with cloathes of maruellous estimation, and there the King and Quene refreshed themselves, inuyting into their companie the foure Ladies, who were so stately Apparellled this day, as their beautie seemed to excell all the Ladies that were come with the Quene. The strange knight went forth of his Tent, that he might the better behold this sudden assemblie, and sitting downe at the roote of a Tree, his Esquyre brought him victuals to breake his fast withall. After that the King was risen from the Table, these foure Ladies (according to their wont) mounted on theyr Horses, and toke theyr way to the place where the strange knight remained, who euen then was ready to fall to his daylie exercise: they courteously saluting him, went with the Quene to her Tent, and by the kings Wents the strange knight stode, expecting who should first beginne the Ioust. And the King himselfe, was greatly delighted in beholding the Garlandes, which for that they were the fauours of the Ladies, and lost by the knights that were foyled, he began highly to commend the Prowesse of the strange knight: who being ieausting with the foure Ladies, he espyed at last to come along the Valley, the knight of the Sphere, Armed as he was the day before, and bearing his Ladies Garland on his Crest, which he had good hope to keepe well enough.

When the King Arnedes had espyed him, hee entered into these speeches. I desire greatly to see that Garland of Flowers brought vanquished vnto these other: whereby I may bee the better assured, whether hee that preuaileth in these Conquests so happily, may find his Pære else-where, or no. The knight of the Sphere, comming into the Kings presence, saluted him with humble obeysaunce, afterwards taking his Garland from his Helmet, he desired him to weare it: and if hee defended it not according to the merit of her Beautie, he desired it might bee placed among the other vanquished. But if the victorie happen on his side, he would not seeke any other recompence at her hands, but that those other Garlandes might bee giuen to bestow on his friends.

Of this request Larrania was very glad, and desirous to reach so high felicitie, whereof thoroughly perswading her selfe, and likewise to satisfie the knight of the Spheres will, she put the garland on her head: then earnestly beholding the strange knight, she entered into these speeches. You see (Sir) the day, when I haue the meane to make known your knightly doodes, as also the desire you haue to doe me seruice. I will Madame so behaue my selfe (answered the strange knight) as you shall be perswaded no other knight can iniurie me, so great is my desire to accomplish such seruice, as may be agreeable to your gracious nature. And if afterward you make such regard of me, as you doe of those whom you are wont to thrust into forgetfulness, I must then comfort my selfe with this, that I am not alone in misfortune, but beare my crosse with others for company.

The knight of the Sphere hauing understood, how Larrania made no more regard of them that did her seruice, and seeing the Dice in Fortunes hand, either to his continuall honour, or present disgrace, yet ignorant which of them should be his chance, ranne couragiously against the strange knight, they encountering together so worthily, as they were both compelled to forsake their stirrups. Upon this gallant beginning, they tooke new staves, wherewith they met againe together so strongly, as the pieces flew whistling in the ayre: and passing forward, these knightes met so furiously with their bodics, as they were constrained to tumble to the ground. At this sight the King was greatly abashed: but Larrania contented her selfe very well, seeing the noble and valiant behaviour of her knight, who she thought as good in all points as the stranger. These two knightes had no sooner recovered themselves, but they drew their swords, wherewith they hacked and helved one another very pitifully. The strange knight being desirous to passe this day with as great renoune as he had all the other before, followed his intent with singular agilitie: and the knight of the Sphere, to witnesse his earnest affection to Madame Larrania, did behaue himselfe likewise so worthily, as each allowed him the name of a good and hardy

hardie knight. And such was the difficultie of this Combate, promising hope to neither side, but very doubtfull on both: as the king esteemed it of no lesse danger, then that betwene Don Edward of England his sonne, and Dramusiande and his Giants, when he was prisoner in the custody of the Enchauntresse Eutropa. And the king was extremely passioned, fearing least two such noble champions should die in his presence: so fiercely they continued the fight, as they were both constrained to withdraue themselves to breath a while. The knight of the Sphere, seeing his arme so mangled, began to thinke his estate in some hazard: but afterwards remembering the beautie of her, for whose sake he thrust himselfe into danger, he communed thus priuately with himselfe. What greater good can happen to me in all the world, then to be allowed in her seruice. whose beautie none in all the French Court may match? In the meane while these two knights thus paused, the Damosell that was wont to come so often into the field, addrest her selfe now againe to the strange knight, vsing vnto him this language.

I desire now to see (Syr knight) how you will iustifie the large promises you haue made to me, for that I perswade my selfe, the knight of the Sphere will restore these Ladies with the losse of your life: and he being earnest the victorie should fall on his side in reuenge of the offence you haue offered vnto them, will yeeld youe Tree decked with these Garlandes of flowers vnto their handes that best deserue them, to which woordes the strange knight thus answered.

It is time long enough (faire Damosell) since I perceiued the small good will you bare me, but since I now perceiue that my misfortune is so agreeable vnto you, I desire you to make knowne vnto the Ladies, that I make no account of their fauouring me, being well assured, that they are wont to vse such recompence towards them who aduenture their liues in their seruice.

Wherefore, that they shall well vnderstand that my force took his nature in times past, by the gracious regard of one most singular Lady: I desire them to keepe their wonted conuetsnesse

uetsnesse of their beauty. And I shall be content that Latria vse her fauour towards him, when it pleaseth her to make most account off.

When he had thus said, he returned to the Combate which helde betwene them a long while: but when they perceiued their Armes defaced, their flesh martyred, and themselves very greatly sabled, they once againe withdraue themselves to rest a little.

The king Arnedes was loth two such hardy knights should end their liues in so desperate manner, the quarrell being of so small estimation, there he would haue had them then parted asunder. And the strange knight, thinking on the discourteous entertainment Latria afforded him, disdained once to looke on her: but the knight of the Sphere made such account of her beauty, as in his silent thoughts he vttered these wordes. I would I were as fortunate, and my daides as worthy, as I see you coye in accepting of these, who render their very soules subiect vnto you.

So breaking off, he closed againe with the strange knight, who in troth was not slowe in receiuing him: and I assure you their liues had bene in very great danger at this thud triall, if it had not bene for the arrivall of a damosell, who being mounted on a white Walfray, and her haire hanging ouer both her shoulders, came to the strange knight crying so loude, as her voice brought an Echo of the whole Forrest. At this sight euery one was suddainely abashed, and chiefly these two knights, who separated themselves, to know the cause of the Damosells lamentations, which she came to utter before the foure Ladies desiring them to let vs vnderstand, for what reason these two knights entred the Combate.

Manfia tolde her, how they fought for Madame Latria: whereupon the Damosell approached to her, entring into these speeches. Madam, if life and honoꝝ ought to be preferred before vnto some appetites & afflictions, I desire you humbly to allow aid and succoꝝ to two distressed Damosells, who not farre from this place are in great danger to lose their honour, which they esteeme of greater price then their liues: out of which trouble

they shall be sone deliuered, if it may please you to let mee haue one of these knights, who endure a hotte Combatte for your Loue. When she had thus spoken, she shed such aboundance of teares, and deliuered forth so many scalding sighes, as Latrania was enforced to misse of her desire, thinking to see the ende of the Combate betwene these knights: on which behalfe, the King (seeing Latrania make no answer,) spake vnto the Damosell in this manner.

Which of these two knights (saide Damosell) doe you desire to haue with you: because you shall perceiue my willingnes to intreate for you. If it please your Maiestie (answered the Damosell) they are both so good knights, as I know not well which of them I should request: neuerthelesse, I will make choyse of the knight that bereth his shield couered.

Latrania had no soner heard the Damsells words, but she presently came betwene the two knights, giuing in shewe, that the Strange knight should not suffer any refusall, and whereupon she spake to him thus, Syr knight, if for the succour of the afflicted, Armes were first inuented, I pray you, that the teares of Damosell, and the loue you say you beare me, may cause you to forsake this Combate, and moue you to goe helpe the oppressed Ladies.

Madame (saide the Strange knight) for me to obey you in this cause, were very fond and vnadvised, yet would I doe it, if I were not busied about especiall matters, for you may perswade your selfe, that the Bond wherein I haue tyed my selfe, doth defend me from satisfiing your commaundement: considered also. Madame Torlia may finde her selfe offended, that I should now in this manner slip from her, and not giue her her due, her Beautie worthily deseruing it.

I pray you sir (quoth Torlia) that you would witnesse your Service for my Loue, in the place where this Damosell will conduct you. I am content to obey your commaundement, (answered the Strange knight,) if you likewise will goe in our companie: for I haue taken this condition of you, not to be deprived of your companie, during my limited time of guarding this Valley.

Madame

Madame (saide the Damosell to Latrania) the knight doth perfectly let you vnderstand, that he is an obedient seruant to loue, as your selfe may well perceiue, seeing he preferreth his pleasure before your will. Wherefore I desire you to intreate the other knights to goe with me, for I am of the opinion, you shall finde him more affectionate to you, then he whom you haue reposed so much hope in. Latrania being willing to pleasure the Damosell, beganne to intreate the knight of the Sphere, that it might stand with his pleasure to giue over the Combate, and assist them with his ayde, who were in great hazard.

Madame (answered the knight of the Sphere) I know it is no great harme for me to let alone the Combate, mine enemy being such a noble and redoubted knight: yet would I not haue any one to thinke, that in respect of feare or dismay, in my selfe, I let this passe thus, for that I know my selfe sufficient enough for a greater matter. Harry, as concerning your request, the earnest loue I beare you is such and so great, as I am content to suffer whatsoever you will lay vpon me, onely to satisfie and content your will.

Then turning to the Strange knight, he beganne againe in this manner, I pray you (Sir) thus to imagine and think, that my earnest desire to purchase the loue of Madame Latrania, hath bene some hinderance to you of the victorie, albeit you made some assurance thereof in your owne conceit. And as he (answered the Strange knight) I see it is very hard for a man to get any aduantage of you, without putting his owne life in great danger: for I assure you, your stroakes haue bene so well laid on me, as they haue made me to conceiue so good opinion of your valour, whereof since I am so well assured, it doth not a little please me, that so good a knight shall goe in this Damosells cause. But ere you depart, I would very gladly vnderstand your name, to the end Latrania may haue knowledge of him, to whom (of necessitie) she must account her selfe greatly indebted. The king himselfe (who was no lesse desirous to know him, then the Strange knight) desired him earnestly to reueale himselfe to him.

The



## The second part

The knight of the Sphere, seeing the kings great importunitie, took off his helmet, and knaled downe to kisse his Majesties hand, but he perceiving him to be his friend Dramusiande would not so permit him, but casting his armes about his necke, embraced him with marvellous gracious courtesie, being very sozry that his suddaine departure, would not suffer him to regard him as he willingly would. And hee would not let him part, befoze he had made him knowne to the Quene and and the other Ladies, who declare to the king, what a benefite the knowledge of the strange knight would be to them. Alasse (quoth the king) I would as willingly knowe him as any of you all, and I am much out of quiet with my selfe, that I haue not knowne him all this while.

Wh Syz (saide Dramusiande) I beseech you to expect yet a little longer, untill his enterprise shall be ended: for I am of the opinion that he will not then sake to depart hence, befoze hee make himselfe first knowne to your Grace.

The Damosell presented her selfe befoze him, declaring it was high tyme they should be gone, whereupon he took his leaue of Latrania, who esteemed her selfe aboue all the other Ladies, in that she had the power to bring into her obeyesance so good a knight as was Dramusiande. After his departure, the king and Quene rode to the Citie, where they daily commended the singular prowesse of the strange knight, in that he kept his charge so well.

The Ladies of the Court would not depart thence, befoze they first might haue the Garlands their servants had lost, whereupon, they came all together to the tre, and caught them all away violently, the strange knight not daring to resist them.

## CHAP. XLII.

Of that which the strange Knight did the day following, garning the Valley.



When the king and all his Courtly attendants were thus departed, the foure Ladies took their way to the Monastery, and the strange knight went into his tent, where he late downe to rest himselfe: after ward, as he kept it for his custome, he went and walked under the greene Trees, and the Ladies determined, who should this night goe visite this amorous Louer.

Manfia, who this night must go parley with the knight, had put on a wastcoate of blew Taffata, wrought all over the body with net-worke of Gold, wherein were composed diuerse ranckes of very rich Orient Pearles, and by them were placed Stones of inestimable value. Her haire was wound in fine plats about her head, being couered with an imbrodered Garland of blewe Clouet, wherein was set a faire Plume of white feathers, very beautifully adozned with spangles of Gold.

In this order as I haue declared to you, Manfia came and late downe by the strange knight, and to auoide suspition, shee took off her Garland, not fearing to be hurt or impeached by the Serena, or else for the desire she had to be the perfecter scene. Then laying her hand vpon his head, shee beganne as followeth. I will (Syz) at this tyme forbid any manner of complaint, in that your selfe shall not deny, how all the paines past are to be forgotten, and all cruities are to be recompensed by gracious visitation, especially, seeing I take pleasure to fauour you so much at this tyme.

## The second part

The strange knight was surprised with such exceeding ioy, as he could not possibly make her any answer, for the beautie of Manlia had so rauished his vnderstanding, as he was not mindfull in vsing any gracious language, wherewith he ought to haue entertained her: but after this sodaine ioy was somewhat calmed, he then failed not to account of her maruellous honourably, wherewith she remained verie well contented, and to giue her further occasion of speech, he began to court her in this manner.

Madame, I know wel that your good nature is: to see the defects of doubtfull trauailes requited, and he that should iudge otherwise, were vnworthie the gracious visitation you haue afforded me: assuring you, that this is the most especiall recompence can happen to me, hauing the meanes to contemplate your excellent beauty, which no other may presume to paragon. And if you your selfe haue not the same opinion, trust me, you shew your selfe very ingratefull to Nature, who hath framed you such an one, as may iustly be called the Phoenix of beautie: whom I haue so deeply imprinted in my heart, as I shall be extreamely tormented, when I shall be deprived of your sweete company. Yet I am greatly abashed, how you digest it so wel, to see him suffer such paine and grasse, who deserueth to be better esteemed of you, you hauing the power to cause him liue contentedly, or die presently. I pray you Sir (saide Manlia) before you passe any further, tell me if you vse these speeches to Latrania or no: Trust me Lady (quoth he) her curiositie was so much, as I did not make any great account of her when she was with me, and then perhaps I might be forgetful of many things, especially, to her whom so many knights are bound to: for when the mind is else where grounded, all amorous representations are thrust in obliuion, which is not so madame towarde you, who may altogether dispense of my seruitude, even as she that hath the only power ouer me. When seeing it is so, I pray you humbly (good Lady to iudge, to which of you foure I am most affectionate, & after you haue wel aduised your selfe, on the seuerall perfectiōs of the other ladies you cannot get denie, but you are aduantaged aboue them all in beautie, grace

## Of Palmerin of England.

167

grace and authoritie: so that I esteeme my selfe most fortunate being deprived of my libertie, & altogether bound to obey you.

Manlia being not able to withhold her selfe, from giuing credite to the strange knights golden words, and not thinking how he had vsed Latrania in the same manner: she beganne to come more nere him, and laying her hand on his shoulder, she shapd him this answer. If this matter be so (Sir) as you seeme to make it, I humbly desire you to tell me who you are: to the end I may with the greater assurance ioyne my belæse to your persuasions. I perceiue then (answered the strange knight) the small assurance you repose in me: so saying, he took her by the hand, which she suffered very quietly. And so amorous he was in words, as at last he bewrayed himselfe vnto her: and perswaded her, that the griping one another by the hand, was a certaine beginning of loue. So that this little fauour made him somewhat more bold, and furder he would haue proceeded, but the Lady left him and departed: being as glad that she knew who he was, as she had left him without hope to purchase his intent.

The strange knight was extreamely passioned, seeing that her quicknes, and the light regard of loue wherewith she was accompanied, made him so scornfully entertained: yet could he not blame her alone, for that he was so vsed of them all. In many sad conceits he passed away the night, ripping vp the intricate sorowes he was bound to suffer: but when the day appeared, he mounted on horsebacke, bowing to reuenge the iniurie he had receiued that night, on any knight he should happen to deale withall. But he found himselfe farre deceived in his intent, for the knights of the French Court had giuen ouer, so comming any more to trouble him, wherewith he was somewhat offended: neuerthelesse he dissembled his grasse that the Ladies might behold his wonted passions.

Latrania was very much displeased, because the Iousts were not continued as they were wont: againe, she doubted least the knight of the Sphere had sustained the foyle in the Damofelles cause, by reason he was so ouercharged with trauaile before he went. The which she would be very sorry should

should so fall out, for that by his prowerse he had given the advantage ouer her companions, for which cause she remained continually affectionate towards Dramusiande. As concerning the aduenture he followed, the history maketh no other mention of it, but this: that the Damosell was sent by the Sage Aliarts meanes, onely to succour the liues of these two knights, to be employed in ayding the Emperour of Constantinople, to which place the Damosell had caused Dramusiande to take his way, albeit he was very loath to forsake Latrania.

After that these sixe dayes were thus past, which were dedicated to the honoz of Manfia, Telansia and Latrania, the two dayes reserved for Torsia were come at last: whereof the strange knight was glad, in that he intended to doe moze for her, then he had done for all the rest. All the first day it was not his chance to haue any aduenture, because no one knight presented himselfe in the Valley, wherefore he passed away the time till night, when hee went to his accustomed place, where he had not staid long, but Telansia came to him, being in a Taffata wastcoate of Indian collour, very richly spangled ouer the bodie, and on her head were Jewells of great estimation. Thus she came to the strange knight, desiring him to certifie her who he was: whereto hee made her this answer.

I perceiue Madamie, how Lone altogether entendeth to deprive them of life, who are desirous to doe him seruice, and the meze extremely to plague and punish me, that the paines of the other oppressed soules may not compare with mine: for he hath made me thus to vnderstand, that your severall visitations are to no other end, but onely to gaine the knowledge of me, without any will or desire in you, to pittie my continuall dying spirit, or to regard my dangerous traualles, wherein you seek to prolong my leached life, though I daily desire to breathe my last.

If you iudge my words to fauour of any forgerie, you may compare my continuall iustnesse with my present behaviour, and you shall finde your owne iudgement a witness against your

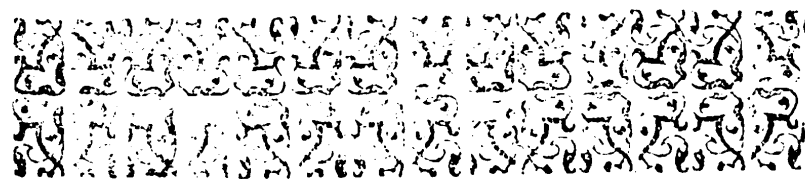
your selfe: how you ought not so to disdain his kindnesse, who hath guarded this passage vnder the honour of your name, whereby you may triumph with perpetuall renowne. All these causes considered, me thinkes you should not be such ingratitude to the knight, who hath bene the occasion you are so much esteemed, and is also affectionate towards you.

Sir knight (answered Telansia) I know not whether your wordes are forged or no, albeit the custome of such as you is, to mingle many deceits among your complaints: but if you would perswade me to beliene what you say, grant me that you haue refused to my companions, that is, to tell me what and who you are?

Faire Lady (answered the strange knight) to tell you who I am, I shall not greatly make daintie: assuring you, that I durst not reueale it to any of the other, for that my speciall seruice is to honour you. And you shall vnderstand that I am called the knight of the Sauage man, from which name truly you may change me, doing me the honour to be called your servant.

Sir Florian (answered Telansia) one of the signes whereby I know the small loue you beare be, is in reuealing your name to me, the other, for that I know you more account of the other Ladies then of me: and no doubt you haue faired to them all, as you haue done to me, therefore I pray you be not offended, for you and I must needs part company.

So rising by she departed thence, promising not to discover him to the end his enterprise might not be hindered. The day following, which was the last he had to trie his valour on Torsias behalfe, he entered the fielde, hoping this day to purchase immortall renowne.



C H A P. XVI.

Of that which happened to the strange knight, the last day he guarded the passage, vnder the name of madame Torfia



The strange knight stayed till it was after noons forth of his Tent, yet not one knight entred the Walley, which made him report to the Ladies, that the feare their seruants had of him, in guarding the, had now caused them to forget the affection they were wont in words to beare them: wherof they foure agreed: so that they mounted on their Halls, were all and came to commune with their knights, who bled them with lesse pleasant behauiour then they had done before.

Whilst these Ladies were thus conferring with the strange knight, they espyed comming three knights, their armor being in colours, white, blacke and scarlet, and each one had figured in his shield, a Swan in a field of Sable. One of these knights was named Alemant, the other two were Italians, and Alemant called himselfe Lambort of Saxonie: he traualing to Constantinople, met with these two Italians, who perswaded him to trauaile with them to the Castle of Almaroll willing likewise to approue the aduenture, was sone intreated to beare them company, and their complexions being very different, they fell out of their way: then hearing of the aduenture of these foure French Ladies, they addicted their iourney presently to the French Court, perswading themselves to end the aduenture, wherein so many good and hardy knights had failed. And being thus arriued all after one manner, they

arriued

arriued in the valley now on the last day of the Ladies aduenture. I know well (saide the strange knight so sone as he had espyed them) that fortune did not intend to suffer me this day, without shewing you (saide Lady) the great desire I haue, to be accepted among the number of your best fauoured seruants: for you may perswade your selfe, that no knight whatsoever hath power to resist against me, when I haue you swete Lady in my presence.

While the strange knight this repored with Torfia, the three knights were arriued in the field, and after they had aduisedly beheld the beautie of these foure Ladies, they could not iudge which of them did most excell in beautie. But so it was that their affections were contrarie, for the two Italians entered the Combate for Latrania, and Alemant was altogether inueigled with the beautie of Mansia.

These Ladies were so well pleased as possible could be, that they should be serued by knights of strange passions, which made them vse such great courtesie and fauour towards them, as they had not done the like to any of the King Arnes court: wherof the strange knight was so moued, as he presently prepared himselfe to the Ioust. Brucie of Verona one of the Italians, was the first that beganne the pastime: but the strange knight met with him in such sort, as he was sent to the ground with his heeles vpward.

Which the other Italian perceiuing, who was named Trucie of Beroze, he gaue his horse the spurres: but in the encounter he was sent to keepe his fellowe company. This much displeased Lambrot of Saxonie, who was esteemed a good knight, when setting his lance in a rest, the two knights met together so brauely, as Lambrot was unhorsed with his saddle betwene his legges, and the strange knight was forced to forsake both his stirrups.

Then Alemant calling to the Combate with the sword, the strange knight alighted from his horse, but the two Italians would not suffer Alemant to enter the Combate, for they saide the aduantage belonged to them, because they were first dismounted, Upon this they fell at much variance among them-

Z

selues,

selues, which was incontinently appeased by the foure Ladies, who obtained, that Brucian of Verona should begin the Combate first: but he was so entertained by the strange knight, as Truce of Beroze was constrained to come helpe him. Where, at the strange knight was so moued, as in short time he layde Brucie of Verona at his foete: and Truce of Beroze was sore hurt, as he was glad to flee to the Ladies for refuge, who desired the strange knight to saue his life.

Alemaut desirous to revenge the injury his two friends had receiued, drew his sword, and buckling on his Sheld, came boldly forward to assayle the strange knight: but he dealt so roughly with him, and followed his intent with such nimble and braue behaviour, as Alemaut found he dealt with one stronger then himselfe. Yet was he of this mind, that he rather desired to die at his hands, then to demand any fauour of the Ladies: who were so greatly moued with pittie, fearing to see him die before them, as they came and desired the strange knight to giue ouer the Combate.

At their request he was contented being very glad he had so well accomplished his promise, giuing them to vnderstand, that to do them seruice he could be perswaded easily to enterprise any other aduenture: but for that it was night, they courteously took their leaue of him, and went againe to the Monasterie, leaving him now in as great extremitie of griefe, as they had done any of the dayes passed before. And I must not forget to tel you how the Ladies likewise gaue the three knights a friendly farewell, who withdrew themselves also to their Lodging, and the day following took their way without fortune guided them: being unwilling to go visite the Court againe, much lesse to returne to their Ladies, for whose sakes they had receiued so great shame.

The strange knight remembering himselfe how Torciaes turne came to visite him, made no account of his passed trouble, but went to his accustomed place, where hee long looked for the presence of Torcia. And albeit he thought to conceale himselfe from her, yet was it not possible for him so to doe: for hee not onely betrayed his name vnto her, but hee

would

would haue discoursed his whole life to her likewise, if she had bin disposed to haue giuen the hearing. Not long it was before Torcia took her way to the place, where the other Ladies had bene before, being in her night apparell, a wastecote of blacke Laffata, the bodies all richly wrought curt with palemant lace of gold, scure fingers broad, and betwixt euerie lace were costly pearles and stones, which did set her forth in such a beauty, as would haue amazed the stout knight in the world.

Her mantle was of blew velvet, wrought round about with figures of gold verie sumptuously, and in this manner she came and sat downe by the knight: but he being fearful to moue offence any way, durst not take the hardinesse to speake to her, wherupon she spake thus. I did not thinke (Sir) that my coming would be of so tender estimation to you, as I perceiue you make it: but I did alwayes misdeubt you, and therefore I am now decciued.

Madame (answered the strange knight) the pleasure I receiue by your arrivall, is so great, as it depriued me of the vse of my speech, wherat I see you are offended, and repented me other wise then a loyall seruant, for that I did not aduance my selfe to entertaine you with such gracious behaviour, as your excellencie well deserueth. But you doe not reuerence her (that mistress) that if I had spoken to you, my talker: I had nothing else but the wonted gracious complaints, the which I am afraid to commit to light (albeit I haue iust occasion) such was and is my doubt (saue Madame) of displeasing you. I am not ignorant (answered Torcia) that he neuer wants excuse, who knoweth how to shift for himselfe. You haue giuen forth your selfe daily vnder the name of an obedient seruant to me, which I cannot beleue, much lesse abide to accept any knight in my service, who will not or dare not reueale his name, the onely thing truly wherfore I am come hither at this time. Madame (said the strange knight) I know not whether I should declare my name vnto you, and reuerence payable to understand of you, who is the knight to whom you beate most fauour: or conceale my selfe to your excellency, continuing my selfe still afflicted, and leaving you discontented.

## The second part

I assure you, I can make slender choyse of either of these two extremes, not knowing which of them may hurt me most, yet must I put it in aduenture, since my good hap is tyed to the heeles of Mercurie.

Wherefore you shall vnderstand Madame, that I am called the knight of the Sauage man in all Princes Courts, where I haue receiued greater fauour at the Ladies hands, then I haue done herein the French Court: albeit I haue done my dutie in seruice towards them that beare the prize in beautie, especially to you, whom I honour in affection aboue all other.

And seeing I haue thus discoursed my name vnto you, I desire you to thinke, that my complaints are on iust occasion: but if it be true, that Loue is wont to enforce them suffer, who trauaile and serue him with fidelitie, I shall rest content to be so well recompenced. For such is the especiall good will I beare you, that I desire my life may be prolonged onely to pleasure you: not regarding my often banishment from hope to despaire, nor the sundry vnsauorie sweetes wherewith I must feed my selfe, onely by the sorrowfull and rigorous toymes, which dayly and hourely come from you.

Wherefore I desire you good Madame, somewhat to regard him in pittie. who hath no other will, but onely to suffer what euer you lay on him, and would refuse no torment, so he knew you did fancie it, or thinke well on it.

Sir Knight (answered Torcia) if I should be deceiued by such faire and plausible speeches, it were impossible for me to thinne any misfortune, for I should accompany the two princesses Targiana and Arnalte: but because I know you so well, and would be loath to beare a part in their complaints, I am content at this time to leaue you.

When she had thus said, she presently rose and departed, accounting her assurance small in his company, because euerie one knew of the sundry pranks of the knight of the Sauage man: but he was manuellously offended at the sodaine departure of Torcia, and brake forth in complaints still, as though she were in his company. Albeit Lady (quoth he) the remembrance of your vngentlenesse maketh me despaire, yet your

## of Palmerinot England.

presence hath power to helpe my dolour, in reioycing my troubled sight, giuing comfort to my afflicted soule, and knitting vp all complaints with your swete companie: but being oppressed of you, these fainting armes sold by the drying coarce, and so with many a deably sigh accompany their Father to their latter home,

After he had moned a pretty space in this manner, he concluded with himselfe to forget these Ladies, and entring into conceit of their crueltie, he slept soundly till the next morning. When so soone as he was armed, he caused Arlencea and the Damosels to be sent for, who had all this while remained in the monasterie with the Nuns: they giuing them most hartly thanks for their friendes vlsage, set forward on their way with the knight of the Sauage man, who now would haue his Shield no longer covered.

The soure Ladies bare them company a little way on their Walkers, being glad they could let the king knowe what he was, and very faine they would haue had him with them to the Court: but when they perceiued their labour was all in vaine, Torcia smiling, spake to him thus. Trust me sir, by the teares which fall from mine eyes, me thinks you take your parting heauily, or euerie teare is as bigge as a Millstone. Lady (quoth he) the fire that is kindled in my stomach by your loue, is of such nature as the water cannot quench.

But seeing you make so light account of him, who hath humbled himselfe so much to you, I will despise Loue, who is the occasion of such a misfortune. And this you may assure your selfe, I will gaze the heart (which once did present it selfe to you in another place, to trie if I shalbe better entertained, then I haue bene at your hands. So parting from them, he set forth on his iourney, desiring to attaine the Citie of Constantinople.



CHAP. XLVII.

How the Knight of the Sauge man, arriued at the Court of Constantinople: And how Dragonalt and Arnalte the Queene of Nauarre, came likewise to the Emperours Court.



**L**ong traualled the Knight of the Sauge man, till at last he came into a Forrest somewhat nere the Citie of Constantinople, where he espied a number of Knights, Ladies and Damosels, which made him presently suspect the Emperour to be in their company, as he was indeede: for he had been abroad with them to see his falcons flye, and for that age would not suffer him to ride on horsebacke, he was in a Coach, accompanied with the Emperesse and other Princesse of the Court, who perceiuing the knight of the Sauge man comming, and five Damosels in his company, they knew him so soone as they beheld the deuise in his shield.

Then came they together to meete him in such a troupe, as the Knight of the Sauge man was very ioyfull to see himselfe so welcome to his friends: amongst them was his Brother Palmerin of England, who came and embraced him with exceeding humanitie.

Arlencea being alighted from her horse, he tooke her by the hand, and brought her before the Emperour, and when he had kissed his hand, he desired his excellencie that it might be his pleasure to remember, how much he was beholding to that lady, who saued him from falling into the handes of cruell Colambra, her mother. Arlencea humbled her selfe to the Emperour, her huge stature being much wondred at of all the Ladies: but the Emperour shewed himselfe very gracious vnto her: in like manner did the Emperesse and Gridonia. But Leonardo

arda

arda, the Princesse of Thrace, suspecting the Knight of the Sauge mans minde was not on her, entertained Arlencea, but euen so.

In the meane while these Ladies were thus ioyfully entertaining Arlencea, the knight of the Sauge man was aduertised of the death of King Fredericke of England his Grandfather: at which tidings he was so heauy, as he was enforced to forsake their company, and rode into the Citie before them. And after he was come to the Pallace, he consumed certaine dayes in mournings, vntill the time compelled him to goe visit the Princesse Leonarda his Lady.

The Emperour caused Arlencea to be mounted on horsebacke againe, making very especiall estimation of her, for as she was endued with exquisite beautie, so was she adorned with very gracious maners, which liked euery one well that beheld her: especially Dramusiande, who was now so farre in loue with her, as he had quite forgotten Latrania.

As the Emperour was about to returne into the Citie, he espied come riding along the Forrest diuers Ladies and Damosels, accompanied with diuers knights, who were offered the Ioust by them attendant on the Emperour. Which the principal knight in the company perceiuing, and desirous beside to try his valour before such an assembly, tooke a strong Lance, and clapping downe the Beuer of his Helmet, came and presented himselfe to the Lady in the company, who had the authority to command all the other. And hauing taken his leaue of her, he gaue his horse the spurs, and was so fortunate in the encounter, as he sent Bellizant out of his saddle.

Afterward with another Lance, which one of the knights gaue him in his hand, he sent foure more good and especiall knights of the Emperours Court to the ground, whereat the Emperour marvelled, and noting the braue behaviour of this knight, he caused to be sent him certaine Lances, but before they could be receiued, a Damosell came and saluted the Emperour from the knight in this maner. A renowned Emperour, Dragonalt the King of Nauarre, being desirous to content the Princesse Arnalte his Quene and wife, hath thus presumed to

571  
 Ioust with your Knights: but when he understood your Highness was in place, he commanded me to inſeure your Maieſtie, how he hath loſt his owne realme, to offer his humble due to your excellencie.

The Emperour and the Emperreſſe hearing the Damoſelles words, were ſupplied with unſpeakable pleaſure, intending to entertaine Dragonalt with as much honour as could be deuised: as well for knowing him to be the Sonne of a valiant Prince, and Nephew to King Friſoll, as alſo to moue the affection of his Queene Arnalte, in more ample manner to him, and ſo without any further ſtay they went to meete them. Which when Dragonalt and the Queene Arnalte beheld, they alighted from their horſes, and holding one another by the hand, went to meete the Emperreſſe: who likewiſe to do them the greater honour, came on ſote accompanied with Gridonia Polinarda, Leonarda, & diuers other Ladies, each of them embracing them with their humanitie, letting them vnderſtand, how the emperours court was highly honored by their preſence.

After they had on all ſides ſufficiently welcomed theſe princes, Dragonalt and Arnalte mounted on horſebacke: but Palmerin alighted, and taking the bridle of Arnaltes horſe in his hand, ſo walked on til he came to the pallace, wherat the princeſſe Polinarda beganne to waie ſomewhat iealous. Arnalte well noting the beautie of the two Princeſſes, Polinarda, and the faire Leonarda of Thrace, began to thinke, that they which enterpriſed the Conqueſt in Spaine for the faireſt in the world, did witneſſe their manhood in a iuſt occaſion: albeit, next to theſe two, her ſelfe was eſteemed the third for beautie in the Emperours Court, but when the Princeſſe Miragarda came thither, he was conſtrained to be the fourth in number. Dragonalt, and the Queene Arnalte were lodged verie nere the Emperreſſe Chamber, and Arlencea and her Damoſels, were gueſts to the Duchefe of Lubicall, the chiefe Lady about the Emperreſſe.

The Emperour cauſed dayly Iouſts and Tournements, to witneſſe the Queene Arnalte, that her preſence was verie agreeable to him. Dramuſiande was ſo conquered with the

loue Arlencea, as he could reſt in no place, neither enioy any quietneſſe. Palmerin (who liued now in more content then he had of long time befoze) did not yet thinke all things ſound and ſure, for that none preſenteth daily ſome occaſions offeare to amorous perſons, untill ſuch time as their deſires are perfectly contented. In the meane while this great ioy continued, Pompides King of Scottes with his Queene, arrived at the Emperours Court, who were receiued with marvellous great pompe and honour.

The Prince Primaleon deſirous to ſhewe himſelfe thankful for diuerſe occaſions had paſſed betwene the Prince Don Edward and himſelfe, ledde the Queene of Scottes Palſay by the bridle, till ſhe came to the Pallace Gate, notwithstanding, the intreatie of Pompides and her ſelfe very often to the contrary.

The Queene of Scottes was lodged with the princeſſe Polinarda, who held her ſelfe greatly contented, becauſe ſhe was ſo nere in alliance to her moſt fauoured friend. Palmerin and Pompides went to comfort the knight of the Savage man in his chamber, where he kept, and would not as yet goe abroad, ſo heauily he tooke the death of King Fredericke, his Grandfather. The Court of Conſtantinople, was in ſhort time ſo well furniſhed with Princes and noble knights, as they were indged more then need, to entertaine the whole puiſſance of the Pagan Kings.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How Arnedes King of Fraunce and his Queene, Recinde King of Spaine and his Queene, accompanied with the Princeſſe Miragarda, and the Giant Almaroll, arrived at the Emperours Court of Conſtantinople.

The



**T**he Emperour seeing himselfe brought into the extremity of age, thought good to enioyn his Nephew in marriage, and also the other Princes and Knights that had bene nourished in his court: and that he might moue a generall good liking by so doing, he imparted his intent to the Emperesse and his sonne Primaleon. When hee understood how well they thought of the matter, hee went presently to Arnedes King of France, his sonne in lawe, that he would doe him so much honour as to come with the Quene to his Court. In like manner his Maestie dispatched letters to Don Edward, King of England, and Florida his daughter: to Recinde King of Spaine, desiring him and his Quene to come to his Court, and bring the Princesse Miragarda in their company. The Emperour Verner was sent for likewise, and Tarnaes King of Lacedemonia, with his Daughter Sidelia, whose beautie carried some credit at that time, and the Soldane Bellagris, with Maiortes, and many others, the Emperour by his Letters inuited to his Court. But the first that came to Constantinople were the Emperour Verner, and King Edward of England: some after came the Soldane Bellagris and Maiortes, their entertainment being according as their noble estates deserved. Then came the King Tarnaes with his Quene, Sidelia his Daughter, and the sorrowfull Lady Pandricia, whom the Emperesse lodged in her stone Chamber. The two Kings, Arnedes and Recinde, arrived with their Shippes at the Port of Constantinople, and sounded their Trumpets and Drummes so gallantly as the people were affraide in the Cittie, fearing lest their enemies were come: but the Princesse came to receiue them with great ioy, where they might behold the King of France in a sumptuous Galley, couered with cloath of Golde of great value, wherein was himselfe, his Quene, Florenda and Graciana his two Daughters, with many Ladies and Knights beside. In another Galion was the King Recinde

and

and the Quene, with a number of Knights for his Guard. Before them in another Galion, was the fairest Princesse Miragarda, the Giant Almaroll, the Prince Florendes, and many other knights. The King Recinde being aduertised, that the Emperour intended to marry the Princesse to his Nephew Florendos, with the King Arnedes consent (to doe them the more honour) caused their Galion to march foremost, as the Captaine ouer all the other Vesselles. The Emperour was so glad of these tydings, as hee forsooke his Coach, and was brought in a chayre to the place where these Princes should land, and the Emperesse with the Quenes, Princesses, and Ladies, mounted on their horses, which were clad in most rich and costly harnesse, and so they ridde to the Port of the Cittie very stately. There was the Emperour, accompanied with his Sonne Primaleon, King Edward of England, the Emperour Verner of Allemaigne, Soldane Bellagris, Maiortes, Tarnaes the King of Lacedemonia, Polendos, Estrelant, Pompides and Dragonalt, and no little ioy it was to him in his aged yeeres, to see himselfe so beloued of the most puissant Princes that were in the whole world: but albeit the presence of these great personages was very pleasant to him, yet could hee not chuse but take it heauily, seeing the pleasure so fore vpon him, as long hee could not bee a companion for them.

The kings Arnedes, and Recinde, and the Prince Florendos, being all come on land, they knoled downe to kisse the Emperours hand, but he embracing them in his armes, would not suffer him to honour him so much, then came the Quene of Spaine, and the Quene of France, with her two daughters, whom his Maestie welcomed very familiarly. And when the Princesse Miragarda came into his presence, he accepted of her maruellous graciously, entring into these speeches to her.

I am very glad (Madame) that you would vouchsafe to come hither, where I may requite the great gentlenesse I haue found at your hands, in prouiding to detain the Prince Albazar in so good securitie.

The

The Princesse Miragarda made no other answer, but with a milde and Princely confesse, made shewe how well shee took the Emperours words: and I assure you, her presence amazed the iudgements of a number, in whose eyes she seemed the fairest creature on the earth.

The Giant Almaroll was likewise very welcome to the Emperour, and when the Princesse Polinarda had courteously saluted Miragarda, she shooke aside to her Brother Florendos, entertaining him with this language. I perceiue new wel (my Lord and Brother) that you haue good cause to thinke your labour well bestowed. in that you haue trauelled for a Lady of so singular beautie. I would with all my heart, good Sister (answered Florendo) that I had the due recompence my labour hath deserued, so might I be in the better assurance. Oh Brother (said Polinarda) the Giant Almaroll hath no authoritie to shut the doore against you here, therefore I promise you, the Princesse of Thrace and I will not forget to enterprize the meanes, whereby you shall (no doubt) finde fauour.

The Emperour would delay the time no longer, but to the Pallace they rode altogether, the Prince Primaleon leading the Quene of Spaines horse by the bridle, albeit the King Recinde was very loth to suffer him. The King Polendos did as much honour to the Quene of Fraunce, and King Edward of England afforded the like to the faire Princesse Miragarda, as well to content the aged Emperour, as to honour his kinsman the Prince Florendos: Palmerin of England, did the like to the faire Florenda and Florian of the Forrest, to the Princesse Gracina, in brieft, the Princesse and Knights, led all the Ladies Valfrates till they came to the Pallace. The Emperour was carried in his Chayre by foure knights, communing with the Princesse Miragarda all the way, desiring her to fauour his Nephew Florendos, and to thinke of him, as one that had well deserued at her hands.

CHAP. XLIX.

Of the Conference which the Emperour had with the Princesses. And how the Marriages that he appointed, were now accomplished in effect.



When the Princes, that were thus arrived in Constantinople, had rested themselves for certaine dayes, the Emperour desirous to content euery one before he died, who had bestowed their seruice in honouring him, reuealed his intent to the Emperour Verner king Edward, Arnedes. Recinde and Primaleon, how he would gladly see his Nephewes married, and the other Princes that had bene nourished in his court, whom he would see all matched according as their affections serued them. The Princes liked maruailously the Emperours intent whereupon, he caused the Sunday following a great feast to be ordained in the Quene Fleridaes Chamber, which place was the most conuenient in all the Pallace for their courtly disports and there the Ladies were euery one regarded in their degrees, being more pleasant in the Ladies of their fauoured seruants, then all the costly iunkets provided for the banquet.

Palmerin was so earnest in affection towards his Lady, as he iudged her to surpass all the other in beautie. Florendos held the same opinion to the faire Miragarda, and Florian made such estimation of the Princesse of Thrace, as he feared not to Combate against any whatsoener, that her beautie might carrie the credite aboue all the rest: and the Prince Placir was not behind him in conceite, towards his swete Ladie Sidelia, daughter to the King Tarnaes. The Emperesse Bazilia, Gridonia,

Gridonia, Florida, & Francellina, because of their high estates, were these next the Emperour all in language: but the same Florida bare the prize of beauty amongst them all, because she was in the most sweet and delicate time of her years. After the Ladies were withdrawne, and all the Ladies repaired the place, the Emperour (being weak and sickly) desired King Edward to expresse before all the company, what he had given him in charge. King Edward willing to obey the Emperours commandement, arose from the Table, then taking off his hat, and kissing the Emperours hand, he saluted all there present, and began thus.

Most gracious Emperour, as each of us for his benefit & hence hath received such Ladies in marriage, as the Emperour from his owne Court hath pleased to bestow on us, some that are allied to his Excellency, and others to the Princes and lords of his Empire, whereby the renowne of Christendome is worthily maintained, and all causes expressing good nature continued in their flourishing estate. It may therefore seeme good to you at this present, that I publicly open his gracious and Princely determination, whereby may be knowne, if your Highnesse with these Quenes and Princesses in your company, shall thinke well of that, which by the advice of his honourable counsell he seeketh to put in practice. It is so, that his Majesty hath set it downe for a decree, that these young Princes and knights shall toyne in marriage (in recompence of all their noble services) with those to whom they are most affectionate. And as for the that are as yet unpurchased of Ladies, his Majesty will allow them continuance in his Court: whereby no offence shall grow on any side, but every one shall be contented to their owne desires. Here pausing a while, he attended what the Emperour with the other Quenes and Ladies could say, as also to be thinke himselfe on the names of the persons, whom the Emperour had appointed to marry: but the young Princes and knights were somewhat abashed, doubting whether they might give credite to the kings words, for there was not any of them, but judged his labors sufficiently rewarded, if he might enjoy his sweet Saint and Consoler.

The

The Ladies that were in presence, began to blush & change their amiable countenance, whereby they betrayed the secret sudden joy of their hearts, which they received by the speeches King Edward had uttered. Polinarda very often cast her eyes on the Prince Palmerin, being in as great feare as the offender that awaiteth the sentence of the Judge, for she doubt least her Grandfather would bestow on her some other, and not let her enjoy him whom her heart desired. And Palmerin was afflicted in the same manner, such and so great was the vehemency of his sundry passions, which betwene hope & feare he was constrained to suffer: but while his thoughts were in this infinite deale of trouble, his father King Edward following his former intent, began againe in this manner.

You shall understand. Sir Florendos, that my gracious Lord the Emperour (with the consent of the King Reinde) employeth you to espouse the Princess Miragarda, who (in my judgement) will not be any thing offended to be so matched: and so shall you Sir Florendos thinke your selfe fully satisfied, for all the troubles you have endured for her sake.

All the princes there present looked on Florendos, when they might well perceine, that the words of King Edward had given him more joy, then if the richest Realm in the world were in his owne possession: but the princess Miragarda kept her countenance so demurely, as one could hardly iudge, whether the love of Florendos were acceptable to him or no.

And for the young Palmerin, (said King Edward the Emperour & the prince Primaleon, being very willing thou shouldst knowe the love they beare thee, doe give thee to wile the Princess Polinarda, not doubting but thou shalt imagine all thy passed troubles, to be fully recompenced in so sweet a reward. The Princess Polinarda no longer heard these wordes, but the delicate Rosall colour that dyed her daintie countenance, witnessed the love and good will she bare to the Prince Palmerin of England, who likewise now abandoned all his former feare, seeing he should enjoy the felicitie hee had so long wished for.

which

Which when his Father King Edward perceived, he made as though he did not espie, and proceeded in with his former determination, giving the Prince Gracian (Sonne to the King of France) to understand, that the Emperour did bestow on him his Picce Claricias, the Daughter to the King Polendos. And you Syr Berolde, for your vertuous behaviour, must enjoy the Jewel of your heart, the faire Onisalda, Daughter to the Duke Drapos of Normandie, and Picce to the renownd King Frisoll, whereof your Father (I am sure) will be very well contented. And you Sir Francian, shall match with Bernada, Daughter to the valiant Prince Belcar. And you noble Prince Platir, in that your deeds are worthy of perpetuall memorie, you shall possesse the faire Sidelia, Daughter to the King Tarnes of Lacedemonia, who will willingly bestow her upon you for that your noble behaviour hath well deserved her. And you Don Rosuel, the true inheriter of the Prince Belcar your Father, shall be honoured with Dramaciana, Daughter to the Duke Tirendos, and for that you have served her faithfully so long, you shall enjoy her at last as the desert of your labours. And for Bellizant your Brother, his Prize is the Lady Denisa, Daughter to the Duke of Sparta: who is now content to requite him with her love, because he hath endured so many sharpe showers under her name. Dramian shall have for his guardon, the Princess Clariana, Daughter to Direa the Princess of Hungaria: and you Frisoll, because it is your right to succede the Duke your Father, shall be joynd in marriage with Leonarda, Daughter to the Duke of Pera. And for this cause (noble Gentlemen) did the Emperour and his Councell call you into this place, to the end you might perceine the good will and love he beareth to you all. But let me not forget what his Maiestie hath ordained, as concerning you noble Sir Dramasiande, it is his will that you shall espouse Madame Arlencca, as well to content the desire of her love, as also to shewe himselfe thankesfull, for her betwaying the treason of Alfernao: and his excellency hath concluded to bestow the Profound Isle on you, which sometime belonged to her Father Bravorant, and is now in the custody of my sonne Florian your

your friend. Dramasiande was surprised with such exceeding joy at these words, as he had not the power to attend till King Edward had finished his discourse, but came and humbled himselfe before the Emperour, yielding him a thousand thanks for his gracious courtesie King Edward took him up in his armes, desiring him to have patience a little while, till he had ended his charge, and coming to the Princess of Thrace he entered into these speeches. To you most excellent Princess, whom nature hath plentifully endued with beautie and courtesie, the Emperour, with these Kings and noble Lords in his company, doe earnestly desire to giue in marriage my son Florian, if so be his deeds might deserve so well your good liking: it is likewise wished by my sonne Palmerin, to whom you are tied in some point of obedience, according as King Sardamant your Grandfather appointed it in his will. Palmerin who all this while had kept himselfe silent) humbly desired the King his father to vouchsafe him a word or twaine: which being granted him, he came before the Princess of Thrace and setting on of his knees to the ground, he began to her as followeth.

I durst not (Madam) take the hardnes on me, to present you my Brother Florian the first time you saw him, fearing least you would thinke, that I was inclined more to regard his profit, then your honour: but I was the more willing to doo it off till this present, that you might have some knowledge of his knightly deeds, wherein if I perceived you to take any delight, I might be the bolder in presenting him for your husband, and you the easier to entertaine him. Let it then I pray you seeme acceptable in your iudgement, what the Emperour and his Councell hath determined on, in that I am perswaded the heavenly powers doe thinke well it should be so. Syr Palmerin (answered the Princess) I am shee, who alwayes couet the meanes, whereby I might shew my selfe dutifull unto you, and if I should some to use my selfe otherwise, I were unworthy to receive the royall preferment, which the King my Grandfather hath appointed me: beside, my Subjects might well examine on me, if I should goe contrary to his will who hath the houre ouer me: therefore resolute your selfe, that I



shall be content to graunt to any thing, which you imagine for the fulfilling of your promise, and mine honour. Palmerin kissing her hand, arose immediately, being not a little glad of the courteous answer the princeesse of Thrace had made him: then King Edward turned to the knights, and beganne againe in this manner. You shall vnderstand noble Gentlemen, that it is the Emperours will you should reueale to him, how you accept of his opinion, and the Princeesses and Ladies shal bewray their intents to the Emperesse, because his excellency would not enterpryse any thing, but he will haue all parties well contented therewith. These marriages were so well thought on by euery one present, as the knights and Ladies told the Emperour they were all contented, especially the knights, who aduanced themselves one after another to kisse the Emperours hand: the like they did to the Emperour Vernar, Bazilia, Gridonia, and the kings and Quenes there present, and the Emperour embraced them euery one, but when Palmerin came to him, he held him in his armes, and spake thus.

My sonne, I haue continually imagined with my selfe, how I might worthily recompence your deedes of so high estimation: but now I perswade my selfe, that both my desire and yours shall be sufficiently contented, in giuing you the Jewel of my blisse, and the honour of my trauailes, my piece the Princeesse Polinarda, whose name I pray the heauens to imprint so deepe in your heart, as the Emperesse both hath bene, and is in mine, to the end that you and I bearing one name, may be alike in happinesse and good fortune. I neuer thought my gracious Lord (answered Palmerin) that my deedes should purchase such a high and happy felicitie, as this which your Maestie hath bestowed on me: but I see it is your goodnesse, and not my desert, for which I am bound in duty during life. Primalcon and Gridonia embraced him very louingly, being glad their Daughter was bestowed so honourably.

After the joyfull motions, both on the one side & the other, were somewhat quieted, the Emperour returned to counsell againe with the Emperour Vernar, King Edward, Primalcon, and the other kings, letting them vnderstand, that he did not intend

intend to forget the Ladie Pandritia: whereupon the Soldane Bellagris was called, to whom King Edward bewrayed all matters passed, how Bellagris under his name entered Pandritias Chamber, and begot of her Son Blandidon, whom euery one thought, and she her selfe, to be King Edwards Sonne, as you may reade in the first Volume of this History.

The Soldane Bellagris knowing the great error of his faith, and being assured withall, that Blandidon was his sonne, removed his Turkish opinion, wherein he had liued so long time: and to remaine in the friendship of these worthy Princes, he concluded to espouse Pandritia, to the great contentment of many Princes his friends, who likewise (by his conuersion) came to know the lawe of the liuing God. Of this good hap, the Emperour and all the other Christian Princes were very glad, and to continue Bellagris in this good mind, the Emperour presently arose from counsell, & went into the princeesse chamber accompanied with King Edward, where his Maestie declared to Pandritia, what had passed betwene them and the Soldane Bellagris, causing her to forget her former opinion, that Blandidon was the sonne of King Edward, and certifying her likewise, how the Soldan had receiued his Heathenish faith, to make her amends by marriage, which she ought not to refuse, as well considering the valour and riches of the Soldane, who was a mighty and renowned Prince, as also that her son might know his noble father. Pandritia heauily looking about her, was so sore troubled, as it was a great while ere she spake a word: but after she had better remembred her selfe, she earnestly beheld King Edward, speaking to him in this maner. My hard destiny (worthy Prince) hath concealed this so long, which you at last haue vouchsafed to bewray, that my life may be hereafter more pleasant then it hath bene: and this you may assure your selfe, that if I had knowne of this before, I had giuen due chastisement to my ignorant misfortune. But since it is come to light at this time, both the loue of my sonne, the saluation of the Soldane and his Subjects, compelleth me to forget all matters past, considered also, that the force of loue made him deceiue in this manner.

## The second Part

The Emperour liked well of that she had said, and the Em-  
peresse embraced him many times, being so glad as could be pos-  
sible, that all things came to such a happy end. Blandidon was  
then called into presence, who was very sorry when he knew  
king Edward was not his father: but the hope to be preferred  
by the Soldanes dignitie, made him to forget all former occa-  
sions, and take content in that present before him.

L.

How the Soldan Bellagris was baptized: and how after-  
ward the Emperor caused him to be married to Pandritia,  
and how the other Princes of his court were married also.



After that these marriages were thus agreed  
upon, the Emperour commaunded the  
day following, that all things for the solemn-  
izing these honourable rites, should be  
prepared in the most decent maner, because  
he would haue them all married in the great  
Hall of his Pallace, & there the Archbishop  
of Constantinople sayd diuine seruice, after-  
ward he made a learned Sermon, to giue the Soldane Bella-  
gris earuest affection to the law of Iesus Christ, publishing  
likewise openly, what had passed betwene him and the Ladie  
Pandritia, because no suspicion should arise by them, who were  
apt enough to conceine an euill opinion. When the Archbi-  
shop had concluded his sermon, he baptized the Soldane. The  
Emperour and king Edward of England were his Godfathers,  
and the two Emperesses his Godmothers. And to honour him  
the more, the Emperour would haue him first married: so the  
Soldane Bellagris, and Pandritia being thus knit together in  
Matrimony,

## of Palmerin of England.

Matrimonie, Blandidon humbled himselfe before them in  
signe of obedience, but the Soldane embracing him, took him  
vp, reioycing greatly that he had so good a knight to his sonne,  
and that he should leaue to his subjects such a worthy Go-  
uerneur. After that Pandritia was thus espoused to the Sol-  
dane, the Emperesse and her Ladies walked with her, because  
the Emperour would haue Florendos and Miragarda mat-  
ched next: which being done, his heart abated all woun-  
ted care, and taking her by the hand, gaue place to other, the  
Quene of England and Spaine, walking with them along  
the Wall, to comfort these new married folkes with their good  
counsell. Next entred the Prince Polinarda, led betwene  
the Emperesse of Allemaigne and the Quene of Fraunce, Pal-  
merin going before her accompanied with the Emperour  
Vernar, and the King Tarnes of Lacedemonia: and next them  
came the faire Princeesse of Thrace, betwene the Quene  
Francelina of Thessalie, and the Quene Florida of England,  
they being glad to see her matched with the Prince Florian of  
the Forrest. After these two noble English Princes had wed-  
ded their swete friends, the Princes Gracian, Berold, Platir,  
and all the other Prince and Knights, were spoused vnto their  
Ladies.

Then the new Quen of Thrace and the Princeesse Polinar-  
da entred, leading Arlencea betwene them, whose beautie  
shewed very stately, being set forth by the presence of these  
two Princeesses: the Prince Primaleon and King Edward ac-  
companyed the Giant Dramusiande, who was married to  
Arlencea with great royaltie. When they were departed the  
place, the Princeesse Miragarda humbly intreated the Empe-  
rour, that he would giue Cordigea, daughter to the Giant Ga-  
tarin (she remaining in her seruice) in marriage to the Giant  
Almaroll: whereto his maister presently agreed, after he had  
vnderstood the good will of Cordigea, so he gaue her himselfe  
(to honour the Princeesse Miragarda the more,) to the Giant  
Almaroll. Of this Cordigea, you may reade more at large, in  
the second Booke of the notable History of Don Edward of  
Brittaine.

The Giant Almaroll was Lord of another Fortresse, not farre from thence where he had kept the Princesse Miragarda, this Fortresse being called Beauties Bulwark: whereof hee made a present to his espoused Lady Cordigea, on condition she should call the Castle after her owne name, but returne we againe to our Historie.

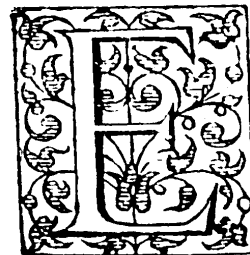
As soone as the Archbishop had ended all these Ceremonies of these marriages, the Emperour went into the Quene Flerides Chamber, where the dinner was provided to honoꝛ these princes withall, and with the Ladies came in Florenda and Graciana, the daughters of the king Arnedo: but Germaine of Orleance, being the affectionate seruant of Florenda, thought himselfe unworthy to come in presence, because hee was counted but a subiect to the king of France, yet did the Emperour make such commendation of the knightly doodes of Germaine of Orleance, as the king graunted him to marry with his Daughter Florenda, albeit his Daughter Graciana found herselfe discontented, that she could not get a husband, to ioy with them for company. The feast was serued with most magnificall honoꝛ, and the new married Prince made such high account off, as it was thought a heavenly life to be a married man: for Florendos, Palmerin, Florian, Platir, and the other princes, were respected in the fauour of the Emperours and the Kings exceedingly, in like manner was Miragarda, Leonarda, Polinarda, Sidelia, and all other Princesses, honoured by the Emperesses and the Quenes, most statelie to beholde. Oftentimes they would recreate themselves thorough the City, to the no small delight and content of the Emperour: who marking all his friends, and seeing the Prince Floraman absent from their company, hee demanded what was become of him? Some made answer, that hee was a little from the Palace, sitting mourning vnder a Tree.

Which when Florendos vnderstood, hee left the company and went to him, and perswaded him to come and reioyce with them, Floraman returned him this answer. Why doe you trauell your selfe so, Sir Florendos, to haue him be partners of the pleasures you enioy, who hath for ever lost his comfort?

fort? The great god will I vnfaignedly beare you, doth not deserue you should so deale with me, in that my sorowes would be ten times more, if I should doe as you would haue mee: therefore I desire you let me beare my grieue quietly, seeing I am hee whom Fortune delighteth to torment continually. Florendos deuised all meanes possible, to change him from this conceite, but seeing his labour was bestowed in vaine, he returned to the Emperour, certifying him of the grieue wherein he had left the prince Floraman, at which newes both the Emperour and his friends were heauily passioned, and they continued in commending the Prince Floraman, till the Gentleman Usher called to supper. When the supper was ended, and the Tables withdrawn, these new married Princes began to dance after the Greekish manner: and when all the maskes and pastimes were done for that night, each one went to his Chamber, to receiue content with them, who had caused them to endure so long trouble.

CHAP. LI.

How the Queene of Thrace was conueied away by a strange aduenture, while the Knights continued the pleasure at Constantinople.



Each of these Princes delighting himselfe with his sweete Lady, for whose sake hee had endured many sharpe trauailes, at length determined (and so did diners others, though they had not attained the same felicity, yet to witnesse their good will and affection to their friends) to ordaine a generall Tournament, whereto came many strange knights, who

who laboured as much as in they lay, to shew their hardy valour to those Princes that appointed the Triumph. In the meane while this sport continued, there arrived a knight armed all in blacke, bearing Deadly Hope, figured in his shield, his coate Armour blacke, and his horse and Lance of the same colour: by which sad habite every one conjectured, the small toy this knight had of himselfe, neuerthelesse, such was his great fortune, as for thre dayes together, he remained victor against all that dealt with him. At length, because he would not discover his name to the Judges of the field. Florian and Florendo went to arme themselves, being very desirous to try the Combate with this knight. But Dramusiande perswaded them to the contrary, giving them to understand that it was the Prince Floraman, whom king Edward & his son Palmerin brought at last to the Emperour, when his excellencie began to comfort him, saying, that it was against reason he should afflict himselfe in such sort, especially, for the thing he could not remedy. Moreover, by leading his life so pensively, he should in the end not onely shorten his owne time, but also offend the iudgements of his especiall friends, who would enerie one be glad and faine to dissuade him from the greefe that did torment him: to which words the Prince Floraman thus replied.

I know well my gracious Lord, that the honour it pleaseth you to vse me with all, can neuer be recompenced by my deeds, much lesse can any satisfaction be made in words: but this I beseech your Maiestie consider, that the faithfull loue I haue alwayes borne to my Lady Altea hath such soueraine power ouer me, as it will not suffer me to change this humour. And albeit I know she is dead, to my no small greefe and continuall vexation: yet either shall my teares reuiue her againe, or being my ghost to keepe her company. Thus am I resolved to remember my losse: in that my true loue ought to remaine to the end, and in the end, otherwise it is to be iudged, but light and vncoustant: therefore I beseech your Maiestie to suffer me in my complaints, for I am so well inured with them now, as it is impossible for me to liue any other wise.

The

The Emperour and the Princes saw they traualled in vaine, in perswading Floraman to forsake his sorrowfull kinde of life, who taking his leave of the Emperour, accompanied with king Edward, and the Prince Perimaleon went to his Chamber, but they being not able to endure the sight of such heavinesse, returned presently to the Chamber of presence.

And after these Iousts and triumphs were ended, these Princes would ride abroad with their Ladies into a Forrest nere the Cittie, where they might chase the wilde Bore the Hart, and other beastes for their recreation: whereof the Emperour was very glad, and taking his Coach, he took his way to the Forrest in their company, where against their coming were set vp very faire Tents, and the Tables being covered, and all things ready for dinner, they sate downe to take their repast before they went to their sport.

Dinner being done, the Hunters came and certified the Emperour, how they had found the mightiest wilde Bore that euer was seene, vpon which newes the Princes immediately arose from the Table, and mounting on their horses, they rode with the Hunters to finde the game: and beginning to follow the Chase of the Bore, euery one liked of the pleasantnesse of the pastime, but this suddaine delight was mingled with a suddaine mischance, as you may reade in the discourse following.

The Princes and Knights earnestly pursuing the game, the Heauens began on a suddaine to be troubled, and of darknesse came vpon them, as they could not discern one another, so that their horses fumed and fretted exceedingly, being afrayde by the thundring and lightning in the Ayre, as their Masters were glad to forsake them and walke on foot.

Beside, in the Emperours Tent was such a marvellous bright and noyse, as Heauen and earth would haue gone together: but that which did most of all abash them in the Tent, was the wailing and pittifull voyce of a woman, who was heard to cry very grievously, calling for ayde to the Knight

Knicht of the Sauage man. At length it was knowne to be the Quene of Thrace, who could not be succoured by any of the knights present with the Emperour, because the darkenes was such as none could see her.

It was not long befoze this darke cloude amounted to the Skies againe, making such a noyse at the departure, as Florian riding by and downe maruailing herat, was at length aduertised of the losse of the Quene: whereupon he tooke his way to the Emperours Tent, finding his Maiestie there in great feare and heavinesse, yet would he not giue it ouer so, but rode presently into the Citie, and hauing armed himselfe, he concluded to search thorow all Countries, and not to rest in any place whatsoeuer, until he might heare some tydings of her, for whose losse his heart was extreamely passioned.

Many of his friends presented themselves to beare him company in trauaile, but the Emperour would not agree thereto, fearing least the Turkes would visite Constantinople, befoze they returned againe.

The Knicht of the Sauage man in as great grieve as could be imagined, set forward in his iourney, and stayed not till hee was hindered by the darke night, which hee was glad to passe at the rote of a Tree in a Forrest: but in the morning hee mounted on Horsebacke, and many dayes hee wandered by and downe in strange Countreys, yet not hearing newes of her whom he would gladly meete withall, at which forward since hee was maruellously abashed, so that he intended to be whipping, to try if Fortune would that wayes speade him better.

After hee had imbarbued himselfe, putting himselfe euen vnto the mercy of the Seas, and so trauailing to any place where the Marriners could wish him for his best auayle, one day aboue all other, hee was assailed with an exceeding tempest, the waues tossing the vessell in such sort, as sometime one would haue iudged it had touched the firmament, and afterwards would fall downe as it were to Hell: in which trouble, both the Pilot and Marriners were so distraughted of memory, as they could not deuise in what parts

partes, they should be, but cuen run which way Fortune pleased, for the space of three dayes, at the end whereof, they came to a mighty huge mountaine, the top thereof seeming to touch the clouds.

The Knicht of the Sauage man desirous to know what Countrey this was, caused the Marriners to set him on shore, and for that the Mountaine was not to be travelled on Horse back, he went by on foot, coming at last to the other side of the Mountaine, where he entred a goodly fayre Field, which was inclosed round about with huge Rocks, like to that he passed at the entrance.

In the middelt of this field was a strong and admirable Castle, both for the beauty as also the height, beeing founded of the same Rockes as were about it, at the gate of this Castle was hanged a Garland of Tryumphe, wherein letters of Golde was written thus. This is the Pallace of the Queene Melia.

The Knicht of the Sauage man seeing the gate open, tooke the boldnes on him to enter in: but when he beheld the meruailous height of the Halls and Chambers, in this Castle belonging to the Queene Melia, he iudged it to be the most stately Mansion that euer he came in.

For I assure you, the Towers, Galleries, and other buildings were so ingenuously carued out of the same Rocks, as one would haue thought the whole Castle to haue consisted of one pece, whereupon the knight of the Sauage man was much abashed, that this Fortresse was vnknowne to the Knights of the Emperours Court of Greece.

At length he thought good to visit this Castle further, because hee saw at the foure corners thereof foure gates, and the entrance into them was not forbidden him by any: but he espied an other Gate, which was made fast with two great strong Chaines of Iron, vpon the Gate beeing engraued many auncient Histories, which were vnknown to the knight of the Sauage man, and long hee stayed not to beholde this Gate for that he perceiued he travelled in vaine, if he should offer to enter in therat. Then passed he through one of the other Gates,

Gates, and came into a goodly great Hall, in the middest where of was chased in Gold the picture of an ancient woman, who had deuised and caused that Castle to be builded: this Monument was garnished on either side with goodly marble pillars, and when he had beheld this sufficiently, he passed to view the rest of the Castle.

But turning him about to goe forward, he espied hard by him a mightie Serpent of Brasse, fashioned and made so artificially, as it was a thing most strange to behold, in that it was of such a monstrous highnesse, as it reached to the very rafters that held up the couerture of the Wall.

This Serpent held his necke stretched out along, with his countenance so vigorous and fearefull, as (being made by very singular workmanship and cunning) it was able to affright them that did behold it. But the Knight of the Savage man (whose heart no terrour or fearefull motion could dismay) approached to this Serpent, and hauing viewed very circumspedly, espied a key tied about his necke with a Chaîne of Gold, the Chaîne being wound about his necke in a great many foldes, whereupon he presently imagined, that in this key consisted the principall aduenture of this Castle, which when he had visited in many places, he returned againe to the brassen Serpent, to marke if this key would serue to further him in his intent.

And as he came to take off the Chaîne with the key, he perceiued in the Serpents necke a little chinke or creuise, at which sight he began somewhat to comfort himselfe, so that he tooke the key, and hauing the meanes to vse it at his owne pleasure, he opened therewith a little window, which was made in the Serpents necke, and looking in, he might discerne the hollownesse of the Serpent round about.

Then did he behold foure Tapers of waxe, which stood on foure Candlestickes of Silver, two of them placed towards the East, and the other two to the West, and burning with a marvellous spendant brightnesse, yet the waxe seemed not to diminish any thing at all. Betwene these foure lights was couched on a pallad, the faire Leonarda Queene of Thrace, and his

his wife, and ouer her head hung a fayre Cannapy of greene Velvet: at this sight the Knight of the Savage man was so abashed, as he doubted whether he might giue credit to this motion before his eyes or no.

But when he had taken good view of her apparell, knowing it to be the very same she had on when she was carried forth of the Forrest, he perswaded himselfe that it was she, whereupon he called aloud to her, desiring her to vse more regard vnto him: but he was neuer a toke the nether his purpose, for she was enchanted into such a sound sleepe, as she had not the power to vnderstand him, which when the knight of the Savage man perceiued, and being earnest in the good will he bare her, he spake to her after this manner.

Madame, what gloyp or contentment can my victories yeelde me, or the manifold perillous aduentures which I haue happily finished, if you see me now to forsake me in this present aduersitie, whereon both my honour and life dependeth.

Let this (good Madame) enter your courteous minde, how since your stravage departure from the Emperour of Greece, I haue not failed to visite many Prouinces to finde you out. and euen at the very time when I was out of all hope to finde you, I chanced to the place where I may behold you, but yet to my no small grieffe, in that I cannot come to you, neither wil you vouchsafe to heare me, in this extreame affliction of my poore heart.

Here pausing a while, he began to waxe maruellous angry, when, setting his hand to his Sword, and snatching it furiously forth of the sheath, he layde many violent strokes on the Serpent, thinking to peeces it in pieces that he might come to his Lady: but hee was faile decemed in his intent, for the Serpent was conuerted into a flame of fire, and passed so suddenly away, as the Knight of the Savage man lost the sight of it cleane.

Then fearing lest his Lady should abide any cruell torment, because the Serpent was so changed away into fier, he sat downe on the ground in great heauinesse, cursing his ill fortune very bitterly, and intending neuer to depart from this Castle,



## The second Part

Castle, without he might haue the company of his lady again. But while he was in this perplexitie, his Brother and friend the Sage Aliart, (who would not forsake him in so great necessity) entred the Hall, attired after the English manner, not hauing any Armour on him, for that he had not the leysure to arme himselfe, so greatly he pittied the misfortune of his brother Florian of the Forrest: the Sage Aliart was no sooner come vnto him, but he saluted him with these speeches.

I perceiue (Sir Knight) you haue altogether forgotten me, and especially in the place where you haue most neede of my helpe.

At these words the Knight of the Sauage man presently arose, and embracing the Sage Aliart in his armes, he returned him this answer. My Lord and Brother, I am sure it is not vnknown vnto you, that one occasion of griefe thesoly settled in the minde, causeth the party so vexed to commit all things else to forgetfulness: therefore me thinks you should not be offended, though you were not in my remembrance, I being in such a sharpe extremity, from which I desire to be deliuered by your ayde.

Worthy sir (answered Aliart) he whose knowledge serueth him to bring the Quene Leonarda in this place, hath done it by such a maruellous means, as it is impossible to recover her hence so speedily: but Fortune reseruing you to employ your valour, in aduentures worthy most high resolution, will not suffer his intent that brought her hither, to be fully executed, but hath ordained it in such sort, as by my Arte I shall end this cruell Enchantment: neuerthelesse, it shall be necessary, that you keep me company, because your courage and strength may much helpe in this case.

When hee had thus said, hee commaunded the knight of the Sauage man, to shut the window, and hang the key in the place whence hee tooke it, but first hee looked in to see the estate of the Quene Leonarda: and Florian, hee laboured very busily to extinguish the light of the Tapers, because hee could not suffer that their extreame shyninge bright-

## of Palmerin of England.

184

brightnes, should dazzell his eyes when he looked on his swete Quene and wife, so that the light was some hinderance to him when he thought to guard her excellent beautie: whereupon Aliart spake thus vnto him.

I perceiue well (my Lord) that you are ignorant, of the vertue of these Tapers, whose light onely maintaineth the life of your Quene Leonarda: for looke how soone they shall be extinguished or consumed, euen so soone shall her life be fully compleate and ended.

After this communication, these two knights went forth of the Castle, and so soone as they were come into the open field, the Ayre began to be exceeding troubled, so that for a time a maruellous darkenesse ouer-shadowed them: yet at last it cleared againe, when the knight of the Sauage-man was greatly abashed, seeing himselfe depriued of the Sage Aliart, and no company with him but a huge and monstrous Bull, who seemed as hee had come to the top of the Rockes, vpon this Bulles necke the knight of the Sauage man cast himselfe, and he brought him immediately into a darke and obscure Caeue, where the Bull left him and vanished away. All these fearefull motions could not dismay this hardy knight, for he did imagine them to be but only illusions, sent of purpose to hinder him in his determination, therefore he would make no further account of them: but looking about this Caeue (the light somewhat increasing) he beheld the figures and pictures of the most renowned knights that carried arms in the time of the famous King Amadis.

There hee might discerne Esplandian among the Moores, a spectacle that delighted him very much, and in the most honorable place of all, stood Armato the noble King of the Persians, hauing letters of Gold on his left Shoulder, which declared his name and famous progenie. While the knight of the Sauage man exactly beheld these gallant figures, he perceiued to enter the caue a very aged woman, so weak and feeble with extremity of age, as she seemed ready to fall to the earth, but when she looked on the knight of the Sauage man, she started backe in a great amazement, and crying out aloude, very pittifully de-

manded

## The second Part

maunded aide and succour of the grauen pictures, that they would helpe her to conquer the Knight, that was come to violate and deface her Pallace.

At the cry of the olde Encauntresse, the Images began to stirre themselves, and lay holde on theyr Swordes and Spears: but when the Knight of the Savage man made offer to defend himselfe, they stood silent in their former estate, and the olde woman vanished out of sight. Wherebypon the Knight of the Savage man departed thence, coming to the Hall where the Serpent was, and there he beheld the same old woman standing by the window, where he looked in and beheld the Quene of Thrace his wife, which made him presently to coniecture, how in that place was inclosed the remedy of his trauailes, whereto he would very gladly attaine, but it grieved him to shewe his force against a woman, who thrust with her shoulders so strongly against the window, as at length it opened and she went in: then turning to close the window againe, it was made fast againe so ingeniously, as one could not iudge by which way she made her entrance.

The Knight of the Savage man could not chuse but laugh, to see with what a grace this olde woman maintained her enchantment, and coming to the window where he iudged she entered, he knockt and kept such a bounning thereat, as the olde woman came and opened the window presenting herselfe before him, accompanied with foure Knights, who were clad in Armour very costly and sumptuous and to them she declared, how the knight of the Desert sought to destroy her ancient Pallace.

These foure Knights lifted by their Baces: but when the Knight of the Savage man seemed to defend himselfe, both they and the olde woman vanished away incontinent. At these straunge motions hee could not chuse but wonder, and sitting downe to viewe the beaury of the house, hee perceiued in the midst of the Hall a Candlesticke of Golde set on a Brazen pillar of very costly workmanship, and in the Candlesticke burned a goodly white ware Taper, whose light shewed after such a straunge manner, as many wonderfull occasions was present

## of Palmerin of England.

presented before his eyes, whereupon he imagined, how that Castle had not bene founded, but onely to some marvellous and especiall cause. When he had more narrowly and circumspectly looked about the place, he beheld a number of Coffers round about him, euery Coffer hauing a key of Gold hanging at it, which made him to open them one after another: where he found the Library of the Duque Melia, and very gorgeous apparell belonging to a woman, which Melia had caused to be made to giue to her Cousin, the daughter of King Armaro her brother, as the knight of the Savage man found it set downe in writing in the Library, which when he had read, he beganne againe his wonted griefe, sitting himselfe out of hope to recover the Quene of Thrace his wife, in which affliction the Sage Aliart presented himselfe before him againe, entring into these speeches. My Lord and brother, since you haue done that which was ordained for you, refferre the rest behind to me, for in despite of the person that delighteth to torment you thus, I will recover her whom you loue so dearly. I know very well (answered the knight of the Savage man) that you alone can restore me my felicity: and if I should thinke otherwise, I were vnworthy to haue your furtheraunce in this my extreme trouble.

## CHAP. LII.

How by the aide of the Sage Aliart of the obscure Valley, the noble knight of the Savage man, deliuered out of the Enchantment his wife the Queene of Thrace.



Before the Sage Aliart would deliuer the Quene of Thrace out of the Enchantment, he desired to see all the places in the Castle, which when he had viewed, hee made no account of any thing, but onely the Library, and because he was well worthy of estimation, hee made conueyance

## The second part

of all the Bookes (by his Arte) in the Perillous Isle, where he placed them among the Bookes of the Sage Virganda, of whom somewhat hath bene discoursed to you already, and all this while the Knight of the Sauvage man rested himselfe, because his great trauaile him so to doe.

When the Sage Aliart had thus sent the books away, he took the Taper which stood in the Candlestick of Gold, and spake to the Knight of the Sauvage man, in this manner. You shall vnderstand (my Lord) that the life of the Quene Leonarda, consisted onely in the vertue of this light, with which it is impossible for vs to sane or redeme it: but in the despite of Targiana (who is the onely cause of this misfortune) I will so order the matter, as your heart shall ere long receiue his contentment, yet shall not the Sage Enchaunter (who brought her into this unhappy estate) haue any power to resist me in my determination. Thus concluding, he went vnto the Serpent, holding in one hand the fatal Candle, and in the other a little booke, which he found lying at the foote of a Marble Columbe: and while the Knight of the Sauvage man opened the little doore with the key, the Sage Aliart reade so earnestly on his Booke, as by the vertue of the wordes written in the Booke, the Tapers of ware which were in the Welley of the Serpen, began to lisse, their light. But yet they did not extinguish altogether, for if they had bene put all at one instant, the life of the Quene of Thrace had bene brought in great daunger for they were scamed by such an artificiall pollicie, as she sweetly stumbled in life by the vertue of their light, yet was she deprived of her naturall senses, but not a iote impeached of her singular beautie. So soone as one of these Tapers had lost his light, the Sage Aliart lighted it againe with the Candle in his owne hand, in which consisted a contrary meane to helpe their purpose, for when it had burned to the very place where the safeguard of her life was contained, the Quene of Thrace stretched out her armes, as one awaking out of a sound sleepe, and the Tapers being extinct and lighted againe, she started vp on a suddaine. Heruailing to see her selfe in such a narrow place, and especially in the company of her Husband, the noble Knight of the Sauvage man,

who

## of Palmerin of England.

196

who beheld her with the teares trickling downe her cheekes, knowing well, how it was strange to her to be in such a case.

The Sage Aliart seeing the Quene in such extreame heaviness, he rehearsed to her how all things had happened, assuring her that the Emperors Court was in a generall sadness by her absence: he also certified her, how the knight of the Sauvage man departed the same day from Constantinople in her search, whereat she grieved very much, for she was of the opinion, that what person sooner happened into that place, should be brought into such danger, as he might not easily get out of it againe. The knight of the Sauvage man, who could not endure to see his Lady shut vp so long in the serpents belly, desired the Sage Aliart to deliuer her out of that extremitie: vpon which wordes the Sage Aliart the candle into one of the serpents nostrils, which made him to lespe, and cast fire forth of his mouth so abundantly, as one would haue thought the whole world would haue shaken in pieces, so great was the noise the serpent made. The Quene Leonarda was so amazed with this fearefull motion, as she was brought againe into her former perplexitie, at which sight the Knight of the Sauvage man was moued exceedingly, so that he came & embraced the Sage Aliart, humbly desiring him to helpe now or neuer. Then Aliart approached to the serpent, and thrusting his arme in at the little doore, he quenched the light of the Tapers, which being done, the serpent stood indifferently quiet, but the knight of the Sauvage man was not pleased with all this wherefore he began afresh to intreat his brother, that he would pittie the distressed case of his Quene and wife: It is not to be said how well pleased the Sage Aliart was, seeing his Brother Florian so earnestly affected to the Quene of Thrace, remembering the small estimation he was wont to make of women, and now that he was become such a faithfull and reuerent subject to the God of loue. After that he had thoroughly recounted all these matters to himselfe, he fell to reading on his booke againe so deuoutly, as at length the Quene of Thrace came forth of the Serpent, so ranshed inwardly in delight when she beheld her louing lord & husband before her, as she ran and caught him in her armes maruellous ioyfully, thinking thus with

Wh 2

her

her selfe, that his valour was sufficient to end any adventure whatsoeuer: and so pleasant was the knight of the Sauage man, hauing his sweete wife and Quene in his armes, as he thought himselfe the onely happy man of the world. After they had delighted themselues thus so long as they pleased, the Prince and the Sage Aliart went to shew the singularities of this Castle to the Quene Leonarda, bringing her where the stately Pillars of Marble were, and likewise the gallant Library of the Quene Melia, where the rich robes and stately apparell were presented to her view, which she desired as her owne immediately, thinking that so she should be fully recompenced for her passed misfortunes, if so be these sumptuous garments might be bestowed on her, that she might carry them with her to Constantinople.

This earnest motion of hers, prouoked the two knights to depart this place, the Sage Aliart giuing her to vnderstand, that it was not necessary her minde should be fulfilled in that request, neyther could she carry any thing thence, albeit we liked it neuer so well, by reason that these rich vestures were reserved for one of the Quene Melias Daughters, who in beautie should excell all of her time. The knight of the Sauage Man, was somewhat incued with these wordes, fearing hee should not long enjoy his Quene and life: but the Sage Aliart seeing these two Louers restored to their liberty, take his leave of them to trauell to Constantinople, where his presence was long desired and looked for, and he gaue charge to the knight of the Sauage man, that he would come thither with all speed possible, because his friends might be greatly furthered by his company.

But to let you vnderstand by what occasion the Quene of Thrace was thus enchanted, the History discourseth, how the Princesse Targiana could not forget her anger and heauy displeasure towards the knight of the Sauage man, but daily thinking and desiring for reuengement, entertained as partner in her purpose an Enchantresse, whose dwelling was in the Realme of Persia, named Druſia Velonna. Targiana expecting the time when she might open her intent to this Enchantresse,

chauntresse, Druſia at length consented to fulfill her mind, and one day when the Princesse was bathing her selfe at a fountaine, Druſia came suddenly to her thorow the window of an high Tower, and presenting her selfe so straungely before her, the Princesse Targiana was so amazed and frighted thereat, as she called to her seruants to come and helpe her. But Druſia revealing her selfe, the Princesse was quickly removed from this feare: whereupon, she rehearsed her earnest desire to be reuenged on the knight of the Sauage man, requesting her fauour and iudgement in the cause. The Enchantresse being one that loued the Princesse well, and was glad to compass any thing that might yeld her content, spake vnto her in this manner.

Madame, I haue well pondered the matter wherewith you haue made me acquainted. and haue deuised the meanes to releue you euer charged and troubled thoughtes, and very easily might we be reuenged on the knight of the Sauage man, if it were not for his brother the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, whose great experience and knowledge may be some hindrance to vs: neuerthelesse, I haue found out one practice, whereby you may bring him into great trouble and danger. Oh Velonna (saith Targiana) it is the onely thing I desire, to hinder or offend him by any way whatsoeuer. You know well Madame (answered Druſia Velonna) that he is but slenderlie affected to them, who notwithstanding loue him with most especial good will, yet is he so anxious of the Quene of Thrace his life, as it is not possible for any man to be more, wherefore I intend to conuey her into such a secret place, where the Sage Aliart shall haue no power to helpe her, vntill the Empire of Greece be all peried and brought to confusion, neyther shall the knight of the Sauage man bee able to finde her, but shall spend his time in seeking after her, yet shall his labour be bestowed to no such end: she would. Targiana was very well contented with that the Enchantresse had tolde her, whereupon she enchanted the Quene of Thrace, in the manner as I haue declared to you already.

Afterwards she returned to the Princesse Targiana, whom

she likewise conducted by her Arte to the Castle of the Quene Melia, at what time Albayzar was gone vnto Babylon: and when Targiana had sufficiently pleased her selfe, beholding the rare and strange alteration of the Quene of Thrace, she desired Drusia to shut the dore, and to hang the Key at the chaine about the Serpents necke, whereupon Targiana departed thence to the place of the Great Turke her Father, & afterward took her Journey into Persia, being of the opinion, that the Sage Aliart could not helpe the pittiful estate of the Quene of Thrace. In the Castle of Melia, she remained thus Enchaunted, untill the Knight of the Sauadge man, and the Sage Aliart met together and deliuered her: But now wee will returne to the Prince Albayzar, who is comming to laye Siege to the Cittie of Constantinople, whither the Knight of the Sauadge man trauelled speedily, for that it were against reason, that such a Noble and redoubted Knight, should be absent from the place, where his dearest friends were assembled together.

CHAP. LIII.

¶ Of that which the Christians did in the Citie of Constantinople, at what time the Princeesse Targiana sent tydings to the Courte of the Emperour Palmerin, of the comming of his Enemyes.

**I**s rehearsed in the Chronicle of the Emperour Palmerin, how the Kings of England, Spayne, Franco, Lacedemonia, and Thessalia, were desirous to depart to theyr seuerall Kingdomes, after the Triumphes & sports for the Mariages of their friends were somewhat ouerblowne and past.

And euen as they were preparing themselves to their iourney, fortune (who would make them partners of y<sup>e</sup> Emperours dangers

daungers towarde) presented them with such occasions, as they were constrained to breake off theyr former determination, in that the Princeesse Targiana sent newes at the very same instant to the Emperour, of the huge panic which Albayzar had prepared to besiege Constantinople withall.

Howeuer, shee gaue to vnderstand, how the Armie of the Great Turke her Father, was (as then) arrived in the Port of Armenia, and stayed but onely for the Winde: likewise, that the Turke her Father, had appointed Albayzar chiefe capitaine Generall of his Armie, because hee surpassed all the other in valour and courage.

The report of this Armie, caused great astonishment in manie, and chiefly to them, who were not able to endure the trauell of Armes, and the Emperour Palmerin himselfe was so ouercharged with yeeres, as that hee could not walke out of his Chamber, yet was hee able to comfort and encourage his dearest friends with good Counsell, whereby their troubled mindes were greatly eased.

Primaleon, who was naturally giuen to be couragious and brauely minded, did not make account of any misfortunes that might happen to him, and the rather because the valiant Princes and Knights in his companie, could not be summoned at a better time, to witnesse theyr Nobilitie. The Kings Court, sent to the Gouernours of their Realmes and Signories, that they should leuey what power they could possible, and come thither to them, with all speed to assist them.



## The second part

### CHAP. LIIII.

¶ How the Enemies sent an Embassadour to the Emperours Court, and of the answer which was made him.



After the manner as I haue declared to you already, the Emperour prouided for the entertaining of his Enemies, and as his Maiestie was aduising himselfe about these Affaires, he was aduertised, that an Embassadour was arrived at the Porte of the Cittie, who demaunded safe conduct, befoze hee would come on shoare. His Maiesty (with the counsel of the Kings and Princes) was content to graunt his request: Whereupon the Embassadour toke Landing, and being accompanied with foure Knights, hee toke his way to the Emperours Pallace.

The Kings and Princes determined, that the Embassadour should rehearse the cause of his arriual to the Prince Primaleon, befoze they would suffer him to come into the Emperours presence: but diuerse of them were of a contrary opinion, affirming that the presence and noble Answer of the Emperour himselfe would more daunte and terrifie the Enemy, then all they were able to doe.

Upon this determination they were agreed, and the Emperour was brought in his Chayze into the great Hall, where the Embassadour stayed, who hauing viewed the strength of the Cittie, knew well they should bestow good labour befoze they could conquer it. The Emperour according to his milde and gentle nature, receyued the Embassadour from his enemy very graciously, and after the Kings and Princes were in theyr due and appointed places, and a generall silence amongst them all, the Embassadour began in these speeches.

Illustr.

## Of Palmerin of England.

190

Majestious and most puissant Emperour, I could wish to see thee in the flourishing estate of thy yeares, as well to be a partecipe of many troubles, imminent to them that dare take vpon them to defende thy Emprye, as also to enlarge the contentment of them, who shall be so happie as to gaine the victorie in the fildes of Battell, which is now presented to thy Maiestie.

I am to let thee vnderstand, that Albayzar the great Soldan of Babylon, and Prince of Turkie, accompanied with other Soldans, Kings, & puissant Princes, hath sent me to thee, to let thee know, that they are determined with theyr strength and power to besiege this Cittie, to reuenge the death of manie theyr especiall Friendes, who receyued their dishonour befoze this Cittie.

Nevertheless, the Soldane Albayzar, hauing not forgotten the gracious courtesie thou didst sometimes vse towards Oloricque, Alchidiana, and the Princesse Targiana, hath thus concluded (feareing to be noted of ingratitude) to make thee this offer: eyther to surrender the Cittie of Constantinople, and the knight of the Sauage man, King of Thrace thy Nephew, into his hands, or depart & leaue thine Emprye, subiect to his power, without offering any resistance to his determination.

On this condition hee will not bring his Armie into thine Emprye, and hee thinketh it more necessary for thee, rather to lose one Cittie then the whole Emprye, and better it were for thee to deliuer one man into his hands, then to see the death of a number thy especiall Friendes. To which words the Emperour thus answered. My friend, I can hardly endure to let thee passe any further in speeches, but I must needs answer you thus: that I account it well for my profite to follow his counsel in this matter, if by the sending him one man, I may make sure account of the safetie of the rest.

But if that one man be found so good a Knight, as his Valour is sufficient to redeeme the Captiuitie of all the other, I must not be so forgetfull of my honour, as to render a State of assurance to your Lordes mercie: Besides, it were a thing much against reason and duty, to yelde that Cittie into the hands



## The second Part

hands of Heathen Infidells, where the true God is to be worshipped in spirit and truth.

And truly I cannot but marvel much, that he should offer to come thus into my Empire, considering what promises hath past betwene him and mee: for I was of the opinion, that I should rather be furthered by his aide and assistance, then hindered or impeached thus maliciously. But for all this, my trust is in God, that I shall prepare his graue befoze the Wallles of this Cittie, as I haue done already to many of his Predecessours, who without regarde of theyr owne Honour, or my courtesie, haue come to assaile me in this manner.

I perceyue then my Lord (answered the Embassadour) that because Fortune hath daily fauoured you to this present, you will not dreade the misfortunes whereinto you may suddenly fall: therefore I intend to returne with this answer to my Lord who sent me.

So taking his leaue, he returned to his Galley where it lay at Anchore, being accompanied with many Princes and Lords of the Emperours Court: and after they had giuen him a very friendly Farewell, his Galley set forward with such expedition, as in short time it came to the rest of the Armie.

## CHAP. LV.

¶ How the Armie of the Great Turke arrived in the Port of Constantinople, and of the noble and valiant prowesse of the Christians, before they would suffer the Pagans to take Landing.

The

## of Palmerin of England.



The Embassadour from Albayzar, to the Soldane of Babylon, being thus departed, the Emperour Palmerin called together all the Princes and Nobles in his Courte to give present order to every one, that they should with all the best speede possible, provide themselves in Armes, to forbidde the entraunce of the Enemies, and to haue good regard to the affaires of the Citie, and safety of the same, which was committed to the Guard of the Emperour Verner, and the King Polendos, accompanied with a thousand five hundred Knights on Horsebacke, and four hundred footemen. King Edward of England was chosen by Generall consent, chiefe Captaine and Gouvernour of the ffield, hauing vnder his conduct two thousand Knights, beside the Giant Dramusiande, who by his Noble behaviour in that expedition, wonne very great estimation.

Maiortes, Pridos, the Duke of Galles, Don Rosiande de la Bronde his Sonne, Argolant the Duke of Horten, Pompides, and fifty Knights, that were come in theyr company: So diuiding theyr Knights into foure parts, they were in number eight thousand, & to every thousand was a Generall Captain.

Arnedes King of France had the ordering of five hundred, being attended on likewise by his Sonnes, Gracian, Guerin, and Germaine of Orleance, beside fifty good and hardy French Knights. A thousand five hundred more were conducted by Recinde King of Spayne, the Princes Berolde and Onstalde his Sonnes awaiting on him, with the Giant Almaroll, and one hundred Spanish Knights. The Soldane Bellagris was Captaine ouer foure hundred Knights, being his owne Subjects, and for the guard of his owne person, he had provided one hundred of the chiefe knights of his Court, among whom was his Sonne Blandidon, whose noble behaviour deserved commendations. To Belcar Duke of Pontus and Durace, was committed the like charge, as to the Kings Recinde and Arnedes, hauing for the Guard of his owne person, Don Rosuell, and Bellizart his Sonnes.

To

## The second part

To the King Tarnaes of Lacedemonia, (who was an Ancient and noble Prince) was given the Guard of the Pallace, and for the more security of the Emperesse, & the other Quenes and Ladies, hee had attending on him two hundred Knights. Primalcon was chosen Lord Generall for the Cittie, having in his charge seven hundred Knights, wherewith he had regards as well to the field as to the Cittie.

Palmerin, Florendos, Platir, and diuers other Knights, had the charge of the vpper wings of the Armie, as lost children to giue succour where they perceyued most necessitie. Thus was the Emperours Court well stozed with noble and renowned Knights, yet his Maestie and King Edward greatly desired the presence of the Prince Florian of the Forrest, in whose absence both the Horsemen and Footemen, were ordained as I haue already declared.

On the next morning King Edward commaunded to strike vp Allarum, for hee was giuen to vnderstand, that the Enemye was within halfe a league of the Cittie, and that they prepared themselves to take landing, and the Emperour caused himselfe to be carryed vp into a high Tower of his Pallace, because hee would see how Fortune disposed of his happinesse.

King Edward was no sooner arrived where the Enemye was, but he placed his Armie on the Sea-shoare, to hinder the Enemye from comming on Land: but therein he was deceyued, for the multitude of the Gallies and Ships were such, as it was impossible for him to doe as he would.

Albayzar, who was accompanied with the most renowned knights of his Armie, and two the most ougly and fearefull Giants that euer were sene, made offer to take Landing first of all: but they of the Emperours Court stepped befoze them, and entertayned them in such sorte, as diuers both of Turkes and Christians were very dangerously wounded.

Albayzar was so offended, because he could not haue libertie to get forth of his Galley, as hee commaunded the Grants to step into the Water, to whose commaundement they presently obeyed, and with theyr Paces of Iron they began so to breake thorow the pzeasse, and they which befoze hindered Albayzar from

## of Palmerin of England.

192

from comming on shoare, began to giue place, as it were for his landing. Which when Dramusiande perceiued, hee leapt into the water vp to the nauill, and couering himselfe with his shield, hee encountered the Giant that aduanced himselfe foremost, and King Edward leaped into the Sea, to hinder the other Giant from dealing with Dramusiande: but while these foure were thus encountering together, the other knights of the Emperours Court seeing their Captaine on foote, began to follow after, so that Albayzar was constrained to come nere the Giants, because they thought he would want his ayde.

Palmerin of England being busie on the other side, seeing the Horses reard about the field without their masters, doubted least some misfortune had fallen to his friends, wherupon he gaue his horse the spurs, and galloped to the place where he saw the greatest bickering: and seeing King Edward his father standing in the sea, dealing with such an ougly and monstrous Giant, he presently came to him, and stepping befoze him, entred into the speech.

I desire you my gracious Lord and father, to giue ouer this enemy, and giue succour to your friend Dramusiande, for if any misfortune should happen to you, your losse would be greeued through all Christendome.

King Edward esteeming light the words of his Sonne, would not leaue the Giant, so greatly hee desired to remaine victor: but the necessity wherein hee perceiued diuers of his friends, caused him to step backe, and giue place to the Noble Palmerin of England. Albayzar behaued himself in such braue manner, as diuers were glad to shunne his presence: which when Florendos beheld, hee aduanced himselfe to him, and such knightly pzoouesse was shewen on either side, as between them began a cruell and dangerous combat. Dramusiande preuailed so well against his enemy the Giant, as hee tumbled downe dead befoze him: but himselfe was sore wounded, as King Edward commaunded him to be carried into the Cittie.

And Palmerin of England slew the other Giant likewise, which his father left him fighting withall: but himselfe was

so dealt withall, as in five dayes after he could weare no Armour.

Albayzar no sooner perceiuing the Giants slaine, but he presently retired into his galley, and so did diuers of the Turkes beside, but when Edward saw the Turkes betake themselves to their Gallies againe, he mounted on horsebacke, giving a signe to his company, to withdraw themselves, desiring the Soldane Beibagris, the King Arnedes, the King Recinde, and the Prince Belcar (who were dealing with another Gessel that sought to take landing) to follow him: but they gaue him to vnderstand how Florendos, Platir, Blandidon, and the Giant Almaroll, were carried into the Citie so sore hurt, as they were not able to sustaine themselves.

The King Recinde, Palmerin, and Belcar, were likewise grievously wounded, which made king Edward desire them to goe into the Citie, and in the meane while Primaleon entred the field, accompanied with seauen hundred knights, desiring earnestly, that King Edward and his traine, would withdraw themselves, that they might come with a fresh assault on the enemy. But King Edward would not suffer it should be so, therefore they altogether went into the Citie, being very much grieved, that the principall knights of their Armie so sore wounded.

CHAP. LVI.

Of the grieve and sorrowe made in Constantinople, for the dangerous estate wherein the Giant Dramussande was brought: And how the Turks placed their Campe before Citie of Constantinople.

When



When the Emperors Captaines were thus come into the citie with their traines, they passed the night in visiting them that were so sore wounded: at whose ill lucke, Primaleon greatly grieved, for he iudged the want of their helpe to be such, as he was out of hope to defend the enemy from entering on land the next day. And most of all, for that Palmerin of England, Florendos, the King Recinde, Belcar, Berold, Don Rosuel, and Bellizart were in such case, as they could not endure to beare Armes againe so soon. Upon this he concluded to let the enemies take landing, and to suffer them to build their Tents, and provide for the field, in the meane while the wounded persons would be in better disposition, and the succour they looked for would be likewise arrived, wherewith they had good hope to bid the enemy a braue battaile, in the meane time, they daily gaue Albayzar and his company sundry assaults. King Edward going to visite the wounded persons, found the Prince Palmerin talking with the faire Polinarda, whose company made him forget the grieve of his hurts, for in her alone consisted the onely medicine to restore his health: in like manner he found Florendos and Miragarda, Platir and Sidelia, Polendos and Francelian, Berolde and Onistalda of Normandie, Gracian and Claritia, Don Rosuell and Dramaticiana, Bellizant and Denisa, Francian and Bernarda, Guerin and Clariana, and diuers others of the knights, with them to whom they bare most affection.

But Dramussande was not in like case as these fortunate Louers were, for his wounds were so yangerous, as he could not enioy the swete company of his best beloued Arlenca, towards whom he remained maruellous affectionate: so that I assure you, the Emperour and all of his Court were so sore for his misfortune, as if the Citie it selfe had bene brought into extreame danger.

King

## The second part

King Edward whose minde was not on such pleasure, as he made any account of rest or quietness, kept his friend Dramusiande company, having his wife and Quene Florida with him, onely to comfort the heauie and pensive estate of Arlencea, whose sad case may be easily indged by young married lovers. Florendos and Miragarda, visited the Giant Almaroll, whose danger almost was in the same estate with Dramusiande: yet he was able to walke, & behaue himselfe more pleasant in company then the other, whose case was pittied and lamented of all in generall.

Some after arrived there the Sage Aliart, by whose presence the former fearful and vncertain doubts were somewhat calmed, in that he certified the Emperour, how Florian would not be long absence from thence: which newes did much ioy his Maistie, as he caught the Sage Aliart in his armes, and embraced him with a gracious countenance.

Then came the Emperesse to entertaine him with the same fauour, the like did Bazilia the Emperesse of Allemaigne, Gridonia, Polinarda, and the other princesses and Ladies: among whom the Quene Florida was most glad of his presence, as well to perceiue the lone King Edward her husband bare him, as also, because he had sundry times preserved the liue of his Children by his knowledge.

The same day came to the Emperours Court the Prince Floraman, who traualled to finde the Prince Florian of the Forrest, and being aduertised how the enemies had laid siege at Constantinople, he left his Realme of Sardignia giuing charge to the Gouvernours he had left there, that they should leue a great Armie with all expedition, and send them after him to Constantinople, as you may read more at large hereafter. The same day likewise there arrived King Estrellant of Hungaria, accompanied with two thousand horsemen, and tenne thousand footmen, being under the conduct of the Prince Frisoll his Sonne.

Albayzar was greatly grieved at the losse of his men, wherefore he gaue charge to his Chirurgions in his campe, that they should bee carefull and respectiue to them which were wound-

ed

## of Palmerin of England.

194

ed, and commanded the flaine to bee buried. And when all things were accomplished that he thought expedient, he called the principall estates of his armie to counsell, with whom hee concluded, that all persons should be vigilant and carefull of themselves that night, because the next morning he should take landing, at a certaine watch-word he would giue them.

The day had no sooner chased away the vnccomfortable and obscure night, but the Ships, Gallies, Brigandines, Gallies, and other prouision for war, tooke landing about a leagues distance from Constantinople, being not hindered or forbidden by any: whereupon they sounded the drums, trumpets, coznets, claxons, and other instruments, wherewith they made such a triumphant noyse, as the people in the Citie were much amazed therat.

The Sage Aliart and Floraman, desiring to see the Campe of the enemy, requested the Emperour, that he would licence them to goe thither, which his Maistie would not graunt to any: yet had hee such assurance in the knowledge of the Sage Aliart, as in what place soeuer he was, he needed not to feare him. These two knights thus departed the Citie, being armed with no other defence but onely their swordes, and because the day was faire and cleare, they betooke themselves to a little hill, where they might at pleasure discern the enemies Armie. Diuers thought it good to scout out and take them, because by them they might vnderstand the strength of the Citie, but Albayzar would not grant it should be so: wherefore he sent an Esquire vnto them (who attended on him when he was in the Emperours court) to let them vnderstand, that if they would come nere and see his Campe, he, who was then in authoritie to commaund them, was such an indifferent friend vnto them, as they might come and depart without any danger.

These two knights gaue such credit to the message Albayzar sent them, as they went in the Esquires company, which Albayzar perceiving, he came forth (with two Pages in very rich apparrell, attending on him) to receiue them. Afterward hee went with them thorow the Campe, because they should

see

see

for the mightie strength thereof, and he declared to them the names of the Princes in his companay, among whome were beie many Giances, as terrible and onglie as they which were slaine by Dramasiande and Palmerin of England.

All this while Albayzar had diligent regard to these two Christian knights, to see if all this sight he had shovne them could discourage them with feare or doubt of theire welfare: but they contained such a stout and vndaunted countenance as they seemed to disdain those occasions, which Albayzar thought should most dismay them, wherat he did not a little maruaile.

After they had seene the whole Army, Albayzar accompanied them very nere the Citie, desiring them to salate the Emperour and Emperesse from him: then taking his leave courteously of them, he returned to his Campe, and they walked on very sadly, especially, the Sage Aliart, who hauing foresene what would happen, could not hide the sorrow hee conceived in his minde.ouerthelesse, they behaued themselves pleasantly at their entraunce into the Cittie, because they would not discourage the mindes of the people: but when they were come to the Pallace, into the Emperours presence, the Prince Floramin, by the commaundement of his Maestie) entred in to these speeches.

O my gracious Lord, the riches which your enemies hath brought before your Cittie, were incredible in recheafall, for if I should take vpon me to make recheafall thereof, I should wast a great deale of time, which I may apply to better purpose, in certifying your excellencie of your enemies strength: wherefore this is to let your Maestie vnderstand, that your enemies can be no lesse in number then two hundred thousand, the very simplest whereof, carreyeth such a braverie of minde, as he will abide the field to the latest houre of death.

The King of Aetolia, being thirtie yeres of age, hath the conduct this day of them which are vnder his charge, being tennethousand Horsesmen, and foztie thousand ffoote men, so brauely armed, as surely I must of necessity commend them.

But

But about all the rest, the pride of the Prince Albayzar doth much amaze me, for no small estimation he made of your puissance, as himselfe gaue vs the sight of his whole Armye, graunting the like assurance to any of your Court, as hee did to vs, if so be they will desire to see his Garrison, a thing which I haue diligently noted, and which cannot greatly profite himselfe: as for the rest whereof perhappes I may be forgetfull, my good Lorde the Sage Aliart can at large discourse vnto your Highnesse.

You haue behaued your selues so well my friends (sayd the Emperour) as it is not possible for any other to bring vs a more certaine assurance in this cause: wherefore, it is necessarie that we enter into counsell, how we may auoyd the enterprize of Albayzar and his Soulesours.

And I am content that he shall likewise see our Cittie, so that charge be giuen to our Captaines, to behaue themselves with such circumspection, as our Enemies may not get any sudden aduantage against vs.

When the Emperour had set downe this for a determination, the Princes betooke themselves to their seuerall charges, that they might better respect the practices of the Enemie.

## CHAP. LVII.

¶ Of that which Albayzar did, after he had well provided for his Armie; and of the succour which came to the Emperour Palmerin.

¶ 2

Albay-

## The second part



**A**lbayzar, providing for the strength of his Armye, caused such Trenches and Rampiers of Defence and Fortification to be made round about his Camp, as they were imagined sufficient to withstand and resist any furious Batterie whatsoever. And for that he would haue some knowledge of the valour of his Enemys, hee appointed his principall Captain in places of importance, for most assurance of his Campe, and afterwards by the consent of his Councell, he set his Gallies and Shippes on fire, reseruing but a certain number of his swiftest Brigandines: So that the sight of the fire made such astonishment in Constantinople, as they fully resolved and determined to hazard their liues, or to subdue the pompe and glory of their enemies, seeing they presumed so much on themselves.

The Emperour sitting in his Chaire in one of the Turrets of his Pallace, perceived very well, that hee should not drive his Enemys out of his Emprye, without the great effusion of Blood, and losse of his friends. For the space of seven dayes they continued burning their Shippes, leaving themselves destitute of provision to depart from thence, if fortune should oppose her selfe against them, and at the ende of seven dayes, they of Constantinople began to skirmish.

The wounded Princes had recovered their former estates, except Dramasiande, and the Giant Almaroll: yet the Chirurgions assured the Emperour, how the greatest danger was past, and they likely to doe well enough. In the meane while as King Edward and Primaleon endeuored themselves to fortifie the Cittie, the Governours of those Realmes belonging to the Kings present in Constantinople, sent such good provision of strength & forces as they could possibly make ready on the sudden, but I will rehearse them unto you who had (in this necessity) chiefest succour sent them, from their Kingdomes and Signories.

First of all, the Emperour Verner of Allemaigne, had sent him two thousand Horsemen, and twelue thousand footmen, King

King Arnedes of Fraunce, had the like number. Recinde King of Spayne, had two thousand light Horsemen, and eight thousand footmen. The Prince Floriman had foure hundred Horsemen, and foure thousand footmen. Tarnas King of Lacedemonia, had foure hundred Horsemen, and foure thousand footmen.

From Thrace, to honour their King Florian of the Forrest, came foure hundred knightes on Horsebacke, and foure thousand footmen. From England came foure hundred knightes and tenne thousand footmen. From Nauarre came two hundred light Horsemen. From Denmarke came two hundred light Horsemen.

Drapo the Duke of Normandie, came thither with two thousand knightes on Horsebacke, and foure thousand brace footmen. To the Prince Belcar, came foure hundred Horsemen, and one thousand footmen. Roramant King of Bohemia, sent foure thousand footmen.

Eltrellant arrived there, accompanied with eight thousand and foure hundred gallant knightes on Horsebacke, and tenne thousand hardy fighting men on foote: who joining with them of the Cittie, were in number twenty thousand Horsemen, and thre score thousand footmen.

The Emperour and his Counsell appointed, that they which were thus come to assist him, should rest themselves for certain dayes, because they had sustained a weary Journey, so that during the time, the wounded persons were able to beare Armes, with the ayde of these, they gaue Battell to their enemies.





CHAP. LVIII.

¶ Of an aduerture which happened, by the arriual of a  
straunge Knight accompanied with a Ladie, in the  
Prince Albayzars Campe.



While they that were come to the succour of  
the Emperour reposed themselves, the  
young Princes and Knights of the Court  
of Constantinople, gaue the Enemye sun-  
dry Assaults and skirmishes, preuailling al-  
wayes so happily, as the aduantage still  
came on theyr side. During the tyme they  
skirmished in this manner, the Emperour

with the Emperesse and her Ladyes, being on a high Tower to  
see these braue Attempts, they perceyued to enter the Citie to-  
wardes the Enemyes Campe, a knight that seemed to haue so  
good opinion of himselfe, being mounted on a braue and gallant  
Courier, and himselfe attired in gayle Armour, whereon was  
wrought diu. se Argentous knottes and Deuises in silver, be-  
side, his Armour was bloody in many places, which gaue suffi-  
cient testimony, that the knight daylie enjoyed but little rest,  
and in his Shielde was Loue artificially figured, being rough-  
ly helde by the happe of the head, by a bloody minded Tyrant.

This knight seemed to carry his Launce as it were on the  
neck of his Horse, and hauing on the point thereof a little white  
Ensigne, which hee wore in signe of Peace and quietnesse. His  
Esquire bare another Shielde after him, couered ouer with the  
skinne of a wilde Beast, and another Launce in his hand, by  
him rid a Lady on a blacke Palfrey, shee being attyred after the  
Turkish manner, in a Robe of white Sattine, which was cutte  
and pinked in many places, so that the Blacke silkes lying vn-  
der the white, gaue a very braue grace vnto her Apparell, be-  
cause

cause the body and steeues was very thicke beset with Pearles  
and stones of great estimation. This Ladies haire was spread  
abroad ouer her shoulders, and her face was couered because she  
would not be knowne.

So sone as the knight was come nere the Prince Albay-  
zars Tent, he stayed for a pretie space, whereat the Turks were  
somewhat abashed, because they knewe not on which part this  
knight should be, in that they iudged him by his Armour to be  
a Christian, and the Apparell of the Ladie being Turkish, they  
could not imagine any certaintie in this case. In the meane  
while the Princes in the Campe were thus regarding and be-  
holding the knight, they perceyued him to sende his Esquire to  
the Prince Albayzars Tent, hauing his face couered, least hee  
should be knowne, when hee beganne his minde in this man-  
ner.

My Lorde, the knight which you see presumes so nere your  
Campe, by mee giue you to vnderstand, that hee hath many  
pores serued the Lady in his company, yet not able to winne or  
enioye her Loue: and for that shee could not well bayue  
him off with any moze delays or excuses, shee desired him to  
bring her vnto this place, where he must Enterprise to foynt a-  
gainst foure knights on her behalfe. And if it so fall out, that  
fortune fauoureth him with the victorie, shee will not faile to  
requite his labour with her Loue: but if the knights in your  
Camp shall refuse to trie their valours against him, shee hath gi-  
uen him leaue to offer the same conditions to the Emperours  
knights in Constantinople, where, if refusall be made likewise,  
the Lady must consent to recompence him, as if he had vanqui-  
shed, wherz she made the challenge. Wherefore my Lords, you  
may determine with your selues, which of you dare make try.  
all of the valour of this knight.

I would gladly know, said the Soldane of Persia (who was  
a gallant young Prince, and very braue in Armour) what re-  
compence the knight will make him, to whom the victorie may  
happen? You shall then my Lord (answered the Esquire) send  
him your stone Esquier, for I haue reported to you what was  
giuen me in charge.

## The second Part

So, without any more words hee returned to his Maister, accompanied with an Euyppre from the Soldane of Persia, to whome the knight that came with the Ladie, made this answer. As for well my friend, that the request of the Lord standeth with good reason, wherefore thou mayest say unto him, that if thy misfortune bee such, as that any of these foure knightes chauce to vnhelmie me, I will not faile to deliuer him my Horse and Armour: Besides, I will shew cherytance to any he shall commaund me, on conceition that this Ladie may remaine at her libertie, to do what shee shall imagine conuenient for herselfe. The Pagan Princes were as well contented as could be with this good offer of the knight, wherefore they ordained to Ioust against the foure young kings, who were very brauely and gallantly attyred in rich and costly Armour. The first of them was the king of Bytania: the second, the king of Trebisond: the third, the king of Caspia: and the fourth, was the hardie Soldane of Persia.

King Edward, Recinde, Arnedes, Palmerin of England, and Drameshande departed from the Citie of Constantinople, (with a safe Conduict from the Prince Albayzar) to see these Iousts: to them came Albayzar mounted on horsebacke being armed, except only a Lance which he carryed in his hand, being accompanied with five other Princes and a Giant. When they were come nere the Princes that came from the Citie, Albayzar saluted them very graciously: but the knight that came with the Ladie, spake to them in the Greeke tongue, that they shuld apply their mindes to other affaires, and not to wast the tyme in saluting them, whom they could not affect as friends or enemies: When he had thus said, he returned to the Ladie, and promised himselfe to enter the Ioust.

It seemes to mee (said Albayzar) that the knight no doubt, is both hardy and valiant, because he makes there of such a braue iudgement: Wherefore I thinke it best that we accord to his will, rather then abide the danger of our owne liues. So concluding he granted the first Ioust to the king of Trebisond, who was mounted on a goodly baye Courser, his Armour of greene colour, and in his Shield was figured in a field of blue, a

Giant

## of Palmerin of England.

199

Giant slayne, in witnesse that hee conquered him nobly in a Combate.

After the king of Trebisond had taken his leave of Albayzar, he presently ran against the strange knight, but he encountered him with such force, as his Lance flew in pieces by into the Ayre: neuerthelesse, the king of Trebisond sped so vnsortunately as hee was sent to measure his length on the ground, so sore shaken and amazed, as he was faine to be carried forth of the field. In the meane while the knight rid to the Ladie, who was very glad that hee had sped so well, the king of Caspia presented himselfe in the field, being in Carnation Armour, and a Hart in Silver portrayed on his Shield, in a field of sable: he gaue his houle the spurs against the knight, but he was sent to keepe the king of Trebisond company. Which the king of Bithonia perceyuing (he being armed like the king of Caspia) ran against the strange knight valiantly, and meeting with him in the midst of the Carriere, broke his Lance brauely on his Shield, but the strange knight failed of the breaking his Lance: yet hee smote the king so roughly, in Iousting against his bodie, as he was throwne out of his Saddle, and the strange knight forced to forsake his Wyrtrops. But when hee had recovered himselfe, he went to the Ladie, beseeching her not to thinke amisse of him for that little scyle, and he would make her amends on the fourth king.

Then the Soldane of Persia, being brauely incited in guilt Honour, and bearing in his Shield, fortune lately placed in her Charriot of Tryumph, in a Golden field, aduanced himselfe into the Course, and Albayzar did him the honour to clap downe the Scauer of his Helmet, deliuering him likewise the Lance hee carryed in his owne hand, wherewith the strange knight was greatly discontented, saying his Enemy made such account of: so taking his leave of the Ladie, he rushed forth to receiue the Soldane, who came against him very courageous: they meeting both together with such force, as their Lances were broken, and the shieldes faced through the midst, yet they did themselves nothing hurt in the Ioust, whereupon the Soldane of Persia (seeing the Citie and prouince of his Enemy)

came

came vnto him with these wordes. I thinke it good (Syr Knight) that wee yet once more hazard the tryall of the Foult: but because I see you destitute of a Launce, I will intreate the Prince Albayzar to bestowe one vpon you. Syr (answered the strange knight) I am content to allow any thing you shall ordaine, yet am I somewhat offended with my selfe, that I did not make you partaker of your fellows misfortune. Marrye I perswade my selfe, that the faulte consisted in my Horse, who is so sore laboured with trauell, as hee can hardly performe his dutie.

Syr Knight (answered the Soldane) you shall not complaine for so small a matter, therefore I will bestowe one of my owne Horses vpon you. In troth Sir (answered the strange knight) I am so vnacquainted with this Countrey, as I knowe not at whose handes I might request such a fauour: yet for all my want is great, and your offer very courteous, I cannot with good will make choyse of your horse. My Friend (saide Dramusiande) for that I thinke well of your behauiour and gentleness, I pray you to accept this Horse, whereon I am mounted. Good Sir (answered the strange knight, in that you graunt him such courtesie, who is a stranger, and vnkowne to you, your good will in the offer would highly impeach mee, if I should refuse it.

So hee alighted from his Horse, and mounted on that which Dramusiande had sent him, giuing a signe to the Soldane, that without delay, he should defende himselfe.

Then each of them taking a Launce, they encountred in the middest of the Carriere so brauely, as the strange knight losse both his Stoyrops, but the Soldane of Persia, was throwne to the Earth so sore hurt, as there came foure knights to carry him south of the fildes.

The strange knight returning againe, hee came vnto the Prince Albayzar, with these wordes. You see Syr, that I haue accomplished the Challenge which I presented vnto you on this Ladies behalfe: therefore (Syr Albayzar) if you will graunt licence to any more of your knightes, to deale in the same

same triall with me, I will attend them the Fount haue till night, or so long as my horse is able to hold out.

I perceiue well Sir (answered the Prince Albayzar) that the pride wherewith you are accompained, maketh you so gallant in speeches: but assure your selfe, it doth not a little grieue me, that I am generall of this armie, which is a hinderance to me for dealing with you. Neuertheless, for the desire I haue to pull downe your glorious stемacke, I am content that all my knightes shall hazard their fortune against you. King Edward and the other Princes with him, did highly commend the courage of the strange knight: and but for that he spake the Greeke language so perfectly, they would haue iudged him to be the Prince Florian of the Forrest.

It was not long before foure knights (from the Prince Albayzar) presented themselves in the field, very brauely armed, whome the strange knight vnhorsed one after another presently: wherest Albayzar was much offended, so that hee desired the knight to rest himselfe a while, to which wordes the knight thus answered.

You see Sir, I haue two Launces yet left, and I am very willing to bestow the breaking of them: therefore send the Giant that standeth next you, and he and I will trie our fortunes together. Alas Sir (answered Albayzar) you are too forward in wishing Fortune to turne her face from you, therefore I pray thee Framustant (quoth the Giant) that thou wilt graunt the knight his honest request.

The Giant was so glad to doe any thing that might content Albayzar, as he armed himselfe immediately, and giuing his horse the spurs against the knight, they met together so forcibly, as the knight was constrained to catch hold about the necke of his horse, being soe to receiue such a foyle in the presence of so many good knightes.

Therefore, to reuenge himselfe on his enemy, he took the second Launce, wherewith he encountred the Giant so worthily, as himselfe was almost cast out of his saddle: but such was his fortune against the Giant, as the point of his Launce entered the Vener of his Helmet, whereby he cast him on the crupper

cramp or of his horse, and the Giant thinking to recouer himselfe, pulde the bridle of his horse so strongly to him, as the horse fell downe backward vpon him, which fall did so astonish him, as he was carried out of the field deprived of his senses. This mishap disliked the Prince Albayzar, to whom the strange knight came with these speeches.

If thou thinke it good (Syr Albayzar) I will now depart into the Citie, for that the Ladie desireth me so to do: it draweth towards Night, and the entertainment you will allowe me here, I iudge shall be very slender. I see well then (answered Albayzar) that it is not your will to vse me in any thing, neuertheless, for the promise I haue saine in you, I am content to accompanie the Lady to the Gate of the Citie, not doubting of my assurance, being licensed by the King Recinde and these other Princes. King Edward and his friends took in good part the words of Albayzar, and when he had brought them to the gates of the City, he took his leaue of the king Recinde and all the rest, vnto the strange knight to tell him, who he was.

You demand the thing (answered this knight) which I force not greatly to make knowne vnto you, wherefore you shall vnderstand, that I am the knight of the Sauageman, your principall enemie, and this Lady is the Queene of Thrace my Wife: then he took off his Helmet, saying he was glad to meete him in the place, where he would haue occasion to deale further with him. At these wordes Albayzar was so offended, as he would not speake to any all that night. King Edward and his friends rode into the Citie ioyfully, certifying the Emperour of the arrivall of Florian. The Queene of Thrace was very graciously enterpayned by the Emperesse and the other Ladies, who marvelled much at her strange apparrell, which was the workmanship of the Queene Mitha, whom she determined to make a present, to one of the daughters of the King Amato her brother, as I haue already declared to you. The Emperour was so glad at the arrivall of his Nephew, as hee would hardly suffer him out of his presence, he kissed the hands of the Emperesse his grandmother, and of the

Queene

Queene Florida his Mother: and after hee had saluted all his friends, hee was conducted to his chamber, to haue his wounds visited, which he received in the Toust, against the Prince Albayzars knights.

CHAP. LIX.

¶ Here shall be declared, after what manner the Prince Florian of the Forrest arrived at Constantinople, and of manie things that happened after his coming.



¶ Soone as the Prince Florian had recouered his Queene and Wife, by ayde and assistance of the Sage Aliart, he followed Adventures a certaine time, because he should perceiue his valiant and Noble disposition: but when he vnderstood the hard case wherinto his deere Friends at Constantinople were brought, he changed his former determination, and caused his Queene to decke her selfe in the Turkish Attire, and took his way to the place where his troubled Friends remained. And because he could not enter the Cittie, but he must first passe the Campe of his Enemies, he disguised himselfe very strangely, covering his Shielde with the Sauadge deulse, and carryed the Shielde whereof I haue spoken already, which he found in one of the chambers of the Castle, where the Queene Leonarda was Enchaunted.

In this manner hee presented himselfe before Albayzars Tents, where hee sped in Tousting as you haue heard before, and after he had rested himselfe two dayes, he desired the Emperour to giue his Enemies Battell, because he thought euery day a yeare, till he might encounter with the Prince Albayzar, but his Maiesty deferred the matter so long as he could, because

he

he would be assured of the good disposition of all his Armie. The Turkes took it very strangely that they had travelled so farre, to lay siege to the principall Citie in all the Empire, and yet to stay so long before they toynd in Battell: but Albayzar knew very well the advantage that they of the City might get of them, in that they were compassed with such strong Walles of defence, besides, that Citie was plentifully stored with good and hardie Knights, who would murther many of his, ere they would yield themselves. Wherefore he changed his mind from giving the assault, and made hauocke and spoyle of them about the Citie thereby to provoke the Emperour to seek revenge: but in the meane while they continued their spoiling, the Soldane of Persia, sent a Messenger to the Emperour, who being brought into his Maiesties presence, setting his knee to the ground, he began in this manner.

Most puissant Emperour, the Soldane of Persia, my Soueraigne Lord, with the licence of the Prince Albayzar his captaine, and the consent of the whole Turkish Armie, saith, that he is greatly offended at that which hath happened, in the severall Fights against his Nephew Florian, with whom he would once more gladly hazard himselfe: on condition, that you will suffer twelue knights of your Court to come into the field to morrowe morning, to Foul and Combate against twelue Turkes, of which companie my Lord will be the captaine. And thus much we will graunt, that the Combat shall be fought before the Emperesse Chamber window, to the ende, that these Princes and Ladies may see the valour and prowesse, which shall be shewen on both sides, and they will agree to give over, and ende the Combate, when these Ladies shall thinke good so to command them. Moreover, he humbly desired the Emperesse, that it may stand with her pleasure (after the Fights be ended) to give them leaue to daunce with these Ladies: the Emperour returned him this answer.

Thou maist (my friend) say unto thy Lord that I am content to graunt his request, and the twelue knights of my Court, shall not faile to meete them in the field at two houres warning: beside, the Emperesse shall give them leaue to daunce with these Ladies,

Ladies, who I trust will agree to what I determine, albeit they know them for theyr sworn Enemies. But if any other knights come in companie with the twelue, thou mayst say to the Soldane thy Lord, that they are forbidden to come in Arms, the like doe I promise with the knights of my Court, that none but themselves shall come Armed into the field. The Esquire returning with his answer to the Soldane of Persia, both hee and his Companions beganne presently to prepare theyr Devices and Armour.

## CHAP. LX.

¶ Howe the Combate betweene twelue Turkes and twelue Christians begunne, and howe the Ladies caused it to be given over presently.



Betweene the knights of the Emperours Courte arose great controuersie, because euery one strue to be of the number of the twelue, and very hardly could they be quieted, such was theyr earnest desire to deale with the Turkes: yet in the ende they were glad to obey the determination of Florian, who chose the twelue according as he named them to you. The first was Palmerin of England his Brother, the Prince Florendos, Gracian, Berolde, Floraman, of Sardignia, Blandidon, Plair, Pompides, the King Estrellant of Hungaria, Don Rosuell, Francian, Sonne to the King Polendos, and Don Rosian de la Bronde: these twelue knights were Armed very richly, hauing theyr Coates of Armes made by theyr Ladies, King Edward, Arnedes, Recinde, the Soldan Bellagris, and the Giant Dramusiande, they being all unarmed, accompanied these knights into the field, which was in the same place, where the Soldan of Persia had appointed it, because the Emperesse and her Ladies might see theyr behaviour.

Then

Then came the Soldane of Persia, and the eleuen knights of his company, they being honoured with the presence of the kings of Gamba, of Sparta, of Armenia, & the Giant Framustant, they being all unarmed. The Soldane of Persia desired greatly to unhorse the prince Florian of the Forrest, hee coming foremost with the king of Aetolia, who of the two was thought the most valiaunt: against him Palmerin of England determined to fight, for hee knew him by the deuise in his shield, which was a golden tower in a field of Sable. The Soldane of Persia clapt downe the Beuere of his Helmet, and the king of Armenia gaue him his Lance, so, when they were all ready to the fust, at the sound of the Trumpets they ran all together courageously, and met one another with such force, as the most part of them was cast to the ground. Palmerin of England encountered the king of Aetolia so brauely, as he was sent to measure his length on the ground, and himselfe was so shaken, as hee forsooke both his Stirrups. Florian and the Soldane of Persia encountered with such force, as they were both cast forth of their Saddles. Florendos unhorsed the Prince of Arfasia, named Argelao: in briefe, they were all unhorsed, except Palmerin, Plair, and the king Polendos, who desiring to accompany their friends, alighted from their horses to charge their enemies. The Soldane of Persia, and the king of Aetolia, who were more offended at their misfortune then all the other, presented themselves before their enemies, and so with the aide of their companions, they beganne the Combate with the Sword: but they sped no better thereby then they did at the fust, which the Ladies pittying, and seeing the Soldane of Persia in great danger, by reason that Florian had wonne the aduantage ouer him, likewise, that Palmerin and Florendos had brought their enemies into subiection, concluded that the Princesse Miragarda, accompanied with foure other Ladies, and the king Tarnaes of Lacedemonia, should goe into the field to separate them: but so soone as the Combattants had espied her, they would not suffer her to come so farre as they were, but gaue ouer their Combat and came to meete her.

The

The Princesse Miragarda, thought her selfe greatly honoured by the forbearance of the Combate, and hauing very graciously thanked them all, shee returned backe againe, holding the Prince Florendos by the hand, and they all by degrees following in decent manner. When they were come to the Palace, the Soldane and his companie were very honourably entertained by the Emperour, the Emperesse, Miragarda, Gridonia, Florida, and the other Princes, who gaue the Princesse Polinarda to vnderstand, that the Soldane of Persia thought marvellous well on her.

The Emperour caused them to be brought into the Chamber of Presence, which was richly behanged with cloathes of inestimable value: but when the Turks entered the Chamber, their mindes were rauished with beholding the stately maner thereof. King Edward, Recinde, Arnedes, and the other kings, entertained the Turkes with singular humanitie, which made them iudge, that the courtesie and bountie of the Emperours Court, could not be matched in all the world beside: but when they beheld the rare and excellent beauty of the Ladies, they imagined, that their knightes preailed more by the Heauenly feature, then by the strength that consisted in themselves. The Soldane of Persia still biewing the Princesse Miragarda, took her to be the faire Polinarda: but at length he found how he was deceived, for he saw Florendos still in her company, and that Palmerin kept his wife Polinarda in talkes with him, which made him presently recall his error.

As for the other Turkish Princes, whose mindes were onely to seeke the spoyle of the Citty, they took their leave and departed, and when they were come to their Campe, they practised which way to worke the trayterous intents. The Soldane of Persia took the Princesse Polinarda to daunce, the king of Aetolia took the beautifull Princesse Miragarda, & the Soldane Abayzar took the Queene Leonarda: knowing that the Prince Florian would seeke the bee pleased therewith: but the king of Cospia, albeit hee was young himselfe, yet he refused all the other Ladies, and took the Queene Florida: so, falling to their Courtlie Pastimes, after they had Daunced so much as pleased

D D

them



themselves, in courteous manner they departed thence. But as they were going forth of the Chamber, the Giant Framustant (who had all this while well viewed Arlencea) was so ravished in affection towards her, as hee challenged the Combate against Dramusiande on the morrow: and because they would not dally on either side, they threw downe theyr Gages, which the Emperour caused to be taken up, assuring them the shield on his behalfe, and the Soldane Albayzar made them the same promise. In this manner they took their leave one of another, every one wishing that the fight were past, because they had good hope to see a notable Combat, and this you shall understand by the way, that Framustant was the onely Giant on whose force Albayzar wholly reposed himselfe.

CHAP. LXI.

Of a Noble and valiant Combate, betweene Dramusiande, and the Giant Framustant.



In the next morrow Dramusiande addresed himselfe to the place where the Combate should bee fought, accompanied with the Emperour Vernar, and King Edward and his Sonnes, of whome he was more loved and honoured, then of all the other.

It was not long after, before the Giant Framustant came, being attended on by divers of his companions and friends, he being in an Armour very rich and strong, as it was necessary for him, dealing with one of such valour as was the Giant Dramusiande, whome he exceeded farre in hugeness of stature, being mounted on a

lusty

lusty Courser, which made Albayzar and his friends imagine that the victory would happen on his side: but they that were acquainted with the noble prowess of Dramusiande, iudged the contrarie.

Certaine words were uttered on eyther side, but they continued not long, for Dramusiande being very earnest in desire, to chastise the proude behaviour of Framustant, gaue his horse the Spurres against him, who likewise prepared himselfe to entertain him: and they encountred with such exceeding force, as they were glad to cathe holde about the necks of their horses to shunne the fall.

But they immediately recovered their Saddles againe, and drawing theyr Swords out of their scabbards, they began to charge one an other with such furious strokes, as sorely the Combat seemed to be most dangerous: but because they could not meete so closely together on Horsebacke as they would, they both alighted, and Dramusiande behaved himselfe with such expert and nimble dexterity in fight, as Framustant could fasten very few strokes on him, but hee layd on loads on his Enemy, and such was the eagernes of theyr Quarrell on eyther side, as it could hardly bee iudged to whome the aduantage would happen.

So long endured the Combate, as their shields were so broken and defaced, that they could find but little defence in them, and theyr Armour was so cruelly cut and mangled, as theyr bodies were wounded in many places: which made all the Regardants of this minde, that this Combate deserved as great commendation as ever did any: yea, the Combat between Dramusiande and the Giant Barocant, might not compare with this, for that Framustant shewed himselfe more sufficient in power then the other was.

In brieft, the doubtfulness of this Combat was such, as Victorie was not to be hoped for on eyther side, for fortune (who reserued these Champpions for Actions of greater moment) would not suffer that Combate to endure any longer: for, at that very instant time, there arriued in the field the Princesse Targiana, accompanied with the Princesse of Armenia, and

diuers worthy knights, who being aduertised that the famous Cittie of Constantinople was besieged, desired to trauell thither, to see the Prince Albazar: but before they came south of they, Kingdomes, they left sufficient Gouvernours to take the charge of them, and afterward (being accompanied with two thousand knights) they iourneyed untill they came before the Wallles of Constantinople.

The Princesse Targiana bearing great good will to the Emperour, for the honour hee bestowed on her in his Court, beganne to weep and take it heavily, seeing her friends so troubled and brought into danger: but when she had knowledge of the Combate betwene Framustant and Dramusiande, she would not alight from her horse, but entred the field; the Prince Albazar being with her, (who was not a little glad of her arrivall) the Princesse of Armenia, the Soldane of Persia, and sundry other Kings in her companie.

In this manner they came where these two Giants fought the Combate, and approaching to Dramusiande, shee layde her hand on his right shoulder: then taking her maske from her face, she spake unto him in this manner. He thinks it were reason (sayd Dramusiande) that all former quarrels should be set apart and ended, at the presence of her who is your loyall and unfained friend. Dramusiande calling her to his remembrance, at length returned her this answer.

Certainely Madame, he might be accounted of an ungentle minde, that would refuse to be banquished, on condition that you thought it agreeable to your nature: and I iudge you doe advantage me very much, in wishing me to giue over the Combate, especially, seeing I am matched with such a strong and puissant Enemy. I knowe well (said Framustant) that these glozing wordes are not spoken from the heart, but onely (as it were) to floute and scoorne me: neuerthelesse, I hope to make you finde them true in the ende. I pray thee Framustant (answered Dramusiande) shew thy selfe at this instant somewhat obedient to Madame Targiana, considering we are in the place, where we may at all times trie our selues together.

Albazar commaunded Framustant to withdraw himselfe, and

and in the meane while the Emperour Verner, King Edward, and diuers other Princes came to the Princesse Targiana (but Florian of the Forrest shrunke away into the Cittie, because he would not haue her knowe him) and after they had saluted her as her dignitie deserved, they willed them to do her humble dutie to the Emperour, the Emperesse, and all the other Princesses, her friends.

So, she toke her leaue of them, they returning into the Cittie with Dramusiande, and she departing with Albazar and the Princes to their Campe, where she was receyued in euery lous fratellie on all sides, they being very glad to haue the company of Ladies, as well as the Princes had in the Cittie.

The Emperour of Allemaigne and King Edward, spent their time in discoursing on the beauty of the Princesse of Armenia, who excaded farre the Princesse Targiana, and continuing the commendation of this fayre Lady, they came to the Pallace, the Emperour reioyning greatly at the arrivall of the Princesse Targiana, and the Emperesse bare so great good will unto her, as the Princesse and Ladies sought to desire licence, that they might goe welcome the Princesse Targiana, but she her self so flattered the prince Albazar, as she obtained licence of him, to goe shew her reuerence to the Emperesse and her Ladies.

On the next morning she rode brauely to the Cittie, accompanied with the Princesse of Armenia and the Soldane of Persia, with diuers other Princes who brought them to the Cittie, at the entraunce wherof, the Emperour sat in his Chayre (being brought thither for the honour of Targiana) and there he toke her in his armes, as if she had bene his owne Daughter: the like he did to the Princesse of Armenia, the Soldane of Persia, and the other Kings that came in the company with the Princesse Targiana, and so he was caried with them to the Pallace, where entring the Emperesse Chamber, she was entertained with gracious courtesie, both she and all her company beside. After they had embraced one another, the Princesse Polinarda presented the Quene Florida to Targiana, whome she held by the hand, vntill many gentle salutations

to her: but after she had knowledge of Miragarda and Leonarda, she perceived verie well that her beautie might not compare with theirs, and grœuing that Leonarda had escaped so well from the place where she caused her to be enchanted, she came to the Princesse Miragarda with these spæches.

I cannot chuse (Madame) but esteemo meruailous well of their paines, that aduenture their honour in the field in the defence of your beautie: which is the cause that I must take in very good part, the labour that the Prince Albayzar bestowed on your behalfe. To the Queen Leonarda she would not speak one word, because she was married to the Prince Florian, whome she condemned as her mortall enemy. The Princesse of Armenia, sitting betwene Miragarda and Leonarda, was very much abashed; in that she was not acquainted with any of the Ladies of the Emperors Court, who (notwithstanding) entertained her very honourable: thus they continued their Princelie courtesies one to another, till the night drawing on, Targiana took her leaue of the Emperour, desiring his Parcellie to excuse her for the warre, which was commenced contrary to her will.

The Emperesse and the Ladies brought them to the Pallace gate, where (on eche side) they parted with such heavinesse, as they could not speake to one another: but the Emperour himselfe accompanied them without the Cittie, and because Targiana excused her selfe of the warre, which Albayzar had enterprised against his Parcellie, he took her by the hand, speaking to her in this manner.

I promise you (Madame) it is not a little grieffe to me, that I cannot at this time witnesse, how leath I am to be iudged vngratefull vnto you, who deserves to be honoured with most gracious service. And as for the malicious dealing of Albayzar, trust me, it cannot diminish one iota of the good will I beare you: but this I assure you, you may dispose both of me and my Court at your pleasure, and may make your selfe as bolde and welcome here, as if you were in the great Turke your Fathers Court.

So breaking off, and saluting eche other with great courtesie,

tesse, the Emperour was carryed backe to his Pallace, and Targiana was conducted to the Camp, accompanied with the Emperour Verner, the Kings of England, Fraunce, and Spayne, and many other Princes of the Emperors Court, who having brought her to the Campe, took their leaue, and returned to the Cittie, deuising senerally among themselves, to whose lotte Targiana, and the other Ladies should fall, if so be the victorie chanced on theyr side: for it is oftentimes the nature of Souldiers, to share & diuide the spoyle among themselves, before Fortune hath deliuered it into theyr hands.

CHAP. LXII.

¶ Of the Battell betweene the Christians and the Turks, and of that which happened.



At many Dayes after the arrivall of the Princesse Targiana, the Princes (as well on the one side as on the other) concluded to ioyne in Battell, Marrie the Christians were more desirous thereto then the Turks, because the Victuals beganne to waie scant within the Cittie: Besides, Albayzar came oftentimes, and prouoked them also with his Standard and Ensigns displayed, which byged the knights to cry & call to theyr Comanders and Captains, to suffer them to sallie forth of the Cittie: for it was a grieffe to them to be so enclosed within, and theyr Enemies come daring so boldly to them without. Upon this, Primalcon would gladly haue issued forth, if the other Princes would haue bin ruled after him, but they would not Aduenture so rashly, because many of them were weake and sickly with traucelling on the Seas, therefore they

they determined to recover themselves in perfect assurance of their health, before they would thrust themselves into the face of danger.

After they had well rested and recovered themselves, and found that they were strong and able to deale with the Enemy, the Commanders summoned their traines into the field, and King Edward being General of the whole forces, commaunded both Horse-men and Foote-men to prepare themselves to Battell. The first Squadron was conducted by the Soldane Bellagris: to whome was committed five thousand good Soldiers, being all his owne Subjects. The second was given in charge to Recinde King of Spaine: who had the conduct of three thousand, but then sent him from the Kingdome of Spayne. The third was led by Arnedes King of Fraunce, who had the charge of the like number as the King of Spaine had, with the two thousand Souldiers that were sent him from France. The fourth was under the conduct of Polendos King of Thessalie, who had attending on him the like number. The fift was in the charge of the Emperour Vernar of Allemaigne: and the first and last (being foure thousand) was conducted by King Edward of England. Primaleon would not this day take vpon him any charge, that he might the better giue succour to those places where he perceiued most danger, because he iudged it a policie to be used in Warre.

All these that follooe were brauely seene in the field this Day, Belcar, Drapos of Normandie, Maiortes, otherwise called the Great Dog, Palmerin of England, Florian of the Forrest, Florendos, Platin, Blandidon, Berolde Prince of Spayne, Floraman of Sardignia, Gracian of France, Don Rosuell, Bellizart, Onistalde, Tenebrant, Francian, Pompides, the Sage Aliart, the King Estrelant, Frisoll, Albanis of Frieze, Rodamont, Dragonalt King of Nauarre, Luyman of Burgundie, Germaine of Orleance, Tremoran, Don Rosiran de la Bronde, Dramusiande, Almaroll, and all the most renowned knightes of the Emperours Court, who were in the Squadron under the conduct of the Soldane Bellagris, they all concluding with themselves, that so soone as the Battell should be begunne, they would each

of

of them take part on that side, where they dutie and affection did best serue them.

The King Tarnaes (accompanied with many valiaunt knights, had committed to his charge the defence of the Cittie, and of the foote-men were chosen fiftie thousand, such as were accounted the most wisest and expert Souldiers, that were vnder the conducting of the King Tarnaes, to helpe to prevent any danger imminent to the Cittie. King Edward himselfe, being very braue and gallantly Armed, ceased not to visite his charge of Horsemen, and likewise hee came among the young Princes and knightes, encouraging them in noble speeches, and with a countenance bewraying the inuincible minde of a Conquerour, desiring them to remember they knightly deedes passed, which might be an occasion to stirre them by more nobly, in defence of the flower of all Christendome.

With these and other such like speeches, he did so animate and embolden all his Trainee, as they that were the most fearefull, and had least minde to deale with their enemies, seemed as willing and forwards to the Battell, as hee that was the brauest Souldier in the field: which when the King perceiued, he withdrew himselfe and his company, commanding the Soldane Bellagris to giue the first assault.

Albayzar diuided his Horsemen in ten companies, giving to every Squadron five thousand men. The first Squadron was conducted by the Soldan of Persia, who was accompanied with the Giant Framustant, and about five hundred wel appointed Souldiers. The second was given in charge to the king of Trebizonde: the third, to the king of Caspia: the fourth, to the king of Armenia: the fift, to the king of Gamba: the sixt, to the king of Sparta: the seuenth, to the king of Birhinia: the eight, to the prince Argelo of Arfasia: the tenth and last, was conducted by the Soldane Albayzar himselfe, with whome were seauen Giants for the Guard of his person.

But so soon as Framustant espied Dramusiande in the forefront of the Christians Armie, being desirous to approue himselfe against him onely, hee went (by the licence of Albayzar) to the foremost Squadron of the Turkes, because hee thought by this

meane

meanes to encounter with Dramusiande. The young princes in Albayzars Campe, were diuided into foure parts, each part contained five and twenty thousand: and they that were left beside, were sent to the Pannions, for safegarde of the prince'sse Targiana, and the prince'sse of Armenia.

As for the richnesse of their Armour, and ingenious Deuises, which these knights (as well on the one side as the other) bare in this conflict, would trouble the eloquent tongue of Marcus Tullius Cicero, to make true sufficient discourse thereof. But to yelde the greater contentment to those friendly Gentlemen, who take delight in reading of this famous Hystorie, I will rehearse the Names of them that were brassest in the ffield: and first I will begin with the Christians, wherof there were sometimes two or thre together, whose Armour and Deuises were like in colour or proportion.

King Edward, the Emperour Vernar, and the Soldane Belagris, had they Armour in Scarlet, white and blacke colours, with mightie Chaynes of Golde crossing they Bodies, and in they shields they bare a flying Griffon, in a ffield of Silver, and underneath was witten in Letters of Golde, the Names of such as they esteemed to bee their best beloued, and most famous friends.

Primalcon and the King Polendos, were in white Armour, and in they shields was portrayed in a silver ffield, a clouen Rocke, which Deuise Primalcon was wont to beare, when he was amorous of the prince'sse Gridonia his Wife. Recinde, Arnedes, and Francian, were in gilt Armour, and two Lyons Rampant in their shields, in a ffield of Azure. The King of Vngaria, Estrellant, and Belcar his Ankle, were in black armour, shadowed with little streams of Gold, because it was not long since the deceasse of the King Frisoll and Ditree, and for they Deuises they had figured in they shields a golden Tree, in a ffield of Sable.

Palmerin of England, and the prince Florendos, were in green Armour, very thicke beset with little fillets of gold, and in they shields was figured Fortune in a silver ffield, whereby was vnderstood, that they did yet repose some trust in her.

The

The Prince Floraman of Sardignia, and the knight of the Sauadge-man, had they Armours of an Indian colour, all wrought ouer with little shrubbes of Golde: but the Deuises of they shields were contrarie: for Floraman had portrayed in his shield, Death holding a Lady by the hand, in a ffield of Sable, and Florian kept his Sauadge Deuise, wherewith he had achieved so many honorable victozies. Dragonalt King of Nauarre, and Albanis of Frieze, king of Denmarke, were in redde Armour, with circles of silver, crosse thwarting euery way: and in their shields was pictured in a ffield of Sinople, Loue, holding a knight vnderneath his feet: for this Deuise the Prince'sse Miragarda commanded Dragonalt to carry all his life time, when he was banquished by the prince Florendos, before the Castle of Almaroll.

The Prince Berolde, and Onistalde his Brother, were both in gilt Cozselets, but their Bases were blacke, and in their shields was figured little flames of fire, in a ffield of Sable. Polinard and Muncalion, had their Armour of greene and Carnation colours, and in their shields was displayed a silver Sea, in a ffield of Sinople. Blandidon and Frisoll, were in black Armour, carrying for they Deuises in their shields, two golden Griffons, in a ffield of Seules. Pompides and Placir were in greene Armour, and eache of them carried in his shield a silver Bull in a ffield of Sinople: for Pompides took very great delight in this Deuise.

The Armours of the prince Gracian, and that of Guerin his Brother, was of Greene, Scarlet, and white colours, with fillets of Golde, crosse strickt to separate the colours, and in they shields was figured a Garden of flowers, in a silver ffield. Rodamont and Bellizart, had they Armour of Vermillion colour, and in they shields they carryed Hope, in the habite of a Woman, but deprived of life: this Deuise was in a ffield of Seules.

Don Rosuell and Dramian were both in white Armour, very thicke beset with Roses of Golde, and in their shields was pictured a displayed Ensigne of silver in a Golden ffield.

Basilhart

## The second part

Rasiliart and Didon his Brother, were in Azure Armour, all wrought ouer with little Silver Shubbes, and in the same manner were their shields. Luyman of Burgundie, and Tremoran, had their Armour of Tawny colour, as colour consoymable to their amozons thoughts: but because Tremoran was out of hope to espouse his Ladie, he carried his Deuise according to his ill happe: and Layman of Burguudie, being in the same case, was the moze willing to keepe his companie, and therefore they carryed for theyr Deuises in theyr Shieldes, Siphus tumbling his restlesse stone in a field of Sable. The Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, and Don Rosian de la Bronde, were in white Armour, and this was the maner of the Deuises in their shieldes. The Sage Aliart had the figure of God Apollo in his shield, in a field of Sinople, and Don Rosian had in his shield, the tomer of Nemrod, from whence hee was lineally descended. Maiortes and the Giant Almaroll, were in blacke Armour, and theyr shieldes of the same colour, without any maner of Deuise.

The Giant Dramusiande was in a strong Armour of Aier, and his shield of the same manner: of whome the Christians made especiall account, because they knew the noble valour hee was indued withall. Diuers others were very braue, both in theyr Armour, and Deuises of their shieldes, which made a gallant shewe among the Christians: but I let them passe at this time, to auoyde prolixitie.

And now wee will speake somewhat of the Prince Albayzar, who was very gallantly mounted in a Greene Armour, which was thicke beset with Spheares of gold, in signe of victory, and in his shield was pictured in a field of Sinople, the liuely and naturall forme of the Princesse Targiana. The Soldane of Persia, was in a Carnation coloured Armour, being very thicke beset with pzerious stones of incredible estimation, and about the skyrts of his Wases were framed diuer sitie of fine and curious artificiall knottes of Gold, in the middelt whereof stood two Letters of P.P. which he had caused to be placed there, onely for that they were the first Letters of the Name of the Princesse Polinarda, towards whome he was maruellous affectionate, and he was in good hope to be rewarded with her, if they

they wonne the victorie: in his Shield was figured Hope, in a green vesture like a young beautifull Ladie, and underneath her was written in letters of golde, the name of the Princesse Polinarda. The king of Galpia was in Tawny Armour, streaked ouer in diuers places with blacke, in signe that he had bene banquished in the Combate past: and in his shield he bare for his deuise, a Beare, hauing his clawes al bloody, in a field of Sable, whereby hee gaue them to vnderstand, that he had good hope to bathe his hands in the blood of his Enemies. The king of Trebifonde, was in red Armour, all ouer figured with little silver Birds, hauing their wings spread abroad, in manner as they were flying, and carryed the picture of god Mars in his shield, with the Minotaurs-head, that he conquered in Crete: this deuise was in a golden field. The king of Sparta was in white Armour, and in his shield was portrayed a Lyon torne in pieces, because he had torne a Lion himself, when he was in his youthfull time. The king of Etolia was in blacke Armour, bearing for his Deuise in his shield, a blacke Ball, in a field of Geules. The king of Armenia was in Azure Armour, wrought all ouer with roses of golde, and in his shield was figured a Phoenix, in a field of Azure: whereby his meaning was, that his Ladie was the onely Phoenix of beauty in the world, to whome no other might equall her selfe. The king of Gamba was in guyle Armour, with his Wases of silver, and in his shield was pictured a golden Lion in a silver field. The king of Bythinia was in green Armour, crosse-streaked with bonds of silver, coupling in manner of knots: and in his shield he carried a golden Tiger rampant, against a Rock of Chrystal, in a field of Sinople. The Prince Argelao of Arfasia, had his Armour like to the king of Bythinia. Many other of the Prince Albayzars knights came into the field, being very brauely Armed, but I will let them passe unnamed at this time: assuring you that Framustant and the other Giants were armed very gallantly, & behaved themselves with such report in the field, as they thought verily to dismay the Christians with their countenance.



CHAP. LXIII.

¶ Of the first Battell betweene the Christians and the Turkes, and the successe thereof.



The Armys on eyther side, being appointed in good and decent maner, the Potentates, Kings, Princes, and persons of mosse Authority (would needs goe place themselves in the foremost rancke) holding this opinion, that in such a renowned Battell wherein the perill of all Christendome consisted, they which presented themselves the foremost in fight, should deserue the greatest honor and gloze in the field: which consideration made the Captaines leaue theyr charges to their Lieutenants, and come and place themselves in the face of the Battell.

Then the Drummes and Trumpets sounding gallantly on either side, the Soldane of Persia marched on with his traine, to receiue the first Squadron of the Christians, and meeting together, Primaleon encountred the king of Caspia, and brake his Launce so brauely on him, as himselfe forooke both his stirrups: but the king of Caspia had such a forcible stroke, as hee was sent headlong to the Earth, very sore wounded. Palmerin of England serued the king of Aetolia in the same manner, albeit he was reputed amongst the Turkes for an especiall good knight at Armes. Florendos and the king of Armenia fayled in the Assault, but they met so forceably together with theyr bodies, as both they and their Horses tumbled to the ground: the Prince Florendos recovered himselfe againe quickly, but the Turke was so amazed with his fall, as hee could hardly tell where

where he was, whereupon his two Couzins came vnto him, and conducted him betwene them to his Tent. Berolde of Spaine, and Floraman of Sardignia, addrested themselves to the Prince Argelao and the king of Bithinia, and encountred with them so furiously, as they were all cast forth of their saddles, being not able to mount themselves againe, because the number was so great, & the fight so hot where they were. Recinde and Arnedes ranne against the kings of Gambia and Sparta, they being all vnhorsed, except the king Recinde, who kept his horse valiantly. The Soldane Bellagris and the king of Trebifonde mette together, and brake their Launces verie brauely, not being any thing shaken in the encounter.

The Soldane of Persia, who desired to haue himselfe seene in the field, had no sooner espied the knight of the Sauadgeman, but he gaue his horse the spurres, and encountred with him so nobly, as the knight of the Sauadgeman lost both his stirrups, which he recovered againe presently: but the Soldane was so sore shaken, as he lay along on the necke of his horse, and had tumbled to the ground, if one of his traine had not immediately succoured him.

Among them that dealt in the first encounter, Dramusiende and Framustant was most to be regarded, for they falling at the breaking of their Launces, met in such couragious manner together with their bodies, as both horses and men were sent to the ground: and recovering themselves nimbly againe, they beganne a furious and cruell combate, and to the example of all other knights, charged one another with most puissant strokes.

All the Princes of the Emperours Court were at this first encounter, except king Edward, the Emperour Vernar, and the king Polendos, who would not depart from their Squadrons, fearing least they would disperse themselves out of order: and the Giant Almaroll kept them company likewise, because he saw no more Giants in the foremost rancke but Framustant, with whome Dramusiende fought very gallantly.

After

After they had thus encountred with their launces, and many knights throwne to the earth, some slaine outright, and other some in little better case: they drey to their swords on all sides, and began the most cruell Battaille that euer was seene, and the Captaines returned againe to their seuerall charges, because they would not haue them fall out of order. Argelao, and the king of Bithinia, fighting on soe against Floraman of Sardignia, and Berolde of Spaine, were succoured by the Soldane of Persia, who like a noble captaine prauiced among the ranckes, to animate and encourage the mindes of his friends, and assembling them in sundrie companies, hee came where these foure continued the fight still fiercely: but the Soldane, Bellagris with his traine, shewed such prowesse on the fresh comers, as within a while, both the Soldane of Persia himselfe, and the companie he brought with him were enforced to giue them place against their willes, leauing Argelao and the king of Bithinia in such danger, as had not the king of Trebisonde come vpon them with the second Turkish Squadron, they had bene slaine by the hands of Floraman, and the Prince Berolde. The Soldane of Persia was so greatly grieved, seeing his men so vanquished, and they that were left so out of heart, as he cried for succour to the king of Trebisonde: with whose aide he returned to recouer what he had lost, and at length made the meanes to get Argelao and the king of Bithinia thow the preece.

But he that had the seene the prince Primaleon, might plainly haue discerned his willingnes to pceuaile against his enemies: for he laide on loade so on euerie side, and following vpon the with his traine so nobly, as not one durst stand before him to endure his fury: by this meanes he recovered horses againe to Floraman and Berolde, but they were so wounded, as they were glad to get forth of the battell. Primaleon, Palmerin of England, and Florian of the Forrest with their traynes, helde the king of Trebisondes second Squadron so hate play, as they wished themselves a little surder off. But on the left hand of this Squadron was the most dangerous battaille, betwene Framustant and Dramusiande, who had gotten great aduan-

tage

tage of his enemies, by reason that Framustantes sword was broken to his hand, but Albayzar sent two hundred knights on soe to helpe the Giant, which when Primaleon perceiued, he spake to Palmerin of England in this manner: I pray you Sir, goe with me to succour our friend Dramusiande, for I will neuer returne into the Cittie, except I haue him with me. Without any more words they layd about them lustily, and knockt downe euery one that stood before them, untill they came where Dramusiande was: thither likewise came to defend him against his enemies, the knight of the Sauage man, Florendos, Platir, Polinard, Pompides, the Sage Aliart, Maiortes, Frisoll, Blandidon, Don Rosiran de la Bronde, Belcar, and his sonnes, being likewise accompanied with twentie of the most renowned knights in all the Armie: and to aide Framustant came the Soldan of Persia, and the king of Trebisonde, accompanied with a hundred knights of great authoritie and valour, they being all on soe.

When Primaleon saw his friends without their horses he alighted likewise, and so did the Prince Palmerin: but when the other Christian knights heard that Primaleon fought on soe, they forsooke their horses, and came hastily running to defend him, and now beganne such a cruell and fierce battell, as on all sides it remained very doubtfull and dangerous, Dramusiande and Framustant so layd vpon each other with their pommils of their swords, as they were at length so sore trauailed, as their stroakes could but little hurt them. Primaleon and the king of Trebisonde buckled together, but such was the fiercenesse of their fight, as in the end they were constrained to pause a while: the like happened to Palmerin of England and the Soldane of Persia: but the knight of the Sauage man slew two knights, who came traitterously and strooke him behinde his back, and Florendos with the rest of his companions stuck so closely to their tackling, as many of the enemies ranne like dogges away.

But Maiortes was so compassed in with his enemies, as none of his friends might come to helpe him, so that he had such greuous wounds giuen him, as (hauing slaine so many

Ce

of

of his enemies as durst abide him) he fell downe dead to the ground himselfe.

Florian of the Forrest, was so grieved when he saw him fall, as the teares trickled downe his cheeks, and albeit he was in extreame heauinesse, yet he followed on them that had kilde Maiortes, and reuenged his death nobly, because the death of so braue a noble man, was much lamented of them that knew his valiaunt minde, but most especiallie of his Sonne Dridan, who with anguish of mind cast himselfe amongst his enemies, and within a while he behaued himselfe so well, as the Turkes knew to their cost his extreame griefe for the death of his Father: yet such was his unhappie fortune in the end, as (being beset among the thickest of his enemies, & many cruell wounds giuen in diuerse places of his body) he fell to the ground, his vitall spirite forsaking him, and made him follow his Fathers dead ghost, which was no small griefe to the noble king Edward of England, in respect of the great friendshippe and loue, that had remayned of long time, betwene him and Maiortes.

And because he iudged, that fighting thus on foote would be the death of many his deere friends, he commaunded his hard horses to breake through the rances, whereto they presentlie obeyed, and scattered the troupes of the enemies in such sort, as all his friends were mounten on horsebacke againe, and Dramusiande and Framustant were separated asunder, but at this second encounter, the king of Trebisonde was slaine by the hand of the noble Palmerin of England. Dramusiand and Framustant were so dangerously wounded, as they were not able to hold out the fight any longer: wherefore, they were conueied thence, the one to the Turkes Tent, and the other to the Cittie to be tendered with present regard, according as their dangerous estates required. When the conflict was thus broken, diuers that had entred with the first Squadron, retired to take breath: but Primaleon, Palmerin, nor many of the Emperors Court beside, were any of them, for it was a pleasure to them to endure the trauaile of Armes, such small account they made of their hurts and their enemies.

The

The Emperesse and the Ladies seeing so great cruelty, and the losse of so many noble Gentlemen, withdrew themselves into their chambers, where they lamented in such grievous manner, as if they had seene the enemy entred into the Cittie, whereupon, many Ladies of great authorite (hearing their pittifull lamentations) came vnto the Pallace, reposing altogether their hope in the aged Emperour, if the knightes in the field should faile of the victorie.

The king Tarnaes would haue denied the Ladies entraunce into the Pallace, but it was more then he could well doe: for hardlie can any man gouerne the common people, especiallie, when a generall feare of their liues is threatned before their eyes.

The Emperour himself, whose debilitie in yeres and griefe of minde (conceyued by this vnlooked for stratageme) depriued him of his wonted good iudgement, and polittique meanes to prevent so great mischæse, as he could not imagine with himselfe how to remedie this suddaine misfortune: but euen with a Womans stomacke, rather then the inuincible minde he had alwayes borne heretofore, fel into pusillanimitie and doubtful feare with himselfe, vtterlie forgetting the auncient Adage: *Audaces Fortuna iuuat*; and Targiana, the Princesse of Armenia and all the Ladies in the Turkes Campe, were so fearefull and doubtfull of the victorie, as the Ladies in the Emperours Court.

King Edward being Generall of the Christian Armie, desiring to witnesse his noble valour in the fiede (having rested himselfe a pretie space) dismounted thre knightes one after another with one Launce: afterward drawing his sworde, he charged the enemies on all sides about him so valiauntlie, as they were glad to auoide and giue him place. And the Prince Albazar likewise, seeking to honour himselfe this day with the renoume of the fiede, came vpon the Christians with incredible pswesse: and such resistance he made with his fresh company, as the Battaille endured a long time very bloody and cruell, so that a man could not iudge which side had the most aduantage.

But then came a newe assault vpon the Christians, by a great number of Turkes on the left wing, among whome were fire monstrous and terrible Giants, which Assault was so hote for the time, as the Christians were enforced to retyre. The Giant Almaroll (who had all this while kept companie with the King Recinde his Lorde (saying the Christians withdrew themselves, addressed himselfe to one of the Giants called Dramorant, and with a mighty Grace that hee had gotten in the Battell, hee kept him such rough playe, as he could not passe on forwarde, as he willinglie would haue done. And the King Recinde, seeing another Giant named Trafamor, coming to strike at Almaroll behinde his backe, stepped before him to hinder his determination: but hee being Aged and feeble, and not able to resist the mercilesse stroaks of this bloody-minded Giant Trafamor, was so pittifully wounded, as he fell downe at the Giants fete, who tooke his sword, and thrust it to the heart of the King Recinde.

Which when the Prince Palmerin perceyued, hee was very sorrie, and coming in a rage to the Giant Trafamor, neuer left him, until such time as hee had layde him downe dead on the ground: but he was so sore hurt himselfe, as he was glad to get forth of the Battell, and by the commandement of the Prince Primaleon, hee was carryed into the Cittie, where they made great doubt of his life, by reason he had lost such abundance of his blood.

Almaroll and Dramorant were slayned, wherbyon the death of Recinde his sonne of Spayne, was blazed through the Army, which was such heauy newes to Arnedes King of France, his Cousin and singular good friend, as making no account of his life) hee threwe himself amongst his enemies: where (seeking to reuenge the death of the King of Spayne) hee lost his owne life, and by him was slaine Onistalde, sonne to the King Recinde, who followed Arnedes, to reuenge his fathers death.

King Edward and the other Princes, were so offended, when they sawe theyr dearest friends thus cast to the ground, as they ranne amongst the thickest of their Enemies, and layd on loades like desperate men: the Knight of the Sauadge-man like

likewise, on whose shield no manner of Device could be discerned, it was so hackt and broken in pieces: came vnto the Giant Dramorant, and handled him in such knightly order, as he made him tumble downe dead before him.

Belcar and the King Polendos, entring on the king of Acolias Troupe, were in the ende enforced to paye the sharpe tribute, which Death demaundeth of Nature by dutie: this unfortunate successe caused no little heauines among the Christians, but in especilly to the Prince Berolde of Spayne, who vnderstanding that the King Recinde his father, and Onistalde his Brother, were slaine by the enemies, he rushed in fiercely vpon them, determining eyther to reuenge theyr losse, or leaue his life among them for company.

And the Prince Floraman of Sardignia followed close after him, butchering the Turkes on euery side, whereby hee manifested to the Prince Berolde, the entyre good will and affection he bare him: but the valiaunt Florendos did most of all iniury the Enemye this day, for the knightly stroakes that were to be seene on his shield, deliuered a true testimony of the great dangers he had escaped: all which he made of no account, such was his earnest desire to reuenge the death of his deere friends. So that this Battell may be reputed for the moste cruell and perilous that euer was seene, in that so many grievous and tragicall Spectacles were to be seene that dismall Day, with the losse of a number of famous Princes and most renowned knights: for there you might haue seene Don Rosuell and Bellizart to breake hardily through the preece of theyr Enemies, without eyther feare or regarde of theyr owne liues, to looke for theyr noble father the Prince Belcar: and Francian on the other side, came to searche for his father, the King Polendos: which the Enemies perceyuing, and knowing them to be nere allyed to the Emperour, followed fiercely after them, to see who could first murther them.

The Prince Berolde was no sooner come to the place where his father lay slayne, but hee sawe how the Giant Almaroll had lost his Helmet, and his face so pittifully besmirted with his blood, as it was a great grieve to all that behelde him, for hee had

in that place laid seven hardy knights slaine at his foot, and determined not to forsake the dead body of the Prince, before he had lost his owne life likewise in that place.

The enemies resisted the Prince Berolde so strongly, as had it not bene for the succour of the Emperour Verner Primaleon, Florendos and Blandidon, he had bene sent to keepe his father company: and Primaleon laboured very earnestly to get the Giant Almaroll forth of the battaile, because he was destitute of a Helmet, his Armour broken very much, and his body wounded in many places, but such was the loue and fidelitie he bare to his Prince, as it was impossible for Primaleon to cause him withdraw himselfe.

Upon this rescue of the Princes to Berolde, the enemies came running amaine to this place where they were, with the Soldane of Persia conducting them, who hearing how Almaroll continued manfully killing all that came before him, galloped thorow the ranche till he came at Almaroll: but who so had seene the gallant behaviour of Primaleon and Florendos his Sonne, in defending Almaroll from the enemies fury, would haue imagined the very type of knightly valour to consist in these two famous champions, who were not a little grieved to see Almaroll so willing to seeke his owne death, and could not bee perswaded from that minde by any of his friends.

The Giant Gramato (who came in company with the Soldane of Persia) aduanced himselfe to deale with Almaroll, but the hardy Florendos stepped before him, and had slaine him outright, if Almaroll had not caught him about the body: but he being so grievously wounded, as no succour whatsoever would save his life, fell down dead before the Giant Gramato, whom Berolde afterwarde charged so roughly, as Gramato ended his life to accompany the Giant Almaroll.

Now began the courage of the Christians to encrease woorthily, in that they were stronger in that place then the Turkes, for the Soldane of Persia was conveyed forth of the Battaile, by reason of a wound that he had receiued in his throte by the

push

push of a sword: so that the Soldane Bellagris found good opportunity, to carry the bodies of the King Recinde and Onistalde his sonne forth of the field, the Prince Berolde helping to conduct the bodies, because himselfe had lost so much blood, as he could scantily hold out any longer.

Primaleon hauing a regard to the troupes of men dispersed in the field, beheld King Edward and his traine driuen to the retire, for that Albayzar accompanied with three Giants and a number of knights (seeing the Christians soe trauailed) came upon them with a fresh charge: but King Edward met his proud enemy with such puissance, as he was glad to draw backe to rest himselfe a while, assuring you, that the King of England behaved himselfe so nobly in the field, as the whole Christian campe reposed themselves on him.

Pompides, Basiliart, the Sage Aliart, Platir, Frisol, Germain of Orlnance, Luyman of Burgundie, Rodamont, Albanis of Frize, Dragonalt, Don Rosiran de la Bronde, Tremoran, Tenebrant, Don Rosuell, Bellizart, and diuers other of the Christian knights resisted the enemy verie valiantly, and followed so fast upon Albayzar and his company, as (had not fresh supplies still come) they had made a notable conquest of their aduersaries.

Primaleon left to gouerne these the Soldane Bellagris, and Blandidon went with Florendos and Floraman to the noble King Edward of England, and as they would haue approached to him, they espied the Emperour Verner, and Polinard his Brother on foot, enclosed with such a number of Turkes, as their liues were greatly to be feared: for the King of Bythinia had slaine the Emperour Verners Horse, and falling to the ground, brake one of his Masters legges in the fall, so that the Emperour was faine to stand vpon one legge to defend himselfe, in which hard case hee was verie neare his death, but that his Brother Polinard stept presently before him, and defended him with such manly prowesse, as the enemy could not any way come to hurt the Emperour.

stoutly withall, as Pompides, Platir, and the other Princes might rest themselves, and cause their Friends that were there slaine, to be transported thence, in the ende hee brought Albayzar into such estate, as he had kild him in the field, if hee had not bene the sooner rescued by the Giants that came with him: Neuerthelesse, hee taught him his dutie so well, as hee toke the English Prince for a very sharpe Scholemaster.

While King Edward and Albayzar continued theyr fight, the night drawing on apace, the Trumpets sounded the retreat, so that euery one hastened vnto his Ensigne: the King Edward summoned his men together, they all thinking so well on theyr Generall, as they iudged themselves happy to be vnder his leading and government. Bellagris and Primaleon brought their traines likewise to him, and after they were all placed in array, the Christians betooke themselves to the Cittie, and the Turkes returned to theyr Campe.

CHAP. LXIII.

Of that which they did at Constantinople, before they gaue the Enemies the second Battell, and of the great misfortunes which hapned in the Citty, amongst which, chanced the vntimely death of the aged Emperour Palmerin.



After that the Christian and Pagan Princes, with theyr forces on eyther side, were thus retyred to theyr seuerall holds, by the consent of Albayzar & Palmerin, the Princes and knights that were slaine in the battell, were carryed thence to be interred, and theyr funeralls to be performed: but for the greiuous complaints made in the Cittie, for the losse of so many

Primaleon seeing the misfortune of the Emperour of Allemagne, and how the Turkes sought euery way to take his life from him, was so ouercome with inward griefe, as the teares trickled downe his cheekes: and fearing now the utter ruine of Constantinople, he ran with such courage vpon the enemies, as downe they tumbled dead to the ground on euery side of him. And Florendos, thought his Armour was shiuered, and he had no shield to defend himselfe, yet accompanied with the Prince Floraman, hee slew his father, shewing incredible prowesse. Floraman settled himselfe against the king of Bythinia, and preyed so well against him, as he sent him headlong to the ground deprived of his life: but Primaleon seeing Floraman to bee somewhat sore hurt, desired him to withdraw himselfe out of the Battell.

When the Turkes that were conducted by the king of Bythinia, sawe theyr Captain slaine, they beganne to retire very speedily, by which meanes Primaleon recovered and mounted Polinard on horsebacke againe: but hee could not imagine howe to get the Emperour Vernar out of the field: which made him aduenture with his men in such daunger, as it was doubtfull he should haue fallen into his enemies hands. For the king of Armenia came vpon them againe with foure thousand men, hoping to reconer that which the other kings had lost, so that Primaleon was faine to alight from his horse, for the defence of the Emperour Vernar: in like manner did most of the Princes and knights, fearing least any harme should come vnto the Prince and the Emperour, but many of them were slaine in this newe assault, and so was the king of Armenia, with five hundred of his best tryed Soldyers.

The Emperour Vernar, seeing Death ready to entertaine him, and that there was no meanes for him to shun it, embraced it mildly and patiently: but when the young Princes sawe the Emperour slaine, they carryed him south of the field, and brought him with great heauinesse into the Cittie, which was now become in a manner desolate.

The most vertuous and valiant King Edward, seeing himselfe left alone with the Soldane Albayzar, whome hee dealt so



ny noble and renowned Princes, I leave them to the iudgement of the courteous Reader, who must needs thinke the grieve to be great, in that Christendome receiued such a losse, as in many yeeres could not be recovered againe. The consideration hereof entred so deepe into the aged Emperours heart, as he forsooke this earthly bale of misery, yelding his soule to God, and his body to the bowelles of his mother, from whence it came at first: at which time, the enchanted bird that he kept in his pallace, sung thre times together with a very pittifull note, so that both olde and young in the Court, did not a little maruaile thereat.

Of this birde, you may reade moze at large in the notable and famous History of the Emperour Palmerins life, which Booke is called Palmerin d'Oliue, a History plentifully storied with discourses of singular delight, being for the worthinesse thereof, esteemed of many Nations, as this History is likewise: and therefore, for the excellency of this aforesaide History, and in respect it dependeth on matters briefly touched in this booke, so that it is accounted as a parcell of this History, I intend (God ayding me, to publish it shortly, when I doubt not) but the Gentle reader shall finde it worthy of the commendations that I haue vsed of it in this place. The Obsequies and Funerallles of the Emperour were solemnized with great pompe and dignitie: in like manner did they honour the Emperour of Allemainge, and the other Kings that were slaine in the battaile.

Not many dayes after, the wounded Princes found themselves in good disposition againe, weereupon they determined to enter the field, because the enemies demaunded the battaile: but first of all they provided for the safegard of the City, which was committed to the charge of the King Tarnaes of Lacedemonia: and the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, they hauing their conduct five hundred knights on horsebacke, and foure thousand able footemen, and for the rest of the Christians they were deuised into five seuerall Bands. The first was conducted by the Prince Primaleon, who had attending on him two thousand and five hundred knights. The second Band,

being of the same number, was committed to the Prince Floraman of Sardignia. The third, to the king Estrellant. The fourth, to Albanis of Frieze. The fifth, to Drapos Duke of Normandie: all these five bands being like in number. The first was vnder the charge of the noble king Edward, to whom came all the rest of the Christian souldiers. The Soldane Bellagris with his traine, had the charge of the viter wings, to giue ayde where he saw neede required.

When these knights departed from the citie toward the field, they were all in blacke Armour, and their shields of the same colour without any deuices, their horses were likewise trapped in blacke, and the moze to expresse their inward heavinesse, they would haue neither Drumme, Trumpet, nor any kind of instrument vsed in warre with them. Neuerthlesse, albeit this sad proceeding to the battaile, declared their owne heavinesse, yet was it likewise a feare and terror to the enemy, seeing them coming farre from them: and euery man had closed the Vener of his helmet, because the enemy should not perceiue their mournfull countenances.

When they were come to the place where the Battaille should be fought, they spread themselves abroad in the field, after the deuice of their Captaines, without making any maner of noyse at all. The footemen came after, being all attired in black likewise, and without either Drums, Whifes, or Trumpets, wherby they gaue the enemies to vnderstand, what vnfained loue and affection they bare to their Emperour, and how they could not forget what gracious and friendly entertainement, he was wont to make to his very enemies.

A thing which all Princes ought to haue in regard, and in remembryng the great vertue of this famous Emperour, to gouerne their Kingdomes in such sort, as the people may rather know what a græuous losse they haue by the death of such a Prince, then to behaue themselves in such manner, as their Subiects shall reioyce to be rid of their Gouernour. The Turks were greatly abashed, seeing their enemies come marching in this order, they knew well by their mourning habits, that they would in this battell make no account of their liues.

But

But Albayzar seeing the astonishment of his Souldiers, came to encourage them like a noble captaine, laying before them the renoume of the victorie, which should be the recompence of all their trauailes, and a sufficient reuenge for the death of many of their parents and friendes, who lost their liues before the walles of Constantinople, for which cause this warre was first enterprised.

When he had a good space used these and such like speeches to them, they began to waie desirous of the battaile, and chasping all their former feare out of remembrance, they marched on after the same manner as they did in the first battaile, saving that they were under the charge of other captaines, for that they which conducted them before were slaine. Their Armour was very much broken and bzuised, and so died with the blood that issued from their bodies, that it was almost as strange a sight in the field, as the Christians sad and mournefull habites of blacke.

King Edward seeing his men placed in decent order, and the backwings in such regard as he thought meetest, he gaue charge to Primaleon to giue the consent with his company, for he had with him the noble Palmerin of England, Florian of the Forrest, Florondos, Platir, Pompides, Blandidon, Don Rosuel, Bellizart, Dragonalt, King of Nauarre, the Giant Dramusian, and the most renoumed princes of the Court.

On the enemies side, the king of Actolia was first in the field, because he conducted the foremost troupe, wherein was the most puissant knights in all the Turkish Armie, beside the Giant Framusian, who desired aboue all other things to preuaile against Dramusian. The Christians finding themselves in a readinesse, the Turkes sounded their Drummes and Trumpets to beginne the Battaille: but sodainely came on them so great a tempest, as they returned backs againe, being not able to ioyne in fight for the space of two houres after.

In the meane time as this tempest continueth, let vs returne to the Citie of Constantinople, which (as you haue heard before) was committed to the charge of Tarnacs king of Lacedaemonia

demonia, and the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, who finding by his Art that the Citie of Constantinople would be brought to destruction, and that king Edward of England, and the Prince Primaleon, with the rest of the Princes & Knights that maintained the warre, would stand in great hazard of losing their liues, being not able to auoid the cruelty of the Turkes who would get the Citie into their possession: upon these aforesaid considerations he determined to provide for the safety of the Princesses and Ladies of high authority, who were (most of them) great with childe, and neare the time of their deliuerance. Wherefore, that the fruit of their bodies might not perish in this extremity, he raised a very darke and obscure cloude, which shadowed the light of the firmament in such sort, as not onely they in the field were covered therewith, but also the Citie was so wrapt in the cloud, as it was not possible for them to discern it.

In the meane while, both the Armies remained in great amazement by this darkenesse, as they had not the power to meete together, Aliart conueyed through this darke Cloud, the Emperesse, the Princess Polinarda, and all other Princesses and Ladies beside, to the Perillous Isle, which the Prince Palmerin of England had bestowed on him: and he shadowed the Isle likewise (by his Enchantment) in such manner, that it remained (as it were) inuisible, untill Aliart conceived so well of the time and reason, as he thought good to discouer it. These Ladies were surpris'd with marvellous admiration, when they found themselves not in Constantinople, but in a strange land, where they could not haue their company, who had endured so many hard and dangerous conflicts for their sakes, this (aboue all other causes) did most offend and trouble their consciences: yet at length, when they saw no other remedy, they were glad to practise and content themselves with often visiting each other in their Chambers, to expell all other cogitations that seemed irksome vnto them.

Thus will we leaue the Emperesse and her ladies in the Perillous Isle, and returne to the King Tarnacs at Constantinople, who (after the cloude was banished away, and the day cleare againe)

## The second Part

again) seeing that the Emperesse with her Ladies, and the Sage Aliart had forsaken his Companie, conceived such extreame grieffe within himselfe (doubting least some mischaunce had befallen them) as amidst his pittifull lamentations he yielded up the Ghost: leaving the Cittie so comfortlesse and dispayring within themselves, as they desired to finish their lues, forsaking quite all hope in them that were in the fildes, to whome happened what Fortune had ordained, as you may read in the Chapter following.

### CHAP. LXV.

¶ Of the second Battell betweene the Christians and the Turkes, and what happened therein.



The darke cloud being gone out of sight, and the Sage Aliart having brought the Emperesse and her Ladies to the Perillous Isle, the day began to waxe cleere againe, and the Armie marched forward to meeete together. But as they were about to enter the skyrmish, they heard a most lamentable and pittifull outcrye, which made them stape their hands, and looking about to see the cause of this noyse, they saw a great many of Ladies and Damosells come forth of the Cittie, with their haire disperfed abroad over theyr shoulders, and wringing their handes in very grievous manner. And for that they had lost the King Tarnaes, and the Sage Aliart, whom they knew were left for their succour and Defence: they came into the Christian Campe, to their Husbonds, Brethren, Sonnes, and Kinsmen: for seeing they could promise themselves no assurance in the Cittie, they would live and die with them in the fildes.

King

## of Palmerin of England.

47

King Edward and Primaleon were so amazed at the clamor of these Women, as they caused theyr Ensignes to stay, and commanded the Horsemen not to breake theyr Array, till they had understood the cause of this disorder: but when it was told them, how that the King Tarnaes and the Sage Aliart had forsaken the Cittie, they were both driven into a great admiration with themselves, whereupon they sent Pompides, and Placir into the Cittie, to bring them certaine tydings of this unlooked for mischaunce.

When these two knightes were come into the Cittie, and heard after what manner the King Tarnaes dyed, as also howe the Sage Aliart was gone no man could tell whether: they beganne to thinke within themselves, that both they and all theyr Traine were brought to such extremitie, as Fortune had concluded to finish the memorie of theyr knightly doodes, by delivering theyr lues to the swords of theyr enemies. They did likewise perswade themselves, that the Sage Aliart absented himselfe for no other occasion, but onely because he perceyued theyr generall destruction was at hand: & in this respect, they indged he had provided some refuge for the Emperesse and the Ladies, that their Enemies might not triumph in theyr misfortunes, to the great discontentment of theyr Lordes and Husbonds. With these heavy felwes they returned to their Camp againe, certifying King Edward, and Primaleon, how the Sage Aliart was departed: whereupon they concluded by generall determination, to withdraw themselves into the Cittie, to make provision for the Defence thereof, before they would enter the Battell with their Enemies.

But I assure you, it was a pittifull sight to behold, how the Men, Women, and Children, came and fell down at the Princes feete: yea, the Ancient Citizens, with their gray heads, and white beards, being so weake and feeble with Age, as they were glad to support themselves with their staves: they all made their humble requests, that they might rather enter the Battell, and there to end their lues, then to be destroyed at home with their Wives and Children by the enemye.

King

King Edward, Primaleon, and all other Princes were not a little abashed, finding the Pallace in such a desolate manner, neyther the Emperesse, the Princesses, nor any of the other Ladies to be founde, this bereed their mindes with vnerpressable griefe. They went into theyr accustomed Chambers, and not finding them there to whome they were most affectionate, their very soules were ready to forsake theyr bodyes: for the young Princes, enioying theyr sweet Ladies so short a time, for whose sakes they had suffered so many bitter brunts, they thought themselves not able to liue any long time, being deprived of their company, whom they honozed with most pure and vnfained affection. For now their paines were greater then ever they had bene before, and this mishap was more irksome to them then all the dangers past, because their Ladies were the rewardes of their knightly victozies: but hauing thus lost them on such a sodaine, they were out of hope to enioy the sight of them any more, wherefore they seemed as men deprived of their senses, looking gassly and fearefully one vpon an other, knowing not which way to comfort or redresse their present heauynesse.

In this case the Christian Princes remained for the space of three daies, hauing no minde at all to giue their enemies battaile, during which time, Primaleon made conueiance of the aged men, with their wiues and children in the night time, to diuers of his Castles and Fortresses nere adioyning, knowing them farre vnable to helpe in this extremitie, and then he caused the wals of the Cittie to be beaten flat to the ground, which was thought good by the aduice of euery one to bee so done, and that for two especiall causes. The first, that it would more animate and embolden the Christians in the time of battaile, seeing themselves dispoyled of the place, wherein they reposed their assurance of safety. The other, that the enemies should not vaunt how they had destroyed the City, but that it was defaced by the Christians themselves, if so be Fortune suffered them to enioy the victorie.

They of the citie seeing the walles so spoyled, euen to the  
verie

very first foundation thereof, conceived such hatred against the Turkes (whome they reputed to cause the subuersion of their strongest defence) as they prepared themselves altogether to enter the field, to reuenge themselves on their proud and vsurping enemies: and so they marched all with the Princes into the field, who went in the same manner as they did before, when Aliart conueied the Emperesse and her Ladies from Constantinople to the Perillous Isle.

Albayzar knowing well the intent of his enemies, commanded his Captaines to place their men in aray, afterward, the Trumpets summoning them brauely to the Battaille, he commanded the king of Actolia to giue the onset with his Band to the enemy: whereto the king presently obeyed, and coming on gallantly with his troupe of men, the Prince Primaleon prepared himselfe to receiue him, and giuing his horse the spurres, he persuailed so fortunately in the encounter, as he made the king of Actolia measure his length on the ground, but hee was quickly succoured by his men, otherwise Primaleon had giuen him his deaths wound. Palmerin of England ran against the Prince Argelao, and met him with such puissance, as his Lance pierced cleane thorow his body, so that he fell to the ground starke dead: the like did the knight of the Sauage man to a valiant knight named Richard, who was esteemed a singular Captaine amongst the Turkes: the Prince Florendos, Plair, Gracian, Berolde, and the other knights, slew them outright likewise that encountred them in the fount. Dramusiande and Framustant brake their Launces, but yet they kept their horses valiantly: whercupon, they drew their swordes, and began to charge each other very furiously. The Christians behaued themselves so worthily at this first encounter, as the king of Actolia (whose traine were twice so many in number, as they with the Prince Primaleon) was glad to retire, being not able to endure the hardy stroakes of the Princes, Palmerin, Florian & Florendos: but they were faine to betake themselves for refuge to the second squadron, which was conducted by the king of Caspia, who came brauely vpon Primaleon and his company, yet not able to enforce the to retire one sote back

from them, for Palmerin and the other princes maintained the fight so sharply against them, as they were once more compelled to recople backward: Which the Soldane of Persia perceiuing he came to assist them with his company, when in sooth he had made a great slaughter of the wearied Christians, if it had not bene for the Prince Floraman: who seeing the Soldane of Persia come so fast forward with his Squadron, he rushed in vpon them with his Band of men, and resisted them in very gallant manner. Palmerin bare great malice to the Soldane of Persia, because he was so amorous of y<sup>e</sup> Princesse Polinarda his wife, wherefore he ran fiercely against him, and brake his Launce so brancly on him, as the Soldane tumbled headlong backward out of his Saddle: but the Turkes laboured earnestly to mount the king againe, and Primaleon went to ayde the Prince Floraman, who was likewise cast beside his horse.

Thus were they helping one another of them nearest at hand, so that they had forgotten Dramusiande and Framustant, who hauing forsaken their horses, fought so long together & in such cruell manner, as their bodies were wounded in many places, but Dramusiande was like to sustaine the worst, in that Framustant was assisted against him by another Knight, named Grantor: and Dramusiande had bene slaine betwene them, if it had not bene for the Prince Florian his deere friend, who came and buckled with Grantor in such sort, as he laide him dead at his foote immediatly.

When the Turkes beheld that Grantor was slaine, they environed the Prince Florian and Dramusiande so terrible on euerie side, as their lines were brought into some danger: but the king Estrellant of Hungaria (who had the charge of the third Christian Squadron) entred vpon the Turkes, and drove them backe perforce, till they saw their friends brought in to safetie againe, and Framustant was very nere discharged of his life, but the Soldane Albayzar seeing his danger, commaunded them altogether to runne on the Christians, the like did King Edward to his men, because they should helpe their fellowes in their necessitie. Florian seeing Albayzar coming with his Launce charged in his rest, gaue his horse the

spurs.

spurs to meete him, & these two worthy knights encountred together so nobly, as Albayzar was glad to catch holde about the necke of his horse to shun the fall: but the Prince Florian's horse was so strake with trauaile, as he fell to the ground vnder his Rider, who leapt out of the Saddle quickly, so that he sustained no harme by the fall. Albayzar laboured very earnestly, to get Dramusiande and the Prince Florian within the ranks of his men, because hee sawe how cruelly they hacked and hewed the Turkes, that he thought himselfe happiest who could auoid their presence, but yet such a company of men had Albayzar heind them in withall, as the losse of their lines were now determined, if the Soldan Bellagris & Polinarda had not arriued there with expedition, for they walking by and downe with their Bandes of men, to giue aide where they perceiued necessitie required, saw the dangerous estates of Dramusiande and Florian, and thrusting in vpon the Turkes with great puissance, they reskewed Dramusiande, and brought him forth of the Armie to rest himselfe a while, and they mounted Florian on horsebacke againe, notwithstanding all the praieses of the enemy to the contrary, but they were glad to conuey Framustant forth of the Battaille likewise, for they saue him so seere trauailed, as he was scant able to stand on his feete.

After that these two Giants were out of the field, the greatest hurley burly was by the prince Psimaleon, because Palmerin of England and the Soldane of Persia, (they being on foote) fought maruellous fiercely together, the like did Polinard with a stout Turke named Ferrebrocque, which caused the men on all sides to hasten to this conflict. The King of Aetolia accompanied with five hundred knights on foote, came to reskew the Soldan of Persia, but Berolde of Spaine, remembryng the death of the King Recinde his ffather, ioyned in fight with the King of Aetolia. King Edward came thither with his troupe of men to assist his friends, and so did Albayzar on the behalfe of the Soldane of Persia, he bringing with him many knights, beside foure stout and cruel Giants, whose presence did much terrifie the Christians, so that many of them durit not enter the fight with such Monsters.

Yet could not all these knights and Giants dismay the noble Palmerin of Englad, but he continued in fight so brauely with the Soldane of Persia, as he would not leaue him, till he saw him slaine at his foote: for whose death the Turkes lamented very much, in that he was the principall captaine vnder the Prince Albayzar, who likewise took the Soldanes death so heauily, as he came with his men vpon the Christians like a mad man. The victorie of the Prince Palmerin against the Soldane, was but little comfort to him, in that he saw y prince Polinard (who fought still against Ferrebrocque) fall downe dead to the ground, & Ferrebrocque with diuers other Turkes fall downe slaine on each side of him likewise: but the death of Polinard was very greuous to his friends and companions, in that the Emperour Vernar his brother was kilde in the first battail, and the Emperesse Bazilia (seeing her lord and husband gon) reposed al her hope and comfort on the prince Polinard. Florendos, whose griefe could not be expressed for the death of his friend Polinard, because they had bene nourished al their youth together, in the Emperours court) to reuenge the death of her mere friend and companion, he ran fiercely amongst the thickest of his enemies, and the first he met withal was the giant Pandolfo, who holding a mightie mace in his hand, aduanced himselfe to receiue the prince Florendos. When began a fierce and terrible combat betwene them, so that within a while, the giant Pandolfo railed and exclaimed against his gods horribly, finding himselfe not able to resist the force of one knight, he being wont to banquish euery one that entred fight with him: but Florendos not regarding his railing words, brought him into such feeble estate, as at length he fell downe on his knees, when Florendos taking off his Helmet, ströke of his head from his shoulders. Berolde of Spaine likewise slew the king of Aetolia, which when Albayzar perceiued, he came running on Berolde, and twentie knights with him, so that they had murdered the Spanish prince amongst them, but the Soldane Bellagris hindered their determination: for he came with his band of men and reskewed him, commanding foure knights to carrie him forth of the battaile, for that he seemed rather

rather

rather a dead man, then one that had any life left in him, and in this order he was brought to Pacentio the Emperours chiefe Chamberlaine, who had the charge giuen him for the wounded persons, because he was verie skilfull therein, and being a man of very auncient time, he was not iudged fit to enter the fight. The Prince Berolde misfortune was such griefe to his friends, as they rather desired to beare him company, then to liue in hope of an vncertain victorie, which was y more doubtful to them when they remembred the losse of the Emperour Vernar, the King Recinde and the other Princes.

But the knight of the Sauageman, seeing the great slaughter that Albayzar made of his friends, pricked thorow to the place where he was, and came vnto him with these wordes. Now is the time Albayzar, which alloweth vs opportunitie to satisfie our long desired reuenge of eche other, and because we two are the occasions of all this trouble, I pray thee let this quarrell be ended betwene thee and mee, and let not those (who are innocent in this matter) lose their liues for our offences. I am so glad (answered Albayzar) that it is my good happe to meete with thee at this time, as I would not chaunge my present fortune for the most renowned estate in the world. So breaking off, these two valiant Princes began a fierce combat, wherein Albayzar was brought into great danger, but that a Giant named Altrope came and defended him, which Giant the knight of the Sauadgeman soon depriued of his life, and would haue gone afterward forth of the Battaille to rest himselfe a while, but the king of Sparta came with a great many knightes, and compassed the knight of the Sauageman in such sort, as he was fully determined to lose his life amongst them. Yet so it chaunced, that Primaleon and Palmerin, (who saw the hard case of his Brother Florian) arriued there, and at this bickering they slew the king of Sparta, Luymeno his Sonne, and Antilles his Brother, beside many other knights and personages of great account: and on the Christians side were slaine, Tenebrant and Francian, whose losse the Christians did very much lament. Then was tidings brought to the Soldane Bellagris, that one had kild his ionne Blandidon,



## The second Part

which report was so gréuous to him, as he brake thro' the thickest of his enemies, till he came where his Sonnelage: then presently he alighted from his horse, and coming to his Sonne, he made such sorrowfull lamentations oner him, as it would haue moued a stony heart to pittie. Blandidon, who had yet some life left in him, hearing the voice of the Soldane of Niquee his ffather, opened his eyes, and offered to lift up his head to speake vnto him: but such was his febleness, as he could not moue his head, whereupon he was caried forth of the field, and committed to the custody of the olde Pacentio.

Bellagris took the matter so heauily for his sonne, as he concluded to finish his dayes in that place, and so cruelly was he assaulted by his enemy, as he likewise resigned up his vitall spirite, after that he had kilde the Giant Malearque. In this conflict were slaine of the Turkes, the king of Gamba, and his two brothers, the Giant Pistrato, the king of Caspia, the Giant Framustant, who was slaine by the noble Draminfiande, beside a number of famous Turkes, and on the Christians side were slaine Germaine of Orleance, Luyman of Burgundie, Pompides the king of Scots, and diuers other worthy Christian souldiers.

But then to amaze them the more, a number of the Cittizens of Constantinople, brought forth such riches as was left in the Citie, and set it on fire before the enemies face, to the end that if the enemy remayned victor, he should not vaunt of the spoyle of their goods: but they being not so content, when they had burnt their riches, went and set on fire the bravest buildinges in the Citie, and one after another brought them all into Cinders, which was no small grieue to the Christian Arme, seeing such a renowned Citie so set on fire, which had triumphed over all other Nations.

Albayzar seeing the Christians stricken in a maze at the sight of the fire, came with a fresh band of men vpon them, and the knight of the Sauadgeman seeing Albayzar coming, buckled himself against him, where on eyther side was sholone incredible prowess: but in the end the Prince Florian prevailed so well against his enemy, as he yielded up the ghost at his foote: which the

the Turkes beholding, they beganne to faint very much, in that their whole hope and refuge lay in the Prince of Babylon, neuertheless, such was their affection to him, as they would not depart from his dead body, but hemde in the knight of the Sauage man so hardly on euery side, as they had almost slaine him, but that he was rescued by diuers of his friends, who in short time got the better of the Turkes, and the knight of the Sauage man was caried to the olde Pacentio, who iudged him almost past recovery.

Thus did the Christians obtaine the victory of the Turkes, albeit with little pleasure to themselves, for such small account they made of the honour they had gotten, as no man had any mind to goe fetch the riches which was left in the Turkes tents, so grievously did they take the losse of their friends, and the absence of their Ladies, whom they thought neuer to see againe.

The common Hindes and Woies of the Countrey, came to ransacke the Turkes tents, and because they had more knowledge of the Gold, then of the infinite riches of the precious Stones and other Jewels, they took their fill of the worst, leaving those things behinde them of greater estimation: not much vnlike to Aelopes Cocker, that forsooke a precious Stone for a Barley corne, but it is to be committed to the brutishnes of the people, in that they had not bene brought up in places of knowledge and good iudgement.



CHAP. LXVI.

The counsell and aduise, that the Sage Aliart gaue to them of the Empire of Constantinople. And how he caused the body of the Emperour Palmerin, and the other Princes that were wounded in the Battaille, to be conueied to the Perillous Isle.



When the Christians had thus preuailed against the Turkes, the Sage Aliart came into the Christian Camps, and set downe order, that all they which had bene slaine in the Battaille, should be buried in such maner, as their posterity after them should remember their singular prowesse in this Battaille against the great Turke. And as for them that were liuing, yet very sore wounded, he annointed them with a certaine kinde of oyntment, the vertue wherof was such, as it cast them into a sound slepe.

In the meane while Argentao, the Gouernour of the Pro-sound Isle, (whom the Sage Aliart had commaunded to come) arrived in the Porte of Constantinople, with foure Gallies, and being come on shoare, the Sage Aliart & he went into the Cittie, and commaunded all the inhabitants to assemble themselves together, which they did immediately, when he began to let them vnderstand, what small hope was to be reposed on the liues of the Prince Primaleon their Emperour, and Florendos his Sonne, because they had bene so cruelly wounded in the Battaille, desiring them to take their losse so patiently as they could, and not to dismay themselves: but that they should provide for the reedifying their Cittie, not onely to assure them

themselves from the danger of their enemies, but to witnesse to the world, that fortune had not the power to rote out quite the name of the noble Cittie of Constantinople, as she had sub-nerted the memoire of many other famous and renowned Citties.

Bestoc, they should call home againe these Citizens, who (for feare of daunger) had taken themselves to the heave ad-ioyning Fortresses, and by a generall voyce to chose them a gouernour, for otherwise they should not containe themselves within bonds of assurance. And therefore (quoth he) I am the more willing you should chose you a Gouernour (if so bee the Emperour Primaleon, and the Prince Florendos his Sonne, should finish their liues, by the hurts they haue receiued in the Battaille, because I would not haue you left comfortlesse: but this you must vnderstand, that the yong Princeesse Primaleon, Sonne of the noble Florendos and the Princeesse Miragarda, must be the next inheritour of the Empire. Now, for that the Childe is very yong, and beside, hee is a long way hence, I would you would get you such a gouernour, as might be thought worthy of so great a charge, and whom you may be well contented withall, vntill the yong Primaleon come to sufficient yeares, that hee may be able to receiue his royall Scepter of gouernment.

And this I must desire you, that you will not be offended because I keepe the childe so farre from you, for I assure you, he shall be daily in the company of other noble Princes, with whome hee shall exercise knightly Armes, and learne the rules of discretion and Vertue, wherewith it is necessary a Prince should be adorne. For your selues, I would wish you to order your dealings so well, as he that shall succede this Empire, may receiue no occasion to dislike you: and that you may continue your course the better, I will come diuers times to visite you, to let you vnderstand of the welfare of the Emperour Primaleon.

The Citizens of Constantinople tooke in very good part these friendly speeches, but they were not a little agrieved, that there was

was no greater assurance of the Emperour Primaleons life: wherefore seeing the Sage Aliart excused the matter so well, they requested of him, that he would tell them in what place the young Prince was nourished, that they might come sometimes to visit him as their Lord and Soueraigne.

Your request (answered Aliart) is very great, yet will I somewhat content your earnest desire: the place where your prince is nourished, is called the Perillous Isle, which sometime belonged to the Sage Virganda, but at this time it is in my custody, so that my brother, and the noble Palmerin of England, who conquered it with his sword and great losse of his blood, bestowed it vpon me.

After he had thus directed them for the order of their gouernment, he took his way to the monasterie of Saint Clare, where the body of the Emperour Palmerin lay embalmed, and the bodies of the other Kings and Princeesse, which he caused to be conueyed into one of Argentaos Gallies: but Primaleon, King Edward and his sornes, Berolde, Gracian, Floraman of Sardignia, and Blandidon, who were all esteemed as dead persons, so that Aliart had laid them in such a traunce, they were laid in another Galley, where their wounds were visited very diligently.

When the Gallies departing from the Citie, the people began to lament exceedingly, because so many noble princes were brought into such dangerous estates: yet durst they not shew any kind of feare or dismay, leaſt they should chance to displeaſe their friend the Sage Aliart. Within ſeue dapes the Gallies arrived at the Perillous Isle, where their Ladies

received them very woorthily, and the Sage Aliart

shewed himselfe so diligent towards the recovery of their health, as they remained on all sides greatly contented.

FINIS.

To the courteous Reader.



Thus Gentlemen, I have finished the second part of this most famous History, desiring you to beare with the rudenesse in the translation, and to esteeme of my good will, which farre more then my cunning will stretch unto. As for the the History of Palmerin d'Oliue, which containeth three ſeuerall parts, and should haue bin translated before this, or Primaleon of Greece, because they are the original of all the other stories: after I have ended the third part of this wortheie History (God aiding me) you shall haue them very speedily, with any thing else that I desire you to accept of this, and to consider how highly it hath bene, and yet is esteemed in diuers countries, being first written in the Spanish towne, next in Italian, and afterwards in French, and how it hath bene countenanced with the titles of Princes and Personages of great dignitie, which may moue you to allow it the better acceptation, in that it is to the honour of our countrey of England, and desired by strangers, to honor it the more. Thus not doubting of your fauourable iudgement, I humbly take my leave, wishing you all good happes, that is meet for all such gentle and friendly mindes to haue.

Yours A.M.



**A Table for the more ready finding  
of euery Chapter, contained  
in this Booke.**

- O**f that which happened to the Prince *Florendos*, after that he had left the Castle of *Drarorant* the *Cruell*, where he vanquished *Astribor*. chap. 1.
- Of that which happened to the Prince *Florendos*, after that hee departed from the castle of the Prince *Arnalte*, chap. 2.
- How the Damosell of the Princeesse of *Terace*, arriued at the Court of the Emperour *Palmerin*. And of that which happened to the Knight of the *Tiger*. chap. 3.
- Of that which happened to the Knight of the *Tiger*, against those that were in ambush to take the Damosel. chap. 4.
- Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, after he departed from the Court of the Emperour *Vernar*. chap. 5.
- Of that which happened to the knight of the Sauage man, before he had taken his farewel of the Damosell. chap. 6.
- How the knights which belonged to the giants *Brocalon* and *Baleato*, surrendred vp the Castles vnto the noble knight of the Sauage man: and of that which happned to the prince *Florendos*, &c. chap. 7.
- Of the combates that the Prince *Florendos* fought, the second day after hee enterprised to guard the Shield of the Princeesse *Miragarda*. chap. 8.
- Of a strange aduenture which chaunced before the Castle of the Giant *Almarol*, and what happened to the Prince *Florendos*. chap. 9.
- Here shall be declared, what and who the Knight was, that came in the company of the Princeesse *Arnalte*, & for what cause he and she traualled to the castle of the Giant *Almaroll*: and of the great entertainment that was made in the Court. &c. chap. 10.
- How the Emperour with his noble company, entred the city of Constantinople, & of the gracious entertainment which was made to *Leonarda*, &c. chap. 11.

Of

**The Table.**

224

- Of an aduenture which happened in the Court of the Emperour *Pa'merin*, and of, &c. cha. 12.
- Here shall be discoursed what and who the Damosell was, that had thus gotten the Prince *Florian*, &c. chap. 13.
- Of that which happened to the knight of the *Tiger*, following the search of the prince *Florian*, &c. cha. 14.
- Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, &c. cha. 15.
- Of the aduentures which chaunced to the Knight of the Sauage man, conducting these Ladies to the king of Spaines Court: and of that which happened to the knight of the *Tiger*, &c. cha. 16.
- Of the combat betweene the Giant *Esponnantable*, and the noble knight of the *Tiger*: and of the battaile betweene *Berolde*, *Platib* and the Sage *Aluati*, &c. cha. 17.
- Of that which happened to the noble Prince *Palmerin* of England, &c. cha. 18.
- Here is yet contained what happened to *Palmerin* of England, &c. chap. 19.
- How *Alfernao* arriued at the Emperours court of Constantinople, &c. cha. 20.
- How the princes and knights which were prisoners to the great Turke, arriued at the court of Constantinople, wher-vpon the king *Reconde* deliuered out of prison, &c. ch. 21.
- How the knight of the Sauage man (accompanied with the damosels) arriued in the king of Spaines court, and of that which hapned to him there against the P. *Albayzar*. ch. 22.
- How the Damosels knight and *Albayzar* iousted together. chap. 23.
- Of that which happened to the Damosels knight, in going to the Castle of *Almaroll*. cha. 24.
- How *Trafolant* and these other three knights yeelded themselves in the Spanish court. And how the damosels knight arriued at the Castle, &c. cha. 25.
- Of the Iousts which were enterprised betweene the Damosels knight, and him that kept the shield of the Princeesse *Miragarda*: and of the combat which the knight, &c. c. 26.

Of

## The Table.

Of that which happened to the damosels knight, as he returned to the Court of Recinde, &c. chap. 27.  
 What the Prince Florédos did to the vāquished knight. And how those knights whom the prince Florian had conquered, &c. chap. 28.  
 Of that which happened to the Knight of the Sauage man, when he came to the Castle where Arnalte the Princeesse of Nauarre, &c. chap. 29.  
 How the Prince Albayzar embarqued himselfe to sayle into Turkie, after he had presented himselfe to Leonarda, the Princeesse of Thrace, &c., chap. 30.  
 Of that which happened to the knight of the Tiger, after he was departed from the Perillous Isle, &c. chap. 31.  
 How the Knight of the Tiger tooke his leaue of Meliadus the King of the Scots, and of the Princeesse Arinisia his daughter, &c. chap. 32.  
 How the knight of the Tiger arriued at Constantinople, and of an aduenture which was, &c. chap. 33.  
 Of the talke which the Prince Palmerin had with the princeesse Polinarda his Lady. chap. 34.  
 How certaine Knights arriued at the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, who were aduertised how the Turks had prouided a great Armie, &c. chap. 35.  
 Of an aduenture which happened (during the trouble at Constantinople) in the Realme of France, and after what manner, &c. chap. 36.  
 Of that which hapned to certaine other knights, who would prooue the aduenture of these, &c. chap. 37.  
 Of that which happened to the knight of the Sauage man, in prouing the aduenture with these foure, &c. chap. 38.  
 How the strange knight entered the field to Ioust vnder the name of madame Latrania. chap. 39.  
 Of that which happened to the strange knight, the first day he guarded the passage of the Valley. chap. 40.  
 The complaints which the strange Knight made in the night time, vnder the window of the chamber, where the foure Ladies, &c. chap. 41.

What

## The Table.

What hapned to the strange knight the second day he guarded the passage of the valley. chap. 42.  
 Of that which happened to the strange knight the third and &c. chap. 43.  
 Of that which happened to the strange knight this night : & how the Knight of the Sphere entred the combate the day following. chap. 44.  
 Of that which the strange knight did the day following, guarding the Valley. chap. 45.  
 Of that which happened to the strange knight the last day he guarded the passage, vnder the name of Madame Torfia. chap. 46.  
 How the knight of the Sauage man arriued at the Court of Constantinople; & how Dragonalt & Arnalte the Queen of Nauarre; &c. chap. 47.  
 How Arnedes king of France and his Queene, Recinde king of Spaine and his Queene, accompanied with the princeesse Miragarda and the Giant Almaroll, arriued at, &c. chap. 48.  
 Of the conference which the Emperour had with the Princes: and how the mariages which he had appointed were now &c. chap. 49.  
 How the Soldan Bellagris was baptized, and how afterward the Emperour caused him to be marryed to Pandritia, and how, &c. chap. 50.  
 How the Queene of Thrace was conueied away by a strange aduenture, while the knights, &c. chap. 51.  
 How by the ayde of the Sage Aliart of the Obscure Valley, the noble knight of the Sauage man deliuered out of the Enchantment his, &c. chap. 52.  
 Of that which the Christians did in Constantinople, at what time the Princeesse Targiana sent tidings to the Court of the Emperour Palmerin, of the comming of his enemies. chap. 53.  
 How the enemies sent an Ambassadour vnto the Emperours Court, and of the answer was, &c. chap. 54.  
 How the Armie of the great Turke arriued at the Port of  
 Constane

## The Table.

Constantinople, and of the noble and valiant prowesse of the Christians, &c. cha. 55.

Of the griepe and sorrowe made in Constantinople, for the dangerous estate wherein the Giant *Dramusiande* was brought: And how the Turkes placed their campe before the citie of Constantinople. cha. 56.

Of that which *Albayzar* did after hee had well provided for his army, and of the succour which came to the Emperour *Palmerin*. cha. 57.

Of an aduventure which happened by the arriuall of a strange knight, accompanied with a Lady, in the Prince *Albayzar's* campe. cha. 58.

Heare shall be declared, after what maner the Prince *Florian* of the Forrest, arriued at Constantinople, & of many things &c. cha. 59.

How the combate betweene twelue Turks and twelue Christians was begun, and how the Ladies caused it to be giuen, &c. cha. 60.

Of a noble and valiant combate betweene *Dramusiande* and the Giant *Framustant*. cha. 61.

Of the battaile betweene the Turkes and the Christians, and of that which happened. cha. 62.

Of the first battaile betweene the Christians and the Turkes, and the successe thereof. cha. 63.

Of that which they did in Constantinople, before they gaue the enemy the second battaile. cha. 64.

Of the second battaile betweene the Christians, & the Turks, and what happened. cha. 65.

The counsell and aduise that the Sage *Aliart* gaue to them of the Empire of Constantinople. And how he caused the bodies of the Emperour *Palmerin* and the other Princes, &c. chap. 66.

*The end of the Table.*